



Allah is the Arabic word for the **Creator**
Islam is the Arabic word for submission to Allah
© 2008 www.Allah.com © 2008 www.Muhammad.com
Version 6.0 updated March (Rabi-al-Awwal), 2008

Please feel free to print and distribute so long as you keep reference of copyright and url links as they appear above.

THE MILLENNIUM BIOGRAPHY OF MUHAMMAD ﷺ **THE PROPHET OF ALLAH**

Including
NOTES OF THE PROPHETIC HOMESTEAD
ADVANCED SUPPLEMENTAL INFORMATION
EXTRACTS FROM AS-SHEFA BY JUDGE EYAD

Dedicated to
Grand Muhaddith Hafiz Master Abdullah Ben Sadek Al Ghumari
by
Shaykha Anne Khadeejah Darwish
Shaykh Ahmad Darwish

Please also download and read our other bio
THE BEST BIOGRAPHY OF PROPHET MUHAMMAD ﷺ
For over 800 Years

Available in Word, PDF & Web Formats for Palm, PocketPC,
Please email this work to friends and family

How lost am I, much less most Muslims in the west, who have no access to such knowledge. Rather they have only paltry ideas most of which were invented by others and devoid of all pertinence and often designed to mislead. Please enjoy this straightforward Bio (seerah) from the beginning.

Ryan O'Maellie
Denver, Colorado, USA

In the Name of Allah the Merciful, the Most Merciful Bismillah Ir Rahman Ir Raheem

Arabic ﷺ means "Allah praises and gives peace upon the Prophet" and said as (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

PREFACE

YOU, DEAR READER AND HERACLIUS, EMPEROR OF ROME HAVE SOMETHING IN COMMON

The authors were unable to find a more eloquent preface to this **millennium biography** than a letter sent by the Prophet to his contemporary the Emperor Heraclius. In reply, Heraclius commenced an imperial investigative effort to cross examine the current claim of prophethood.

In the year 610 CE, Heraclius succeeded Phocas as Emperor of Rome. His empire flourished and extended as far west as the Danube in Europe, and included all the countries on the Mediterranean coast. It also included many of the Arab countries surrounding Arabia as well as the Balkans of which Turkey with its famed city Constantinople (named after the Emperor Constantine) was a jewel in the crown of the Roman empire.

As part of his prophetic duty, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) invited Heraclius to Islam and in response Heraclius decided to examine Prophet Muhammad. By exploring this book you are, by default, examining Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and this what is meant by referring to the reader as having something in common with Heraclius.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent his messenger, Dihyah Al Kalbi to the governor of Bostra with a letter for Heraclius inviting him to Islam:

PROPHET MUHAMMAD'S LETTER TO HERACLIUS

In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful.

From: The Prophet of Allah

To: Heraclius, the greatest of Romans

"Peace be upon those who follow Divine Guidance.

I therefore, invite you to embrace Islam. Surrender to Allah and live in peace. Allah will doubly reward you, but if you turn away, the sin of the Arians will rest upon you." Then he quoted the Koran:

'Say: People of the Book! (Jews, Nazarenes and Christians)

Let us come to a common word between us and you,

that we will worship none except Allah, that we will associate none with Him,

and that none of us take others for lords beside Allah.’
If they turn away, say: ‘Bear witness that we are Muslims’ Koran 3:64

THE IMPERIAL, INVESTIGATIVE CROSS EXAMINATION OF THE PROPHETHOOD

A peace treaty was in effect between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the hostile tribe of Koraysh. Abu Sufyan, its chieftain who was also one of the most bitter enemies of Islam, knew that on account of the peace treaty he could rely upon the safe passage of his caravan to trade in far away Syria (Ash-Sham).

Heraclius had many questions he wanted answered. When he learned that a Koraysh caravan from Mecca was now in the vicinity, he sent a rider with a message to the caravaners saying he wished them to accompany his rider back to Jerusalem so that he may speak with them.

As Abu Sufyan and his caravan journeyed to Jerusalem, he wondered why the Emperor of Rome had sent for him but he didn't have to wait long. As soon as they reached Jerusalem, Abu Sufyan and his companions were presented to Heraclius and his court whereupon Heraclius called for an interpreter and inquired about Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

He asked Abu Sufyan and his companions who amongst them was closest to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa sallam) in kinship. Abu Sufyan replied that it was he and informed him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) hailed from a noble lineage. Then, Heraclius turned to his companions and said, "If he says something you know to be contradictory, you must speak."

Heraclius' questions were direct, he asked Abu Sufyan if any of his tribe had ever before claimed to be a prophet whereupon Abu Sufyan replied that none had. Then he asked if any of his ancestors had been a king and Abu Sufyan replied that they had not. Heraclius was interested to know what kind of people followed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and if their numbers were increasing or decreasing. Abu Sufyan replied that they were poor people and that their numbers were increasing. Then, Heraclius asked if he knew of anyone of his followers had reverted to their old religion, and Abu Sufyan replied that he knew of none.

Referring to the Prophet's character, Heraclius asked Abu Sufyan if he had ever known the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to lie, or if he had ever betrayed or broken his word, whereupon Abu Sufyan replied no to all counts. Then, referring to the latter, Abu Sufyan commented in a tone of resentment, "We have a treaty with him, but we do not know what he will do."

Heraclius next asked if they had ever fought against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and if so to tell him about the outcome. Abu Sufyan replied that they had fought; sometimes they had been victorious and upon other occasions victory belonged to the Prophet“ (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Then Heraclius inquired about his teachings whereupon Abu Sufyan told him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered his followers to worship Allah alone

and not to associate anything with Him, and to renounce the idols their forefathers had worshipped. Abu Sufyan continued to tell him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) also ordered them to pray, not to lie, to be chaste, and to foster kindred relationship.

THE WITNESSING TO THE AUTHENTICITY OF PROPHET MUHAMMAD (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

From these answers Heraclius derived his opinion of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "All the prophets came from noble families, I asked you if anyone before him from your tribe claimed to be a prophet and your reply was no. If your reply had affirmed it then I would have deduced he was mimicking that man. I asked if any of your ancestors had been a king, you replied they had not. If your answer had been otherwise I would have assumed that he wanted to reclaim his ancestral kingdom. When I asked if he lied, you replied that he did not, so I wondered how a person who does not lie could ever tell a lie about Allah.

I also asked you about his followers, whether they were rich or poor and you replied they were poor -- the followers of all the prophets were poor. When I asked if his followers were increasing or decreasing, you replied increasing; this is the course of true belief. Then, I asked if there was anyone who, after embracing Islam recanted and you replied that you knew of none; this is another sign of belief as it enters the heart.

When I asked you if he had ever been known to betray, you replied that he had not; this is the way of all prophets. Then I asked you what he ordered his followers to do, and you told me that he orders that Allah alone is to be worshipped, and forbade the worship of idols. Then you told me that he orders you to pray, speak the truth, and be chaste. If what you say is true, he will, in the near future occupy this seat." Then Heraclius told Abu Sufyan:

"I knew he was about to appear, but did not know he would be from you. If I could meet him I would wash his feet with water."

Then Heraclius called for the letter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had sent him and read it aloud whereupon there was a sudden outcry from the court and Abu Sufyan and his companions were thrown out onto the street.

As soon as they were able to pull themselves together Abu Sufyan told his companions, "He has become so prominent that even the king of the light-skinned Byzantine people is afraid of him!" and knew in his heart that it would not be long until the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) conquered.

Abu Sufyan was a proud man and his reputation mattered greatly to him. He was heard to say in the years to come, "By Allah, if it were not for the fact that I would have been ashamed that my companions would label me as a liar, I would not have told the truth."

INTRODUCTION

ARCH ANGEL GABRIEL'S DISCRIPTION OF THE PRINCIPALS OF ISLAM:

Omar, the son of Khattab narrated, "We were sitting with the Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) one day, when an unknown inquirer appeared to us. His clothes were brilliantly white, his hair jet black but there was no sign of traveling upon him.

1. SUBMISSION TO ALLAH (ISLAM)

He sat down in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and their knees touched. Placing his hands on his thighs he said, 'Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tell me about Islam.' The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'Islam is that you bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and that Muhammad is His Messenger, and that you establish the prayer, pay the obligatory charity, fast the month of Ramadan, and make the Pilgrimage to the House (Ka'ba) if you can afford it.' Then to our surprise the inquirer confirmed the correctness of the answer saying, 'That is right.'

2. FAITH AND BELIEF (IMAN)

Then the inquirer said, 'Tell me about faith.' To this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'It is that you believe in Allah, His Angels, His Books, His Messengers, the Last Day and that you believe in predestination.'

3. SPIRITUAL PERFECTION (IHSAN, ISLAMIC SUFISM)

Again the inquirer said, 'That is right, now tell me about perfection.'

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'It is that you worship Allah as if you are seeing Him, and if you do not see Him, know that He is watching you.'

The inquirer asked again, 'Tell me about the Hour of Judgement.' The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'He who is being asked knows no more about it than the one who asks.' So the inquirer asked, 'Tell me about some of the signs of its approach.' To this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'The female slave will give birth to her master, and the bare-footed, naked, penniless goat-herders will live arrogantly in high mansions.'

The inquirer departed, and I remained for a while. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked me, 'Omar, do you know who the inquirer was?' I replied, 'Allah and His Messenger know best.' So he told me, 'It was Gabriel who came to teach you your religion.'

TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface	
Introduction	
Chapter 1	Prophet Abraham and the First House of Allah on Earth
Chapter 2	The New Governors of Mecca
Chapter 3	Hashim
Chapter 4	Abd Al Mutalib
Chapter 5	The Vow
Chapter 6	The Marriage of Abdullah to Amina
Chapter 7	The Memorable Year of the Elephant
Chapter 8	The Birth of the Last Prophet of Allah, the Sealing of the Prophethood
Chapter 9	Life in the Desert
Chapter 10	A New Life in Mecca
Chapter 11	The Early Years
Chapter 12	Marriage
Chapter 13	Sayd
Chapter 14	Ka'ba
Chapter 15	Ali, son of Abu Talib
Chapter 16	The Prophethood
Chapter 17	The Revelation, Rank of the Prophets, Messengers and the Arch Angel Gabriel
Chapter 18	The Miraculous Koran
Chapter 19	The Early Revelations
Chapter 20	The First to Believe
Chapter 21	The Characteristics of the Early Muslims
Chapter 22	The Hierarchy of the Koraysh
Chapter 23	The Command to Preach
Chapter 24	The Koraysh and Abu Talib
Chapter 25	Tufayl from the Tribe of Daws
Chapter 26	Pre-Islamic Conditions in Yathrib
Chapter 27	Unrest in Mecca
Chapter 28	An Attempt to Bribe
Chapter 29	Nadar, the son of Al Harith
Chapter 30	Persecution
Chapter 31	The Eavesdroppers
Chapter 32	Waleed, Chief of the Makhzum
Chapter 33	The Splitting of the Moon
Chapter 34	Idolatry Through Lack of Divine Guidance – the Conversion of Omar, son of Khattab
Chapter 35	The Boycott
Chapter 36	The Companions Migrate to Abyssinia
Chapter 37	The Delegation from Abyssinia

Chapter 38	The Cessation of the Boycott
Chapter 39	The Year of Sorrow
Chapter 40	The Vision
Chapter 41	Abu Bakr and Talha
Chapter 42	The Journey to Ta'if
Chapter 43	The Message and the Tribes
Chapter 44	The Night Journey and the Ascent
Chapter 45	The Six Men from the Tribe of Khazraj
Chapter 46	Madinat Al Nabi – the City of the Prophet
Chapter 47	The Visitor from Najd
Chapter 48	The Migration
Chapter 49	A Time for Readjustment
Chapter 50	The Jews of Medina
Chapter 51	The Second Year after the Migration
Chapter 52	A Threat from Mecca
Chapter 53	The Second Year after the Migration
Chapter 54	Prelude to the Encounter of Badr
Chapter 55	The Encounter of Badr
Chapter 56	The Revenge of Bilal and the Persecuted
Chapter 57	The Spoils of War
Chapter 58	The Death of Lady Rukiyah
Chapter 59	The Arrival of the Prisoners
Chapter 60	The Return of the Koraysh
Chapter 61	Three Resolutions
Chapter 62	The Marriage of Lady Fatima
Chapter 63	“When you are touched with good fortune, they grieve”
Chapter 64	The Market Place of the Tribe of Kaynuka
Chapter 65	The Oath of Abu Sufyan
Chapter 66	Lady Hafsa
Chapter 67	The Request of Lady Fatima
Chapter 68	The Caravan to Iraq
Chapter 69	Prelude to the Encounter at Uhud
Chapter 70	The Births of Al Hasan and Al Husain
Chapter 71	The Encounter at Uhud
Chapter 72	The Return to Medina
Chapter 73	The Day after Uhud
Chapter 74	Revelations Concerning Uhud
Chapter 75	After Uhud
Chapter 76	Lady Zaynab, Daughter of Khuzaymah
Chapter 77	A Plot to Murder the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)
Chapter 78	The Tribe of Nadir Declare War
Chapter 79	The Fourth Year
Chapter 80	The Second Meeting at Badr
Chapter 81	The Fifth Year
Chapter 82	Salman of Persia
Chapter 83	The Marauders of Dumat Al Jandal

- Chapter 84 A Pattern of Life Emerges
- Chapter 85 Lady Zaynab, Daughter of Jahsh
- Chapter 86 The Revenge of the Tribe of Nadir
- Chapter 87 The Koraysh Prepare for the Attack
- Chapter 88 The Encounter at the Trench
- Chapter 89 The Aftermath
- Chapter 90 The Death of Sa'ad, Mu'adhs son
- Chapter 91 The Koraysh Caravan
- Chapter 92 The Tribe of Mutalik
- Chapter 93 The Necklace of Lady Ayesha
- Chapter 94 The Vicious Lie
- Chapter 95 The Death of Ubayd Allah, son of Jahsh
- Chapter 96 The Prelude to the Opening of Mecca
- Chapter 97 The Treaty of Hdaybiyah
- Chapter 98 The Escapees from Mecca
- Chapter 99 The Waiving of the Clause
- Chapter 100 The Blowers upon Knots
- Chapter 101 A Time of Sadness, a Time for Rejoicing
- Chapter 102 The Marriage between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Lady Umm Habibah
- Chapter 103 The Jews of Khybar
- Chapter 104 The March to Khybar
- Chapter 105 The Events of Khybar
- Chapter 106 Lady Safiya, Daughter of Huyay
- Chapter 107 The Victorious Arrival
- Chapter 108 The Tribes of Hawazin and Ghatafan
- Chapter 109 The Trial of Wealth
- Chapter 110 Gifts from the Muqawqas, Primate of the Christian, Coptic Church in Egypt
- Chapter 111 Umrah – the Lesser Pilgrimage
- Chapter 112 The Dispute
- Chapter 113 The Turner of Hearts
- Chapter 114 The Eighth Year
- Chapter 115 The Intercepted Letter
- Chapter 116 The Tribes of Bakr and Khuzah
- Chapter 117 The Road to Mecca
- Chapter 118 The Opening of Mecca
- Chapter 119 The Encounter at Hunain
- Chapter 120 The Spoils of War
- Chapter 121 The Return Journey to Medina
- Chapter 122 A Son is Born
- Chapter 123 Smaller Expeditions
- Chapter 124 Tabuk
- Chapter 125 The Return from Tabuk
- Chapter 126 The Delegation from Ta'if
- Chapter 127 The Year of Deputations

Chapter 128 The First Pilgrimage after the Opening of Mecca
Chapter 129 Life in Medina
Chapter 130 A Time of Great Sorrow
Chapter 131 A Time to Learn
Chapter 132 The Farewell Pilgrimage
Chapter 133 The Return from Yemen
Chapter 134 The 11th Year

Notes of the prophetic Homestead – His Genealogy and Description

Advanced Supplemental information transmitted via Ryan O'Mealli via Shaykh Ahmad Darwish.

The rights of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, due from his followers extracted from "Shefa" by Judge Eyad.

.

End of table of contents

IN THE NAME OF ALLAH, THE MERCIFUL, THE MOST MERCIFUL

CHAPTER 1

PROPHET ABRAHAM AND THE FIRST HOUSE OF ALLAH ON EARTH

Prophet Abraham was born to honorable parents descended from Prophet Noah. He was born in the city of Hara, Iraq during the reign of King Nimrod and is often referred to as "The Friend of Allah" and "The Father of the Prophets".

Before Abraham reached maturity his father passed away, and as was the custom in those days he would, out of respect for his paternal uncle, refer to him as his father.

There had been a void in guidance since the death of Prophet Noah and the people of Hara reverted to idolatry. Hara was renowned for its ornate, pagan temples and its citizens took great pride in the idols housed within them. Offerings were sacrificed to the idols and ritual ceremonies wishfully invoking their favors performed before them.

A lucrative commerce had grown around the activities of the temples. Carved replicas of the idols were a much sought after possession and it was to this profession that Azar, Abraham's uncle, whom he now called "father" directed his talents.

WHO IS MY LORD

Abraham was unlike his contemporaries, he grew to be an upright, caring young man repulsed by idol worship and sought the answer to a question that had consumed him for many years -- who was his Lord?

In the process of his guidance, Allah in His Mercy caused Abraham to contemplate upon the kingdoms of the heavens and earth. One evening, as he gazed up into the night sky, he saw a planet shining more brightly than the others and exclaimed, "This is surely my Lord!" But, as the morning light came and the planet set, he rejected his thought saying, "I do not like the setting ones!" On another occasion as he saw the moon rise he said once again, "This is my Lord!" But like the planet, as the light of the morning broke it disappeared, whereupon he said, "If my Lord does not guide me, I shall be amongst the astray nation!" Then, when he saw the sun rise upon the horizon he said, "This must be my Lord, it is larger!" But as it set he turned to his people saying, "O nation, I am quit of what you associate (with Allah, the Creator) I have turned my face to Him who created the heavens and the earth, uprightly, and I am not among the idolaters!" Koran, Chapter 6 verses 76-79

ABRAHAM IS CHOSEN BY ALLAH AND BECOMES A PROPHET

Some time later Allah sent the Arch Angel Gabriel to inform Abraham that He had chosen him to be His Messenger. Abraham was deeply humbled by the news and Gabriel brought him, over a period of forty-two visits, ten Holy Scrolls. Prophet Muhammad (praise and peace be upon him) informed his Companions later on that the contents of the Scrolls were examples.

Abraham's open rejection of idolatry caused a commotion, no one had ever challenged the deity of the idols of Hara; to his fellow citizens the notion was deemed blasphemous. However, Abraham was resolved, he had no doubt that Allah was the only One to be worshipped because he was convinced that it was He alone who had created everything.

THE LOGIC OF ABRAHAM

Abraham tried reasoning with those around him in the best manner, but they refused to accept his logic even after he had drawn their attention to the obvious fact that their idols had either been hewn from stone or carved from wood by people such as themselves.

Abraham never stopped challenging his people and asked if their idols could do anything else other than just stand motionless, year after year, in the same place -- the place in which they themselves had been positioned many years before! He reminded his people that the idols neither ate nor drank from the offerings placed before them nor could they harm or benefit anyone. But still the people refused to abandon their idolatry.

Over the course of time the idolaters became outraged and told Abraham that it was he who was wrong and that he must fear their gods. Abraham shook his head and asked, "And how should I fear what you have associated when you yourselves are not afraid that you have associated with Allah that which He did not send down for it upon you an authority." Koran, Chapter 6 verse 81

ABRAHAM AND KING NIMROD

The news of Abraham's preaching reached King Nimrod who considered himself to be a deity. Abraham feared no one except Allah, so when he was presented to the king he challenged him saying, "My Lord is He who revives and causes to die." But the artful king scoffed at Abraham and told him, "I revive and cause to die."

The king knew exactly what Abraham meant, but had tried to outwit him with his reply by referring to the power he had as king to either spare the life of a guilty criminal, or put to death an innocent person -- whichever suited his whim. Abraham challenged him yet again saying, "Allah brings up the sun from the east, so you bring it from the west." This time the king knew he had been revealed and the color drained from his face, and Abraham waited to see if he would surrender to Allah but he did not and so Abraham returned home. Koran, Chapter 2 verse 258

ABRAHAM AND THE MIRACLE OF THE FOUR BIRDS

One day, Abraham asked Allah to show him how He revived the dead. Allah asked Abraham, "Haven't you believed?" Abraham told Him that it wasn't that, rather it was just to satisfy his heart. So Allah told him to take four birds, sacrifice them, then cut them into pieces then mix their bits and pieces together, and go to the neighboring hills and place some of the mixed pieces on each of them. After he had done this, Allah told Abraham to call the birds and their severed part would reassemble and fly to him.

Abraham did exactly as he was told: he sacrificed a peacock, an eagle, a crow, and a rooster. Then, after he had mixed their body parts together, he placed them upon the neighboring hills, keeping only their heads with him. Once this had been done he called to them whereupon their mixed parts were brought back to life, reassembled,

and flew to join themselves to their respective heads that Abraham still held in his hand. (Koran Chapter 2 verse 260 and explained by Sawi.)

ABRAHAM AND HIS "FATHER" PART COMPANY:

Now Azar was among those who refused to accept Allah as his Lord. Abraham asked him why he was so devoted to the idols but Azar could offer no better reply than to say that many people before him had worshipped them, and what was good enough for them was good enough for him also. Azar became upset and embarrassed by his nephew's preaching and threatened to stone him if he persisted.

Such was Abraham's conviction that he did not stop preaching and after a while, Azar realized that his threats were of no use so he told his nephew he did not wish to see him again for sometime. As they parted company, tender-hearted Abraham told Azar he would ask Allah to forgive him, and that perhaps his Lord would accept his prayer.

Abraham continued to preach against the idols but the people continued to spurn what he had to say. After each refusal he would ask them the same question he had asked his uncle – "What made them so devoted to their idols?" -- but they replied in the same way, which was simply because their fathers and ancestors had worshipped them. Some even accused Abraham of jesting with them, but he swore that this was not so, and that without a doubt their Lord and Creator is and always had been the Lord of all that is in the heavens and earth, and that they should abandon their useless idols.

ABRAHAM OUTWITS THE IDOLS

No matter how hard Abraham tried they would not accept the truth, so he told them, "By Allah, I shall outwit your idols as soon as you have turned your backs and gone." No one took Abraham seriously so they left and went about their business.

Some time later, Abraham, unseen with ax in hand, entered the temple in which the most revered idols were housed, and smashed all except the largest into pieces then left unseen.

It wasn't long before the idolaters returned to the temple and saw their gods lying broken into pieces on the floor. There was an outcry of horror and those who had heard Abraham's challenge immediately suspected him, and so he was summoned before them. "Abraham," they asked, "was it you who did this to our gods?" Abraham replied, "It was their great one that did it. Ask them if they can speak." The idolaters huddled together in a corner knowing well in their hearts the truth of the matter and that Abraham had at last succeeded in exposing the worthlessness of their idols. Begrudgingly, they admitted, "You know they do not speak." Thereupon Abraham challenged them saying, "Would you then worship that which can neither benefit nor harm you, instead of Allah? Shame on you and that you worship other than Allah! Have you no understanding?" Koran, Chapter 21:68

THE BONFIRE

It was more than the idolaters could bear, their idols lay broken in pieces unable to do anything for themselves. Outraged by the whole situation they cried out, "Burn him and help your gods!"

The idolaters hastened to build a huge bonfire with the intent of burning Abraham to death. However, Abraham remained calm having complete trust in his Lord and did not

flinch. There was nothing that would tear him away from his belief in the Oneness of Allah.

Abraham was led to the bonfire, placed in its center, and the kindling wood lit. It wasn't long until the flames leapt high into the air -- but not even a single hair of Abraham's head was scorched.

That was because Allah had caused a miracle to occur. He commanded the flames to be cool and safe for Abraham and eventually, when the fire had consumed itself, Abraham walked away unharmed praising and thanking Allah for His mercy.

Even though the idolaters had witnessed this great miracle they continued in their arrogance and refused to abandon their idols. In their hearts they knew that nothing they did would ever harm Abraham because he was protected by Allah, so in desperation they banished him and his wife, Lady Sarah, from their homeland.

ABRAHAM AND SARAH IN EGYPT

After a long, tiring journey, Prophet Abraham and Lady Sarah reached Egypt and it was there they decided to make their home.

During their time in Egypt, Haggar, one of the noble ladies-in-waiting in the court of Pharaoh, came to live in Abraham's household as a companion to Sarah. Haggar was a sweet natured lady, she loved Lady Sarah dearly and a very special friendship bonded them together.

Idolatry was also commonplace in Egypt, especially in the court of Pharaoh, but when Haggar heard Abraham speak about Allah she was quick to recognize the truth and accepted it.

In those days it was common place for a man to have more than one wife and Prophet Abraham and Lady Sarah, who were now elderly, remained childless. Lady Sarah had given up hope of ever bearing a child so she suggested to Abraham that he might take Haggar to be her co-wife. Both Abraham and Haggar accepted her suggestion and shortly after Haggar became his lawful second wife.

The family's wish was fulfilled when Lady Haggar conceived and gave birth to a fine son whom they named Ishmael. Lady Sarah was delighted and happy that Abraham had at long last been blessed with a son -- little did she know at that time that she too would be blessed in later years for her patience with a son of her own, Isaac.

DECEIT

Throughout the centuries nationalistic Jews and Orientalists have sought to distort the truth about Prophet Abraham's legal marriage to Lady Haggar and the very close relationship between Ladies Sarah and Haggar. Their object has been and still is to undermine the great event which had been promised and recorded in the original, unadulterated Holy Scriptures that announced the coming of Islam with its protected revelation, the Holy Koran and the seal of all the prophets, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

PROPHETS OF ALLAH

Both the sons of Abraham were legitimate and destined to become prophets of Allah. Ishmael was sent as a prophet to the Arabs and Isaac as a prophet to the Hebrews, later on to be called the children of Israel and then Jews, peace be upon all the prophets.

It is from the descendants of Ishmael and Isaac that two great nations evolved each having Prophet Abraham as their common ancestor. However, neither Jew nor Christian can claim he was a follower of their religion as both prophets Moses and Jesus were sent many centuries after the death of Prophet Abraham.

ABRAHAM AND HAGGAR IN BECCA, ARABIA

Before Ishmael completed his weaning, Prophet Abraham saw a vision in which he was instructed to take Lady Haggar and their son to a place called Becca, in the peninsula of Arabia, known today as Mecca, and leave them there.

Mecca lies in a valley surrounded by mountains and hills with three passes. One to the north, another to the south and the other to the west. The valley had long been one of the most traveled caravan routes in Arabia, however, it remained uninhabited largely because it lacked water.

Upon reaching Becca, Prophet Abraham settled Lady Haggar and Ishmael under the shade of a large tree and gave his wife a large bag of dates and a water-skin full of water, then turned away and started to leave them. Lady Haggar followed after him and asked, "Abraham, where are you going, are you leaving us in an uninhabited provisionless wilderness?" She asked the same question several times, but Abraham did not reply. Then, searching for a reason and knowing her husband would never do anything to earn the displeasure of Allah she inquired, "Has Allah commanded you to do this?" whereupon he replied, "Yes". So she comforted them both saying, "Then He will not let us perish," and returned to her infant.

ABRAHAM SUPPLICATES FOR LADY HAGGAR, ISHMAEL & FUTURE GENERATIONS OF MUSLIMS

At a place called Thania, Abraham stopped and turned his face in the direction of the ruins of Ka'ba -- the first House of Allah to be built on earth -- which lay buried in the sand. He raised his hands and supplicated,

"Our Lord,
I have settled some of my offspring
in a barren valley
near Your Holy House;
our Lord, in order that they establish the prayer.
Make the hearts of people yearn towards them,
and provide them with fruits,
in order that they are thankful."
Koran, Chapter 14 verse 37.

Allah had promised Abraham that from his offspring would arise great nations, that is why Abraham referred to having settled "some of his offspring" near Ka'ba. This promised was fulfilled as it was from the descendants of Prophet Ishmael that Prophet Muhammad, peace be upon all the prophets, was born.

Lady Haggar suckled her infant son and gave him water from the skin until none remained. It wasn't long until both were very thirsty and she became very concerned for Ishmael. Lady Haggar could not bear to have her son go without water so she searched frantically for some but could find none. In desperation she climbed a nearby hill, the hill of Safwa, stood at its top, and looked around in all directions to see if there was anyone in sight to help her -- but there was no one. She ran back down the hill and in her anxiety ran across the valley and climbed to the top of the neighboring hill of Marwah, but again to no avail. She ran between the two hills seven times, but could find neither caravaners nor water.

ALLAH HEARS THE CRY OF LADY HAGGAR

Upon the seventh time she reached the hill of Marwah Haggar heard a voice. She calmed herself and listened attentively, and called out, "I have heard Your voice, would that my supplication might reach You." And there, standing near the place we know today as Zamzam stood Angel Gabriel. Gabriel struck the ground with either his heel or wings, and water gushed forth. Hastily, she dug a hole in the ground into which the water flowed and filled her water-skin to the top as the water gushed forth with still greater force. Quickly, she drank a handful of water and raced back to her son to give him some. Then, Gabriel spoke saying, "Do not be afraid of perishing here, because it is here that your son and his father will build a House for Allah. Allah will not let those around it perish."

THE RUINS OF KA'BA

In those days, the ruins of Ka'ba were elevated on a piece of land covered by sand in the shape of a mound, and when rain eventually fell it would run on either side.

THE CARAVANERS

Ishmael and his mother continued to live in Mecca by themselves until one day caravaners from the tribe of Jurhum returning from Kada'a, struck camp a little distance from the place where Lady Haggar had made her home. As the caravaners were unloading their camels they observed birds circling in the sky not far away. Their experience had taught them that birds circling in this manner might well indicate water. Ever hopeful of finding a fresh supply of water in that desolate region, they thought it was worth investigating, although from their past experience they had never found water anywhere in that area.

Several tribesmen were sent to investigate. When they reached the place over which the birds circled, to their great surprise and joy they found the spring of Zamzam and returned quickly to tell their fellow travelers. Upon hearing the good news the caravaners stopped what they were doing and rushed to both see and drink the fresh water.

LADY HAGGAR MEETS THE JURHUM CARAVANERS

When they reached Zamzam, the caravaners found Lady Haggar standing nearby and asked her permission to strike camp near her. Lady Haggar agreed on condition that she retained the water rights and that her son would be the prince. The Jurhumites agreed and settled themselves in Becca whilst sending word to their families to come and join them there.

ANGELS DO NOT EAT

Meanwhile, one day when Prophet Abraham was at home with Lady Sarah they were visited by strangers.

It was not uncommon to find strangers visiting their home as each day Abraham would light a large bonfire on the top of a nearby mountain to attract and welcome travelers.

Abraham's generous hospitality was well known, no one was ever turned away and as such he hardly ever ate alone. His guests were always well fed and during the course of a much welcomed meal Abraham would take the opportunity to tell to his guests about Allah.

One day, strangers arrived at his home and as was his custom, he arranged for a fine meal of a roasted calf to be prepared for his guests. The meal was set before them but his guests declined to either eat or drink. Abraham was deeply troubled by this strange situation -- travelers were always hungry, or at least thirsty. Abraham's guests perceived his anxiety and told him not to be afraid because although they had taken the form of humans, they were not humans as he supposed, but rather they were angels on their way to the city of his cousin, Prophet Lot.

Prophet Abraham felt at ease once more as he knew that angels, who are neither male nor female and created from light, only worship Allah and do whatsoever they are ordered to do by Him.

The angels proceeded to inform Abraham that the city of Prophet Lot had become disobedient to Allah and were sexual perverts. The angels continued, telling him that it was because of this that Allah had ordered them to punish its people by utterly destroying both them and their city.

LADY SARAH BECOMES PREGNANT

As Lady Sarah entered the room, the angels told her that she would give birth to a son. She was overwhelmed by the news and clasped her hands on her cheeks in delight. She had been so happy when Lady Hagar gave birth to Ishmael several years before and now she too was to be blessed with a son of her own.

THE SEEDS OF ISHMAEL'S FORTHCOMING PROPHEHOOD

In His Wisdom, Allah had protected Ishmael in the harsh environment of the Holy Land in which he had matured. He had learned to speak Arabic in its purest, most eloquent form from the Jurhumites together with the art of horsemanship and had also become a highly skilled archer. The Jurhumites loved him, for his character was not only truthful and honorable but he was trustworthy and cared for their welfare; later on he was to marry from their tribe.

ISHMAEL, THE FIRST SACRIFICE

Despite his advanced years, Prophet Abraham would often journey to Mecca to visit Lady Hagar and his dearly beloved eldest son, Ishmael who was now a young man.

On one such visit Prophet Abraham saw a vision in which he was told to sacrifice his son for Allah. Soon after the vision shaytan came to Abraham and whispered, "How could you kill your beloved son?" Abraham instantly rejected and cursed shaytan, and in obedience to Allah went to Ishmael and said: "My son, I saw while sleeping that I

shall sacrifice you, tell me what you think." It was time for shaytan's second attempt to prevent the fulfillment of the vision and he whispered to Ishmael in a similar manner. Ishmael immediately rejected and cursed shaytan. Like his father, Ishmael's love of Allah and obedience to Him was unquestionable and he replied: "Father, do as you are ordered (by Allah), Allah willing, you shall find me one of those who are steadfast." Koran, Chapter 37:102.

Shaytan had failed twice, in his final attempt to prevent the fulfillment of the vision he went to Lady Hagar and whispered, "How could you let Abraham kill your only son?" But like her husband and son, she too loved Allah and was obedient to Him, so without hesitation she cursed and rejected shaytan.

THE THOUGHTFULNESS OF ISHMAEL

Prophet Abraham took Ishmael to a quiet place far from the people. As Abraham prepared himself to sacrifice his beloved son for Allah, Ishmael, being a loving and caring young man without thought for himself, asked his father for three things. He requested that he should be permitted to face the ground so that his father would not see his eyes and then be overcome with mercy towards him, and disobey the command of Allah. Ishmael also feared for the safety of his father so he requested him to sit upon his shoulders so that if he struggled when the knife struck him he would not injure him. He knew his mother would be sad so his final request was to ask his father to give her his shirt to console her.

It was time. Prophet Abraham tried to slit the back of his son's neck three times, but on each occasion the blade was prevented from penetration. After the third attempt, Allah called out to Abraham saying, "O Abraham, you have confirmed your vision.' As such We recompense the good-doers. That was indeed a clear trial. So, we ransomed him with a mighty sacrifice." Koran, Chapter 37 verse 104-107

Later on, Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) said referring to Prophet Ishmael and his own father Abdullah, whose life was ransomed by the slaying of a hundred camels: "I am the son of the two sacrifices."

When Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) revived the pilgrimage many centuries later, three stone pillars were erected outside Mecca enroute to Arafat as a reminder of the three whisperings of shaytan to Prophets Abraham, Ishmael, and Lady Hagar. These three pillars are cursed and stoned by all those who make the pilgrimage.

THE UNGRATEFUL SPOUSE

Lady Hagar had passed away before Prophet Abraham's next visit to Becca. When he reached the valley he made his way to Ishmael's home but found he was not at home, so he started to look for an object he left behind on a previous visit. Soon after, Ishmael's wife returned and showed him no respect. She neither welcomed, nor was she hospitable to her elderly visitor. Abraham asked her where her husband was, whereupon she told him he was away hunting. He then inquired about their life and circumstances and rather than being grateful, she told him things were difficult then proceeded to complain about everything in their life.

Ishmael's hunting expedition took longer than expected and so Abraham, who had been made unwelcome, decided it was time to leave. Before he left he asked

Ishmael's wife to give her husband a message saying, "When your husband returns, convey my greetings of peace to him and tell him that he should change the threshold of his door."

A while after Abraham's departure, Ishmael returned and sensed something unusual had happened during his absence, so he asked his wife if there had been any visitors. She told him of the elderly man that had stopped by and how he had asked about his whereabouts and their welfare. Ishmael asked if the visitor had left a message whereupon she told him that he had sent him greetings of peace and told him to change the threshold of his door. Upon hearing this Ishmael told his wife that the elderly gentleman was none other than his father and that he had directed him to divorce her. So Ishmael divorced his wife and, as was his nature, treated her fairly and caused her no harm, and so she returned to her people.

Ishmael was loved by the Jurhumites and when he decided to remarry from their tribe they were delighted.

THE GRATEFUL SPOUSE

After a period of time Prophet Abraham returned to visit his son but once again he did not find Ishmael at home. He asked his new wife where he was and she told him that he had gone out to search for provisions and prepared a meal for her visitor. As before, he asked Ishmael's wife about their circumstances but unlike the previous wife she praised Allah and told him they were comfortable. Abraham then inquired about their food whereupon she told him that they ate meat and drank water. Then, Prophet Abraham supplicated, "O Allah, bless their meat and water." Before leaving, Abraham asked her to convey the greetings of peace to Ishmael but this time he left instructions to strengthen the threshold.

Soon after Ishmael returned and once again sensed something unusual so he inquired if there had been any visitors during his absence. His wife told him of the elderly gentleman and spoke kindly about him. Ishmael asked if he had said anything to her, she told him that he had inquired about their well-being and that she had replied everything was well. She also told him that the elderly gentleman had asked her to convey his greetings of peace to him and said that he was to strengthen the threshold of his house.

Ishmael smiled, and told his wife that the elderly gentleman was none other than his father, Abraham and that she was the "threshold" he had ordered him to keep.

In the years that followed, Ishmael had twelve children, and it is from his son Kidar that many Arabs are descended.

RAISING THE HOUSE OF ALLAH

Time passed and the next time Prophet Abraham came to visit Ishmael, he found him sitting under a large tree near the spring of Zamzam repairing his arrows. As soon as he saw his father he stood up and they greeted each other affectionately with peace. After the greetings, Abraham told his son that Allah had given him another command -- the command to rebuild Ka'ba, the Holy Mosque of Allah. When Abraham asked Ishmael if he would help him fulfill his task he felt highly honored and accepted. Thereupon Abraham pointed to a mound of large stones and to its surrounding area

and told him that it was the place where Allah had commanded him to raise the foundations of the Holy Mosque.

Soon the rebuilding of Ka'ba was underway. Ishmael picked up the large stones, handed them to Abraham, who then positioned them to form a roofless cubic house with its corners pointing to the north, south, east, and west.

During its rebuilding, an angel came to them bearing a black stone that had lain on Abu Kubays, a nearby hill, ever since it had been brought from Paradise many, many centuries before. And so it was that Prophet Abraham positioned the Black Stone at the eastern corner of the Ka'ba.

Many centuries later, their descendant, Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his companions that when the stone was brought from Paradise it was whiter than milk, but on account of the many sins committed by the children of Adam, it had changed color.

Once Ka'ba had been rebuilt, Abraham and Ishmael supplicated,
"O our Lord, accept this from us.
You are the Hearer, the Knower.
Our Lord, make us both submissive (Muslims) to You,
and of our descendants
a submissive nation to You.
Show us our (pilgrimage) rites,
and accept (repentance from) us.
You are the Receiver (of repentance), the Merciful.
Our Lord, send among them
(the inhabitants of this House)
a Messenger from them
(Allah answered the supplication by sending Prophet Muhammad)
who shall recite to them Your verses
and teach them the Book (Al Koran)
and wisdom (Prophetic sayings),
and purify them.
You are the Mighty, the Wise."
Koran Chapter 2 verses 127 -129 with the explanation of Sawi.

Prophets Abraham and Ishmael asked for the acceptance of repentance on behalf of their descendants as they, like all prophets, were protected from sin.

PILGRIMAGE TO KA'BA IS ESTABLISHED

Following the supplication Allah took a covenant from Abraham and Ishmael to purify His House for those who would make their pilgrimage to it and for those who would worship Him there.

Allah accepted the supplication of Prophets Abraham and Ishmael and soon pilgrims from all over Arabia and beyond made their way to Mecca where they learned about Allah, worshipped Him alone, and were also instructed how to offer their pilgrimage.

Among those who offered their pilgrimage was Ishmael's younger, beloved half-brother, Prophet Isaac. Centuries later their descendants, prophets Solomon, David,

John, and Jesus made their pilgrimage to the Holy Mosque, Ka'ba where they too worshiped Allah.

It was not always possible for pilgrims to offer their pilgrimage during its special season. Those unable to offer what is known as the "Greater Pilgrimage" would come when they could during other times of the year and offer a lesser pilgrimage. And so it was that Mecca became the center of worship in Arabia and a hub of activity on account of both its pilgrims and caravanners.

CHAPTER 2

THE NEW GOVERNORS OF MECCA

REVERSION TO IDOLATRY

Prophet's Abraham, Ishmael and Isaac had passed away, and as the centuries passed, the worship of Allah, the Creator, became corrupted. However, the pilgrimage to Ka'ba continued with great treasures being brought by pilgrims that were then stored within the Ka'ba.

Prophet Ishmael's descendants and the tribe of Jurhumites had increased greatly in number to the extent that many decided to leave Mecca and settle elsewhere. However, before leaving it had become their practice to gather stones from around the Ka'ba to take with them, then, upon reaching their new settlement position the stones and perform the pilgrimage rites around them.

With the new settlements there also came new neighbors, and with their new neighbors came their reversion to idolatry. Their new pagan neighbors influenced them to the extent that soon idols were added to the stones; and as time progressed these idols were brought to Mecca, placed around Ka'ba and worshipped with the idolaters claim that their idols had powers to intercede between Allah and mankind. To them Allah had become remote and many ceased to believe in the Everlasting Life.

THE GOVERNORS OF MECCA

After the death of Prophet Ishmael, his eldest son, Nabit, became the custodian of Ka'ba, and after his death the custodianship had been entrusted to his maternal grandfather, Madad, and so it was in this way that the custodianship passed from the direct descendants of Ishmael to the tribe of Jurhum.

The Jurhumites governed Mecca for many, many years but throughout this period terrible wars ignited and finally they were driven out of the city.

THE BURYING OF ZAMZAM

Before the Jurhumites left Mecca, they buried the well of Zamzam and hid many of the treasures stored in the Ka'ba inside the well.

The new governors of Mecca were distant descendants of Prophet Ishmael from the tribe of Khuza'ah in Yemen. However, they failed to find the blessed well that had been given to Lady Hagar and Prophet Ishmael; although its miraculous story was still told and continued to be handed down from one generation to the next.

THE KHUZA'AH, NEW GOVERNORS OF MECCA

The coming of the new governors did not mean that the idols were to be barred from Ka'ba, on the contrary, some of the Khuza'ah inclined to idolatry.

Once, when one of their chieftains was returning from an expedition that had taken him through the region we know to day as Syria, he came across the idol worshipping Moabites. Their idols made a great impression upon him so he asked if he might have an idol named Hubal to take back with him to Mecca. The Moabites agreed and upon his return he placed it inside the Ka'ba itself and for many centuries after, up until the opening of Mecca, Hubal became the chief idol of Mecca.

THE RELIGIONS OF ARABIA

Idolatry was commonplace in Arabia, as it was now claimed that Allah had become too remote for them to worship alone and only fragments of the teachings of Prophets Abraham and Ishmael remained. Pagan temples had been erected in many locations and at a distant second to Ka'ba, the most visited temples were those in the Hijaz dedicated to the idols of Al Lat, Al Uzza, and Manat whom their worshipers claimed were a trinity of daughters of Allah, capable of interceding with Him on their behalf!

To the people of Yathrib, the most prestigious temple of Manat was in Kdayd by the Red Sea. As for the Koraysh of Mecca, their second choice was the main temple of Al Uzza, a short journey south of Mecca in the valley called the "Tree" (Nakhlah).

It was in the fertile land of Ta'if, that lay some distance outside Mecca, where the Thakif, a branch of the tribe of Hawazin who were descended from Prophet Ishmael, erected a highly revered temple dedicated to Al Lat. The Thakif took great pride in their temple and adorned it with riches, but despite its lavish adornments and pleasant location they knew it could never reach the rank of Ka'ba. The importance of Ka'ba was acknowledged throughout Arabia and it was to the Ka'ba and not to the other temples, that pilgrims flocked in great numbers each year.

In Arabia there were also minority groups of Jews, Nazarenes, and Christians, some of whom were knowledgeable of their scriptures and believed in the Oneness of the Creator. Their ancestors had chosen to settle in that barren region on account of a prophecy described in their ancient Holy Books that heralded the arrival of a new prophet to be born there. Each family hoped that the prophet would arise from their own family or tribe.

THE TRIBE OF KORAYSH

Among the descendants of Prophet Ishmael arose the powerful yet chivalrous, honorable, and noble tribe of Koraysh. It's hospitality and generosity, especially to pilgrims, was well recognized and it was from this honored lineage that Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was destined to be born.

Approximately four hundred years after Prophet Jesus' ascent, a man from Koraysh called Ksay, married Hubba the daughter of Hulayl, chief of the Khuza'ah. Ksay was a prominent Arab and Hulayl preferred him to his own sons.

Hulayl died during a skirmish that was later resolved through arbitration. Each party agreed that Ksay should become the new governor of Mecca and receive the much coveted custodianship of Ka'ba. Ksay accepted the appointment and sent for the rest of his family, then settled them near the Ka'ba.

Amongst the members of Ksay's family was a brother named Zuhra, an uncle named Taym, a cousin named Makhzum, and several other cousins who were not as close to him as other members of his family. They, together with their families, became known as the Koraysh of the Valley. Distant members of his family settled themselves outside Mecca in the surrounding hills and became known as the Koraysh of the Outskirts.

THE HOUSE OF ASSEMBLY

Ksay governed Mecca with fairness and was loved by everyone. He was also its undisputed, powerful leader. He took the matter of being the custodian of the Sacred House very seriously and raised the standard of living of those who tended its upkeep by replacing their tents with permanent dwellings.

It was during this time that he built a spacious house for himself in which he conducted tribal meetings. The house was also used for other important gatherings such as weddings and as a point of departure for caravans, and so it was that Ksay's house became known as "The House of Assembly".

PROVISION FOR THE PILGRIMS

Pilgrims flocked to Mecca each year to offer their pilgrimage, and among them were many needy pilgrims. As custodian of the Ka'ba it was Ksay's responsibility to ensure that the needs of the pilgrims were met and that they should neither suffer nor thirst.

His own wealth was insufficient to cope with the needs of the ever increasing number of pilgrims, so he called for a meeting to raise funds in which he asked the people of Mecca to pledge a modest annual contribution on their flocks. The Meccans were agreeable and by the time the pilgrims arrived for the Greater Pilgrimage there was sufficient food and water to accommodate their needs.

Ksay, anxious to do the best he could for the pilgrims also commissioned an additional leather trough of water to those already provided in Mecca at Mina. Mina lies several miles away on the route to Mecca across the arid and pebbled desert, so the trough provided much welcomed relief not only for the pilgrims but for travelers.

The income raised through the pledge was more than enough to meet the pilgrim's needs and so it was through this excess that the first covering was made for the Ka'ba from cloth woven in Yemen.

A MATTER OF SUCCESSION

Abdu Manaf was one of Ksay's four sons and had shown great signs of leadership beyond those of his brothers, who were themselves very capable. However, when the matter of succession arose, Ksay's eldest son, Abd Ad-Dharr was Ksay's choice.

Just before Ksay died he called for Abd Ad-Dharr and gave him the House of Assembly. He told him that he was going to equalize the matter of rank by decreeing, amongst other matters, that none should be allowed to enter Ka'ba unless he, Abd Ad-Dharr, opened it for them; that no pilgrim be allowed to draw water in Mecca unless he permitted them to do so and that pilgrims were not to eat unless he provided for them.

OBEDIENCE OF ADU MANAF

When death came to Ksay, his son Abdu Manaf, complied with his father's wishes and accepted his brother as the new governor so matters ran smoothly.

DISCORD AMONG THE FAMILY

It was however, the next generation of Koraysh -- including the descendants of Ksay's brother Zuhra and his Uncle Taym -- that dissatisfaction was expressed regarding the way in which matters were being administered. They felt that Hashim, a son of Abdu Manaf, who had already succeeded in distinguishing himself in many honorable ways, was more capable and should have the rights transferred to him. Soon there was a division among the Koraysh that left only the Makhzum and some distant relatives, as well as Abd Ad-Dharr's near relatives in support of Abd Ad-Dharr.

THE ALLIANCE OF THE PERFUMED ONES

Hashim and his supporters met together in the precincts of Ka'ba where the daughters of Abdu Manaf prepared a bowl of expensive perfume and placed it before Ka'ba. Each of Hashim's supporters dipped their hands into the bowl and as they did took a solemn oath never to abandon one another.

To seal their solemn pact, each supporter rubbed his perfumed hands over the stones of Ka'ba and from that time onward they were referred to as the "Perfumed Ones".

THE ALLIANCE OF THE CONFEDERATES

Those who supported Abd Ad-Dharr likewise swore an oath of allegiance and became known as the "Confederates".

THE SANCTITY OF KA'BA AND ITS PRECINCTS

Soon there was an ice-cold atmosphere between the two parties. Matters deteriorated to the extent that the two factions reached the brink of fighting to the death to resolve the matter. However, Ka'ba and its surrounding area -- the perimeters of which extend for several miles -- had always been held sacred and fighting within this area had been strictly forbidden since the time of Prophets Abraham and Ishmael.

However, before things reached the point of no return a compromise was proposed which proved acceptable to both parties. The compromise was that Abd Ad-Dharr should retain the keys to Ka'ba together with its rights and also keep his home -- the House of Assembly. On the other hand, Hashim should from now onward receive the right to collect the pledged contributions for welfare of the pilgrims.

CHAPTER 3 HASHIM

HASHIM AND THE PILGRIMS

Before the pilgrimage each year, Hashim would invite the leaders of the tribes to attend a meeting in the House of Assembly to discuss the preparations for the pilgrimage. He would remind them that they had been blessed by being the neighbors of the House of Allah, and that the pilgrims were visitors to His House. He told them that because the pilgrims were the guests of Allah they had more rights upon their generosity than ordinary guests and after having drawn their attention to this right, he would ask them to give their pledged contribution. Like his grandfather, he told them that if his own wealth had been sufficient, he would have accommodated the expense

himself and not asked them for their contribution to the fund. All complied with Hashim's request and the contribution pledge was collected.

HASHIM ESTABLISHES CARAVAN ROUTES

The life of a caravaner was perilous, but for many it brought prosperity. A caravaner could expect to face many hazards other than the extreme heat of the desert followed by the intense cold of the night during certain times of the year. Perhaps the greatest hazard of all was the fear of being attacked by marauding tribes. All too often caravans were attacked resulting in the loss of both life and merchandise. Hashim knew well the burden of the caravaner so he decided to visit with the tribal chieftains along the trade routes traveled by the Koraysh and use his powers of friendly persuasion and fairness to secure a safe passage. One by one the tribes agreed and soon the trade routes became less hazardous.

Hashim's sense of fairness and compassion toward his fellow beings was demonstrated yet again during a year in which there was extreme drought followed by famine. Upon hearing of a neighboring tribe's suffering he arranged for a supply of food and water to be distributed among the stricken tribe. This upright act and others like it led to the strengthening of bonds between the Koraysh and other tribes.

Hashim's just character and ability to organize were known not only by his fellow Arabs but to the great powers of the day, namely the Emperor of Rome and the King of Abyssinia, ruler of Yemen.

It was through their admiration of Hashim that he succeeded to negotiate peaceful, lasting treaties, which in turn exempted the Koraysh from the payment of previously enforced trading taxes. Hashim's popularity was such that whenever Koraysh traders reached Angoria -- now Ankara, the Emperor himself would go out to welcome them, show them great hospitality, and inquire about Hashim.

The two great trade routes were now secure, so during the winter when the heat of the desert had died down, caravans would set off on their journey to Yemen. Then as summer advanced caravans would set off in the opposite direction on their long trail to the north-west reaching as far away as Palestine or Syria, which was at that time part of the Roman Empire.

HASHIM MEETS SALMA, DAUGHTER OF AMR

On the route northwards, caravans would make their way to a desert oasis called Yathrib -- now called Medina -- to trade and replenish supplies before setting off again on their long trip.

The inhabitants of Yathrib were both Arab and Jew. At first, the Arabs were known as the children of Kaylah but as time passed they had divided into two tribes, the tribes of Aws and the tribe of Khazraj, both of whom were the sons of Kaylah.

In those days it was common for a man to have many wives, some as many as forty. Hashim was already married when, in Yathrib he met a noble, influential lady named Salma the daughter of Amr from the tribe of Najjar, a branch of Khazraj. Hashim proposed to her and she accepted on condition that she remain in control of her own affairs and that when she gave birth to a son, the boy would remain with her in Yathrib.

until he reached the age of puberty. Hashim accepted her conditions and the two were married.

It was a happy, successful arrangement and Hashim made frequent trips to Yathrib to stay with Salma. On several occasions Hashim continued on from Yathrib to Syria, however, on one such journey he was taken ill in the city of Gaza, Palestine. His illness proved to be serious and he did not recover. Salma was pregnant and later gave birth to a son whom she named Shayba. As Shayba grew up he loved to listen to the heart warming stories about his generous father, and it was through the example of his father's noble sense of fairness and peaceful character that Shayba modeled his own life.

THE BROTHERS OF HASHIM

Hashim had two blood brothers named Abdu Shams and Muttalib, and a half-brother named Nawfal. Both Abdu Shams and Nawfal were traders, Abdu Shams' trade route lay between Mecca, Yemen, and Syria, whereas Nawfal's trade route for the most part took him to distant Iraq.

On account of their commerce the brothers were away from Mecca for long periods of time with the result that Muttalib, their younger brother assumed the responsibility of the rights to collect the pilgrimage contribution pledge.

MUTTALIB'S SUCCESSOR

As time passed, Muttalib pondered over who should be his successor. His deceased elder brother Hashim had married four wives and from them had three sons.

Shayba the son of Salma, although younger than his half-brothers, displayed signs of leadership at an early age. Traders passing through Yathrib would relate reports about him to Muttalib, and the more he heard about his nephew the more impressed he became as his character appeared to be developing to be much like that of his father.

Wishing to know more about Shayba he decided to go to Yathrib to see for himself and visit with his extended family. Muttalib was not disappointed. The reports he received were correct, so he asked his mother to entrust Shayba to his guardianship. At first Salma was reluctant to let her son go with him, and Shayba, out of love and respect for his mother, refused to leave without her consent.

Muttalib explained to Salma that Mecca had more to offer her son than Yathrib. He reminded her of the nobility of the Koraysh tribe and that it was they who had been entrusted with the prestigious custodianship of the House of Allah. He told her that he was of the opinion that her son stood an excellent chance of receiving the office his father had once held and thereby become one of the chieftains of the Koraysh tribe. Muttalib stressed the point however, that in order for her son to be considered a candidate for such honors it was imperative for the people of Mecca to know him in person, otherwise he would simply be overlooked.

Salma was convinced by Muttalib's reasoning and knew the proposal was in her son's best interest, so she agreed to let his uncle take him to Mecca. She consoled herself with the knowledge that she could visit him fairly regularly as the journey to Mecca was relatively short, taking ten to eleven days of travel.

THE ARRIVAL OF SHAYBA IN MECCA

Muttalib, with Shayba riding behind him on a camel set out for Mecca. As they entered the City, the people saw Muttalib and thought the youth riding behind him was his new servant and commented: "Look, the servant of Muttalib -- Abd Al Muttalib!" Muttalib was amused and replied, "Be off with you, he is the son of my brother Hashim!" The mistake was a source of amusement and news of his arrival spread throughout Mecca but the name stuck, so Shayba became affectionately known as Abd al Muttalib.

NAWFAL DISPUTES SHAYBAH'S INHERITANCE

It wasn't long after Shayba's arrival when Nawfal disputed the young man's right over his father's estate. Muttalib stood by his nephew and pressure was also brought to bear from Yathrib so Shayba, now known as Abd Al Muttalib, received his rights.

THE DEATH OF MUTTALIB

As time passed, Abd Al Muttalib's character continued to grow in both integrity and honor; the people of Mecca loved him and without doubt he lived up to and surpassed the expectations of his uncle. From an early age he had displayed strong capabilities of just leadership. His uncle had taught him the importance of administering the rights of pilgrims and he diligently assisted his uncle in its preparation.

Several years after his arrival in Mecca, Abd Al Muttalib's uncle passed away. No one in Mecca disputed his nephew's qualifications to succeed him. In fact many Meccans were of the opinion that Abd Al Muttalib surpassed both his father and uncle in fulfilling the duties of Custodian of the House of Allah with all its weighty responsibilities.

CHAPTER 4 ABD AL MUTALIB

THE VISION OF ABD AL MUTTALIB

Abd Al Muttalib was not an idolater, he directed his prayer to Allah alone and loved to be near the Ka'ba. It was because of this love that he would often have his mattress spread out in a place known as 'Hijr Ishmael' -- which is the place where Prophet Ishmael and his mother Lady Hagar lie buried and also where Prophet Ishmael used to pen his sheep -- and sleep there.

It was on one such night that he had a vision in which it was said to him, "Dig the sweet one." He asked, "What is the sweet one?" but there was no reply. The next morning he awoke with an overwhelming feeling of happiness and peace, the like of which he had never experienced before, so he decided to spend the following night near Hijr Ishmael.

That night he had another vision in which the same voice told him, "Dig for mercy". He asked the meaning of it, but again there was no answer. When he returned to sleep there on the third night the vision came yet again but this time he was told, "Dig for the treasure." When Abd Al Muttalib asked what was meant by the treasure the vision vanished as before.

The vision came again on the fourth night, however this time the voice was more specific and told him to dig for Zamzam. Abd Al Muttalib asked about Zamzam, but unlike the previous occasions the voice answered saying, "Dig for it, you will have no

regrets, it is your inheritance from your greatest ancestor. It will neither dry up, nor fail to suffice the pilgrims." The voice told Abd Al Muttalib that Zamzam lay buried under a place in which there was blood, dung and an ants' nest, and that amongst it all he would see a crow pecking. Before the vision departed, the voice told him to supplicate to Allah for the continuous flow of pure water that would suffice all pilgrims.

THE REALIZATION OF ABD AL MUTTALIB'S VISIONS

At dawn, Abd al Muttalib arose and as in the tradition passed down from one generation to the next from the time of Prophet's Abraham and Ishmael, he circumambulated Ka'ba seven times and reverently kissed the Black Stone. Having completed his rites, he made his way to the door of Ka'ba, took hold the metal ring that hung from its lock and started to supplicate in the manner in which the voice had instructed.

As he supplicated a large black crow flew down behind him and not long after another crow joined it. After Abd Al Muttalib had finished his supplication he turned and observed the birds strutting toward two rocks that had been taken as idols, a short distance away. The two idols had been named Isaf and Nailah and were among the lesser idols of Mecca. Legend had it that the idols had been early Jurhumites that had been turned into stone because of their profanity. It was between these two idols that the idolaters would slaughter their animals and consequently it was common to find both blood and dung upon the ground. As Abd Al Muttalib approached he noticed an ant's nest and knew that this must be the place referred to by the voice in the vision.

Wasting no time at all, he returned to his home to get a spade. His son Harith was there so he told him to go and fetch another spade and to come with him to the Ka'ba.

THE DISCOVERY OF ZAMZAM

The sun had risen as they set to work digging between the two idols. As the people started to rise and go about their daily chores and business they noticed Abd Al Muttalib and Harith digging away in the sacred area between their idols and not long after a crowd started to gather to see what they were doing.

As much as the Meccans respected Abd Al Muttalib they felt he was going too far and told him he must stop desecrating the ground with his digging. Abd Al Muttalib refused and told his son to stand on guard to prevent anyone interfering with his digging. The digging progressed without any incident and the people began to tire of standing around and had started to disperse when to Abd Al Muttalib's great joy he struck the stone cover of the well of Zamzam. Immediately, he thanked Allah and the excited crowd regrouped around him.

News of his find spread quickly throughout Mecca and it wasn't long until a very large, joyous crowd had gathered to celebrate this great discovery.

THE TREASURE OF ZAMZAM

Abd Al Muttalib and his son removed the large stone cover from the forsaken well of Zamzam and as they did to the amazement of everyone, their eyes fell upon the treasure that had been taken from Ka'ba many centuries before when the Jurhumites had been driven from Mecca. There was great excitement and everyone laid claim to a share of the treasure.

In those days it was the practice of Meccans to use divining arrows and cast lots to settle major issues, with the ceremony taking place within the confines of Ka'ba before their chief idol Hubal. There were three stakes: one that the treasure should be returned to Ka'ba, another that it should be retained by Abd Al Muttalib, and the third that the treasure be divided between the tribes.

When the time came for the settlement everyone gathered anxiously by the Ka'ba and the diviner cast the arrows. As the arrows fell they fell in favor of some of the treasure being restored to the Ka'ba and the remainder being retained by Abd Al Muttalib; none fell in favor of the Koraysh. After the division had been settled it was also decided that the tribe of Hashim should take charge of the Well of Zamzam as it was their responsibility to provide water for the pilgrims.

CHAPTER 5

THE VOW

ABD AL MUTTALIB TAKES A VOW

To many it would have appeared that Abd Al Muttalib had everything he could desire. He was the Custodian of Ka'ba, handsome, wealthy, generous, and of noble character that had won him the respect of the people of Mecca. However, he only had one son, Harith, whereas his cousins Umayyah, chief of the tribe of Abdu Shams and Mughirah, chief of the tribe of Makhzum had many.

The fact that he had just one son had not concerned him greatly until he met with resistance from his fellow Meccans during the excavation of Zamzam. At that time he felt weaker than at any other and wished he had more sons to support him.

He felt humble to be chosen as the one to be honored to restore the well and was grateful to Allah for His blessings to him, but his heart prompted him to supplicate to Him for ten sons. As he supplicated in earnest, he promised Allah that if He would favor him with ten sons that reached the age of manhood, he would sacrifice one of them in the Ka'ba. Allah accepted his supplication and as the years passed he had to his great pleasure, nine more sons. He never forgot the promise he made to Allah and as his sons reached manhood the matter pressed hard upon his mind, especially as the youngest of his sons, Abdullah had now reached maturity.

Abdullah had grown into a handsome, fine, upstanding young man like his father and although Abd Al Muttalib loved his other sons, Abdullah had become his favorite.

Abd Al Muttalib knew that the time had come to fulfill his vow. He was a man of his word and had no intention of turning away from his oath. Until this time, Abd Al Muttalib had kept the matter between Allah and himself secret, so no one in his family knew of the oath he had taken many years before.

THE SACRIFICE

Abd Al Muttalib had raised his sons to be true men and all were obedient to him. One day he called his ten sons together and told them of the oath he had taken. They all accepted; their father's vow was their vow and bravely asked him how the matter would be decided. He told them that the matter would be determined by arrow divining and that they must each take an arrow and make their mark on it.

After their marks had been made, Abd Al Muttalib sent a message to the arrow-diviner of the Koraysh tribe to meet him in the Ka'ba. Then he took his ten sons into the Sanctuary and led them inside the Ka'ba, then, when the arrow-diviner arrived he told him of his oath. Each son presented his arrow and Abd Al Muttalib stood ready with his knife drawn. The arrows were cast, and the lot fell against Abdullah. Without hesitation, Abd Al Muttalib took his son's hand and led him to the door intending to make straight for the place of sacrifice.

ABDULLAH'S REMALE RELATIVES

Abd Al Muttalib had not considered the fact that he might have to deal with his wives as he did not know they had learned of his intention. Fatima, the mother of Zubair, Abu Talib, and Abdullah who were all candidates for the sacrifice, was on her mother's side descended from Abd, one of the sons of Ksay and belonged to the very influential tribe of Makhzum. When Fatima learned of the vow, she immediately rallied her co-wives, who were from less influential tribes, and together with her own powerful tribe they had marched in force to the Ka'ba to prevent the sacrifice.

As Abd Al Muttalib opened the door of Ka'ba his eyes fell upon the large crowd assembled in the courtyard. Everyone noticed that the expression on Abd Al Muttalib and Abdullah's faces had changed. Fatima and her kinsmen were quick to realize that it was Abdullah who had been chosen as the sacrifice. Just then, someone in the crowd called out, "For whom is the knife!" and others took up the cry although it was evident for whom the knife was intended.

Abd Al Muttalib tried to tell them of his vow, but was interrupted by Mughirah, the chief of Makhzum who told him that they would not permit him to make the sacrifice. He told him that they were prepared to offer a sacrifice in his stead, even to the extent of ransoming Abdullah with all the property of the sons of Makhzum. They were adamant and prepared to take whatever steps necessary in order to spare the life of Abdullah.

By this time Abdullah's brothers had come out of Ka'ba. Until then, none had spoken but they too now turned to their father imploring him to spare the life of their brother and to offer some other kind of sacrifice in his stead. There was no one present who did not urge him not to do so.

Being an upright man, Abd Al Muttalib did not want to break the vow he had taken, but the pressure upon him was great. Reluctantly, he agreed to consult with a wise Jewess living in Yathrib who was familiar with matters such as this and who could tell him whether a substitution was in fact permissible in this case and if it was, what form of ransom would be required.

THE WISE WOMAN OF YATHRIB

Abd Al Muttalib set off with Abdullah and several of his brothers for Yathrib -- Abd Al Muttalib's birth-place. When they reached Yathrib they sought the whereabouts of the wise lady and were told she no longer lived there but in Khyber, approximately ninety miles north of Yathrib.

So they continued their journey through the hot desert until they reached Khyber where they found the wise woman. Abd Al Muttalib told her of the oath he had taken and inquired whether it was possible to offer a ransom instead. She listened intently

and told them to return the following day after she had time to consider the matter and she would give them an answer.

Abd Al Muttalib prayed fervently to Allah and the next morning he and his sons returned for the verdict. The wise woman greeted them and asked what was the usual compensation offered amongst their tribe, whereupon they told her that it was common place to offer ten camels. Upon hearing this she told them to return home and as soon as they arrived to put Abdullah and ten camels side-by-side and cast lots between them. She told them that in the event the arrow should fall against Abdullah they were to increase the number of camels by ten, and cast lots yet again until Allah accepted them by the arrow falling against the camels. She also told them that once the number of camels had been determined all were to be sacrificed immediately in order that Abdullah might live.

THE SACRIFICE OF 100 CAMELS

After having thanked the wise woman, Abd Al Muttalib and his sons set out for home straight away and upon reaching Mecca Abdullah and ten camels were taken into the courtyard of Ka'ba. Abd Al Muttalib went inside the Ka'ba and supplicated to Allah asking Him to accept what they were about to do. Upon the conclusion of his supplication he came out of the Ka'ba and the lots began to be cast. The first arrow fell against Abdullah, so ten more camels were added. The lot was cast again, but once more the arrow fell against Abdullah, and ten more camels were added and so it continued. It was only when the number of camels reached one hundred that the arrow finally fell against the camels.

THE RANSOM IS ACCEPTED

Everyone was overjoyed including Abd Al Muttalib. However, he wanted to make quite sure that this was, without a shadow of a doubt the ransom required by Allah to decide the issue, so he insisted that the lots be cast twice more. Anxiously, everyone looked on as the lots were cast, but to everyone's relief on each occasion, the arrow fell against the camels. There was no doubt left in Abd Al Muttalib's mind that Allah had accepted his expiation and so the camels were sacrificed immediately and the abundant supply of meat was amply distributed amongst the poor, the needy, and the orphans. There was so much meat left over that every sector of the community ate from it and joined in the great celebration.

CHAPTER 6

THE MARRIAGE OF ABDULLAH TO AMINA

There was great happiness amongst Abd al Muttalib's family, not to mention his tribe, and day-to-day life resumed once more. Shortly after this significant event, Abd al Muttalib started to make plans for Abdullah's future.

Abdullah was now eighteen years of age and his father thought it was time for him to marry, so he started to search for a suitable match. After much consideration he came to the conclusion that Amina, the orphaned daughter of Wahb, would be the most compatible bride for his son.

Amina was of noble birth and her father, Wahb had been the chief of the Zuhra -- a branch of the Koraysh -- but upon his death her paternal uncle, Wuhayb had become

its new chieftain and taken care of her. His own daughter, Halah was of similar age and so the two girls had grown up together like sisters.

Among Amina's many qualities she was known for her honorable, endearing character and to compliment these characteristics she was very intelligent. Years later, Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) confirmed her status when he told his companions, "I have been chosen from the most choice."

During Abd Al Muttalib's search for a suitable bride for his beloved son, it came to his notice that Wuhayb's daughter, Halah, was also of marriageable age, so he asked his permission to marry her himself. A proposal such as this was indeed a great honor and through these kind of arrangements essential inter-tribal ties were often strengthened.

Upon his return, Abd Al Muttalib told Abdullah that he had found the perfect match for him. Abdullah was overjoyed when he heard all the wonderful things his father had to say about Amina and so preparations for a double wedding were made.

As soon as the preparations had been finalized, the wedding party set out for the house of Wahb. On the way to the celebration people came out of their houses to greet the procession and wish them well. Abdullah had always been handsome, but that day he looked more handsome than ever. Abdullah happened to pass by a Jewess named Fatima who had read the Hebrew Scripture, when she saw Abdullah's handsome face she told him, "I will give you the same number of camels that you were ransomed for if you sleep with me." She had seen the light of the forthcoming prophethood in his face, and wanted to carry the honorable Prophet. So he declined and answered her with this poem, "As for the forbidden, dieing is better than it. And there is no illegality that I can practice. As far as the matter that you desire, an honorable person protects his honor and his religion." Abdullah was astonished by such a proposal and the bridal procession continued on its way.

In those days it was the custom to stay in the house of the bride for several days after the marriage and then take her to her new home shortly afterwards. However, a few days after Abdullah and Amina's marriage, it was necessary for Abdullah to return home. On his way he met Fatima who told him that she was no longer interested in him because the radiant light she had seen on his face was no longer there.

Amina conceived on the first night of their marriage and the young couple were very happy together. Everything his father had told him proved to be true and Abdullah was as delighted with Amina as she was with him.

Two months after their marriage Abdullah joined a trading caravan destined for Al Shams. Today, Al Shams is a conglomerate of several countries known to us as Syria, Jordan and Palestine. On the return journey, Abdullah was taken seriously ill in Yathrib. Abdullah had many relatives in Yathrib and so the caravan left him in their care and continued on to Mecca without him.

THE DEATH OF ABDULLAH

A messenger bearing news of Abdullah's illness was sent on in advance of the caravan and as soon as Abd Al Muttalib heard the disturbing news he sent his eldest son, Harith to Yathrib to bring Abdullah home. Harith was not destined to see his

brother again as Abdullah died before he reached Yathrib and was buried near his cousins, the children of Adiyy, the son of Najjar in Yathrib.

Harith returned to Mecca and conveyed the saddening news to his father and Amina whereupon great sorrow fell upon the entire family.

LADY AMINA'S PREGNANCY

Allah, the Most High, made Lady Amina's pregnancy easy for her, in fact she commented that she didn't feel any different from her usual self. However, as her pregnancy progressed, Lady Amina became aware of a light shining from within her. One night in particular, the light was so spiritually, intensely bright that she had the ability to see the castles and turrets of far away Basra in Al Shams.

During her pregnancy Lady Amina had many visions concerning her unborn baby. On one such occasion she heard a voice telling her, "You are carrying in your womb the master of this nation. When he is born say, 'I place him under the protection of the One from the evil of every envier' and call him Muhammad."

CHAPTER 7 THE MEMORABLE YEAR OF THE ELEPHANT

Fifty days before Muhammad was born, an event occurred which every person in Mecca would remember for the rest of their life. It was an attempt by Abraha, the governor of Yemen, to destroy the Sacred Ka'ba with an elephant's might.

Before that time the Arabs paid little attention to the passage of years, although each month was recognized by the new moon. From that year onwards the Arabs would refer to events as being either before the year of the elephant or after it.

At that time, Yemen was under the rule of Abyssinia. The King of Abyssinia, called the Negus, had appointed a governor named Abraha to govern Yemen in his absence. The Negus was a Nazarene who followed the true teachings of Prophet Jesus and not the trinitarian teachings of Paul, and Abraha, anxious to promote himself still further in the eyes of his king, decided he would build a magnificent church with the intent of luring pilgrims from Ka'ba to it.

The church was built in Sanna with marble pillaged from the ruined palaces of Sheba, while its interior was embellished with gold and silver and its pulpit carved from ivory and ebony.

Upon completion, Abraha sent word to the Negus that he had built a magnificent church in his honor and mentioned his underlying intention. Abraha bragged so much of his intention to lure pilgrims away from the Ka'ba that word spread like the fury of a violent sandstorm throughout Arabia.

As could be expected, the Arabs were enraged by the whole affair to the extent that a man from the tribe of Kinanah, a branch of the Koraysh, became so incensed by the audacity of Abraha that he set out for Sanna determined to defile the church. When he reached Sanna night had fallen, so he crept unseen into the church and defiled it with trash and filth. Having accomplished his mission he left undetected.

When news of the defilement reached Abraha his anger was so great that he swore to take revenge and to lead an army that would destroy Ka'ba once and for all. Immediately, orders were issued to his army and they prepared themselves for the long march across the hot and inhospitable desert to Mecca. He also gave orders that an elephant should lead them as a sign of his might. As soon as the preparations were complete, Abraha gave the order to march with the canopied elephant leading the way.

Not far out of Sanna the army encountered resistance from a small band of Arabs, but they were greatly outnumbered and fled. Their leader, Nufayl from the tribe of Khathan, was captured and in fear for his life offered to guide Abraha and his soldiers on to Ka'ba.

The news of Abraha's march to destroy Ka'ba reached Ta'if ahead of their arrival, so a delegation from the Thakif, fearing Abraha might mistake their temple of Al Lat for Ka'ba, rode out to meet him and offered to be Nufayl's co-guides, which Abraha accepted.

At a place called Mughammis, a few miles outside Mecca, Abraha decided to strike camp and it was there that Nufayl died and was buried.

Meanwhile, Abraha sent his spies on in advance to the outskirts of Mecca. On their way they came across a herd of camels belonging to Abd Al Muttalib together with some other animals, so they seized them together with anything else they could lay their hands on and sent their plunder back to Abraha.

In the meantime, Abd Al Muttalib together with other Korayshi chieftains and chiefs from neighboring tribes met together to discuss how they might best defend their beloved Ka'ba. After much deliberation, all concluded that Abraha's army was so great in number that they did not stand a chance against him, so Abd Al Muttalib decided it was best for the people of Mecca to seek refuge on the slopes of Mount Thabir thereupon, the light of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, was seen as a crescent upon his forehead and he said, "O people of Koraysh, you will be protected." He assured them that Ka'ba would be unharmed saying, "Abraha and his army will not reach the Holy Ka'ba because it has a Protecting Lord." Then he said, "O Koraysh, by Allah, this light has not turned from me and victory will be ours."

As the people of Mecca made their way to the mountain, Abd Al Muttalib supplicated saying, "O Allah, it is customary for one to protect his possessions, so please, protect Yours."

Soon after, Abraha sent his envoy into Mecca inviting their leader to visit him in his camp and so Abd Al Muttalib, together with one of his sons accompanied Abraha's envoy back to the camp.

As Abd Al Muttalib approached, Abraha was greatly impressed by his noble composure and rose to greet him. Abraha then told Abd Al Muttalib of his intent to destroy the Ka'ba and asked him if there was any favor he might grant him. Abraha was extremely surprised by Abd Al Muttalib's reply, he expected him to plead with him to spare Ka'ba but instead Abd Al Muttalib asked for the return of his herd of camels. Abraha scoffed at his request but the wise, trusting Abd Al Muttalib replied, "I am the

lord of my herd of camels, so I must protect them. The Lord of Ka'ba will protect His House." After this totally unexpected reply, Abd Al Muttalib and his son returned to Mecca.

Soon after this Abraha gave the order to advance on Ka'ba and the soldiers took their marching positions behind the elephant. Now that all was ready, the elephant was given the command to rise and march, but it refused and sat still. Its handlers tried to tempt it but when that failed they beat it, driving iron hooks deep into its flesh, and still the elephant refused to march on Ka'ba.

Then, one of its handlers had an idea to trick the poor elephant by turning it around to face the direction of Yemen, then as soon as it started to walk, to turn it around to march on Ka'ba. This deception worked for a while and they succeeded to get the elephant to stand and even take a few steps in the direction of Yemen, but when he tried to turn it around to march on Ka'ba the elephant with all its might sat down and despite the renewed extreme cruelty it endured, still refused to march on Ka'ba.

Suddenly, the sky became blackened with flocks of birds named "Ababil". Each bird carried three stones, one in each claw and another in its beak. When the birds reached Abraha's army they pelted the soldiers with them. As soon as a soldier was struck by a stone he died and not one single stone missed its mark. As for Abraha, he did not die instantly -- the stones that hit him brought about a painfully slow death that caused his bones to crumble thereby bringing about the agonizing collapse of his ribs.

These miraculous affairs were witnessed by all the citizens present in Mecca that day and as a result the year became known as the "Year of the Elephant."

As for the grave of Nufayl, the guide who had led Abraha to Ka'ba, the Koraysh took to stoning it.

Unfortunately, there are some misguided people who promote the theory that the stones carried by the birds were not in fact stones but rather microbes or germs. Their knowledge of the Words of Allah is indeed pitiful, because their theory is in direct contradiction to the unchangeable word Allah Himself uses in the Koran to describe the event. The word Allah uses is "Hijaratun" which means "stones" -- and the knowledge of Allah is the truth.

Allah sent down the following chapter confirming the event:

In the Name of Allah,
the Merciful, the Most Merciful.
Have you not seen how Allah dealt with the companions of the Elephant?
Did He not cause their schemes to go astray?
And He sent against them flights of birds
pelted them with stones of baked clay,
so that He made them like straw eaten (by cattle).
Chapter 105, The Elephant

CHAPTER 8

THE BIRTH OF THE LAST PROPHET OF ALLAH, THE SEALING OF THE PROPHETHOOD

THE PROPHECY IS FULFILLED

On Monday, 12th of Rabi-al-Awwal -- 570 years after Jesus ascended into heaven to await his return before the end of the world -- Lady Amina gave birth to her blessed son in the house of Abu Talib. Ash-Shaffa, the mother of Abd Al Rahman, attended his birth and as Lady Amina gave birth her blessed baby he entered the world prostrating upon his tiny hands and knees, then sneezed and said, "Al Hamdulillah" -- praise be to Allah -- whereupon a voice from the heavens replied, "May Allah have mercy upon you." As Ash-Shaffa looked out into the night sky the horizon became illuminated so that the very distant castles of Greece became clearly visible to her. Incidentally, "Al Hamdulillah" was the same praise Prophet Adam offered as he sneezed upon reaching earth.

The beautiful baby was born without a trace of dirt upon him, he was already circumcised and his umbilical cord cut, and a sweet aroma caressed his perfect little body. Lady Amina remembered the instruction she had been given in her vision and supplicated to Allah with it for her little son, then gave him to Ash-Shaffa, the mother of Abd Al Rahman to hold.

News that Lady Amina had given birth to a son was sent straight away to Abd Al Muttalib. As soon as he heard the good news he rushed to see his new grandson. When he reached the house his heart was filled with joy and tender, loving care. He cradled the sweet baby wrapped in a white cloth in his arms and then took him to the Ka'ba where he offered a prayer of thanksgiving to Allah for the safe delivery of his grandson.

Before returning his new grandson to Lady Amina he went home to show him to his own family. Standing at the door waiting for his father's return was his three year old son Abbas. Lovingly, Abd Al Muttalib told his son, "Abbas, this is your brother, give him a kiss," so Abbas, who was in reality his uncle, bent over and kissed his new baby brother.

After everyone had admired the baby, Abd Al Muttalib returned to Lady Amina and in accordance with her vision and a vision Abd Al Muttalib had seen, the sweet baby was named Muhammad. When people asked why they had named him Muhammad they replied, "To be praised in the heavens and earth."

On the night of his birth, the palace of Chosroes, King of Persia shook and its balconies collapsed, the waters of Tiberius receded and the perpetual flame of Persia, that had never been extinguished for a thousand years went out.

Abu Talib's house, the house in which the Holy Prophet , Salla Allahu alihi wa sallam, was born, exists today and is used to house an Islamic library. It is a great shame that only men are permitted to enter this blessed place.

SPECIAL EVENTS DURING THIS BLESSED NIGHT

Ash-Shaffa was not the only person to witness miraculous events of this very special night. As Othman, the son of Abi As's mother gazed up into the night sky she witnessed the stars lower themselves and a light so brilliant appeared at the time of his birth that she could see nothing except light.

In the kingdom of Chosroes, fortifications shook and balconies collapsed, whilst the waters of Lake Tiberias ebbed, and the famous flame of Persia, which had not been extinguished since it was lit a thousand years before, was suddenly and quite unexplainably extinguished.

In the heavens, meteors were commanded to be on guard so as to prevent the satans from listening to the news the angels bore about the events of this very blessed night.

THE KNOWLEDGEABLE JEW

Amongst the citizens of Mecca were several Jews, one of whom was knowledgeable of the scriptures. He knew from his learning and the signs of the time that the birth of a new prophet was imminent and anxiously awaited his arrival.

On the night Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was born, a strange feeling came over him that prompted him to rush to the door of his house and ask some Koraysh tribesmen, who happened to be passing, if they had heard of any births that night. The tribesmen replied that they knew of none, so he asked them to go and find out then bring word to him. He felt sure that this was the night in which the new prophet had been born, and if his feelings were correct he knew he would indeed be able to recognize him by a special, prominent mark on his skin that lay between his shoulders.

Sometime later, the tribesmen returned to the expectant Jew and told him that a son had indeed been born to Lady Amina, the widowed wife of Abdullah, son of Abd Al Muttalib. The Jew asked them to take him to see the newly born and his mother, so in haste they made their way to Abu Talib's house.

When they arrived, Lady Amina presented her darling son to them and as the cloth that covered him was gently rolled back the Jew saw the unmistakable mark and fainted. When he regained consciousness he announced the prophethood had been taken away from the Children of Israel and said, "O people of Koraysh, by Allah, he will conquer you in a way that the news will traverse both east and west."

The mark the Jew referred to was circular and read, "There is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is His Prophet", and it was from this identifying mark that the sweet aroma of musk exuded.

THE PURITY OF HIS LINEAGE

In the years to come, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of his lineage saying, "Allah brought me down to earth in the loins of Adam, then He placed me in the loins of Noah and thereafter cast me into the loins of Abraham. Allah proceeded to move me from one noble loin and pure womb to another until He brought me out of my parents. None of them were ever joined together in fornication."

THE DECISION OF LADY AMINA AND ABD AL MUTTALIB

Abdullah was a young man when he died and therefore had very little to leave his wife and unborn baby. All he was able to leave them was an Abyssinian maid named Barakah, which means blessing, a few camels, and some goats. Barakah was also known by the name Umm Ayman.

During the first days of our beloved Prophet's life, Barakah helped his mother to take care of him, and Thuwaybah, who attended his birth, became his first wet-nurse.

In those days it was the practice of noble and well-to-do families to entrust their newly born infants to the care of good families living far from Mecca where the infant would be less likely to contract the many diseases that all too often accompanied the pilgrims.

Among the many advantages of sending a newly born to be raised in the desert was that it was there that Arabic in its purest form was spoken, and the accomplishment of speaking pure Arabic was a most sought after quality. Youngsters also learned the essential art of survival through the mutual love and care for one another that in turn lead to excellent manners and a chivalrous nature.

With this in mind Lady Amina and Abd Al Muttalib decided to send Muhammad to be raised in the desert.

HALIMA

Soon after his birth, several Bedouin families made their twice yearly journey to Mecca in search of a child to foster. No fee was requested by the foster parents as one might suppose, rather the intent was to strengthen ties between noble, well-to-do families and perhaps receive a favor from its parents or relatives.

Amongst the prospective foster mothers was a lady called Halima, the daughter of Abdullah Al Sadiyyah from the tribe of Banu Hawazin. Halima's family had always been poor and that year in particular had been harsh for them on account of the drought that had devastated the area.

Halima had a young baby of her own, so together with her husband, Abi Kabshah and baby they traveled in the company of other families from their tribe to Mecca. Halima carried her son as she rode upon their donkey whilst her husband walked by her side and the sheep ran along beside them. When they set out, the sheep's milk had been a constant source of nourishment for them, but the strain of the journey took its toll and its milk dried up. Halima's own milk was insufficient to satisfy her baby, and many a time her baby cried itself to sleep out of hunger.

Before reaching Mecca there was another setback as Halima's donkey started to show signs of lameness. So they proceeded slowly at their own pace whilst the others went on ahead. Because of the delay, Halima and her family were the last of the prospective foster parents to reach Mecca. By the time she arrived each of the other prospective foster mothers had visited the homes of parents wishing to send their newly born to the safety of the desert, and chosen a baby. However, the plan of Allah was that all had declined the offer to take Lady Amina's baby on account of him being an orphan, so when Halima arrived he was the only one available.

As Halima entered Lady Amina's house she found the tiny baby sleeping upon his back wrapped in a white woolen shawl under which a green piece of silk had been placed. Instantaneously, with just one glance, in the same way that the wife of Pharaoh's heart had been filled with love for the baby Moses, Allah filled Halima's heart with overflowing love.

Halima was overcome by his beauty and as she bent down to pick him up she smelt the delicate fragrance of musk. Fearing she might disturb him, she placed her hand over his chest and as she did, he smiled then opened his eyes and from his eyes beamed a radiant light. Gently and lovingly, she kissed him between his eyes and offered him her right breast and immediately felt a surge of milk, he accepted her breast and suckled away contentedly. After a little while she offered him her left breast, but even at this very tender age fairness was inherent in his nature and he declined, leaving it for his new suckling brother.

Later on that day, Halima returned to her husband and told him that there was no doubt in her mind that she wanted to foster Lady Amina's baby -- it was of no consequence to her that the baby was an orphan or that future favors may not be possible -- the baby had completely captivated her heart.

THE BONDING

It is through the nourishing milk a foster mother gives to her charge that a baby gains an extended family into which marriage to its siblings is not permitted. And so it was that Halima's foster child would refer to her in later years as his mother and to her children as his brothers and sisters.

Right from the very beginning, the bonding between Halima and her foster child proved to be a very great blessing, not only for her family but the entire tribe. And it was because of this very close relationship that her people were, in the years that followed, protected and led to Paradise.

THE PEACEFUL NIGHT

Whilst Halima was nursing Lady Amina's baby, her husband, Abi Kabshah went to tend his sheep and was very surprised to find its udder full of milk. When he milked it there was so much milk that there was more than enough to satisfy the entire family, that night they drank their fill and slept peacefully. When they awoke, Abi Kabshah exclaimed, "Halima, by Allah, I see you have chosen a blessed spirit, did you notice how we spent such a blessed night and are enjoying its benefits?"

CHAPTER 9 LIFE IN THE DESERT

The time soon came for the foster parents to set off for their desert home with their charges, so Halima made her farewells to Lady Amina who handed her beloved son up to her as she sat upon her donkey.

Halima and her husband were quick to notice the multiple blessings that constantly came their way. Their donkey had always been the slowest ride because it was frail, and more recently showed signs of progressive lameness, but now it out-ran the others whilst the rest of the party looked on in amazement asking Halima if the donkey was the same one she had come with.

THE LAND OF BANI SA'AD

Before they reached the land of Bani Sa'ad, the vegetation had already become scant and upon reaching it there was no vegetation in sight, the land was barren, the signs of drought were everywhere. However, Halima's sheep would wander off yet always

return full. It was so noticeable that the others in her party told their shepherds to take their sheep and follow Halima's, however hers always returned full but theirs did not and continued to yield abundant milk.

The blessings never ceased to escape the attention of Halima's family and when they reached home their land became replenished once more and the palm trees bore an abundance of dates.

AL SHAIMA

Halima had an older daughter named Hudhafa, also known as Al Shaima. Al Shaima loved her new brother dearly and never had to wait to be asked to look after him. It was a very happy time for the entire family and Halima's foster child grew rapidly in strength and outgrew other children of similar age.

Halima's tribe in particular was famous for speaking pure Arabic and many of its tribesmen had become famous on account of their eloquent speech and poetry; it was in such an environment that the young Muhammad learned the art of the precise diction of pure Arabic, however he did not learn how to read or write.

THE RETURN TO MECCA

Halima never ceased to wonder at the growth and strength of her foster son and thought it was time for him to visit his mother in Mecca, so preparations were made for the journey.

When they reached Mecca Lady Amina was delighted to see and hold her son once more, but an epidemic had broken out and she feared for his safety so it was agreed that Halima should take him back with her to their desert home.

THE TWO ANGELS

Little Muhammad loved to play with his brothers but also enjoyed sitting alone by himself. Several months had passed since his return from Mecca when one day as his brothers were playing not far away among the sheep and he sat alone, two angels, having taken the appearance of men dressed in pure white robes came to him with a golden bowl containing snow.

Muhammad was neither afraid nor yet concerned when they miraculously opened his chest, felt around his heart, washed it, then sealed his chest and left, leaving no trace whatsoever of an incision.

His brothers saw the two men and watched in awe what had happened. As soon as the men left, they ran as fast as their legs could carry them to tell their mother. Halima and her husband rushed to Muhammad and found him standing alone. His face looked somewhat pale and Halima held him gently in her arms and asked what had happened. He told them about the two men and how they had opened his chest and looked for something, but what it was they were looking for he told them he did not know. Halima looked at his chest but there were no signs of an opening whatsoever, nor yet were there any traces of blood. She looked for the two men, but there was no sign of them either. The only difference she could find was that the small mark she had taken to be a birth-mark between his shoulders appeared to be raised a little more than usual.

Halima and her husband questioned their sons repeatedly, but none deviated from the account they first related and were convinced that the boys had spoken the truth. Halima and her husband were extremely worried by the incident and feared that bad jinn were trying to harm their beloved foster son.

Fearing for his safety, it was decided to return the young Muhammad to Lady Amina, so once again Halima set off with Muhammad to Mecca.

HALIMA'S DECISION

Halima decided not to tell Lady Amina the real reason for his early return but Lady Amina was quick to realize she was concealing something. At last Lady Amina persuaded Halima to tell her the real reason for her son's hasty return.

Lady Amina listened intently to the account of the opening of his chest and of Halima's fear that some bad jinn may be trying to harm him. Lady Amina comforted her and told her that no harm would come to him because she had been told that he was destined for an important role. She also told Halima about her blessed pregnancy and of the light that had shone from her womb. After hearing this, Halima's heart was at peace once more and greatly relieved to know her fears for her beloved foster child were unfounded.

Lady Amina thanked Halima for the loving care she gave her son and once again Halima and her foster son returned to their home in the desert where he lived with his extended family until he reached the age of five, at which time he returned to live with his mother in Mecca.

The event of his chest being opened was described in detail by Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) in later years. He told his companions that the men were angels and when they opened his chest they were looking for a speck of black. Upon finding it they removed it and washed his heart in pure snow from the golden bowl then resealed his chest. He also said that each son of Adam, except Mary and her son, is touched by satan at birth.

CHAPTER 10 A NEW LIFE IN MECCA

It wasn't long before the young Muhammad had settled down very happily to his new lifestyle in the City of Mecca and found that he had lots of cousins, an affectionate grandfather named Abd Al Muttalib, as well as many uncles and aunts.

Amongst the children Muhammad loved most were Hamza and his young sister Saffiyah, the children of his grandfather, Abd Al Muttalib. Muhammad and Hamza were practically the same age, however, Muhammad was the elder, although technically speaking, Hamza was his uncle and Saffiyah his aunt.

THE JOURNEY TO YATHRIB

One day, Lady Amina learned that a caravan would soon be leaving Mecca and passing through Yathrib (Medina) on its way north. It was a wonderful opportunity for Muhammad, who was now six, to meet the rest of his cousins and relatives who lived there.

Barakah, Lady Amina's maid, made the necessary preparations for the eleven day journey and they left with the caravan riding two camels, one ridden by Lady Amina and her son, the other by Barakah.

They stayed in Yathrib for a month and the young Muhammad met more of his cousins, the children of Adiyy. He enjoyed being with them and went kite flying and sometimes they would take him to their large well where he learned to swim. It was a happy time but the month soon passed and the caravan destined for Mecca was ready to leave, so they made their farewells and departed.

THE DEATH OF LADY AMINA

As the caravan journeyed to Mecca, Lady Amina was taken seriously ill and never recovered. The angels took away her soul at a village called Al Abwa and it is there that she lies buried.

Barakah did her best to comfort the sobbing young Muhammad whose heart became vacant at the loss of his mother and together they made the heartbreaking journey to the house of his grandfather in Mecca. Abd Al Muttalib, deeply saddened by the loss, took his grandson into his own household and a very special love bonded them even more closely together.

THE LOVE OF ABD AL MUTTALIB

For many years Abd Al Muttalib had taken to sleeping near the Ka'ba at Hijr Ishmael, the place where he had been told in a vision to dig for the well of Zamzam many years before Abdullah, Muhammad's father was born. At Hijr Ishmael his couch would be spread out for him and more often than not it was there that one would find him.

There was an unwritten rule that no one sat on his couch, not even his young son Hamza, however such was the love he had for his grandson Muhammad that he alone was welcome to join him there. One day some of Muhammad's uncles found him sitting on the couch and suggested he should not do so. Immediately, his grandfather told them, "Let my son stay, by Allah, he has a great future." The young Muhammad was a constant source of pleasure to his grandfather and both enjoyed the company of each other. Such was his endearing personality that anyone who met Muhammad loved him.

It was noticeable that even at such a tender age, Muhammad showed signs of wisdom far beyond his years and when Abd Al Muttalib attended important tribal meetings in the House of Assembly with other elders of the tribe, he would take his grandson with him. Muhammad's opinion was often sought in earnest despite his age, whereupon, Abd Al Muttalib would proudly comment, "There is a great future ahead for my son!" Abd Al Muttalib always referred with pride to his grandson as being his "son".

THE DEATH OF ABD AL MUTTALIB

Abd Al Muttalib was now eighty-two years of age and a few months after his grandson's eighth birthday he was taken ill and passed away. Before Abd Al Muttalib died he entrusted the care of his grandson to his son Abu Talib, the blood brother of Muhammad's father Abdullah, so without hesitation Abu Talib gladly became Muhammad's guardian and took him into his own household.

As Abd Al Muttalib's bier was carried to a place known as Al Hujun for burial, many walked in his funeral procession and his young grandson shed many tears as he walked with them to the graveside. It was a time of great sorrow.

Like his father before him, Abu Talib became a loving guardian to his nephew and his wife, Fatima, daughter of Asad, Hashim's son, and half brother of Abd Al Muttalib, did all she could to compensate for the mother he had lost. Indeed, such was the degree of her care that in later years after her beloved trust had attained prophethood, he told those around him that rather than let him go hungry, Fatima would have preferred to let her own children go without, but he was never of a greedy nature and would share whatever he was given.

Upon the death of Abd Al Muttalib the ascendancy to the house of Hashim had weakened for his family. All but one of the honorable offices he had held for so long now passed to Harb, the son of Umayya. The only position left for his household was that of providing for the pilgrims.

THE GUARDIANSHIP OF ABU TALIB

When Abd Al Muttalib passed away there was very little left for his heirs to inherit and Abu Talib, although his circumstances were restricted, was rich in heritage, honor, and nobility. Like his father, he loved his nephew dearly and there wasn't anything he would not do for him. Many a night the young Muhammad would be found snuggled up to his uncle in bed, sleeping peacefully until the light of the morning.

During the day, Muhammad would go with him wherever he might go and when he was old enough Abu Talib taught him the skill of how to be a master shepherd, with both tenderness and care. Abu Talib's flock was a vital source of food and income to his family. It was a position of trust and one will no doubt recall that most prophets, peace be upon them, were shepherds at one time or another during their lives.

THE DROUGHT

Drought had stricken Mecca and its neighboring settlements in the valley yet again. It was a hard time for everyone both old and young alike. Abu Talib was highly respected in his tribe and in times of need such as this, they would often turn to him for help and advice.

The situation continued to worsen, so in desperation several of the Koraysh went to Abu Talib to ask him to pray for rain. Muhammad was with him and heard their request so together, with Abu Talib carrying him on his shoulders, they made their way to the Ka'ba to supplicate to Allah.

As they entered the precincts of Ka'ba the sky was blue and the heat of the sun beat down just as it had done so for many weeks. Muhammad, with his tiny hand held on tightly to his uncle's fingers and together they supplicated for rain. Within moments, clouds gathered from all directions and rain started to fall -- the drought was over. Like Halima, Abu Talib was quick to recognize the multiple blessings he and others shared on account of his nephew.

CHAPER 11 THE EARLY YEARS

It was time for the annual trip to Syria. Even though Hashim had secured pacts with tribes along the caravan route many years before, the journey was arduous and not without danger. With this in mind Abu Talib decided to leave his nephew behind thinking it was better for him to remain at home with Fatima and his other children.

When the time came for the caravan to depart, Muhammad, who was now twelve years old, rushed up to him and threw his arms around him. Abu Talib never had the heart to refuse his nephew anything at all and so it was agreed that he would join him on the long trip north to Syria.

BUHAIRAH, THE MONK

After many weeks of arduous travel the caravan reached a place called Tayma, a village on the outskirts of Basra.

It was there that a monk by the name of Buhairah lived alone in a hermitage that he had inherited from a succession of hermit monks. Over the centuries, important religious documents had been brought to the hermitage and left by his predecessors so Buhairah had made it his life's work to study them well and had become very knowledgeable. In the documents were prophecies that told of another prophet to come after Jesus, peace be upon him. The prophecies described in detail the time in which he would be born, his appearance, character, and background and it was Buhairah's dearest wish to be blessed to live long enough to see him.

One day as Buhairah was meditating outside his hermitage he noticed a caravan in the distance making its way towards the city. It was a common sight to see caravans making their way there, but as he gazed towards it he noticed that there was something very different about this one. In the blue sky was a lone white cloud that floated just above the caravaners heads, when the caravan changed direction the cloud would follow. He watched the caravan more intently and when it started to descend the neighboring hills he witnessed the palm trees bow their branches as the caravan passed by. He noticed something else even more strange: when the caravan came to rest under the trees the cloud disappeared and the palm branches bowed down still further to provide a dense and cooling shade.

Just before the caravan reached the market place it halted again under the shade of the trees and Muhammad, being the youngest, was asked to tend to the camels whilst the others went to the marketplace. Buhairah made haste to greet the caravaners and invited them to eat with him; the caravan had stopped there many times before, but Buhairah had never invited them nor yet any other caravaners to join him.

As they sat down to eat Buhairah looked at each one in turn, then asked if there was anyone missing from the party. They informed him that there was another, a boy whom they had asked to tend their camels. Buhairah insisted that the boy should join them and the caravaners felt embarrassed at their unintentional forgetfulness, so Muhammad was invited to join them. When he arrived, Buhairah observed his appearance and manners closely. After a while he questioned him and then asked him to swear by the idols of Mecca -- which was common practice amongst the Arabs. Muhammad refused saying, "There is nothing more hateful to me than to do that."

The answers Muhammad gave Buhairah convinced him ninety-nine percent that the young boy in whose company he was, was none other than the one prophesied in the scriptures to become the last Prophet of Allah. However, one thing bothered him. Abu Talib had referred to Muhammad as being his son and the scriptures stated quite clearly that the last prophet would be an orphan, so he inquired about Muhammad's parents and was told that indeed Muhammad was an orphan and that Abu Talib was not his real father, rather he was his paternal uncle.

Now Buhairah knew for certain that his dearest wish had been fulfilled and that he had been blessed to live long enough to meet the boy destined to be the last Prophet of Allah. He was overcome with joy but at the same time a great sense of fear struck deep within his heart. He told Abu Talib that he must take great care of Muhammad and advised him not to continue onto Basra as he feared the descendants of the Jews that had migrated to Arabia many years before to await the arrival of the last prophet would also notice his signs and try to harm him as he was not of their race. Abu Talib took Buhairah's advice and they returned to Mecca.

EARLY CHARACTER

Muhammad had grown into a quiet, thoughtful youth preferring to look after his uncle's sheep rather than playing with the other children of Mecca. He loved the peace and tranquility of the valleys and mountainside and whilst tending his uncle's flock would pass his time observing and marveling at the wonders of the creation of Allah.

Like all boys of the Koraysh tribe he was taught the art of manhood and how best to defend himself. Muhammad had very keen eyesight and so it wasn't surprising that he became an excellent archer like his ancestor Prophet Ishmael.

His reputation for being honest, trustworthy and among other fine qualities, intelligent, was recognized by all who knew him. However, it wasn't until after his prophethood that he learned to read or write.

THE WEDDING

There was to be a wedding in the city, so elaborate preparations had already been made and a fine table prepared. When Muhammad's friends learned of the festivities they were anxious to join in all the fun and rushed to find Muhammad to ask him to go with them. Festivities such as these did not attract him very much but his friends wanted him to go with him and he was not a person to disappoint anyone, so he agreed to accompany them.

As they neared the bride's house the sound of music grew louder and louder. Suddenly, Muhammad was overcome by extreme tiredness so he told his friends to go on without him, and shortly thereafter fell sound asleep and didn't wake up until the following day when the festivities were over.

THE AGE OF IGNORANCE

The situation in Arabia had deteriorated to such an extent that murder, lewdness, profanity, gambling, and drunkenness in conjunction with other depravities had become common. The poor and weak were treated very badly and the position of women was quite deplorable. Many women were deprived of all their rights, they could be bought and sold at whim and if they happened to inherit, their wealth was more likely than not, ceased by their spouse.

To many, the greatest shame for a woman was to give birth to a daughter. She alone was blamed and disgrace fell upon the family. All too often innocent baby girls were buried alive or even strangled at birth.

Most tribes knew little or no form of government and each tribe was independent from the other except for the occasional alliance; as a result rivalries and deep rooted jealousy often prevailed. Tribal feuds were common and all too often the origin of the feud had faded from memory but that was of no consequence, a feud was a feud, and therefore it was perpetuated without regard, from one generation to the next resulting in the shedding of much blood.

As for the Ka'ba, it now housed over 360 idols and fortune-tellers were consulted for both major and trivial decisions. Superstition was now a way of life and very few knew how to read or write -- it was a dark age -- the age of ignorance.

THE BATTLE OF FIJAR

Muhammad was fifteen years of age when a clash between the tribes of Koraysh under the command of Harb, Ummaya's son and the Banu Huwazin erupted.

Since the time of Prophets Abraham and Ishmael, certain months of the year   had been held sacred. During these months physical hostilities between the tribes had become strictly forbidden. However, the rule was broken when Al Barrad, Kais Al Kinani's son, killed Urwah Al Rahal, Utbah Al Huwazini's son.

The battle that ensued became known as the "Battle of Fijar" because it took place during the forbidden months. Abu Talib took part in the fighting which was destined to erupt spasmodically over a period of four years, however Muhammad did not take part, rather he gathered stray arrows for his uncle.

THE TREATY OF FUDUL

After the recent battle the chieftains of the divided tribe of Koraysh known as the "Perfumed Ones" and the "Confederates" put aside their differences and met together in the house of Abdullah, Judan's son. They realized that if they were to show any sign of weakness between them it could result in either party falling prey to an enemy, which in the long term could bring about the fall of the Koraysh tribe.

There was also another important factor to take care of that related to the protection of persons who were harmed and the support of not only of the weak living in Mecca, but also the visitors who suffered injustice on account of their weakened position. All who were present took an oath that from that day onward they would take each other under their protection and ensure that an injured party received their rights. This treaty was indeed a landmark as injustice was rampant.

Such was the importance of this treaty that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) later told his companions, "Indeed, I witnessed with my uncles, in the house of Abdullah Judan's son, a treaty which is more beloved to me than a herd of cattle. Now in Islam, if I were to be asked to partake in something similar, I would accept."

Those that participated in the treaty were the descendants of Hashim, Muttalib, Abd Manaf, Asad, Zuhra and Tamin together with the young Muhammad and his uncles.

Abu Bakr, who was in later years to become one of the most sincere and dearest friends of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), in the company of his father Abu Kuhafah of Taym were also participants.

THE ENFORCEMENT OF THE TREATY

Amongst the Koraysh tribes known as "Confederates" was that of Sahm. It was from that tribe a man of note agreed to purchase some valuable goods from a merchant visiting Mecca from Yemen. The deal was struck, the tribesman of Sahm received his goods, but then refused to pay the agreed price.

Although the merchant from Yemen was far from home and had no fellow tribesmen to support him, he was not daunted by the weakness of his position. He climbed to the top of Abu Kubays, a nearby hill on which the Black Stone which now graced the wall of Ka'ba had been found, and appealed to those present about the unjust transaction. His plaint fell upon the ears of Abdullah, Judan's son, chief of Taym who offered the use of his house to hear the matter, and so a meeting was convened.

Notables from both the "Perfumed Ones" and the "Confederates" gathered together in his house to hear the complaint whereupon the tribesman from Sahm was ordered to pay his debt and those allied to his tribe who were not present at the recent oath-taking raised no objection.

TRADE

By now, Muhammad was a young man. The caravan journeys he had made with his uncle had taught him many things, so it was natural that he too should take to trading as a livelihood.

There were those in Mecca who gained much wealth through trading. Some of them, for one reason or another, choose not to accompany the caravans on their missions, preferring to entrust their goods and money to a caravaner who would in return be given a share of the profit. However, reliable and trustworthy people had become increasingly difficult to find.

Muhammad's word was his bond and his reputation for fairness, honesty, and trustworthiness were known by all in Mecca, so when he started to trade on behalf of others, Meccan businessmen welcomed him as their profit-sharing partner.

It was not only with their trade that the Meccans trusted him. They trusted him completely in the knowledge that anything placed in his safe-keeping would be returned without decrease. One might have expected that he would have been paid a fee for such service, however he never requested, desired, nor accepted a fee. His inherent sense of fairness dictated that receiving a fee would ultimately detract from the value of the person's wealth.

Such was his impeccable reputation that both businessmen and tribesmen would refer to him as "Al Amin", the trustworthy.

It was through Muhammad's example of fair-trading that in later years, his companions emulated his practice and became very successful in all aspects of commerce. Those who traded with them, be they Muslim or non-Muslim in Arabia or in other countries, knew that they could rely upon their trading partner and would never be cheated.

THE UNSETTLED TRANSACTION

Muhammad had negotiated a business transaction with a man by the name of Abdullah. However, part of the transaction remained unsettled, so it was agreed that the two should meet again to finalize the matter on a specific day.

The matter slipped Abdullah's memory and Muhammad waited patiently for him to arrive for three days. On the third day when Abdullah finally arrived, Muhammad neither raised his voice nor did he take offense at being kept waiting, the only comment he made was that he had been concerned for him on account of his delayed arrival. This degree of tolerance and concern were indeed very rare qualities to be found in Arabs of that day.

It was not in Muhammad's nature to quarrel nor yet to turn anyone away. In fact the more impertinent and ill-tempered a person behaved towards him, the more tolerant and graceful he became. Later on during his prophethood, the sincere followers of prophets Moses and Jesus made it known that this characteristic, together with his description and other signs, were written in their Holy Books so that they might easily recognize and follow the last Prophet of the Creator.

CHAPTER 12 MARRIAGE

KHADIJAH, DAUGHTER OF KHUWAULID

Among the traders of Mecca was a well respected, honorable, refined, wealthy widowed lady named Khadijah. She was very beautiful and had many suitors, however, she declined their offers of marriage.

Abu Talib suggested to his nephew, who was now twenty-four, that he might wish to contact Khadijah to ask whether she might like him to trade on her behalf. Muhammad, having dealt only with male traders, was somewhat respectfully shy to ask her, so he told his uncle that perhaps she would contact him if she needed his services.

When news of the conversation reached Khadijah, who was twelve years his senior, she told those close to her that if she had only known he was willing to trade with her wealth she would have offered him the opportunity long before, and so a messenger was sent to invite him to come to her house and discuss arrangements.

When Khadijah met Muhammad she respectfully asked if he would take it upon himself to act on her behalf with her merchandise. She told him that she had already learned of his reputation for honesty and truthfulness and knew of his high morality. Muhammad agreed and as a mark of appreciation she told him she would gift him with twice the usual amount. Muhammad accepted, thanked Khadijah for her generosity, and returned to his uncle to tell him the good news. His uncle was delighted and told him Allah had sent him this blessing.

Just before the end of the month of Dhul Hijjah, Muhammad, in the company of Khadijah's devoted servant Maysarah, set out on his first trip. Upon reaching a place called Tayma, Muhammad and Maysarah sat down to rest under the shade of a tree

not far from the hermitage of a monk named Nastura, who surprisingly rushed out to greet him.

After the exchange of greetings, Nastura kissed Muhammad's head and feet then said, "I believe you, and bear witness that you are the one Allah mentioned in the Torah." When Nastura saw the mark between his shoulders, he kissed him yet again and bore witness that Muhammad was to become none other than the Messenger of Allah, the illiterate prophet of whom Prophet Jesus, peace be upon him, had prophesied would come. Then, he turned to Maysarah and told him, "He is the last Prophet, I wish I could be with him when he is called!" Maysarah was taken aback by Nastura's statement, it was indeed something to tell his mistress.

After taking their farewells Muhammad and Maysarah continued on their way to Basra and as the heat of the mid-day sun blazed down, Maysarah noticed clouds, driven by two angels, casting their continuous, protective shade over his companion.

When they reached their destination Muhammad concluded his commerce and wasted no time setting off back to Mecca. Many days passed before they reached the familiar outskirts of Mecca then at long last, they finally reached Khadijah's house around mid-day.

Just before their arrival Khadijah who had been resting in an upper room, happened to glance out of her window and saw them returning, riding on their camels. Then to her amazement, as she looked up into the sky she saw the clouds drifting above Muhammad, shading him from the intense heat of the sun.

After the camels had been attended, Muhammad went to greet Khadijah and tell her of the trades he had made; to her surprise she found her commerce had doubled. Khadijah, true to her word kept her promise and gave Muhammad his handsome gift. Later, Khadijah spoke to Maysarah about the matter of the clouds and he too confirmed he had seen the same thing throughout the journey. He also related the bewildering conversation and witnessing of the hermit monk, Nastura, and told of the many blessings they encountered upon their journey.

THE MARRIAGE BETWEEN MUHAMMAD AND KHADIJAH

Khadijah had been deeply moved and impressed by the things Maysarah told her. Her cousin, Warakah, who was well versed in the scriptures, also spoke highly of him and so she sent her friend, Nufaysah, to discreetly inquire why he had not married.

His reply was simple, it was because he had very little money to support a wife and family. Nufaysah asked him if he would consider marrying a rich, beautiful lady of noble birth, whereupon Muhammad inquired who the lady might be and was told it was Khadijah. Muhammad was very happy. He respected Khadijah as she was known among the ladies of the Koraysh as the "Mistress of the Koraysh" and "Al Tahirah" - the pure.

Muhammad went to Abu Talib to tell of the proposal and they, together with Hamza went to ask Khadijah's uncle for her hand in marriage as her father had passed away. Khadijah's uncle, Amr son of Asad gave his permission and the day of the wedding was set.

On the day of their marriage, Muhammad released Barakah, his maid, from service. Shortly after, Barakah married a man from Yathrib and later gave birth to a son named Ayman. However, in the years to come Barakah was to return to the Prophet's household.

CHAPTER 13

ZAID

As part of his wedding gift, Khadijah gave her husband the services of a youth named Zaid from the tribe of Kalb in Syria.

Several years before, Zaid's mother had taken her son to visit her family in the tribe of Tayy. During their visit the village had been raided by marauders from the tribe of Bani Kayn and amongst their plunder they seized Zaid then sold him in Mecca. Zaid's father, Haritha, had led a search party to find his son, but the search proved unsuccessful -- there was no trace whatsoever of him and he feared the worst.

Khadijah and Muhammad had been married for only a few months when the pilgrimage season began and soon pilgrims from all over Arabia and beyond came to Mecca. It was in that year that tribesmen from Kalb decided to partake in the pilgrimage and by chance Zaid happened to see and recognize some of them.

Zaid knew his parents would have grieved over his loss. At first, he too had been devastated at being torn from his parents, but nowadays his circumstances had changed and he was very happy living in the household of Muhammad. However, now that the opportunity presented itself he was able to send his parents a comforting message via the pilgrims.

Members of Zaid's family were recognized as master poets so he composed a verse conveying the news that he was alive, happy, and well. The verse told them not to grieve for him any longer because he lived near the Holy Ka'ba with a blessed and noble family.

As soon as the pilgrims reached home they went straight to Haritha and delivered the poem. Haritha was overjoyed to receive news that his son was alive and immediately ordered mounts to be made ready for himself and his brother to ride to Mecca to ransom his son.

Upon reaching Mecca they inquired the way to the house of Muhammad and when they reached it, earnestly begged him to allow them to ransom Zaid. Haritha was prepared to offer any amount of money to free his son, however they were surprised when Muhammad told them that if Zaid wished to return with them he was free to do so and the payment of a ransom was unnecessary.

Zaid was sent for and asked if he recognized the two men standing before him. Zaid was overjoyed to see his father and uncle again and confirmed that they were indeed his family. Then, Muhammad asked if he wished to return with them or remain with him in his household. The reply Zaid's father and uncle were about to hear astounded them: Zaid replied that he wished to remain as he was happy where he was. Zaid's father could not comprehend how anyone, let alone his own son, could choose the life

of a servant to that of a freeman, but Zaid respectfully told them that he did not wish it otherwise.

Upon hearing these touching words, Muhammad took Zaid by the hand and went to the Ka'ba. There he announced Zaid's freedom saying, "All those who are present, bear witness that Zaid is as my son, he is my heir and I am his."

Haritha and his brother returned home and told their fellow tribesmen of Zaid's decision. They recounted the circumstances and the great bond they had witnessed between Muhammad and Zaid, and told them that Zaid was a freeman.

THE DAILY LIFE OF MUHAMMAD AND KHADIJAH

Muhammad's marriage with Khadijah was very happy and blissful. He continued to manage Khadijah's affairs with great skill and her business flourished bringing further wealth to the household. Despite the abundance of wealth, Muhammad choose to live a simple life giving most of his wealth away to those in need.

Muhammad's aunt, Saffiyah, Abd Muttalib's daughter, and sister of Hamza, married a relative of Khadijah and visited with them, often taking her son Zubair, whom she had named after her elder brother, with her.

When Khadijah became pregnant, Saffiyah offered the services of her own maid Salma, to assist with the birth. Khadijah gratefully accepted and so Salma became the midwife to all of the children born to them. Their sons names were Kasim and Abdullah -- who was also known as Al Tahir or Al Tayyib -- and their daughters were named Zaynab, Rukiyah, Umm Kulthum and Fatima. However, their sons were not destined to live long. Kasim died shortly before his second birthday, and Abdullah died during infancy shortly after his father became the Seal of the Prophets of Allah, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

CHAPTER 14 KA'BA

THE RECONSTRUCTION OF KA'BA

Muhammad was thirty-five when a fire broke out in the Ka'ba, causing a weakness to its walls. Thereafter, the already unstable walls were weakened yet again by a tremendous flood which engulfed it.

The Koraysh were deeply concerned about its condition and felt it necessary to demolish it completely then rebuild it using the same stones. They also proposed to make it larger and to add a roof -- before that time the Ka'ba was roofless. All agreed that its reconstruction must be funded by pure money. Money gained unlawfully such as that earned by interest, prostitution, and the like was automatically rejected.

Such was the deep rooted reverence for the Ka'ba that the Koraysh feared their actions might be deemed sacrilegious. Although their intentions were honorable, they remembered what had happened to Abraha when he tried to raze it to the ground some thirty-five years before.

This fear was greatly increased when a large serpent was seen slithering out of Ka'ba each day and then sunning itself against its walls. When anyone attempted to

approach it, it would raise itself up in readiness to strike and hiss violently at the intruder. Then, one day whilst the serpent was sunning itself, Allah sent an eagle that swooped down, seized it and flew off with it in its talons. The Koraysh were deeply relieved by this sign and their hearts were satisfied that their intention to rebuild Ka'ba had been approved.

The Koraysh were about to start upon its reconstruction when news came that a ship had been wrecked off the coast near Jeddah, whereupon one of their tribesmen named Walid, Mughira's son, hastened to Jeddah to purchase its salvageable timber. One of the ship's survivors was a Roman mason named Bakum, so Walid procured his services and together they journeyed back to Mecca with the timber for Ka'ba.

The first person to start removing the stones was Abu Wahb, brother of Fatima, but as soon as he picked up the stone, it leapt out of his hands and returned to its original position. This greatly perturbed the onlookers who were afraid to continue with the work, however Walid supplicated to Allah saying, "O Allah, we intend nothing but good," and then started to demolish part of the wall near the Black Stone.

This time nothing happened, but the tribesmen were reluctant to continue and agreed that they should wait overnight to see if anything happened to Walid. The consensus was that if nothing happened to him then they would continue with the proposed work knowing that Allah was pleased with their actions. On the other hand if something happened to him before sunrise they would know their actions were not acceptable, in which case they would just reinforce its walls. Sunrise came and nothing had happened to Walid, so work resumed.

When it came to the removal of the Black Stone, a Syriac inscription -- the language of Prophet Abraham -- was unearthed. No one knew what it said so it was put to one side and shown later on to a knowledgeable Jew. To the wonder of all the deciphered inscription read: 'I am Allah, the Lord of Becca, I created her the day I created the heavens and the earth, the day I formed the sun and the moon, and I placed round about her seven inviolable angels. She shall stand so long as her two hills stand, blessed for her people with milk and water.'

After a lot of effort they reached the foundations Prophet Abraham laid so many centuries before and came across large, round, greenish colored stones. A tribesman, using a lever, tried to lift one of the stones, but as he did the stone quaked and its shudders were felt throughout Mecca so the stones were left alone. Everyone took it as a sign that these stones should remain undisturbed.

Near the door of Ka'ba lay and still lies, a small rock. Miraculously imprinted in the rock is the footprint of Prophet Abraham. During the reconstruction of Ka'ba another inscription was found beneath the rock that read: 'Ka'ba, the Holy House of Allah. Her sustenance comes to her from three directions. Do not let her people be the first to profane her.'

Amongst those who took part in the rebuilding was Muhammad. In those days it was the custom of builders to raise the lower portion of their garments above their head when building. Shyly, Muhammad was about to do the same when he was prevented. He fell to the ground and heard an angel call reminding him, "Your privates". This was the first occasion an angel had spoken to him. Upon picking himself up his uncle

advised him to raise his garment above his head but Muhammad declined telling him that the reason he had fallen was to prevent his privates from being seen.

As the rebuilding progressed, new stones were added to the original stones to make the Ka'ba higher; before its rebuilding its height had been approximately that of a man. Work on the reconstruction continued to go well until it was time for the repositioning of the Black Stone. Each tribal chieftain was anxious to receive the honor its placing and so inevitably, a heated dispute arose between them. The dispute continued for four days and nights without a decision being reached and tempers neared breaking point.

It was obvious that none of the chieftains would relinquish their right to place the stone. After much deliberation it was accepted by all that they would let the first person to enter the precincts of Ka'ba place the stone.

The first person to enter was Muhammad and everyone was delighted. His character was impeccable and no one raised the slightest objection, so they went and informed him of his most honorable role.

Muhammad was guided by blessed wisdom that was to satisfy everyone. He asked for a piece of cloth to be spread out on the ground, then placed the Black Stone in the middle and asked the chief of each tribe to take hold of the cloth, raise and carry it to the corner of the eastern wall of Ka'ba. Each took hold of the cloth and carried it, then, when they reached the corner, Muhammad picked it up and positioned it, just as his blessed ancestor, Prophet Abraham, had done so many centuries before. The honor of each tribe was secured and everyone was happy with the solution.

It was around that time that Muhammad started to receive visions, all of which were to materialize shortly thereafter.

CHAPTER 15

ALI, SON OF ABU TALIB

There was one year in particular when many areas, were stricken by drought followed by inevitable famine, including Mecca. Abu Talib, Muhammad's uncle had a large family, but by now some of his children had married and left home. However, the drought had made it all but impossible for him to provide adequately for those still remaining at home. Muhammad realized the hardship his uncle and family faced so he went to Abbas and suggested that they should each take one of Abu Talib's sons into their own household until matters improved.

Without hesitation, Abbas and his wife, Umm Al Fadl agreed so they went to Abu Talib to ask his permission. Their proposal was gratefully accepted and it was agreed that Abbas should take Jaffar and that Muhammad should take Ali into their homes.

Ali was around the same age as Muhammad's daughters, and so they played happily together under the supervision of Zaid.

THE GIFT OF KHADIJAH

The land of the Bani Sa'ad, in the vicinity where Muhammad had been raised, suffered greatly on account of the drought.

Whenever Halima visited Mecca she would make a point of visiting with Muhammad and his family. Khadijah always welcomed her and her visits caused great joy among the family, but this time it was obvious something was troubling Halima. The drought had caused her to lose almost all her livestock and when Khadijah learned of her plight she, without a moment's hesitation gave her forty sheep as well as a healthy, strong camel to ease her situation.

THE MARRIAGE OF THREE DAUGHTERS

Muhammad's uncle, Abu Lahab was a prominent figure amongst the Koraysh. However, even at this early stage he was not as close to Muhammad as the rest of his uncles.

Nevertheless, Abu Lahab recognized the high regard people had for his nephew and proposed the marriage of his two sons Utba and Uday to Muhammad's daughters Rukiyah and Umm Kulthum. The proposals were accepted, however the marriages remained unconsummated.

Lady Khadijah thought the match between their daughter Zaynab and her nephew Al As, Rabi's son would be a happy union and so she discussed the matter with her husband. Muhammad was agreeable for he never opposed Khadijah's wishes and so the young couple were married.

CHAPTER 16 THE PROPHETHOOD

Just outside Mecca lies a mountain called Mount Hira and it was there that Muhammad would often retreat to one of its caves to contemplate and worship Allah alone through the means of meditation. The formal way in which his ancestors, Prophets Abraham and Ishmael, had worshipped were long forgotten and he knew no other way of worship.

During the month of Ramadan, it had become his custom to make a special retreat to the cave taking with him some water and dates for his provision. When Khadijah thought his provisions might be getting low, she would either go there to bring him fresh supplies.

The affairs Muhammad observed in Mecca troubled him deeply, but most of all he abhorred the increased worship of the idols placed in and around Ka'ba, for he had never been an idolater. He directed his worship to the One and only God, Allah, who created and creates all things.

Muhammad was now forty years old and the month of Ramadan had come around again, so he made his way once more up to the cave. And it was there during his retreat, on the 27th day of Ramadan, that Allah sent the Arch Angel Gabriel to him.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was deeply disturbed when Gabriel appeared, and tried to look away, but no matter which direction he turned his face, the angel filled the horizon. Then the angel spoke, commanding him to read.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had never learned to read and respectfully replied, "I cannot read" whereupon Gabriel took him, pressed him firmly to himself, and commanded him again to read. Once again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) respectfully replied saying, "I cannot read." Gabriel took the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) yet again and pressed him firmly to himself but this time when he released him, he commanded him saying,

"Read in the Name of your Lord who created,
created the human from a (blood) clot.
Read! Your Lord is the Most Generous,
who taught by the pen,
taught the human what he did not know."
Koran Chapter 96 verses 1-5

and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) recited the words exactly as the angel had taught him. The verses he had been given were indelibly written deep into his very being and Gabriel departed.

The event was of tremendous proportion and consumed his thoughts but at the same time he was a little concerned that perhaps he had been visited by a bad spirit or an evil jinn.

In haste, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), left the cave and made his way with his heart trembling down the mountainside to his home. As soon as he saw Lady Khadijah, may Allah be pleased with her, he exclaimed with respect in plurality, "Zammiluni, Zammiluni " meaning "You all, cover me, cover me!" Lady Khadijah had never seen him like this before and he told her of his experience in the cave and then of his thoughts. Lady Khadijah tried her best to comfort and reassure him telling him that she was certain his concern was unfounded and that the event was nothing other than good tidings from Allah. She reassured him, saying that Allah would never disappoint him because he was not only good to his family, but to those in need, and reminded him that he always spoke the truth and whenever asked he would comfort and help people solve their problems and then furthermore, that he was always hospitable.

Lady Khadijah had an elderly cousin by the name of Warakah, Nawfal's son who was knowledgeable of the Scriptures. He had studied both the Torah and the Gospel and became a Nazarene many years before, but now his sight had failed and blindness overtook him. So she suggest that they should go to him, tell him exactly what had happened, and ask his authoritative opinion.

Warakah, like a handful of other people knowledgeable of the Scriptures, felt sure from their learning that the time was imminent for the coming of the last Prophet of Allah. He remembered the prophecy of Jesus, peace be upon him, to his disciples, "But now I go my way to God who sent me, and none of you asketh me, "Whither goest thou?" But because I have said these things unto you,

sorrow hath filled your heart.
Nevertheless I tell you the truth;
It is expedient for you that I go away;
for if I go not away, the Comforter (Prophet Muhammad)
will not come unto you; but if I depart, he will be sent unto you.
And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin,
and of its lack of righteousness, and judgment.
Nevertheless when he, the Spirit of Truth (Gabriel) is come,
he will guide you into all truth: for he (Prophet Muhammad)
shall not speak of himself; but whatsoever he shall hear,
that shall he speak: and he will show you things to come."
Bible, New Testament John 16:80-82

and so Warakah listened intently to the events the Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) described.

Warakah had no doubt whatsoever in his mind that Muhammad had been chosen to be the last Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and informed him that the angel who appeared to him was the same one who had visited Prophet Moses and that it was none other than the Arch Angel Gabriel.

Warakah told the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) how much he wished he could have been a youth when the order came from Allah for him to preach His Message, and warned that he would have to migrate from Mecca. The Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) was surprised by Warakah's comment and asked, "Will I have to migrate?" Warakah confirmed what he had said saying, "Yes, there has never been a man who brought what you are going to come with that has not been the target of his enemies, but if I am alive when your time comes, I will be your strong supporter."

CHAPTER 17

THE REVELATION, RANK OF THE PROPHETS, MESSENGERS AND THE ARCH ANGEL GABRIEL

The night before Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) received the first revelation in the cave, Allah sent the Holy Koran from the protected tablet "Al Lawh Al Muhfuz" to be lodged in the lower heavens in the House of Honor and there it remained until Allah commanded its verses and chapters to be sent down at their predetermined time.

The Revelation of the Holy Koran took place over a period of twenty-three years, sometimes with long intervals between their sending.

Allah refers to this great event in Chapter 97 of the Koran:

"We sent this (the Holy Koran) down on the Night of Honor.
What could let you know what the Night of Honor is!
The Night of Honor is better than a thousand months,
in that the angels and the Spirit (Gabriel) descend
by the permission of their Lord upon every command.
Peace it is, till the break of dawn."

Allah refers to the event again in the Koran, Chapter 2 verse 185

"The month of Ramadan is the month in which the Koran was sent down, a guidance for people, and clear verses of guidance and the criterion ..."

Until the advent of Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) each prophet had been sent for their own specific nation -- they were not sent to save the whole of humanity. In one of his sermons Prophet Jesus, peace be upon him, spoke of his own particular mission which is recorded in the New Testament, "He answered, I am not sent but unto the lost sheep of the House of Israel." (Bible, New Testament, Matthew 24 40:15), in other words, the sincere Jews who were trying to follow the true teachings of Moses but found it difficult to do so on account of the corrupt teachings of erring rabbis who better served and feared their secular masters rather than their Creator.

The mission of Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was not to be restricted to the Arab nation but instead it was for all nations of the world. He was sent with a Book, -- Al Koran -- that Allah, in His Mercy has promised to protect from any form of corruption.

"It is We who sent down the Koran,
and We watch over it."
Koran Chapter 15 verse 9

Before the prophets were sent to their respective nations, each took a covenant with Allah:

"And when Allah took the covenant of the Prophets:
'That I have given you of the Book and Wisdom.
Then there shall come to you a Messenger (Muhammad)
confirming what is with you, you shall believe in him,
and you shall support him, to be victorious,
do you agree and take My load this?'
They answered: 'We do agree.'
Allah said: 'Then bear witness,
and I will be with you among the witnesses.'"
Koran Chapter 3 verse 81

The rank of the Arch Angel Gabriel is that of the highest of all angels. It is he who received the honor of delivering the Scriptures to all the Prophets and Messengers of Allah, from the time of Adam up until Prophet Muhammad, the Seal of the Prophets, and visited Mary, the mother of Prophet Jesus, to bring her the news of her miraculous conception. Peace be upon all the prophets and their righteous families.

Amongst authentic Islamic records are that Gabriel visited Prophet Adam twelve times, Prophet Idris four times, Prophet Noah fifty times, Prophet Job three times, Prophet Moses four hundred times, Prophet Jesus ten times - thrice when he was young and seven times after he reached the age of maturity - and that he visited Prophet Muhammad on twenty-four thousand occasions during which time he delivered the

Divine Revelation, the Koran that contains 6236 verses as well as over 12,000 prophetic quotations.

We also know that he visited Prophet Ishmael at least once when Gabriel struck his feet on the ground and Zamzam started to flow, and at least once to Prophet Joseph when he was thrown into the well by his brothers. Peace be upon all the prophets.

CHAPTER 18

THE MIRACULOUS KORAN

When Allah intended His special miracles to be demonstrated by His Prophets, He created something similar, yet clearly superior to the highly acclaimed skills of that day. To all but the proud, the miracles He sent were clearly recognizable and accepted as such by practitioner and layman alike.

For example, during the time of Moses and Pharaoh, sorcery and magic had reached its highest peak. To prove to Pharaoh and his nation that Prophet Moses had been sent with the truth, Allah caused the staff of Moses, to turn into a serpent and devour the magical snakes of the sorcerers. When the sorcerers saw the miracle they surrendered immediately to the truth, knowing well that the miracle was a reality whereas their skills were nothing other than skilled trickery.

Another example is that of the miracles given to Jesus. Prophet Jesus was sent at a time when the art of healing had reached an extremely high level. Among the healing miracles Allah permitted him was that he might raise the dead and heal the sick from incurable diseases. Physician and layman alike witnessed these miracles and knew that they were not the skills of a skillful physician, rather they were divine, holy miracles given to him by his Creator.

Earlier, we spoke of the pride Arabs took in their language and of the prestigious rank of a poet within their tribe. At no time in the history of Arabia had the science of language been greater or more eloquent. Annual poetry competitions were held in Mecca and elsewhere in Arabia to which people flocked just to listen to the beauty of the language and perhaps partake.

Although Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was given many great miracles, the greatest miracle given to him was the Holy Koran, for its composition, grammar, eloquence, and finery surpasses the work of any author or poet.

Allah issues a challenge in the Koran for anyone to compose a chapter, or even just a verse of the same quality and beauty to those in His Koran and at the same time warns that no one will ever be able to do so. In His Mercy, Allah has promised to keep the Arabic Koran free from alteration or corruption. The miracle of the Koran was and still is apparent to all whose ego does not resist.

"If you are in doubt of what We have sent down
to Our worshipper (Prophet Muhammad),
produce a chapter comparable to it.
Call upon your helpers, other than Allah,
to assist you, if you are true.

But if you fail, as you are sure to fail,
then guard yourselves against the Fire
whose fuel is people and stones prepared for the unbelievers."
Koran Chapter 2 verses 23:24

Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was also given miracles both similar and superior to those of Prophets Jesus and Moses, peace be upon them.

CHAPTER 19 THE EARLY REVELATIONS

Not long after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received the first verses of the Revelation he received another. This time it was a single letter with a mystical meaning. Later on during the Revelations the Prophet received other mystical letters.

The next time Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received verses they included a Divine Oath of reassurance, these verses were also preceded by one of the mystical letters, the letter "nuun".

"Nuun.
By the Pen and that (the angels) write,
you are not, because of the favor of your Lord, mad.
Indeed, there is an unfailing wage for you.
Surely, you (Prophet Muhammad) are of a great morality ..."
Koran Chapter 68 verses 1 - 4

There was to be a long interval between these last verses and the sending down of the next, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was concerned, thinking that perhaps he had done something to displease Allah. Lady Khadijah tried her best to console and reassure him, but now that Warakah had passed away there was no one else except her to turn to. Then, the much awaited Revelation resumed once more and again it contained a Divine Oath that laid to rest his concern and comforted both his heart and soul.

It was in this Revelation that he received the order to preach, telling of the favors of his Lord.

"By the mid-morning, and by the night when it covers,
your Lord has not forsaken you (Prophet Muhammad),
nor does He hate you.
The Last shall be better for you than the First.
Your Lord will give you, and you will be satisfied.
Did He not find you an orphan and give you shelter?
Did He not find you a wanderer so He guided you?
Did He not find you poor and suffice you?
Do not oppress the orphan, nor drive away the one who asks.
But tell of the favors of your Lord!"
Koran, Chapter 93

CHAPTER 20

THE FIRST TO BELIEVE

Now that Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had received the instruction to tell of the favors of his Lord, he spoke to Lady Khadijah in depth about Allah. Lady Khadijah recognized the truth and became the first to embrace Islam. In those early days of Islam, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) confined his preaching to his immediate family.

At the time Lady Khadijah embraced Islam, Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had not received instructions as to the manner in which he should offer his prayers. Then, one day on the outskirts of Mecca, Angel Gabriel came to him and struck the ground with his heels. From the indentation, a spring of water began to flow and the Angel showed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the ritual cleansing procedure he should make before offering his prayer.

Now that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had learned how to perform the ritual ablution, Angel Gabriel taught him how to offer his prayers with its postures of standing, bowing, prostrating, and sitting which was the same way in which his great ancestors, Prophets Abraham and Ishmael had offered their prayers so many centuries before. He informed him that he should commence the prayer with the words "Allahu Akbar" -- Allah is the Greatest, and to conclude the prayer by turning the head first to the right then saying "As-Salaamu alaykum" -- peace be upon you -- and then to repeat the same to the left. Thereafter, Gabriel departed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned home to teach Lady Khadijah and together they offered their prayer in unison.

ALI EMBRACES ISLAM

One day, Ali, Abu Talib's son, who had lived with them since the time of the famine, entered the room and found the Prophet and Lady Khadijah praying together. As soon as they concluded their prayer Ali asked what they were doing whereupon he was told that they were praising and giving thanks to Allah, then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to him about Islam.

Ali was struck by the things he learned. He thought deeply about them and was unable to sleep that night. The following morning Ali went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him that he believed and wanted to follow him. And so Ali, at the tender age of ten, became the first male to embrace Islam.

Abu Bakr, who had been a friend of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for many years, was next. He was a very amiable, tender-hearted man from the tribe of Taym, respected not only by his own tribe but by others. He had gained a reputation for offering sound advice and interpreting visions, therefore it was not uncommon for tribesmen to consult and confide in him.

Whenever circumstances presented themselves, Abu Bakr would speak to those whom he trusted about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his message. Amongst those who were receptive were Abdu Amr and Abu Ubayda both of whom embraced Islam and changed their names to Abd Ar Rahman -- worshiper of the Merciful.

THE VISION OF KHALID, SON OF SA'ID

One day, Abu Bakr received an unexpected visit from Khalid, Sa'id's son. It was obvious from Khalid's face that something was worrying him. Khalid took Abu Bakr to one side and told him that as he slept he had seen a very disturbing vision and knew it should not be dismissed.

Khalid told Abu Bakr that in his vision he had seen his father trying to push him into a very deep, raging pit of fire and of a violent struggle he had with him. He was about to fall when suddenly, he felt a strong pair of hands grip him tightly around his waist and he was sure that if it had not been for those hands he would have undoubtedly been pushed into the fire. Khalid told Abu Bakr that when he looked round to see who had saved him, he saw the hands were none other than those of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), and then the vision vanished.

Abu Bakr's face lit up as he told Khalid that Muhammad had become the Prophet of Allah, (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and that if he followed him he would indeed be protected from the burning fires of Hell.

Khalid was awe struck and made straight for the house of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to ask him about the message he had been given. After listening intently he embraced Islam. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told him that for the time being he should keep the matter a secret from the rest of his family.

ABDULLAH, MASOOD'S SON EMBRACES ISLAM

Abdullah, Masood's son was a shepherd who tended a flock of sheep belonging to Ukba, Abd Muayt's son. One day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and Abu Bakr were passing they stopped and asked him for a cup of milk. Abdullah told them that unfortunately the sheep did not belong to him and that he did not have any of his own to be able to offer them a cup of milk.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked Abdullah if there happened to be a lamb that had not yet been mated in the flock. Abdullah told him that there was and went to fetch it. The lamb was set down in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) whereupon he massaged its udder as he supplicated to Allah. Miraculously, the udder filled with milk and they all drank. After thanking Allah they continued on their way. A few days later Abdullah went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and embraced Islam.

Later on, Allah in His Mercy, blessed Abdullah in such a way that he was able to recite by heart no less than seventy chapters of Koran with its precise diction.

OTHMAN AND TALHA

Othman, Ahlān's son, was a trader and was upon his return journey from Syria, when one night as he and his fellow caravaners slept, he heard a voice saying, "O you who sleep, wake up, indeed Ahmad has come forth!" The voice with its message penetrated deep inside him and consumed his thoughts for many days. He did not know what to make of the message, and who "Ahmad" was -- which means the "praised one" and is one of the Prophet's names mentioned in the previous Holy Books.

As he drew near to Mecca, Talha, a cousin of Abu Bakr caught up with the caravan and rode along with Othman. Talha had an experience similar to that of Othman. He had been on a journey that had taken him through Bostra when, much to his surprise a monk approached him asked if "Ahmad" from the people of the Holy House had come forth.

Talha was taken aback and asked the monk who "Ahmad" might be, the monk answered that his grandfather was Abd Al Muttalib and that his father was Abdullah, then he told him that it would be during that month he would appear. Talha did not know what to make of the monk's inquiry and like Othman the matter had consumed his thoughts.

Talha and Othman shared their experiences with one another; both were completely bewildered and agreed that the only way to understand the meaning of these events would be to go straight to Abu Bakr upon reaching Mecca and ask him.

As soon as they reached Mecca they went to Abu Bakr to tell of their experiences and he in turn took them to see the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and asked them to relate their accounts. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), listened then told them about Allah and that he had been called to prophethood. Without hesitation both Othman and Talha embraced Islam.

ABU DHARR

Abu Dharr belonged to the tribe of Bani Ghifar and had defended his rights in many hold-ups. He was also amongst the first to convert to Islam.

Abu Dharr had heard that a man from Mecca laid claim to being a prophet, so he asked his brother Anies to go to Mecca and bring back news of him, and dutifully, his brother left for Mecca. Upon his return, Abu Dharr asked him what he had heard, whereupon his brother told him that he had heard him advocating goodness and forbidding evil. Anies told him, "They say he is a poet, a soothsayer and a sorcerer, but I have heard soothsayers speak, and his words are unlike them. I compared him with the reciters of poetry and he is not like them. After what I have said no one should fall into error and refer to him as a poet. He is truthful and they are the liars." Whereupon Abu Dharr gathered his water-skin and stick and set off to Mecca hear for himself.

When he reached Mecca he did not like to ask anyone straight away about him so he settled himself in the precincts of the Mosque and waited. As he waited, Ali happened to pass by and realizing he was a stranger offered him a place to stay. Abu Dharr accepted and followed Ali back to his house, but did not disclose the reason for his visit. The following morning Abu Dharr went to Ka'ba again to wait, but this time he asked about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but no one was forthcoming. Ali happened to see him there again so he went across to him and asked why he had come to Mecca. Abu Dharr told him, in confidence, that he had heard that a Prophet had appeared in Mecca and that he had sent his brother a while before to find out more about him. However, he told Ali, his brother had returned with an answer that had aroused his curiosity, so he decided to journey to Mecca himself to hear more. Ali told him he had found what he had come for and to follow him at an undetectable distance to avoid any possible harassment. He also told him that if he saw someone whom he thought might bother him, he would pretend to adjust his shoe and this would be warning for him to go away. However, there was no need for concern, and Abu

Dharr followed him and was at last brought to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

That same day, Abu Dharr embraced Islam and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) advised him to return to his village but keep his conversion secret until he learned of their victory. But Abu Dharr was so enthused that he declared, "By Him, who has sent you with the truth, I will announce my conversion to Islam publicly!" Then, he went directly to the Ka'ba where he proclaimed for all to hear. "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is His Messenger." The Koraysh tribesmen were infuriated and almost beat Abu Dharr to death and if it had not been for Abbas who threw himself between him and his assailants he would have been severely injured. Abbas rebuked the angry crowd saying, "Woe to you, do you want to kill a man from the tribe of Ghifar, when your caravans pass through their territory!!"

Abu Dharr was not to be put off and the next day he went to Ka'ba and declared his witnessing again. The same thing happened all over again and Abbas intervened once more, then he returned home to his tribe.

Later on, when the ever-increasing number of Muslims met with extreme hostility and persecution from the Koraysh, Abu Dharr took to the roads once more. There he would lie in wait, ambush the Koraysh caravans and retrieve the stolen belongings and restore them to their rightful Muslim owners.

CHAPTER 21

THE CHARACTERISTICS OF THE EARLY MUSLIMS

Those who embraced Islam in its early years were seekers of the truth and by nature, upright and truthful.

Living in Mecca at that time were a group of people called "Ahnaf". To them idol worship was repugnant. They tried their best to follow the way of their great ancestor, Prophet Abraham, but apart from their belief that God is One, there was little else left of the religion of Abraham to guide them and it was in this group of people that Sa'id, Zaid's son belonged.

Othman, Maz'un's son had abstained from alcohol long before the advent of Islam. After embracing Islam he wished to live the life of a recluse, however Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) persuaded him otherwise.

Another characteristic of the early Muslims was that none of them were from the Koraysh hierarchy, which prompted the scorn of the unbelievers. Allah quotes their mockery in the Koran when they said to the believers:

"Are those whom Allah favors amongst us?"
Koran Chapter 6 verse 53

Upon reflection, one remembers that the followers of previous prophets were, for the most part, those considered by some to be on the lower and unimportant edge of society. The Holy Koran reminds how the council said to Prophet Noah:

" We see your followers are none but the lowliest amongst us,

and their opinion is not to be considered.
We do not see you superior to us, rather, we consider you liars."
Koran Chapter 11 verse 27

The early followers of Prophet Jesus were also of the same upright nature and similar in status and his leading disciple, James was known as "James the Just".

CHAPTER 22

THE HIERARCHY OF THE KORAYSH

To gain a better understanding of the leaders and their position within the tribe of Koraysh during these early years of Islam, one should know the roles of these prominent people, because each one was destined to play an important role in one way or another in the years that followed:

The custodianship of the Ka'ba and keeper of its keys was Othman, Talha's son, whilst the family entrusted to look after the welfare of the pilgrims was Nuwfal, under the direction of Harith, Amir's son, whereas it was the responsibility of Abbas to provide them with water.

The advisor to the Koraysh was Yazid, Rabi'a Al Aswad's son from the tribe of Asad. However, when the need came for an arbitrator, Abu Bakr was called upon.

The chief of the tribe of Ummaya was Abu Sufyan, who was also its standard bearer.

During times of war, Walid, Mughira's son from the tribe of Makhzum was responsible for organizing camp affairs. He also commanded the cavalry, however when Harb, Ummaya's son died, Abu Sufyan was thought not be sufficiently proficient to assume the command, so the position was given to Waleed who was also the uncle of the Abu Lahab, also known as Abu Jahl.

Omar from the Koraysh tribe of Adi was the liaison officer. He would also decided upon important issues such as lineage.

Superstition was rampant, and the chief interpreter of omens was Safwan, another son of Ummaya.

The office of treasurer was administered by Harith, Kais' son from the tribe of Sahm.

The chieftain of the tribe of Hashim was Abu Talib, later to be succeeded by the infamous Abu Lahab.

It is important to remember that the tribes of Hashim and Ummaya were equally prominent. For many years they had been jealous of one another and acute rivalry existed between them.

CHAPTER 23

THE COMMAND TO PREACH

Three years after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received the first Revelation, Allah commanded him to extend his preaching publicly saying:

"Proclaim then, what you are commanded
and turn away from the unbelievers.
We suffice you against those who mock,
and those who set up other gods with Allah,
indeed, they will soon know.
Indeed, We know your chest is straitened by that they say."
Koran Chapter 15 verse 94-97

The number of converts had risen steadily, many of whom were relatives of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). However, there were many more in his large family, including four uncles who were not among them.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received another revelation telling him:

"Warn your tribe and your near kinsmen,
and lower your wing to the believers who follow you."
Koran Chapter 26 verse 214-215

he thought of ways in which he could best fulfill this command. He knew he could expect resistance from some members of his family and tribe so he concluded the best way to present Islam to them would be to invite them all to a meal and then tell them. Approximately forty invitations were delivered and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Ali to prepare a shoulder of lamb and a cup of milk to feed them.

THE MIRACULOUS MEAL

The uncles of the Prophet, Abu Talib, Hamza, Abbas and Abu Lahab arrived with the other guests and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Ali to bring the shoulder of lamb and the cup of milk he had prepared. Ali thought that the meat and milk were scarcely enough to satisfy just one man let alone forty, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took the meat, broke it in half, put it back into the dish and invited his guests to eat saying, "Take it in the Name of Allah."

Everyone ate from the shoulder and drank from the milk until their stomachs were full, not one among them remained either hungry or thirsty.

This was to be amongst the first miracles of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) however, before he had chance to address his guests, Abu Lahab arose exclaiming, "Your host has bewitched you!" Whereupon his guests got up and left.

The next day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Ali to invite them all together for another meal that very day and to prepare another shoulder of lamb and cup of milk just as he had done the day before. The invitations were accepted and once again they gathered together for another meal. After they had all sat down, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated then divided the meat just as he had done the last time, and they ate and drank as before.

No sooner had they finished eating, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wasted no time to address them saying, "O sons of Abd Al Muttalib, I know of no Arab who has come to his people with a nobler message. I have brought you the best of this world and the next. Allah has ordered me to invite you to Him. So who will help me in this matter, my brother, my executor, and successor being among you?"

Silence fell heavily over the gathering and no one stirred, then young Ali got up and went to the Prophet's side and said, "Prophet of Allah, I will be your helper in this matter." Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) put his hand on the back of Ali's neck and said, "This is my brother, my executor, and my successor among you. Listen to him and obey him." There was an outburst of laughter from his guests who now turned to Abu Talib and said mockingly, "He has ordered you to listen to your son and obey him!"

Although Abu Talib, Hamza, and Abbas had not accepted the invitation to Islam, their love and loyalty to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) remained unquestioned, so it was not surprising that Abu Talib did not object to the conversion of his children, Ali, Jaffar, and Saffiyah. Saffiyah had five other sisters, but they were not as yet prepared to make a commitment, however Abbas' wife, Umm Al Fadl was and embraced Islam.

THE INVITATION TO THE KORAYSH

One day, the Prophet climbed to the top of Safwa -- the hill Lady Hagar had once climbed centuries before in search of water -- and called the Koraysh to come and listen to the message he brought, and amongst those that came to listen was none other than his uncle Abu Lahab.

Silence fell upon the crowd as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "If I were to tell you that behind this hill there was a great army, would you believe me?" Without any hesitation they replied, "Yes, you have never been known to lie!" The Prophet continued, "Then I urge you to surrender to Allah because if you do not a harsh punishment will befall you." The crowd that had just testified to the truthfulness of the Prophet lost their senses, became deeply offended and left.

EARLY PHYSICAL HOSTILITY TOWARDS MUSLIMS

In order to avoid the taunts of the unbelievers, the companions would often offer their prayers in the peaceful valleys that lay just outside Mecca. It was upon one such occasion when Sa'ad, Abu Wakkas' son, in the company of several other friends, were in the midst of saying their prayers that some passersby from Mecca came across them. The passersby could not resist the temptation to make fun, so they started to jeer and insult them.

The provocation worsened to the extent that it became difficult for the companions to continue with their prayer. Understandably, the believers were very upset by this unwarranted intrusion, so they asked why they weren't content to leave them alone to offer their prayer in peace. The Meccans had hoped that their provocation would prove fruitful and soon the situation got out of hand whereupon there was an exchange of blows.

During the disturbance, Sa'ad happened to glance upon the ground and saw the jawbone of a camel laying there. He seized it, struck, and wounded one of the Meccans; this was the first time blood had been shed by a Muslim.

Later, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of the encounter, he told his followers that it was better to be patient with the unbelievers until Allah commanded otherwise.

Not long after, the companions were to be blessed with the offer of the use of Arkam's, house located near the hill of Safwa. At last they had a place large enough in which to gather and offer their prayers in peace and safety, far from the unwarranted hostile taunts of the Koraysh.

CHAPTER 24

THE KORAYSH AND ABU TALIB

Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was not to be deterred by the ever growing resistance to the Message he brought, and continued his preaching, inviting all who would listen to Islam. However, he was deeply saddened, and concerned that many appeared to disbelieve him when he told them that what he brought was from Allah. Thereafter, Allah sent down the following verse that told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that it was not he they disbelieved, rather it was the verses of Allah.

"We know what they say saddens you.
It is not you that they belie; but the harmdoers
believe the verses of Allah."
Koran, Chapter 6 verse 33

Such was their anger that a state of open hostilities began to emerge. Road blocks were set up along the routes leading into Mecca to warn pilgrims and traders not to listen to a man named Muhammad who claimed to be the Prophet of Allah and preached against their idols. However, the Koraysh miscalculated and the warnings served to arouse the curiosity of many travelers and actually helped spread the news of his arrival. There wasn't a visitor to Mecca who had not heard of the Prophet and when they returned to their homes in distant parts of Arabia and beyond they took with them the news the Koraysh had attempted to suppress, his name was about to become a household word; a topic of conversation.

The Koraysh were angered by the Prophet's preaching on several counts. They hated the fact he preached against their idols because the idols housed in and around Ka'ba attracted pilgrims by the thousands each year. Lucrative trades such as idol carving, fortune telling, and their like played an important role in the economy of Mecca and they didn't want the situation to change.

However, the Sacred House together with its City had been created for the worship of the Creator, even before the creation of Adam and humanity. First the angels had built it, then it was rebuilt later on by the jinn and restored by Prophet Abraham.

There were also those steeped in the folklore of their idolatrous traditions who, on account of pride, refused to acknowledge its value. To this sector, the fact that their forefathers had seen fit to practice and uphold the folklore was sufficient reason for them to continue in the same way. As such they were not prepared to question the authenticity of their heritage, rather they chose to blindly defend the tradition their forefathers invented.

Allah speaks about them in the Holy Koran saying:

"When it is said to them:

'Come to that which Allah has sent down, and to the Messenger,'
they reply, 'Sufficient for us is what we found our fathers upon,'
even though their fathers knew nothing and were not guided."

Koran Chapter 5 verse 104

THE SUPPORT OF ABU TALIB

Although Abu Talib had not converted to Islam, he unconditionally offered his support and his love for his nephew remained unfaltering. Abu Talib would not entertain a word against him and was always his strong supporter whenever the need arose.

One day, in desperation, a group of influential Koraysh approached Abu Talib to ask him to persuade his nephew to stop preaching against their idols. However, Abu Talib avoided giving a direct answer and did nothing.

After a while the Koraysh realized their visit to Abu Talib had been unfruitful so they visited him yet again, but this time their visit was more forceful. This time they spoke harshly to him reminding him of his rank and honor saying, "Abu Talib! We have asked you to speak with your nephew yet you have not done so. We swear that we will neither allow our forefathers to be insulted, our ways rebuked, or our gods reviled. You must stop him or else we will fight both of you!" Having delivered their ultimatum they left in the same manner in which they had come.

Abu Talib went straight away to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to report the alarming conversation and said, "O son of my brother, spare me, and yourself, do not burden me with more than I can bear." Caringly, yet saddened by the request, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) answered, "I swear by Allah, if they were able to give me the sun in my right hand and the moon in my left in exchange for my abandonment of this way before He has made it victorious, or I have died on account of it, I will never do so."

Abu Talib could see the deep upset of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and how certain he was of his mission that he replied, "O son of my brother, go, say what you will, because by Allah I will never abandon you on any account."

CHAPTER 25

TUFAYL FROM THE TRIBE OF DAWS

Tufayl's tribe resided outside Mecca; he was a poet of high renown and as such had earned great respect from not only his own tribe, but also that of others.

It became necessary for Tufayl to journey to Mecca, so he set out on his journey to the City. As he neared Mecca he was stopped by a party of the Koraysh blocking the road. The Koraysh warned Tufayl about the Prophet, whom they now described as being, amongst other things, a sorcerer. The frightening things the Koraysh said disturbed him to the extent that upon reaching Mecca he plugged his ears tightly with cotton to protect and prevent him from hearing anything.

When he reached Mecca, the familiar sounds of passersby and the market place were now silenced on account of the cotton placed firmly in his ears and he felt at ease. For many years it had been Tufayl's custom to visit the Ka'ba and circumambulate it before attending to business. As he entered the precincts of Ka'ba he noticed a lone figure standing near the Black Stone offering his prayer. It was never the practice of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to offer his prayer in a loud manner, and this prayer was no exception, yet Allah allowed his quiet recitation to penetrate the cotton with which Tufayl had plugged his ears.

Tufayl knew well the intricacies of the Arabic language and was captivated by the compelling beauty and rhythm of the verses. He had heard many poets recite most excellent poetry, but the composition and arrangement of these words with their message was quite the most beautiful and certainly unique. He had never heard anything that could be remotely compared to the verses he now heard. Suddenly, he remembered the warning, but Allah caused his reason to prevail. Tufayl knew he was able to distinguish between right and wrong and realized that what he had just heard was anything but evil.

After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) finished offering his prayer, Tufayl followed him to his home and entered. He told the Prophet how the Koraysh warned against him and how he had plugged his ears tightly with cotton so that he would be unable to hear him, yet he had heard his beautiful recitation.

Tufayl asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him more about his message, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that the verses he recited were not his own composition, rather they were from the Holy Koran sent to him from Allah, via the Angel Gabriel. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to the great pleasure of Tufayl, proceeded to recite several more verses and concluded his recitation with the short chapter "The Oneness"

"Say, 'He is Allah, the One, the called upon.
Who has not given birth, and has not been born,
And there is none equal to Him."
Koran, chapter 112

This short chapter penetrated the depths of Tufayl's heart. As soon as the recitation had finished Tufayl could no longer restrain himself and converted to Islam, then returned home with the instruction to tell others in his tribe about Islam.

Upon his return, Tufayl recited verses from the Koran and spoke about Islam to his family and tribesmen, but only his mother, father, wife and Abu Hurairah came into its fold. Tufayl was both very disappointed and angry that so few had accepted the invitation so he returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in Mecca feeling very sad that so few had embraced Islam. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

spoke kindly to Tufayl and supplicated to Allah for their guidance and told him to return home, continue preaching, and to be patient with their shortcomings. Tufayl obeyed the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and in the years to come many families in his tribe accepted Islam under his patient guidance.

CHAPTER 26

PRE-ISLAMIC CONDITIONS IN YATHRIB

Many generations before, no less than twenty-one Jewish tribes settled themselves in Yathrib and in the early days of their migration gained a reputation for their religious schools. However, over the passage of time the tribes dispersed and their numbers dwindled, leaving behind them just a fragment of people.

Secularism was common although a religious minority still remained. The Jews were also well known for their business acumen through which they had amassed great wealth and in their heyday had once governed the City.

After a devastating flood in Yemen, the Arab Yemeni tribe of Bani Kahtan left their homeland and settled in Yathrib. The Bani Kahtan divided themselves into two tribes named after two brothers -- Aws and Khazraj -- and over time their population grew and exceeded both that of the Jews and other Arabs. However, there was friction between the two tribes and disputes arose followed by blood feuds.

All was not well within the Jewish community as corruption was rampant. There had been a sharp decline in morals most notably in one of their chieftains named Fityun. Fityun usurped his power in such a disgraceful manner that Arab brides-to-be were forced to sleep with him the night before their wedding whilst other Jewish leaders did nothing to prevent him from satisfying his lust, but that was soon to end.

When the time came for the sister of Malik, Ajlan's son to be married, Malik felt ashamed of what was about to befall her. So, on the day before her wedding, his sister, dressed in her bridal gown, made her way to Fityun's house accompanied by her brother disguised as a female attendant. Before Fityun could take advantage of Malik's sister, Malik took him by surprise, killed him, and then fled to the safety of the tribe of Ghassan in Syria whose chieftain was Abu Jabillah. When Abu Jabillah heard of the corrupt ways of the Jews he and his warriors were utterly outraged and set off with Malik back to Yathrib with the intent of putting matters right.

Upon reaching Yathrib, Abu Jabillah honored the Arab chieftains with fine gifts and invited the Jewish leaders to join them in a feast. During the feast Abu Jabillah and his warriors overcame the Jewish leaders and all were slain. So it was from that time onward that the Jews lost the control of Yathrib and the tribes of Aws and Khazraj became its governors.

Time passed and the Jews, in their weakened position, deemed it more prudent to ally themselves with the now stronger pagan Arab tribes of Aws and Khazraj. However, the Jews, considering themselves to be the chosen people of Allah, resented the fact that they were now beholden to pagan Arabs and all too often sharp words were exchanged. Many were the times they would taunt the Arabs with the news that a

prophet was about to come and that Allah would slay them on account of their idolatry just as He had done to the people of Aad and Thamood.

There were also other times when the religious Jews would speak to their allies about their religion; they told of their belief in One God and in the life after death. Their allies found the matter of being raised from the dead difficult to believe so the Jews told them that when the prophet came he would confirm the truth of the matter. The idea of the coming of a prophet aroused both the curiosity and also the apprehension of the Arabs of Yathrib, so they inquired where he would appear and were told in the direction of their ancestral homeland, Yemen, which also lies in the same direction of Mecca.

THE FEUD

For many years there had been a feud between a certain Awsite and Khazrajite tribe, and as time passed more tribes, including the Jews of Yathrib, were drawn into the feud. Three battles had already been waged with losses on both sides and now a fourth was imminent. In an effort to strengthen their position, the tribe of Aws sent a delegation to Mecca to ask the Koraysh to side with them against the Khazraj.

While they were waiting for the decision, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to the delegation and asked if they would like to hear something better than that which they were seeking. The delegation asked what he had in mind whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them about Islam and of his mission, then recited some verses of the Koran.

After he had finished the recitation, a young man named Iyas, Mu'adh's son, remembered the taunt of the Jews and got up and said, "By Allah, this is better than that which we were seeking!" Iyas' spontaneous outburst annoyed the leader of the delegation who picked up a handful of sand and threw it in his face saying, "That's enough! By my life, we came here seeking something other than this!" The young man became quiet and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left.

Meanwhile, the Koraysh reached the decision that it was not in their best interest to take sides in the feud and so the delegation returned to Yathrib without their help and the battle of Bu'ath ensued.

Not long after their return Iyas died, but as he lay on his deathbed those around him confirmed that his last words were spent in praise and exaltation of Allah, testifying to His Oneness. And so it was that, Iyas became the first person to die in Yathrib as a Muslim.

It wasn't long after that traders and pilgrims returning from Mecca brought more news of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to Yathrib, the word spread quickly and soon the entire City was talking about him. The Jews listened intently to the reports and recognized the truth in the Prophet's preaching, but for the most part, they could not bring themselves to entertain the fact that he was the long awaited Prophet because he was not a Jew.

CHAPTER 27 UNREST IN MECCA

THE FAILURE OF MECCANS TO RECOGNIZE THE VALUE OF THE PROPHET

In these early days of Islam, those who opposed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his message were blinded by their own arrogant, useless idolatrous traditions and pride. Yet strange as it may seem, when it came to taking solemn oaths or when they wished people to take them seriously, the Arabs preferred to swear by Allah rather than their pagan gods

For many years the pagan, materialistic society suffered on every account. They received no benefit for their dedication to the idols and corruption abounded in every form. Women were treated as worthless human beings and seldom afforded their rights. Injustice, murder, and thievery, amongst other depravities, were rampant. Yet even as these sad, intolerable state of affairs persisted, those who opposed the Prophet, (Salla Allahu alihi wa sallam), failed to recognize or admit that what the Prophet, (Salla Allahu alihi wa sallam), whom they had until recently attested to having an honest and upright character, brought and practiced a much better, higher standard of life for all; a standard where justice and happiness prevailed. But more importantly, they rejected the news that there was life after death where they would be held accountable for their disbelief in the Oneness of their Creator and for which there is either eternal punishment or the unfailing eternal rewards of Paradise with its continuous peace and happiness.

The fact of the matter was that they failed to recognize the true value of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) both spiritually and materialistically.

ANGER AND RESTMENT

Anger and resentment toward the message the Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought continued to intensify in Mecca as the number of his followers began to increase. One day, inside the precincts of Ka'ba at the Hijr Ishmael, a group of unbelievers gathered and were indulging in slanderous remarks about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as he entered. However, he paid no attention and continued to make his way across to the Ka'ba where he kissed the Black Stone then proceeded to circumambulate the Ka'ba.

The first time he passed by the Hijr Ishmael, the unbelievers shouted at him in a very disrespectful, degrading manner. The same occurred on his second and third round, but on the third round as they jeered and shouted their slanderous remarks he stopped and said: "O Koraysh, will you listen to me? Indeed, by Him who holds my soul in His Hand, I bring you slaughter." The unbelievers were silenced by this unexpected statement, and silence hovered like a heavy weight above the gathering.

After a while the silence was broken by the one who had been the most venomous with his slander, and in a surprisingly gently tone he addressed Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "Go on you way, father of Kasim, for by Allah you are not an ignorant fool." Soon the unbelievers began to regret their momentary weakness and vowed they would never allow a situation like that to be repeated.

ABU JAHL - THE FATHER OF IGNORANCE

Amr, Hisham's son, was an influential, power-seeking young man of the Makhzum tribe. He was the grandson of Mughirah and nephew of Waleed, the now elderly chieftain of his tribe.

Amr had amassed considerable wealth and was, to those who had not earned his anger, hospitable and had high hopes of becoming the next chief of the tribe so he erroneously viewed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as a possible threat to his future.

Amr was also a man to be feared for he was known for his ruthlessness toward those who dared to cross his path, and that now included Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as well as his followers. Such was his hatred of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Message, and disregard for the next life, that he had been among those responsible for setting up the road-blocks into Mecca.

When members of Amr's own tribe embraced Islam his outrage became so bitter that he persecuted them without mercy; it was because of this that Amr became known to the companions as "Abu Jahl" – "The Father of Ignorance" and his supportive wife "The Mother of all Ignorance".

One day, as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sat by himself outside the Ka'ba, Abu Jahl caught sight of him and seized upon the opportunity to display his foul behavior. He went across to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and in an extremely abusive manner, insulted him in a very base manner, however the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was patient, he did not allow himself to be provoked, and went home. Arrogantly, Abu Jahl felt he had made a good impression on a party of Koraysh gathered near the Hijr Ishmael and returned to them gloating in what he perceived to be triumph.

Hamza, the young uncle of the Prophet, known for his gentle disposition despite the fact he had grown into a very strong man, had been away on a hunting expedition and had just returned to Mecca. As he entered the City, Hamza was met by an elderly lady who had once served the now deceased Abdullah, Judan's son and told him of Abu Jahl's disgusting outburst.

When Hamza learned of the abuse, raging anger swelled deep within his gentle being and he thundered towards the still gloating Abu Jahl and his gleeful comrades who were still gathered around the Hijr Ishmael. Upon seeing Abu Jahl, Hamza raised his hunting bow above Abu Jahl's head and struck him forcefully across his back saying, "How dare you. Would you insult him! Know that I am of his religion and swear what he swears. Strike me now if you can!" Those that had been seated rose up to join the others in support of Abu Jahl, but Abu Jahl chose not retaliate saying, "Let him alone, for by Allah, I reviled him in a crude manner."

Such was Abu Jahl's hatred for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his message, that he was to die in disbelief. However, when the news of the Prophet's birth reached him over forty years before, he had been so elated that he freed a female slave, and for this noble act, each Monday – the day on which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was born - Allah in His Mercy reduces his punishment in Hell.

That same day Hamza went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and embraced Islam. Now that Hamza had embraced Islam, the Koraysh were hesitant to continue with their vile behavior. They realized from now onwards they would have to answer to him for their actions, so they revised their tactics, for no one wanted to cross Hamza's path.

CHAPTER 28

AN ATTEMPT TO BRIBE

Utba, Rabia's son, belonged to the tribe of Shams, Abdu Shams was a brother of Hashim and it was he who, together with notables of the Koraysh tribe, now met to discuss how they might best deal with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). During the course of the meeting Utba suggested that perhaps the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) might incline to accept certain gifts and privileges in exchange for his silence. But had they searched in the depths of their hearts, all would have known he was not like them and would never accept a bribe, no matter how it was presented. However, all were of the opinion that every man had his price, so they placed high hopes on Utba's suggestion, saying that they would be prepared to offer him absolutely anything he might desire as a recompense in exchange for his silence.

They had just reached their agreement when a late comer joined the meeting and told the gathering that he had just seen the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sitting alone beside the Ka'ba. They agreed that now was a good time to approach him with their proposal and as Utba was related to him, they chose him to be their representative.

Utba made his way toward to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) expressed his pleasure in seeing him, welcomed and invited him to sit down and talk. When Utba sat down the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) hoped he might have come to learn about Islam but Utba proceeded to say, "My nephew, you are one of us, from a noble tribe, a descendant of the finest ancestors. You have come to our tribes with an important matter that is dividing us. You have denounced our customs, insulted our gods and our religions. As for our ancestors, you say they were unbelievers, so listen to me because I have come to you with several proposals, perhaps you may accept one of them."

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was very saddened but listened out of politeness as he never turned anyone away, as Utba proceeded to describe the bribes. "If it is money you want, we are prepared to combine our properties and make you the richest one among us. If it is honor that you wish, we will make you our chief with complete and absolute power. If it is leadership, we will make you our leader and if the Spirit you see comes to you and you cannot rid yourself of it, then we will find a physician to cure you."

After Utba finished presenting his bribe, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received a new Revelation from Allah:

"In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful.
Ha Meem.
A sending down from the Merciful, the Most Merciful.
A Book, the verses of which are distinguished,

an Arabic Koran for a nation who know.
It bears glad tidings and a warning,
yet most of them turn away and do not listen.
They say, 'Our hearts are veiled from that to which you call us,
and in our ears there is heaviness. And between us and you is a veil.
So work (as you will) and we are working.'"
Koran 41:1-5

The compelling beauty of the Koranic recitation held Utba's attention in wonderment and as he listened further he heard of the creation of the heavens and the earth. Then he heard of the prophets sent to the arrogant people of Aad, and of the proud people of Thamood. He learned that all but a few of their citizens refused to listen to the Message Allah had given to their prophets, so with the exception of those who believed, they were subjected to punishments of the severest kind in this world and then even greater punishment in the Everlasting Life.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued his recitation with verses that drew attention to the multiple signs surrounding us and concluded with:

"Among His signs are the night and the day, and the sun and the moon.
But do not prostrate yourselves before the sun or the moon
rather prostrate before Allah, who created them both, if it is He whom you worship."
Koran 41:37

As soon as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) finished the recitation, he prostrated his head upon the ground in exaltation and thanksgiving. Then arose saying, "O (Utba) father of Waleed, you have heard what you have heard, it is now up to you to decided."

The sun had started to set and Utba's companions had waited patiently for his return. No doubt their hopes were high as he had been with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for a considerable length of time. However, when he returned they were struck by the changed expression upon his face and asked what had happened. Utba told them that he had heard a recitation that was uniquely beautiful yet it was neither poetry, nor was it the words of a soothsayer, nor yet sorcery. He advised his companions to do as he intended, which was not to come between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his affair. Then he swore by Allah that the words he had just heard would be received by many as great tidings.

Utba thought it more prudent that his blood should not be on their hands and commented if other Arabs were to kill him, then the responsibility would rest upon them. However, if his nephew were to become successful, he would govern them and his power would also be their power, so they would benefit.

Utba's companions mocked him harshly and told him that he had been bewitched, but all Utba said was, "I have given you my opinion, do whatever you please." The Koraysh were angered by his advice, so they decided to speak to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) themselves so that no blame for their future actions could be attached to them, so they sent for him.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), ever hopeful of guiding his tribe to Allah, went to them in haste. Soon he realized they had not called for him because their hearts had turned to Allah, rather the opposite was the case. The Koraysh rebuked him saying that never before had an Arab treated them in such a manner, reviling their gods, their customs, and their traditions. Once again, an effort to silence him was made as they endorsed the offer made earlier by Utba.

As soon as the Koraysh finished offering their bribe, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to them in his usual gentle manner saying, "I am neither possessed, nor do I seek honor among you, nor the leadership. Allah has sent me as a Messenger to you and has sent down to me a Book with the command that I should give you good tidings but also a warning. I convey to you the Message of my Lord and counsel you. If you accept what I have brought you, you will receive blessings in this world and in the Everlasting life, but if you reject what I have brought, then I will wait patiently for Allah to judge between us."

The Koraysh, deeply disappointed by the Prophet's reply told him to leave. But before he left, they contemptuously told him that if he was really the Messenger of Allah he would have to prove it to them with something that would make their life easier.

Their first demand was that he should ask Allah to remove the mountains that surround Mecca and to level the land so that rivers would flow through it just as they did in Syria and Iraq. Their demands continued when next they demanded that Ksay be raised from the dead along with several of their ancestors, saying that they would ask Ksay if what the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said was true or false, yet they knew he never lied. They continued saying that if he was able to bring about their demands then, and only then, might they be convinced he was who he said he was, and near to Allah.

With respect, the Prophet, salla Allahu alihi wa sallam, replied that it was not on this account that he had been sent. He told them that he had been sent to convey the Message of Allah and that they were free to either accept the Message or if they were adamant, reject it and await the Judgement of Allah.

On hearing his reply, the Koraysh changed their tactics saying that if he would not ask for these things, then why not ask for something for himself. They told him to ask Allah to send an Angel to him who would confirm the truth of his preaching, and for gardens and castles with treasures of gold and silver for himself. But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) repeated his reply.

The Koraysh continued to deride the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asking if his Lord knew that he would be sitting amongst them and that they would ask him these questions. Their mockery continued as they asked why, if Allah had known these questions were going to be asked, hadn't He instructed him how to answer and tell him what He was going to do with them if they refused the Message he brought.

RAHMAN

The word "Rahman" means "the Merciful", and is one of the many attributes of Allah. The Koraysh noticed "Rahman" occurred at the beginning of each chapter of the Koran so in an effort to discredit the Revelation rumors were spread that the Prophet, salla

Allahu alihi wa sallam, received tutorship in the art of poetry by a man from Yamamah called Rahman.

When next they met with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) they seized upon the opportunity to chide him still further saying, "We have heard your recitation is taught to you by a man from Yamamah called Rahman -- we will never believe in Rahman! We have made our position clear to you Muhammad, and swear by Allah that we will neither leave you in peace nor desist in our treatment of you until we have either destroyed you or you have destroyed us!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was about to leave when Abdullah, Ummaya's son from the tribe of Makhzum disrespectfully shouted, "O Muhammad, your people have offered you several propositions -- you have rejected all! First they asked for themselves, then they asked you to ask for yourself! They have even asked you to hasten some of the punishment you have spoken about upon them. By Allah, I will never believe you until I see you take a ladder, climb it, and reach the heavens, then bring four angels to bear witness that you are what you claim, and even then I doubt whether I will believe you!"

Upon hearing this last remark the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was deeply saddened because it had been made by Abdullah, the son of his aunt Atikah who had named her son after her beloved brother, the Prophet's father, which means "Worshiper of Allah".

Allah sent the Prophet verses that would forever record the contempt and rejection of the Koraysh leaders:

"As such, We have sent you forth to a nation before whom others have passed away in order that you recite to them what We have revealed to you.

Yet they disbelieve the Merciful (Rahman).

Say: 'He is my Lord. There is not god except He.

In Him I have put my trust, and to Him I turn.'

If only a Koran whereby the mountains were set in motion,

or the earth cleaved asunder, or the dead spoken to.

No, but to Allah is the affair altogether.

Do those who believe know that had Allah willed He could have guided all people?

As for those who disbelieve, because of what they do,

disaster will not cease to afflict them, or it alights near their home

until the promise of Allah comes. Allah will not break His promise."

Koran 13:30-31

"They also say, 'How is it that this Messenger eats and walks about the markets?

Why has no angel been sent down with him to warn us?

Or, why has no treasure been thrown to him,

or a garden for him to eat from?'

And the harmdoers say, 'The man you follow is surely bewitched.'"

Koran 25:7-8

"They say, 'We will not believe in you until

you make a spring gush from the earth for us,

or, until you own a garden of palms and vines

and cause rivers to gush forth with abundant water in them;
or, until you cause the sky to fall upon us in pieces, as you have claimed,
or, as a surety bring Allah with the angels in front;
or, until you possess an ornate house of gold,
or, ascend into the heavens;
and we will not believe in your ascension until
you have brought down for us a book which we can read.'
Say: 'Exaltations to my Lord! Am I anything except a human Messenger?'"
Koran 17:90-93

ABU JAHL AND THE STONE

Abu Jahl continued to deride the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) after he had left and took an oath saying, "Tomorrow, I will lie in wait for him with a heavy stone, and when he prostrates I will split his skull with it. Betray me or defend me -- let the children of Abdu Manaf do what they like after that!"

The next morning, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) arose before dawn and made his customary way to offer his prayer near the Black Stone in the wall of Ka'ba. The Koraysh had already gathered and Abu Jahl, carrying a very heavy stone staggered as he approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) who was now humbly absorbed in his prayer, with the intent of fulfilling his oath.

Before Abu Jahl was able to get close enough to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) he turned back in deathly fright. His hand had started to wither on the stone whereupon he dropped it and ran as fast as he could. The Koraysh rushed towards him and asked what had come over him whereupon he told them he had seen a terrifying camel, with a tremendously large head, enormous shoulders and a fearsome set of teeth that looked as if it was about to devour him if he continued.

Later on, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) told his companions that the camel was none other than Gabriel, and if Abu Jahl had persisted he would indeed have seized him.

THE CONTEMPT OF ABU JAHL

Even though Abu Jahl had witnessed and given, first hand, many signs he still persisted in his egotistical obsession. He now bragged before the Koraysh that he would stamp on the back of the Prophet's neck the next time he saw him praying.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) arrived at the Ka'ba to pray the Koraysh drew Abu Jahl's attention to the opportunity. However, as before when Abu Jahl approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) with his evil intent, he ran away in fright, trying to protect himself with his hands. His fellow tribesmen asked what had happened whereupon he admitted, "As I came near to him, I looked down and saw a ditch full of fire and I almost fell into it. I saw a terrifying sight and heard enough fluttering of wings that would fill the earth!" Later, when Abu Jahl's words were reported to him the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) told his companions that the fluttering of wings were those of the angels and that if he had come any nearer to him they would have torn him limb by limb. Soon after the following verse was sent down: "Indeed, surely the human is very insolent."
Koran 96:6

CHAPTER 29

NADAR, THE SON OF AL HARTIH

The Koraysh admitted the situation was now beyond their ability to remedy and although Nadar, Harith's son, whose grandfather had been the illustrious Ksay, had become notorious for his slander of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he reminded the Koraysh that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had grown up amongst them as a likable person known for his excellent standing in society.

Nadar now warned the Koraysh to be careful of their accusations for he was sure that they too knew he was neither a poet nor yet a sorcerer. He reminded them that they also knew the ways of a sorcerer and by no means could he be described as such. He continued to advise them saying that they should be careful of what they said, as he felt a serious matter had befallen them which called for a change in their tactics, and so the slanderous remarks subsided for the time being.

NADAR'S ATTEMPT TO COMPETE WITH THE PROPHET, salla Allahu alihi wa sallam

Nadar was a trader and had traveled the caravan routes not only in Arabia but to distant countries. Whenever he reached his destination it was his habit to seek out the storytellers in the market place and listen to their tales. On one particular trip he heard a tale about the kings of Persia, which over the passage of time had been embellished by one storyteller after another, and so the tale made a great impression upon him.

One day as the Prophet , salla Allahu alihi wa sallam, spoke to a group of people he told them stories the like of which they had never heard before, of bygone generations and the consequences that befell them on account of their refusal to listen to their prophet.

Nadar and Utba were among the gathering and no sooner had the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) finished his narration, Nadar jumped up and told them that he could tell them better stories than these then began to tell his captive audience about the kings of Persia, Rustum and Isbandiyar. After he finished the story he asked, "Who then is better at story-telling, Muhammad or I?"

Someone in the gathering suggested that Nadar and Utba visit the rabbis in Yathrib and ask them about the stories the Prophet had just told them. It was a challenge, so Nadar and Utba decided to journey to Yathrib to confront the rabbis.

THE THREE QUESTIONS

When they arrived in Yathrib they asked where they might find the rabbis and upon being taken to them said, "You are the people of the Torah, we have come to you to ask how we should deal with one of our tribesmen," and proceeded to describe the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and speak of his teachings. The rabbis remained silent until they had finished, then one spoke saying, "You should ask him these three questions, if he answers you correctly then he is a prophet, however if he is unable, then he is not and from this you can form your own opinion."

The rabbis asked their visitors to question the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) about the young men who disappeared from their people in ancient days and then to

question him about the great traveler who journeyed to the east and to the west. The final question they were to ask was about the Spirit.

THE PROPHET IS QUESTIONED, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*

Nadar and Utba returned to Mecca and announced to their fellow tribesmen that the rabbis of Yathrib had given them three questions that would determine whether or not Muhammad was indeed the Prophet of Allah.

When they reached the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) he listened to the questions in silence and told them he would give them a reply the next day, for he never spoke on religious matters without receiving its knowledge via the Angel Gabriel. However, when he told them he would give them a reply the following day, he forgot to say "Insha-Allah" which means – "Allah willing." The next day came and passed, however Gabriel had not visited him with the answers, which no doubt pleased the unbelievers.

ANGEL GABRIEL BRINGS THE ANSWERS

Several days elapsed and the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) patiently awaited the answers to the questions as rumors began to abound in every sector. Then on the fifteenth day, the Angel Gabriel came to him and he asked why he had not come before. Gabriel responded with a new verse from the Koran that said:

"(Gabriel said:) 'We do not descend except at the command of your Lord. To Him belongs all that is before us and all that is behind us, and all that lies between, your Lord does not forget.'
Koran 19:64

THE STORY OF THE BELIEVING YOUNG MEN IN THE CAVE

In reply to the question about the young men in the cave, Gabriel recited to the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) verses detailing their circumstances so later on when Nadar, Utba, and their companions came to him. he was able to recite the story to them.

The verses told of some young men who lived in a city of idolaters. The young men, however, were not idolaters and told their fellow tribesmen:

"Our Lord is the Lord of the heavens and the earth.
We call on no other god except Him;
(for if we did), we would have spoken outrageously (in disbelief)."
Koran 18:14

Then the young men challenged the idolaters to bring them some proof of their authority to worship more than One God asking:

"Who does greater evil than he who forges a lie against Allah?"
Koran, 18:15

The idolaters turned against the young men and it was then that Allah put into their hearts the notion to seek refuge in a cave, where they would be safe.

Taking their dog along with them, the young men set off for the cave and upon reaching it Allah caused them to fall into a deep sleep.

"You might have seen the rising sun incline towards the right of their Cave, and, as it set go past them on the left, while they stayed within an open space in the Cave. That was one of the signs of Allah You might have thought them awake, though they were sleeping. We turned them about to the right and to the left, while their dog stretched its paws at the entrance. Had you seen them you would surely have become filled with terror and turned your back on them in flight. As such We revived them so that they might question one another. 'How long have you stayed here?' asked one of them. 'We have been here a day, or part of it,' they replied. They said: 'Your Lord knows best how long we have stayed here. Let one of you go to the city with this silver (coin) and let him search for one who has the purest food and bring provision from it. Let him be courteous, but let no one sense it is you. For, if they appear in front of you, they will stone you to death or restore you to their religion. Then you will never prosper.' And so We made them (the unbelievers) stumble upon them, so that they might know that the promise of Allah is true and that there is no doubt about the Hour. They argued among themselves over the affair, then (the unbelievers) said, 'Build a building over them (their remains). Their Lord knows best who they were.' But those who prevailed over the matter said, 'We will build around them a Mosque.'" Koran 18:17-22

Regarding their number, the Revelation warned that there was a difference of opinion among those who had heard the story and that:

"Some will say, 'They were three; their dog was the fourth.' Others, guessing at the Unseen, will say: 'They were five and their dog was the sixth.' And yet others: 'Seven, their dog was the eighth,' Say: 'My Lord knows best their number. Except for a few none know their number.' Therefore, do not dispute with them except in outward disputation, and do not ask any of them concerning them." Koran 18:22

THE STORY OF THUL-KARNAIN

The answer to the second question concerning the great traveler, Thul Karnain was sent down to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in the following verses:

"They will ask you about Thul-Karnain
Say: 'I will recite to you something of this story.
We established him in the land and gave him means to all things.

He journeyed on a way until when he reached the setting of the sun,
 he found it setting in a muddy spring, and nearby he found a nation.
 'Thul-Karnain,' We said, 'you must either punish them or show them kindness.'
 He replied, 'The evil-doer we shall punish.
 Then he shall return to his Lord and He will punish him with a stern punishment.
 As for he who believes and does good works
 he shall receive a fine reward in recompense
 and we shall bestow on them a rich reward
 and shall speak to him with a mild command.'
 Then he followed the road until he reached the rising of the sun,
 he found it rising upon a nation for whom We provided no veil against it to shade them.
 So, We encompassed in knowledge what was with him.
 Then he followed the road, when he reached between the two barriers
 he found on one side of them, a nation who could barely understand speech.
 'Thul-Karnain,' they said, 'Look, Gog and Magog are corrupting the earth.
 Build us a barrier between us and them, and we will pay you tribute.'
 He replied, 'That which my Lord has given me is better,
 therefore help me with all your power, and I will build a barrier between you and them.
 Bring me ingots of iron.' After he had leveled between the two cliffs, he said, 'Blow.'
 And when he made it a fire, he said, 'Bring me molten copper
 so that I may pour over it.'
 Thereafter they could neither scale it, nor could they pierce it.
 He said: 'This is a mercy from my Lord.
 But when my Lord's promise is come, He will make it dust.
 The promise of my Lord is true.'
 On that day, We will let them surge on one another, and the Horn shall be blown,
 and We will gather them all together.
 On that Day We shall present Gehenna to the unbelievers
 whose eyes were blinded to My remembrance and they were not able to hear."
 Koran 18:83-101

CONCERNING THE SPIRIT

Concerning the answer relating to the Spirit it was revealed:

"They question you about the spirit.
 Say, 'The spirit is from the command of my Lord.
 Except for a little knowledge all of you have been given nothing.'
 Koran 17:85

The Revelation also bore the reminder:

"'Do not say of anything: 'I will do it tomorrow unless (you add) if Allah wills.'
 And remember your Lord when you forget and say,
 'It may be that my Lord will guide me to something nearer to rectitude than this.'
 Koran 18:23-24

The Prophet's life was full of guidance and examples. There was once an occasion
 later on in his prophethood where he offered three units of prayer when there should
 have been four. Had he not made this omission, we would never have known how to
 correct our errors when we do the same. His forgetting to say "InshaAllah" was also
 another exemplary reminder to us, through which we are guided.

NADAR AND UTBA RETURN WITH THE ANSWERS TO THE RABBIS

No one in Mecca had ever heard the story of the young men in the cave and the new Revelation attracted more people to Islam. As for the rabbis of Yathrib, they anxiously awaited for the news to arrive, and when it did, they acknowledged the truthfulness of the answers, however they still wished to question the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) further upon the matter of the Spirit.

Even though the questions Nadar and Utba had challenged the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with had been answered and acknowledged to be correct, their hearts remained hardened.

Later, after his migration to Yathrib, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was questioned again by the rabbis concerning the spirit. They asked: "who 'Little indeed is the knowledge all of you have been given' referred too -- was it to them?"

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that it referred to them, whereupon the rabbis objected saying that they had been given its knowledge in the Torah. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied that indeed they had been given sufficient knowledge to satisfy their needs if only they would practice it, but in comparison with the Knowledge of Allah, their knowledge was indeed little. It was during this discourse that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received another Revelation that informed:

"till Gog and Magog are let loose and slide down out of every slope."
Koran 21:96

THE TIME OF GOG AND MAGOG

Later in his prophethood, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that near the end of the world, Gog, Magog, and their followers would advance upon the Lake of Tabariah in Palestine. He continued to tell that that they will consume all of its water and thereafter Prophet Jesus - who will have descended from the heavens - together with his companions will be besieged and suffer dreadfully from stress of starvation. He continued to tell that when the siege reaches its height, Prophet Jesus and his companions will supplicate to Allah who will create worms in the back of the necks of Gog, Magog, and their followers that will cause their death the very next morning. Then, Allah will send a flock of birds with necks as large as those of camels to carry away their foul smelling corpses.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), conveyed good news to his Companions that after this trial, Allah will send down rain from the heavens which will cleanse the earth and the earth will provide an abundance of fruit for everyone to enjoy.

Then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that it is while the Muslims are enjoying such blessings that Allah will send a sweet, gentle breeze to take away the soul of each and every one of them, thereby leaving only those who disbelieve behind on the earth.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) concluded his prophecy by telling his Companions that after the death of the believers, only the most vile people will remain

on the earth who will copulate in public just like donkeys for all to see and that it will be during this time that the final hour will commence.

CHAPTER 30 PERSECUTION

Meanwhile, the Koraysh chieftains continued in varying degrees in their relentless hostility toward the Muslims. If a convert happened to be among the hierarchy of a tribe, Abu Jahl would reprimand him then ridicule the convert before his fellow tribesmen so that he lost their respect.

Traders also suffered. When Abu Jahl discovered a trader had converted he gave orders that no one should deal with him anymore. As a result, the convert trader was unable to sell his wares and his circumstances were soon reduced to that of an impoverished person.

The freemen who suffered most were poor converts who, in the eyes of Abu Jahl, were the least important on the social scale. When one of them converted he would beat them without mercy and urge others to follow his example.

As for convert slaves belonging to the unbelieving Koraysh, they received the worst and harshest punishment for their standing was by far the weakest. Punishment such as brutal beatings followed by depravation of food and water were common, but perhaps the most severe punishment was that of being pinned down upon the scorching hot sands of Mecca and leaving the slave to endure the blistering heat of the sun without the relief of even a sip of water.

Some of the physically weaker converts were unable to endure their prolonged punishment and forced to recant. However, their recantations were not from their heart, but just noises made by their tongues. Those who remained undetected would offer their prayers in secret, but there were many who did not have the privilege of privacy and their grief at not being able to offer their prayers was considerable.

BILAL, THE SON OF RIBAH

Amongst those that suffered the torture of the burning sands was Bilal, Hamamma and Ribah's son, who had never known what it was like to be a freeman as he had been born into slavery.

Bilal was a slave of African descent and owned by the children of Jumah. When news of Bilal's conversion came to the attention of the children of Jumah, Ummaya, Khalaf's son, subjected him to the most severe kinds of punishment. The harshest torture Ummaya devised was to take him out into the desert during the hottest part of the day, throw him down upon his back so that it lay flat upon the already scorching sand, then place heavy rocks on top of Bilal's chest that prevented him from moving. With a voice full of hatred he would yell at him, "You will stay here until you either die or renounce Muhammad and worship Al-Lat and Al Uzza!"

The strength of Bilal's faith was truly great, he never gave into the demands of Ummaya, and as he suffered in the unbearable heat, his weak, parched, strained voice would be heard faintly saying, "One, One!"

ABU BAKR FREES BILAL

Abu Bakr had already bought and freed six believing slaves when one day he came across Bilal whilst he was being tortured yet again. Shocked and greatly distressed at seeing him in such an appalling condition, he went straight to Ummaya demanding, "Have you no fear of Allah that you treat this poor man in such a way -- how long do you intend continuing like this!" With a sneer, Ummaya replied, "It is you who have corrupted him -- save him from it!"

Without hesitation Abu Bakr made him an offer. Bilal was no longer of any use to Ummaya, so the offer was accepted and Abu Bakr took Bilal home with him where he was cared for, nursed back to health, and given his freedom.

THE FAMILY OF YASIR

Yasir had migrated to Mecca from Yemen, and there he met and married a slave-girl by the name of Sumayya. From their union was born a son whom they named Ammar.

Ammar had been among the early converts to Islam and succeeded to bring his parents into its fold. All three were subjected to the same kind of torture as Bilal, but Yasir and Sumayya were to become martyrs.

Sumayya's martyrdom finally came when Abu Jahl brutally thrust his lance into her and killed her.

KHABBAB, THE SLAVE OF UMM AMMAR

Khabbab was the slave of Umm Ammar and when he converted the Koraysh took to subjecting him to many forms of torture. On one such occasion they lit a fire, then spread its burning coals over the ground and forced him to lie down upon his back. To add to this, one of his torturers placed his foot firmly upon Khabbab's chest so that he could not move until the coals had burned themselves to ashes, however, Khabbab survived.

In the years that followed, Khabbab spoke to Omar about his torture and showed him his dreadfully scared back which was now white and pitted like that of a leper.

LUBAINA AND ZINNIRA, NADIA AND UMM UMAIS

Lubaina was the slave of Omar. Before Omar's conversion his harsh treatment of his convert slaves was well known.

Omar was extremely strong, and when he discovered that Lubaina had converted he beat her until he was exhausted and then said, "I have not stopped out of pity, but because I am tired!" Lubaina held on strongly to her belief and said after her severe beating, "If this does not persuade you, Allah shall revenge me!"

Zinnira was yet another slave owned by Omar. One day when Abu Jahl was visiting Omar, he took it upon himself to beat her. Zinnira was beaten so harshly that she lost her eyesight.

Nadia and Umm Umais were yet two more slaves who were among those tortured but refused to recant.

When it came to freeing believing slaves, Abu Bakr did not think twice to pay the handsome sum demanded by their torturers to secure their release and the ladies just mentioned were among those blessed by his compassionate generosity.

THE REQUEST OF SOME OF THE COMPANIONS

Khabbab, Al Aratt's son, and some of the companions went to visit Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), to complain against their increased persecution and ask him to supplicate for victory over their aggressors.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) listened with heartfelt sympathy and comforted them with the story of a man who, centuries before, had been taken captive by his enemy and told to renounce his belief. The man refused to give up his belief and so he was flung into a pit and left there.

Later, after his captors thought his spirit would have weakened, he was dragged up out of the pit and told to recant, but still the man refused whereupon his flesh was torn from his bones by rakes, but he still would not give up his belief. Finally, a saw was sent for and placed on top of his head and he was martyred as he was sawn in half. There was absolutely nothing that would tear him away from his faith.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) consoled his companions saying, "Allah will surely bring this matter to an end, when a rider will be able to leave Sanna for Hadramet fearing nothing except Allah and the danger of a wolf attacking his sheep."

CHAPTER 31 THE EAVESDROPPERS

Abu Jahl, Al Akhnas son of Sharik, and Abu Sufyan were curious to learn why so many people were attracted to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so they decided to spy upon one of his gatherings. One night after the believers had gathered in the Prophet's house, they met together and then hid among the shadows so as not to be detected, and waited for him to begin.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers spent the night in prayer and also listened to the Prophet's captivating recitation of the Koran. After its recitation, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) much to the delight of his followers, lovingly expanded upon its meaning and stories from the knowledge he had been given by Gabriel. He never spoke on religious matters without having first been given knowledge from Gabriel, who was entrusted by Allah to deliver the Koran and its explanation.

The hours slipped by and it was only just before dawn that the three returned home in fear that if they stayed any longer someone might see them and then misinterpret the reason for their presence. As they made their way home, they warned each other that they must never do such a thing again. However, they were to return yet again on the second and third night then leave as they had done before dawn, but as they parted company on the third night each took a binding oath never, ever, to return again.

Later on that day Al Akhnas, with stick in hand, went to the home of Abu Sufyan to ask his opinion of the past three nights. Abu Sufyan told him that he had heard things he

knew and already knew what was meant by them, and that he had also heard things he had not heard before and had not known their meaning. Al Akhnas concurred with Abu Sufyan and then went to Abu Jahl's home to ask his opinion.

Al Akhnas found that Abu Jahl's position had not softened in the slightest, in fact he understood that Abu Jahl now saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as an even greater threat and had become more opposed than ever. Abu Jahl reminded his visitor that he and his tribesmen competed with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers for honor saying, "They have fed the poor, so have we; they have been generous, so have we; we are like two horses running neck-to-neck in a race. But they say we have a Prophet to whom a Revelation is sent down from heaven -- when will we ever attain anything like that!"

It was now more evident than ever that Abu Jahl feared he would lose his chance to be the chieftain of this very powerful tribe when his uncle died. Although, if he had put his pride to one side and listened without bias he would have realized his fear was completely unfounded as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was honorable and respectful, and never took away the authority of tribal chieftains or claimed such rank for himself. Now, in a fit of arrogant rage, Abu Jahl swore never to believe in the message the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought, nor would he ever again consider him to be truthful.

The unbelievers persisted in their mockery of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "There is a veil over our hearts, we do not understand what you say. There is also a heaviness in our ears so we are unable to hear you, and a curtain that divides us from you. You follow your path and we will follow ours. We do not understand any thing you say!" It was then that Allah sent down the verses:

"When you recite the Koran, We place between you
and those who do not believe in the Everlasting Life an obstructing barrier.
We lay veils upon their hearts and heaviness in their ears, lest they understand it.
When you (Prophet Muhammad) mention your Lord alone in the Koran,
they turn their backs in aversion.
When they listen to you, We know very well how they listen.
When they conspire, when the evildoers declare,
'You are only following a man who is bewitched.'
See what they compare you to.
They have surely gone astray and cannot find the Path.
'What!' they say, 'When we are (turned to) bones and broken bits,
shall we be raised again in a new creation?'
Say, 'Let you be stones or iron, or any other creation
yet more monstrous in your minds.'
They will ask, 'Who will restore us?' Say, 'He who originated you at first.'
They will shake their heads and ask, 'When will this be?'
Say, 'Maybe it is near, on that Day, He will summon you,
and you shall answer Him with praise
and you shall think you have stayed but for a little.'"
Koran 17:45-52

CHAPTER 32

WALEED, CHIEF OF THE MAKHZUM

The status of Waleed, the elderly chieftain of the Makhzum and uncle of Abu Jahl, within the Koraysh tribes was that of great standing and influence to the extent that one might say he was virtually the unofficial leader of all the Koraysh tribes.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), was ever hopeful that the Message he brought would touch the hearts of tribal leaders, which would not only turn them into believers and the rest of their tribes, but make for strong allies and bring about the cessation of the relentless persecution of his Companions. His uncle, Abu Talib supported him but had not embraced Islam, which was a source of deep regret to the Prophet, salla Allahu alihi wa sallam, so now he sought the opportunity to approach Waleed.

The opportunity was soon to present itself when one day they unexpectedly met together. Waleed did not brush the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) away and soon the two became engrossed in their discussion.

During the course of their conversation, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was overheard by a blind passerby, who had recently converted to Islam. The blind man interrupted the conversation at an inopportune moment and asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to recite to him some verses whereupon Waleed frowned and turned away. The conversation ended shortly after the interruption and Waleed left without being persuaded.

Later, Waleed was heard to arrogantly exclaim to his fellow tribesmen, "Are Revelations sent to Muhammad and not to me! I am the most important among the Koraysh and I am their lord! Why are they not sent to Abu Masoud the chieftain of Thakif or myself -- we are the two great men of the two great cities!" The cities referred to were those of Mecca and Ta'if.

Not long after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had spoken with Waleed, he received a new, short chapter that refers, in part to the blind man and Waleed:

"He frowned and turned away when the blind man came to him.
And what could let you know? Perhaps he (comes to hear you) to be purified.
(He might) remember, and the Reminder might profit him.
As for he who is sufficed, you attended to him,
although it is not for your to be concerned if he remained unpurified.
And to him who came to you eagerly and fearfully, of him you were unmindful.
No indeed, this is a Reminder; and whosoever wills shall remember it."
Koran 80:1 - 12

CHAPTER 33 THE SPLITTING OF THE MOON

It was the night of a full moon and as it rose over Mount Hira its silvery light lit the City of Mecca below. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), happened to be out walking with Ali and some of his Companions when a group of unbelievers passed

by. As might be expected, the unbelievers started hurling their usual mockery, then one of them issued a challenge to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "If you really are the Messenger of Allah, then split the moon into half!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated and to the absolute amazement of the unbelievers, Allah, the Most Able, caused the moon to split and draw away from its other half so that one half shone at the top of Mount Hira and the other on the other at its base. The small crowd looked on in wonderment, then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to the unbelievers and in his customary, innate, gentle manner asked them to bear witness, for his only desire was to bring them to Allah and save them from the Fire. Some converted immediately, whilst others were not ready to commit themselves, but those whose hearts were hardened refused to believe claiming that the miracle was nothing other than magic and persisted, even after others from remote areas were questioned and bore witness that they too had seen the division of the moon, that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had cast a spell over their eyes. An unbeliever exclaimed, "The son of Abu Kabsha has bewitched you." (Abu Kabsha was the husband of the Prophet's foster mother Halima).

Allah refers to this miraculous event and the lies of the unbelievers saying:

"The Hour is drawing near, and the moon is split (in two).
Yet if they see a sign (the unbelievers) turn their backs and say,
'This is but a continuation of sorcery!'
They have belied, and follow their own fancies.
But every issue will be settled!"
Koran 54:1-4

CHAPTER 34

IDOLATORY THROUGH LACK OF DIVINE GUIDANCE - THE CONVERSION OF OMAR, SON OF KHATTAB

Although Omar disliked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions, his reasons were different from those of his uncle Abu Jahl. Omar came from a family steeped in conservatism and tradition, and as such was taught to respect, but not question through lack of Divine Guidance, the age-old custom of reverence for the idols and Ka'ba. The very idea of even challenging the validity of worshipping its idols was to Omar something that was simply not open for discussion. Traditions and heritage went hand in hand, and were to him, something to be preserved at all costs, although there was nothing to support the worship of idols. As for the Ka'ba itself, only fragments of its real reason for reverence remained. Omar, as well as most of the people of Mecca, was content with the age-old illogical excuse that his fathers and ancestors had worshipped them and what had been good enough for them, was still good enough for his generation.

When Omar heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) calling upon people to renounce the idols and worship just One God, Allah, it was more than he could bear. To Omar's way of thinking, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Message had become a threat to the very fabric of his society's heritage, unity, and ultimately its existence so he had come to the conclusion that the only way to stop the escalation would be the elimination of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

THE ATTEMPT OF OMAR AND ABU JAHM TO KILL THE PROPHET

salla Allahu alihi wa salaam

Omar and Abu Jahm, Hudhayfa's son were of a similar mind, so they agreed that on a specified night they would go to the Prophet's home and accomplish the matter.

However, upon reaching his house they heard him reciting the words:

"The Resurrection Verifier; and what is the Resurrection Verifier?

What makes you to know what the Resurrection Verifier is?

Thamood and Aad belied the Clatterer.

Thamood, they were destroyed by the violent shout (of Gabriel),

as for Aad, they were destroyed by a howling, violent wind

that He subjected upon them for seven nights and eight days consecutively

and you might have seen them struck down as if they were the stumps of palm trees

that had fallen down. Can you see any remnant of them now?"

Koran 69:1-8

When Abu Jahm heard these words he struck Omar's arm violently exclaiming, "Save yourself!" and they ran away in fright.

NU'AYM DIVERTS OMAR

The matter however, still weighed heavily upon Omar's mind and he could bear it no longer. The matter had, in his opinion, to be resolved once and for all, so he fastened his sword to his belt and stormed out of the house.

He had not gone far when Omar was met by a fellow tribesman by the name of Nu'aym, Abdullah's son. Nu'aym had embraced Islam, however very few people knew of his conversion and without a doubt Omar was completely unaware.

Upon seeing the determined look upon Omar's face and then the sword fastened to his belt, Nu'aym suspected trouble and asked casually, so as not to arouse suspicion, where he was going. Omar replied, "I am going to kill Muhammad; he has divided us!"

Nu'aym, trying to conceal his fear for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tried to dissuade Omar by telling him that even if he succeeded, the children of Abdu Manaf would never rest until they had taken their revenge and killed him.

Nu'aym was quick to realize that Omar was not to be put off by his advice so desperately, in an effort to buy time in which he could alert the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions, he said, "Omar, you should put things right in your own house first!"

Omar was startled and asked what he meant by such a statement. Nu'aym replied, "Your sister, Fatima and her husband, Sa'id, are followers of Muhammad and his religion." Without so much as a word, Omar stormed off to his sister's house. Nu'aym felt badly at having exposed Fatima and Sa'id to Omar's wrath, but he knew they would understand his intention as they, like every convert, loved and would do anything to shield their beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) from the prospect of harm.

THE RECITATION OF KHABBAB

Now among the literate people of the tribe of Zuhra was a convert called Khabbab. Khabbab had a very sweet voice and had learned the recitation of the Koran. Fatima and Sa'id loved to both recite and listen to its recitation and so Khabbab had become a most welcome visitor to their home.

On the day Omar discovered his sister and her husband had become Muslims, Khabbab happened to be visiting them. It was as they were sitting together reciting the new chapter "Ta Ha" which had recently been sent down, and then written upon a piece of parchment, that Omar arrived at her house and made his presence known by calling out his sister's name in a thunderous voice.

Khabbab was stricken with fear, for he was among those who were poor and of little standing, so he hid himself in Fatima's house hoping that Omar would not discover his presence. But before hiding, Fatima took the parchment from him and hid it under her gown.

Omar burst into Fatima's house and demanded, "What was that mumbling I heard?" Fatima and Sa'id told him that he heard no mumbling. Angrily, Omar replied, "Indeed, I heard you and I have been told that you have both become followers of Muhammad!" Omar restrained himself no longer and started beating his brother-in-law without mercy. Fatima tried to intervene but a blow intended for Sa'id struck her and she began to bleed profusely, whereupon she cried out to her brother to do whatever he wanted and told him that, yes, he was right, they had indeed become Muslims.

When Omar realized what he had done to his sister he was overcome with remorse and his attitude changed. In a soft tone he asked, "Give me what I have just heard you reading from so that I might see what Muhammad has brought."

Fatima, fearful of her brother's intention replied, "I am afraid to trust you with it" whereupon Omar laid down his sword and said, "Do not fear, by Allah, I will give it back to you." Fatima knew her brother to be a man of his word and hoped with all her heart he would embrace Islam and spoke to him gently saying, "O my brother, because of your idolatry you are unclean and only the cleansed may touch it." Omar heeded his sister's words and went to wash himself. When Omar returned Fatima gave him the parchment and Allah, in His Mercy caused the light of faith to enter his heart as he began to read.

THE SUPPLICATION OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

After Omar had finished reading, Khabbab came out from his hiding place and said, "Omar, I hope that through the prayer of our Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) Allah has chosen you, because yesterday I heard him supplicate, 'O Allah, strengthen Islam with either Abdul Hakam, Hisham's son or with Omar, Khattab's son.'"

These encompassing words of Khabbab touched Omar in such a way that he asked where he might find the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so that he might go to him and embrace Islam. Khabbab no longer feared for the Prophet's safety under the hand of Omar and told him that he would find him together with his companions in the house of Akram, near the Hill of Safwa.

OMAR'S ARRIVAL AT THE HOUSE OF AKRAM

Omar fastened his sword and made ready to leave for the house of Akram. When he reached the house he knocked at the door and announced himself.

Meanwhile, Nu'aym had been able to warn the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions of Omar's original intent, so they were taken by surprise when they heard the gentle tone of his voice. One of the Companions got up and went to look through a small crack in the door and returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to confirm that it was indeed Omar and that he was wearing his sword.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was not afraid for he trusted Allah and knew He had answered his supplication, so he gave permission to let Omar enter. However, Hamza told his companion to open the door saying, "If he comes with good intent, he will receive much good, but on the other hand, if his intentions are evil then he would kill him with his own sword."

OMAR EMBRACES ISLAM

As Omar entered, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caught hold of his belt by surprise and led him into the middle of the room, then asked in his usual gentle manner, "What brings you here, son of Khattab." Meekly, Omar replied, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) I have come to you so that I may proclaim my belief in Allah and in His Messenger, and in that which He has sent down to you."

In gratitude and humility, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) exalted Allah saying, "Allah is the Greatest!" Those present felt an overwhelming sense of relief and followed the Prophet's example and exalted Allah as they realized Omar was no longer their enemy, but one of them, a Muslim.

ABU JAHL LEARNS OF OMAR'S CONVERSION

The next morning, Omar went to the house of Abu Jahl and knocked at his door. Abu Jahl was happy to see his favorite nephew and came out to welcome him asking what had brought him there. Omar told him that he had come to tell him that he believed in Allah and bore witness that Muhammad is His Messenger and to the truth which is sent down to him. Abu Jahl's face blackened and as he cursed his nephew, he slammed the door in his face.

THE KORAYSH LEARN OF OMAR'S CONVERSION

Omar had no intention of keeping his conversion secret, so he went to Jamil, Mamar Al Jumahi's son, the Koraysh gossip, knowing well he would spread the news quickest and told him of his conversion.

Omar's assumption was correct, Jamil jumped up, and made straight for the Ka'ba with Omar following a few steps behind.

At the door of Ka'ba, Jamil proclaimed loudly for all to hear, "Omar has apostatized!" Then Omar shouted! "He is a liar, I have become a Muslim and testify that there is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is His Prophet and His Messenger! Several unbelievers, standing near Ka'ba witnessed Omar's proclamation and started to fight him. The fighting continued until the heat of the mid-day when Omar took a rest saying, "Do as you will, I swear by Allah that if you were three hundred men I would have fought it out on equal terms!"

Just then, a Koraysh chieftain robed in a Yemeni cloak intervened and asked what was going on. When he was told that Omar had embraced Islam, he turned to them and asked, "Why shouldn't a man choose a religion for himself -- what are you trying to do? Do you think that the children of Adiyy will surrender their companion to you? Let the man alone!" And so Omar was left in peace.

Now that Omar had proclaimed his acceptance of Islam, the Companions felt more secure to worship Allah at the Ka'ba as the unbelievers now feared a formidable encounter with Omar and Hamza.

CHAPTER 35 THE BOYCOTT

Now that Hamza and Omar had converted to Islam, the Koraysh viewed the Prophet *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, in a different light. Their persecution had failed to halt the ever increasing number of their fellow tribesmen from following him, so they decided to call for a meeting of all the Koraysh chieftains to devise an alternate plan which would cause the Muslims hardship in as many aspects of their lives as possible.

No less than forty chieftains from the Koraysh with its branches gathered to discuss the matter. The plan which proved acceptable to the majority was that from now onward, they would boycott the tribes of the children of Hashim and Muttalib with the exception of Abu Lahab, who was their staunch ally. No longer would their children be permitted to marry members of these tribes and trade between them was now strictly forbidden.

THE WITHERED FINGERS

To ensure that none would be tempted to break the boycott, Mansoor, Ikrima's son, wrote down the pact details and fastened it onto a wall inside the Ka'ba as a reminder to anyone who might be tempted to break it, for some of the Koraysh tribes did not agree wholeheartedly to the harshness of the sanctions. When the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) heard of Mansoor's action, he supplicated to Allah against him, whereupon several of Mansoor's fingers withered away. In addition to this, the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) prophesized to the Koraysh that the pact would be eaten by termites and only the inscription of the Name of Allah would remain written on the pact.

As a matter of safety, the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) who was always concerned for the welfare of his Companions, decided it would be better for the Muslims to live close to one another. With this in mind, it was decided that they would settle near the home of Abu Talib who, although still a non-Muslim, choose to remain allied to the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*).

THE RELOCATION OF ABU LAHAB

Until that time Abu Lahab, whose unwarranted, violent hatred of the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) and his Message was common knowledge, lived near Abu Talib. However, when the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) and Lady Khadijah arrived to live there, Abu Lahab and his household packed their belongings and moved away.

Now that the boycott was in place, Abu Jahl, obsessed in his hatred, occupied his time ensuring that it was strictly observed.

FLOUR FOR LADY KHADIJAH

Lady Khadijah had a nephew called Hakim who belonged to one of the tribes participating in the boycott. One day, Hakim and his servant were seen by Abu Jahl taking a bag of flour into the predominately Muslim sector. Abu Jahl accused Hakim of breaking the boycott and a heated argument ensued in which Abu Jahl threatened to expose Hakim to the others.

During the argument Abdul Bakhtari, from the tribe of Asad, overheard the two arguing and asked what all the fuss was about. When it was explained to him, he sided with Hakim arguing that he could see no harm in what Hakim was doing as he was just returning a bag of flour belonging to his aunt. Abdul Bakhtari told Abu Jahl that there was no need to make such a big issue of the matter and to let Hakim go on his way,

Now that Abdul Bakhtari had taken sides in the argument, tension increased and a scuffle broke out. In self defense, Abdul Bakhtari picked up the jaw-bone of a camel and struck Abu Jahl with such force upon his head that he fell concussed to the ground.

HISHAM, THE SON OF AMR

Among the tribes whose chieftains had signed the pact were tribesmen -- especially those closely related through marriage -- who felt compassion towards the Muslims. One such person was Hisham, Amr's son. When night fell and no one was about, Hisham would often load his camel with food, clothing, and gifts, lead it towards the Muslim houses then strike the camel on its rump so that it ran down into the streets of the boycotted area. The food and gifts were immediately shared amongst the Muslims and they were grateful for his courage and generosity.

A little over two years had now passed. The boycott remained in force and the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) and his Companions faced the severe hardship of poverty and deprivation with patience, knowing that Allah would bless them. Even Abu Bakr, who had once been among the wealthiest of Meccans was now reduced to a poor man. With the shortage of food, times were difficult but the light of faith and the much loved companionship of their every caring Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) made the hardship easier to endure.

THE SACRED MONTHS

It was only during the Sacred months that the Muslims felt safe enough to leave their homes to pray at their beloved Ka'ba. However, although they suffered no physical harm during these months, the unbelievers did not withhold their verbal abuse.

Amongst those whose verbal abuse was the most offensive was Ummaya, Khalaf's son. Whenever he saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) he seized the opportunity to hurl slanderous, backbiting statements at him. It was during this time that Allah sent down verses that warned of the punishment of backbiters and slanderers:

"Woe to every backbiter, slanderer who amasses wealth and counts it, thinking his wealth will render him immortal!

On the contrary! He shall be flung to the Crusher.
What shall let you know what the Crusher is?
(It is) the kindled Fire of Allah, which shall oversee the hearts,
closed around them in extended columns."

Koran Chapter 104

THE FATE OF SOME THAT MOCKED

There were five men who were the most vile in their mockery. From the tribe of Asad there was Al Aswad, Muttalib's son, whose grandfather was Asad Abu Zama'a. From the tribe of Zuhra, it was Al Aswad, Abdu Yaghuth's son. From the Makhzum tribe the most notorious was Al Waleed, Mughira's son. From the tribe of Sahm, it was Al As, Wa'il's son, grandson of Hisham. Then, from the tribe of Khuzaha, Al Harith, Tulatila's son was certainly the most vile.

Concerning those that mocked, Allah sent down the verses:

"Proclaim then, what you are commanded and turn away from the unbelievers.
We suffice you against those who mock, and those who set other gods with Allah,
indeed, they will soon know.
Indeed, We know your chest is straitened by that they say."
Koran 15:94-97

One day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was near the Ka'ba, those foremost in mockery were circumambulating it when the Angel Gabriel came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and stood beside him.

Al Aswad, Muttalib's son was the first to pass by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and as he did Gabriel threw a green leaf at his face that caused Al Aswad to become blind.

Al Aswad Abdu Yaghuth's son was the next to pass, whereupon Gabriel pointed to his stomach and it became so bloated that he died.

Following these two came Al Waleed. Several years before Al Waleed had passed by a man repairing his arrows. Some of the arrows became tangled up in his long robe and caused a minor wound that left him with a small scar. Gabriel now pointed at it, the wound reopened, festered, and Al Waleed died.

Next came Al As, whereupon Gabriel pointed to his instep. Later, on a journey to Ta'if, Al As stopped to rest under a thorny tree to which he tethered his mount. As he did he stepped upon a thorn; the wound became infected and shortly afterwards he died.

Al Harith was the last to pass. Angel Gabriel pointed to his head which immediately filled with pus and thereafter he died.

THE CRUELTY OF ABU LAHAB AND HIS WIFE

Abu Lahab and his wife, Umm Jamil, reveled in the effort they took to try and demean or harm the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Umm Jamil took great pleasure in gathering sharp thorns and then strewing them at night along the paths most frequented by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in hope of injuring him. However, Allah caused the thorns to become as soft as sand and blessed him with

such keen eye sight that he could see as well during the darkness of night as he could during the day.

Such was their unwarranted hatred of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that Abu Lahab ordered his sons to divorce Ladies Rukiyah and Umm Kulthum, the daughters of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) before their marriages had been consummated, then pressed upon Lady Zaynab's father-in-law to make his son do the same. However, Lady Zaynab's husband, Al As loved her and refused, saying he had no wish to marry another.

It was during these times of hardship that Allah sent down a short chapter that spoke of the punishment in the Everlasting life of Abu Lahab and his wife.

"Perish the hands of Abi-Lahab, and perish he!
His wealth will not suffice him neither what he has gained;
he shall roast at a Flaming Fire,
and his wife, laden with firewood shall have a rope of palm-fiber round her neck!"
Koran Chapter 111

THE REACTION OF UMM JAMIL

When Umm Jamil heard the Revelation, the hatred she harbored towards the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reached a new height. In a violent rage she fetched her stone pestle and headed straight to the Ka'ba where she expected to find the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

As she entered its confines she caught sight of Abu Bakr and went up to him demanding, "Where is your companion!" Abu Bakr was taken by surprise, he knew well to whom she referred, yet she had not seen the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who was sitting close to him.

Umm Jamil continued her ranting, "I have heard he has satirized me, by Allah, if I had found him here I would have destroyed his mouth with this pestle. Indeed, I am no lesser poet than he!" Then she recited a short, degrading rhyme she had written, then left.

Abu Bakr turned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and asked whether or not he thought she had seen him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed Abu Bakr that she had not because Allah in His Mercy to him had concealed his person from her sight. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) commented upon her rhyme drawing his companion's attention to the use of the word "mudhammam" which she had chosen to use, meaning reprobate, which is the opposite to "Muhammad" which means praised. He then commented, "Isn't it surprising that the injuries the Koraysh try to inflict are deflected away from me? They curse and satirize Mudhammam, whereas I am Muhammad."

KHABBAB, THE SWORD MAKER AND AL AS

Amongst the companions of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was a sword-smith by the name of Khabbab, Aratt's son. Al As, Wa'il's son asked Khabbab to sell him some of his swords, the price was agreed but he had no intention of paying him. Khabbab waited and waited then finally went to him and asked for his money.

With contempt Al As asked, "Doesn't your companion Muhammad, whose religion you follow, say that in Paradise there is as much gold, silver, clothes, and servants that his people could ever wish for?" "Yes, indeed," replied Khabbab. "Then," said Al As, "give me until the Day of Repayment when I return to that House and I pay my debt to you there. By Allah, you and your companion will be no more influential with Allah than I, nor will you have a great share in it!"

Not long after Al As had spoken these words, Allah sent down to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam):

"Have you seen he who disbelieves Our verses and yet says,
'I shall surely be given wealth and children!'
Has he gained knowledge of the Unseen? Or taken a covenant with the Merciful?
On the contrary, We will write down what he says
and prolong the length of his punishment.
We shall inherit that of which he speaks and he will come before Us alone."
Koran 19:77-80.

THE CAMEL TRADER FROM IRASH

A camel trader from Irash had driven his camels to Mecca where he hoped to sell them for a fair price. When Abu Jahl saw the camels he decided to buy them and the price was agreed, however he took the camels and then refused to pay for them. The trader was very distressed by Abu Jahl's unjust behavior and went to the Ka'ba where he found a group of Koraysh and told him of his plight, saying, "Who will help me to receive what is rightfully mine from Abu Hakam, Hisham's son (Abu Jahl's given name). I am a traveler, a stranger, and he will not pay his debt!"

The tribesmen paid no heed to his plight and out of contempt, the Koraysh directed the trader to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), who was sitting near the Ka'ba. They knew he would never turn away anyone in distress and hoped the situation would provoke a hostile encounter with Abu Jahl. In mockery they told the trader, "Go to him, he will help you receive your rights!" So the trader made his way to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to entreat his help. Respectfully, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) invited him to sit down and listened to the trader's complaint. It was of no consequence whether or not an injured party was a Muslim or not, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) always advocated justice for all and it was clear that an injustice had been done to the trader. So together they made their way to Abu Jahl's house to attend to the matter.

When the Koraysh saw Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and the trader leaving together, they sent one of their companions after them with the instruction to follow and report back about the happenings. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and the trader reached Abu Jahl's house, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) knocked at the door and Abu Jahl asked from behind closed doors who was there. The Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) replied that it was he and asked him to come out.

As Abu Jahl came out of his house it was noticeable how pale his face had become and that he was very agitated. The Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) asked him to settle his debt with the trader whereupon Abu Jahl raised no objections and went inside to fetch the agreed sum of money.

The money was given to the trader who thanked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and they parted company. The trader returned to the Koraysh saying, "May Allah reward him, I have received my rights on his account!"

When the companion of the Koraysh returned he confirmed what occurred. Just then, Abu Jahl joined them and they asked what had happened, adding that they had neither expected nor had they ever seen him do anything like that before. Abu Jahl swore by Allah that when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) knocked at the door he had become filled with terror, so he had opened it. As he did he saw, towering above his head, the same rogue camel with a massive head, sharp teeth and broad shoulders he had seen once before at the Ka'ba. He told them that there was no doubt in his mind that if he had refused to pay the trader the camel would have set upon him and devoured him.

CHAPTER 36

THE COMPANIONS MIGRATE TO ABYSSINIA

As the persecution and suffering of the Muslims, be they well connected or not, increased, the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, who was always concerned for their welfare and security approved the migration to Abyssinia of all those wishing to leave.

The reputation for justice and tolerance of the Nazarene ruler of Abyssinia, the Negus was well known, so in secrecy during the month of Rajab, twelve Companions with their families, a total of eighty-three adults and children, set out for Abyssinia.

Amongst the migrants were Lady Rukiyah, the Prophet's daughter who was married to Othman, Affan's son, Jaffar and Amr, two of the sons of Abu Talib. Abu Hudhayfah, whose father Utba was one of the principal persecutors of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, Abu Sabra, Ruhm's son, a cousin of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, through his aunt Bara. Abu Salama Al Makhzumi and his wife Umm Salama, who, upon the death of her husband was destined to marry the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam. Othman, the son of Makhzum Humahi, a close Companion of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam. Amir the son of Rabia and his wife Leila – Amir had been one of the early converts. Zubair, Al Awwam's son, cousin of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, and his close Companion who later married Asma, the daughter of Abu Bakr; Musab the son of Umair, grandson of Hashim; Abd Al Rahman, the son of Auf from the tribe of Zuhra, another relative and close Companion of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, who was informed by the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam, that Paradise was assured for him; Abu Hatib, Amr's son, Suhail, Baida's son; and Abdullah, Masoud's son, who was yet another of the close Companions of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihī wa salaam.

When the migrants reached the coast they found two half-empty ships bound for Abyssinia and the captains agreed to carry them for the sum of five dirhams per passenger.

The language spoken in Abyssinia at that time was very much akin to Arabic and so it wasn't long until the Companions settled down and made friends with their welcoming new neighbors.

THE KORAYSH LEARN OF THE MIGRATION

So subtle had been the migration of the Companions that the Koraysh remained unaware of their departure until long after they had reached the safety of Abyssinia.

When it suddenly dawned upon the Koraysh that they had not seen several Muslim families for some time they realized something was amiss and became greatly angered as they discovered that not only they, but other families; had migrated to Abyssinia without their knowledge.

Although the Koraysh had made it very clear that the Muslims were unwelcome to practice their religion in Mecca, they now wished they had contained them in the City because they began to fear they would become successful in converting others and so gain strength.

THE ATTEMPT TO BRING THE MIGRANTS BACK

In an attempt to regain control over the migrant Muslims, the Koraysh called for an urgent meeting to discuss what they should do to remedy the situation. The meeting was concluded when the decision was reached that they would send two of their trusted tribesmen, Abdullah, Abu Rabia's son and Amr, Al As' son, to the Negus of Abyssinia bearing gifts of the finest leather, which they knew were highly prized by Abyssinians, with the request that the migrants be returned to Mecca. It was also agreed that Abdullah and Amr should approach the Negus' high ranking generals behind his back and bribe them individually with a fine hide in return for their support in securing their aim.

Before Abdullah and Amr departed, Abu Talib, whose sons Jafar and Amr were among the migrants, sent a short poem he had composed to the Negus asking him to protect his sons.

The poetic message was subtle. It asked the Negus if his sons remained under his protection, or if they had been delivered into the hands of mischief makers. He told of the happiness the refugees must be enjoying by being permitted to stay in his county. He closed the poem with tender words in praise of the Negus for his hospitality to both friend and stranger alike.

THE GENERALS

Upon reaching the Negus' palace, Abdullah and Amr first visited and succeeded to bribe the generals saying, "Some foolish people of ours have taken refuge in your country. They have abandoned their religion, yet they have not converted to yours because they have devised one of their own, the like of which is unknown to us and to you. Our noble leaders have sent us to ask the Negus to let them return with us and it is our desire that you advise him so that they might return."

Abdullah and Amr were quick to add that they thought it preferable that the migrants should not be permitted to speak with the Negus. Like the Koraysh chieftains, Abdullah and Amr were afraid that if the Muslims were given the opportunity to speak to the Negus, he would listen kindly and incline to what they had to say. With this in mind they told the generals that they knew well their people's ways and faults and it was not only their desire that they should return home but those of their close relatives.

THE AUDIENCE

The Negus received his visitors courteously, and the envoys presented their gifts then asked for the return of their fellow tribesmen. As one might expect the generals were strongly supportive of the request and tried to persuade the Negus to agree.

The Negus, being both wise and fair became outraged at the suggestion that these people who sought refuge in his country should be sent back without a hearing and replied, "No, by Allah, I will not surrender them! On no account will anyone who, having sought my protection, settled in my country, and chosen me rather than their own be betrayed. I will question them about the matter these two men allege, then, if they are as they say, I will send them back with their people. On the other hand, if what has been said is false, I will respect them and they will receive both my hospitality and protection."

THE NEGUS AND THE MIGRANTS

The Negus sent for the migrants to come to the palace and at the same time called upon his bishops to attend the meeting and asked them to bring their scriptures with them. When all were assembled, the Negus asked the Companions several direct questions relating to their reasons for leaving their people. Among the questions were: why had they chosen not to adopt his religion, this was then followed by an inquiry about their belief.

Jafar, Abu Talib's son, acted as spokesman for the Muslims. He told the Negus that before Islam they had been ignorant people, worshipping idols, committing the most regrettable things, and showing little or no mercy to those weaker than themselves. Then he told him about Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who had been sent to them, detailed his lineage and spoke of his reputation for being upright, truthful, and trustworthy.

Jafar continued to tell the Negus that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called them to the Oneness of Allah and to worship Him alone. He told them how he had said that they must renounce their idols and the false concepts their fathers and ancestors had followed.

Then he told the Negus that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) instructed them to speak truthfully, fulfill their promises, care for their relatives and neighbors. He said that they must neither kill, nor consume the wealth of orphans, nor should they falsely accuse good women. Jafar also explained how they had been taught to pray five times each day, to be charitable and to fast.

Nearing the end of the audience, Jafar told the Negus that it was on account of these matters that their people had turned against and persecuted them in an effort to force them revert to their old religion. He also told the Negus that the reason for their migration to his country was because they knew that they would be secure under his protection.

The Negus was impressed by Jafar's honorable reply and asked if he was able to recite some of the Revelation to him, so Jafar recited verses from the Chapter Mary:

"And mention in the Book, Mary,
how she withdrew from her people to an eastern place

and she took a veil apart from them;
 We sent to her Our Spirit (Gabriel) in the resemblance of a perfect human.
 (And when she saw him) she said, 'I take refuge in the Merciful from you!
 If you are fearful.'
 'I am the Messenger of your Lord,' he replied, 'and have come to give you a pure boy.'
 'How shall I bear a son,' she answered,
 'when I am not touched by a human and not unchaste?'
 'Even so' he replied, 'as such your Lord has said, 'Easy it is for Me.
 And We shall make him a sign to mankind and a mercy from Us.
 It is a matter decreed.'"
 Koran 19:16-21

When the Negus and his bishops heard these words they wept and declared that the religion the Companions followed was from the same source as their own. Then the Negus swore an oath that he would never betray the migrants, and then asked Abdullah and Amr to leave.

THE PLOT OF AMR AND ABDULLAH

Angrily, Amr and Abdullah left the palace and as they did Amr said, "Tomorrow, I will go to the Negus and tell him something I know will destroy their newly found prosperity and its roots! I will tell him that they believe Jesus, the son of Mary, is just the worshiper of Allah!"

The following morning, Amr went to the Negus saying, "Your majesty, you must also be informed that they adhere to an enormous lie about Jesus, the son of Mary, send for them and ask what they say about him!"

The Negus sent for the Companions and asked what they believed about Jesus. Once again Jafar acted as their spokesman and told him, "We say what has been sent down to our Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), 'Indeed, the Messiah, Jesus son of Mary, is only a Messenger (and Prophet) of Allah. And His Word (Be) which He gave to Mary, and a (created) spirit by Him.'" Koran, Ch.19:171

The Negus bent down, picked up a stick and said, "Jesus, the son of Mary does not exceed that which you have said by the length of this stick." Upon hearing this, his generals started to mutter among themselves. Then he turned to Jafar and his companions telling them that they might go wherever they pleased and to know they would never be harmed, not even if he were to be offered a mountain of gold in exchange.

The Negus instructed the gifts Abdullah and Amr had brought to be returned to them and so Abdullah and Amr left rebuked without achieving their aim.

REACTION

News of the Negus' statement about Jesus spread rapidly; many were troubled and demanded an explanation, accusing him of abandoning their religion.

The Negus now feared for the safety of Jafar and his companions so he gave him enough ships to carry them to safety in the event of him being overthrown. Now that the Negus had made provisions for their safety, he sat down and wrote on a piece of parchment, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and that Muhammad is

His worshiper and His Messenger." Then, he tucked it under his cloak near his right shoulder and went out to face his people.

"My people," he said, "do I not have the best claim among you?" The crowd agreed he did. Next he asked, "Then, what is your opinion of the way in which I deal with you?" "Excellent!" came the reply. Then he asked, "What troubles you?" The crowd replied, "You have left our religion, and now say that Jesus is the worshiper of Allah." "What do you say of Jesus?" asked the Negus. "We say that he is the son of Allah," they answered. Then the Negus, putting his hand over the place in his cloak under which he concealed his testimony said, "This!"

The crowd were satisfied and thought he had reaffirmed their belief and dispersed. Now that the crisis had been averted the Negus sent word to Jafar that all was well and they could return to their new homes where they could live in peace and harmony for as long as they wished.

THE WAR

Shortly after the Companions had settled in their new homeland, the Negus faced the threat of invasion and took up arms with his troops. The Companions agreed to fight alongside the Negus should the need arise, so Zubair, who was the youngest, set off as an observer across the river Nile to the battlefield. Meanwhile the Companions prayed for the success of the Negus and within a few days Zubair returned with the news that the battle was over and victory belonged to the Negus.

Some years later when Gabriel brought the news of the death of the Negus he informed the Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*, that the Negus had died as a Muslim. The Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) gently imparted the news to his Companions who were saddened by his passing but at the same time grateful to Allah for his conversion. Shortly afterwards, the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) led his companions in the absent funeral prayer for the Negus and they knew from the teachings of their beloved Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) that the Negus would receive two very great rewards in Paradise because he had followed two great prophets, Prophets Jesus and Muhammad, peace be upon all the prophets of Allah.

CHAPTER 37

THE DELEGATION FROM ABYSSINIA

During their stay in Abyssinia, the Companions spoke of Islam, its principals and of their beloved Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) to their new Nazarene and Christian neighbors. Many of the Koranic narratives were very similar to those the Nazarenes and Christians already knew, however other narratives were new and this, together with the tender, loving accounts they had heard about the Prophet's character kindled an earnest desire to know more about Islam and its Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*), for some knew from their Books that another prophet would come and wondered if this might be him.

With these matters pressing upon their minds, the Abyssinians decided to send a delegation to Mecca to hear the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) speak first hand and then return home to report the news to those unable to accompany them.

THE ARRIVAL IN MECCA

Upon reaching Mecca, the delegation went to the Ka'ba where they found Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As they made their way across its courtyard they passed by Abu Jahl and a group of hostile Koraysh busy in a meeting, however their presence did not go unnoticed.

The delegation approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and happiness radiated from his face as he greeted and welcomed them to sit down and join him. There were so many questions they wanted to ask about Islam and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in his endearing, knowledgeable manner answered all in a way that satisfied their hearts. Then, he recited portions of the Koran and their eyes filled, overflowing with tears. They knew without a shadow of doubt that the man before them was indeed the Prophet of Allah, the one whose coming Jesus, the son of Mary had prophesied and that they had been blessed to meet him. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) invited them to embrace Islam they accepted without the slightest reservation.

Allah tells us:

"You will find that the most people in enmity to the believers are the Jews and idolaters, and that the nearest in affection to the believers are those who say, 'We are Nazarenes.'

That is because amongst them there are priests and monks; and because they are not proud.

When they listen to that which was sent down to the Messenger, you will see their eyes fill with tears as they recognize its truth.

They say: 'Lord, we believe. Write us among the witnesses.

Why should we not believe in Allah and in the truth that has come down to us?

Why should we not hope for admission among the righteous?'

For their words Allah has rewarded them with Gardens underneath which rivers flow where they shall live for ever. Such is the recompense of the righteous.

But those who disbelieve and belie Our verses shall be the companions of Hell."

Koran 5:82-86

From afar, Abu Jahl and his companions monitored the meeting and when the joyous Abyssinians passed them as they left the courtyard of Ka'ba, Abu Jahl and his companions stopped them saying, "Indeed, you are a feeble group. Your people sent you here to bring them news about that man, then after you had sat with him for a short while you renounced your religion and now believe what he says. You are very foolish!" But his words fell upon deaf ears as the happiness of certain belief engulfed their hearts and they returned to Abyssinia to tell their families and friends the good news.

THE MIGRANTS RETURN FROM ABYSSINIA

Some time after the return of the delegation, a false report reached Abyssinia that the Koraysh had accepted Islam. There was great happiness amongst the migrants and some, including Lady Rukiyah, daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with her cousins, could not wait to be with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) once again, for they loved him dearer than anyone else in the world and their

separation from him had been a great hardship. However, Jafar and Ubayd remained in their adopted country to preach.

It was a long journey but a happy one until they were but a few miles outside Mecca when they learned to their great dismay, that the report was far from accurate. They knew it would be dangerous to enter Mecca altogether, so it was decided that each family should make their way secretly into its Muslim sector and pray they would not be detected.

CHAPTER 38

THE CESSATION OF THE BOYCOTT

Among the Koraysh were those having close ties to the tribes of Hashim and Muttalib and felt the length of the boycott to be excessive. The first person to take action was Hisham, Amr's son, who had for sometime been sending camels laden with food and clothing into the Muslim sector at night.

He was aware that any effort he might take by himself would be wasted, so he went to Zuhayr, one of the two sons of Atika, the Prophet's aunt and asked, "Are you content to eat well, clothe yourself, and marry when you know the circumstances of your relatives? They can neither buy nor sell, marry nor yet give in marriage. I swear, if they had been the relatives of Abu Jahl, he would never have done this!" "What can I do, I am just one person, if there was another then I would do something to end it!" replied Zuhayr. "There is another," replied Hisham. "Who is it?" asked Zuhayr. "Myself," replied Hisham, "so let us get a third!" replied Zuhayr.

Hisham went to Mutim, Adi's son, who was an influential member of the tribe of Nawfal and also the grandson of the brother of both Hashim and Muttalib. Mutim agreed, and asked for a fourth to join them as he warned that the Koraysh would most likely turn against them.

Hisham approached Abdul Bakhtari from the tribe of Asad, who had sided with Hakim when he was caught by Abu Jahl returning flour to his aunt, Lady Khadijah. Abdul Bakhtari agreed and asked for another to join them as there was strength in numbers, so Hisham approached Zamah, Al Aswad's son, who was also from the tribe of Asad. Zamah agreed but thought it unnecessary for a sixth person to join them.

That night the five met together at Hajun, which is a place situated on the outskirts of Mecca. There they agreed that none of them would rest until the pact fastened to the inside of the Ka'ba had been revoked. It was agreed that Zuhayr would act as their spokesman and speak first to the Koraysh on account of his kinship to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

THE CONFRONTATION

The next day, when many of the Koraysh gathered near the Ka'ba, Zuhayr and his companions entered its courtyard. Zuhayr circumambulated Ka'ba seven times, then turned to the gathering and said, "O people of Mecca, should we eat and wear clothes while the sons of Hashim suffer on account of their being unable to trade? By Allah, I will not sit until this terrible pact is torn up!"

Abu Jahl was quick to rise up in protest saying, "It will not be torn up, you are a liar!" Zamah now spoke up, "It is you who are the liar, we were not in favor of it even when it was written." At that point Abdul Bakhtari interjected, "We are not in favor of its contents, neither do we hold with it!" Both Mutim and Hisham supported their companions whereupon Abu Jahl accused them all of conspiracy.

Just then, Mutim went into the Ka'ba to fetch the document. To his amazement termites had eaten all but a short phrase at the beginning of the document that read, "In Your Name, O Allah", and so Mutim brought the remaining portion out and showed to the gathering.

Many of the Koraysh had already soften to the words of Zuhayr and his companions, but when they saw the remnant of the document they remembered the words of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that nothing would remain of it except the Name of Allah, they took it to be an omen and so it was that the boycott finally came to an end. Abu Jahl knew it was pointless to go against the wishes of the crowd so it was with great reluctance that he accepted its termination.

News that the boycott had been revoked was delivered to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers and there was great rejoicing of thanksgiving to Allah for its lifting.

AN ATTEMPT TO PERSUADE

Although the Koraysh had caused the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions considerable hardship, the boycott failed to produce a positive result. So once again, the Koraysh directed their efforts to tempt the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) into modifying his opposition to their idolatrous worship. With this in mind, Waleed, the elderly chieftain of the Makhzum, together with other chieftains went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to suggest a compromise which was that both parties be permitted to practice their religion at the Ka'ba.

When it came to important matters, it was the custom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) not to respond to a proposition straight away, rather he would wait for Allah to send down a Revelation to him. On this occasion he did not have to wait long and the answer was revealed in a short chapter, called "The Unbelievers".

"Say, 'O unbelievers, I do not worship what you worship,
nor do you worship what I worship.
Nor am I worshipping what you have worshipped,
neither will you worship what I worship.
To you your religion, and to me my Religion."
Koran Chapter 109

As soon as the Koraysh heard these verses, the brief, peaceful interlude faded into oblivion.

CHAPTER 39 THE YEAR OF SORROW

The year was 619 after Jesus, and ten years after Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), received the first Revelation. It was a time for happiness but also of great sorrow for it was in that year, during the month of Ramadan, that Lady Khadijah, may Allah be pleased with her, returned to her Creator.

Out of all the ladies of the world, Allah selected her to be the wife of His beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). She was indeed, the best wife for the best husband and had been blissfully married for twenty-five years. Her love and devotion to the calling and to him were unquestionable. A cross word was never exchanged between them, they were the perfect couple and loved being in each other's company.

Lady Khadijah had been the first to accept Islam and her faith was like the brilliance of the brightest planet that causes all the planets and stars to appear dim in the darkest hour of the night.

Although Lady Khadijah had known excesses of wealth and luxury she never uttered a single word of complaint when the Holy family's circumstances had been reduced to the poverty of this materialistic world. Rather, she was ever thankful to Allah for whatever came her way. She was charitable and considerate, never looked down on anyone, and lovingly treated members of her household in the same way as she did her family. Such was the love and care she gave them that none wished to leave her service even when the Holy family's circumstances were reduced.

Whenever she had noticed or heard of someone in a distressed state she had always been there to lend a helping hand and like her beloved husband, never turned anyone away. She always looked for the good in people and brushed away anything that might to others have appeared negative. She was pure in heart, mind, body, and soul and was known as the Mother of Believers.

Lady Khadijah had been an exemplary mother who dearly loved her children and raised them to be the best, most loving, obedient children of their time. Many were the days when she would be found fondly playing with them or, much to their delight, telling them the stories of other prophets that her beloved husband had narrated to her. When her two sons returned to Allah, she had been naturally saddened but she trusted in Allah and never complained, and gently comforted her grieving daughters who missed their little brothers.

Lady Khadijah had been the most perfect wife, mother, friend, and neighbor. Those ladies fortunate to know her wished they had her qualities for she set the standard on earth for every woman who longed for Paradise in the life Hereafter.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his four daughters, ladies Zaynab, Rukiyah, Umm Kulthum and Fatima were deeply sorrowed by their loss. However, peace and comfort descended upon them when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently and lovingly told his daughters that many years before, when he had been in retreat in the Cave of Mount Hira, the Angel Gabriel had visited him bearing greetings for their mother from her Lord. Tenderly, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his children of the wonderful news Gabriel had given him, which was, that he should tell their mother that a palace of gold had been prepared especially for her in Paradise, where she would no longer suffer from either noise or fatigue.

The news of Gabriel's message comforted his daughters greatly and they were content in the knowledge that Allah had called her home and removed her far from the enemies of her Lord.

THE DEATH OF ABU TALIB

Not long after Lady Khadijah had passed away, Abu Talib was taken ill. The illness proved to be terminal and as he lay on his deathbed he was visited, amongst other notables of the Koraysh tribe, by Utba, Shayba, Ummaya from the tribe of Jummah, Abu Sufyan, and Abu Jahl.

His visitors were well aware of the bond between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Abu Talib and now that he lay on his deathbed they hoped that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would listen to his dying wishes. They approached the subject delicately saying, "O Abu Talib, you know how much we respect you, and now these circumstances have come upon you, and we fear for you. We know the bond you and your nephew share, so ask him to come to you. Give him this gift from us, and take from him a gift for us, which is that he should leave us alone, whilst we, in turn leave him alone -- let him leave us and our religion in peace!"

Abu Talib sent word to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and when he arrived he spoke to him saying, "Son of my brother, these leaders of your people have come to me asking that both you and they be flexible with one another." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Then give me a word, a word by which they shall rule over both the Arabs and Persians." Excitedly, Abu Jahl replied, "Indeed, by your father, for that we will give you not only one word, but ten more!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Then you must say, 'There is no god except Allah' and renounce all that you worship except for Him." In exasperation the Koraysh threw up their hands saying, "Muhammad, would you make our gods one God, what you say is indeed strange!"

The leaders realized their mission had been in vain and turned to each other saying, "This man will give us nothing we ask for, we will go our own way and uphold our religion which is the religion of our fathers until Allah judges between us and him!"

After the leaders had left, Abu Talib drew the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to his side and said, "Son of my brother, in my eyes you were not unreasonable."

The unshakable love the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Abu Talib shared for one another was very deep and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) longed that his uncle should embrace Islam. Abu Talib had supported him through thick and thin, and when others of his family deserted him, he had always been there, yet he had not submitted himself to Islam but he was ever hopeful.

During Abu Talib's last hours, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked him gently, "Uncle, say these words, so that on the Day of Resurrection I may intercede for you." Abu Talib replied, "Son of my brother, if it were not that the Koraysh would think I had just said these words because I feared death, then I would say them. Yet, if I said them, would they be said just to please you?" The time of departure arrived soon after and the angels of death took away Abu Talib's soul.

Some scholars of Islam are of the opinion that Abu Talib, the wise man of the Koraysh, had a hidden agenda not to embrace Islam openly. At that time the five pillars of Islam - which are the articles of belief and will be discussed in the appropriate section - had not been revealed and several scholars are of the opinion that he died a believer. His death was not considered to be an integral issue and no further details are available. However, it has been reported in the authentic quotations of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) visited the graves of his parents, Abdullah and Amina, and by the permission of Allah raised them from the dead and instructed them in the five pillars of Islam and that they both embraced Islam. It is likely that the same applied to Abu Talib, but Allah knows best.

THE SUCCESSOR TO THE TRIBE OF HASHIM

Now that Abu Talib was dead, the leadership of the tribe of Hashim fell to Abu Lahab whose hatred of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was well established. As could be expected, Abu Lahab was not prepared to offer him any support and so the persecution accelerated to a new height.

DESPICABLE ACTIONS

One day as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) offered his prayer at the Ka'ba, Abu Jahl, in his hateful way, said to his four companions, "I wish someone would bring the bowels of a camel with all its dirt and throw it over Muhammad!" Without hesitation, Ukba, Muait's son brought the filth and emptied it over the Prophet's neck as he prostrated. The Koraysh looked on making fun of him, delighting in their attempt to degrade the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), but he remained calm and grieved for their disbelief.

Meanwhile, someone told Lady Fatima, the youngest daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who was five or six years old, of the disgusting act and so she ran as quickly as her little legs would carry her to him and removed the filth from her beloved father and cried as she rebuked and cursed Ukba for his foul deed.

Ukba was not of a mind to stop his foul behavior and in fact he was encouraged. On another occasion as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was humbly absorbed in his prayer near the Ka'ba, Ukba approached him with a piece of cloth in his hand, threw it around his neck, pulled it tight and dragged him down until he fell upon his knees. At that moment Abu Bakr entered and saw what Ukba had done and released the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), and in doing so turned to Ukba saying, "Would you kill a man just because he says that Allah is his Lord!"

There were many such disgraceful, unprovoked acts that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) patiently endured which caused his young daughter to weep, as she could not bear to see her beloved father treated so badly. On each occasion the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would comfort her with words of tenderness and reassure her saying, "Do not cry little daughter, Allah will protect your father," and kissed her as he dried away the tears from her darling little face.

In the years that followed, during the first major hostility in Islam, the Encounter of Badr, all those who took part in throwing the camel's filth over the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were reported by Masood's son to have been killed by the angels of Allah.

CHAPTER 40

THE VISION

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was now fifty years old when he saw a vision in which a man came to him carrying a figure wrapped in silk. The man told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "This is your wife, look." Gently, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) unwrapped the silk covering and saw Ayesha, however Ayesha was still a young girl similar in age to Lady Fatima and Abu Bakr had already promised her in marriage Jubair, Mutim's son. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who never disobeyed Allah in anything, did not question the vision but thought to himself, "If this is what Allah intends, then it will be."

A few nights later as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) slept peacefully, he saw another vision. This time it was not a man that came to him but an angel carrying a figure wrapped in silk. With respect, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked the angel to show him what was wrapped in the piece of silk, whereupon the angel raised the cover and once more he beheld Ayesha. Again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not question the vision but thought whatever Allah had ordained would surely come to be.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had not mention his visions to anyone, not even Abu Bakr, when Khawlah, who had attended to his household affairs since the death of Lady Khadijah suggested he should remarry. Politely, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked if she had anyone in mind to which she replied, "Perhaps Ayesha, Abu Bakr's daughter, or Swaydah, Zamah's daughter," who was about thirty years old and had lost her husband, Sakran shortly after their return from Abyssinia.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) modestly asked Khawlah to propose both marriages, so she went to Swaydah who was honored by the proposal and sent word back saying, "Obedient to you, O Messenger of Allah." Upon receiving her acceptance, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) respectfully requested her to chose one of her tribesmen to give her in marriage. Lady Swaydah chose her brother-in-law Hatib who had recently returned from Abyssinia and shortly after the marriage took place.

Meanwhile, Abu Bakr went to Mutim and asked him to release Ayesha from the agreement with his son Jubair. Mutim agreed and a marriage by proxy took place several months after his marriage to Lady Swaydah, however it was not consummated until many years later during the second year after the migration.

CHAPTER 41

ABU BAKR AND TALHA

Abu Bakr had, until shortly after his conversion, been a wealthy, influential, and well respected citizen of Mecca, but now, on account of the boycott, he was no longer wealthy and his influence had dwindled amongst the unbelievers. There had been a time when all would turn to him with their troubles when he would either help financially or give sound advice, but now many of those whom he had helped turned away and shunned him.

One day, when Abu Bakr and his cousin Talha were taking a stroll, Nawfal -- whose son, Aswad had embraced Islam under the hand of Abu Bakr -- and a company of others attacked the pair, tied their hands and feet together and left them lying on the road for passerbys to see and mock.

In those days it was customary for the tribe of the injured party to revenge themselves against the offender, but the leaders of the tribe of Taym, to which Abu Bakr belonged, chose to ignore the incident which was a clear indication that they now considered him to be of little or no standing.

Now that it was known that no action would be taken by the Taym tribe if Abu Bakr were to be harmed he became the object of persistent abuse so he went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to ask his permission to join those that remained behind in Abyssinia, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) always had the welfare and safety of his companions at heart agreed so with a sorrowful heart Abu Bakr set out for Abyssinia.

As he neared the Red Sea, he met an old friend by the name of ibn Ad-Dughunnah, the chieftain of a small tribe that had settled not far from Mecca and were allied to the Koraysh. Ibn Ad-Dughunnah hardly recognized him and was both shocked and distressed to see Abu Bakr in such an impoverished condition and inquired what had brought about such a dramatic change in his affairs. Abu Bakr related several of the unwarranted hostilities he had faced in Mecca on account of his conversion, then told him that now all he wanted was to be able to worship Allah in peace and to preach during his travels.

Ibn Ad-Dughunnah reflected upon former times in wonderment of how people could turn to be so fickle and said, "How could they have done such things? You were without doubt the gem amongst your tribe, in times of trouble you were always there to call upon, your deeds are good, and you always helped others in times of need! Go back, I will support you."

Abu Bakr accepted ibn Ad-Dughunnah's support and they returned together. Upon reaching Mecca, ibn Ad-Dughunnah declared for all to hear, "People of Koraysh, the son of Abu Kuhafah has my support -- let no one treat him badly!"

The Koraysh accepted the ultimatum, however a fellow from the tribe of Jummah -- the tribe from whom Abu Bakr had rescued Bilal demanded, "Tell him to worship his Lord behind closed doors, and to let his prayers and recitation be confined there so that he can neither be seen nor heard. We fear that if our sons or women see him they will be seduced by his ways!" Ibn Ad-Dughunnah turned to Abu Bakr and asked him to comply, and he agreed.

CHAPTER 42

THE JOURNEY TO TA'IF

The people of Mecca knew that Abu Lahab, the new chief of the tribe of Hashim was not inclined to take action against those who perpetrated the bounds of decency against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Now the road was clear for all and sundry to abuse Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions, and so their persecution continued.

In hope of spreading the message of Islam and gaining the support of the influential tribe of Thakif, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) journeyed to Ta'if. Upon reaching the city he went straight to the house of Amr, Umair's son whose sons Abd Yalil, Masood, and Habib were its tribal leaders and invited them to Islam, then sought their alliance.

The hearts of the brothers were unreceptive, one of them swore that he would tear down the covering of Ka'ba if Allah had sent him as His Messenger. Another mocked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "Couldn't Allah have found someone better than you to send!" As for the third brother he said, "By Allah, don't let me speak to you ever again. If you are as you claim, the Messenger of Allah, then you are far too important to speak with me; on the other hand, if you are lying, it is not befitting for me to speak with you!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) endured these harsh remarks with patience and as he got up to leave the brothers, called their household and slaves together and encouraged them to hurl abusive statements at the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The commotion attracted other members of the tribe who joined them and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sought the peace and quite of an orchard belonging to Utba and Shayba. Gradually the crowd dispersed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tied his camel to a palm tree then sat down under its shade and reproached himself as he supplicated to Allah.

THE NAZARENE SLAVE FROM NINEVEH

Now Utba and Shayba had seen what had happened to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and their hearts softened a little toward him so they sent a young Nazarene slave by the name of Addas with a dish of grapes to him.

As Addas gave the dish to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he looked up smiled and thanked him then took some grapes and before eating them said, "Bismillah". The pronouncement astonished Addas who said, "By Allah, this is not the way the people of this country speak." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) looked up at him and inquired, "Which country do you come from, and what is your religion?" Addas replied that he was a Nazarene, a follower of Prophet Jesus, peace be upon him, from far away Nineveh (Ninawah).

The Prophet's (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heart was full of joy and commented, "From the town of the righteous man Jonah, the son of Mattal." Addas was even more surprised and asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) how he knew about Jonah to which he replied, "He is my brother, he was a prophet and I am a prophet." Addas' heart rejoiced and he bent over and kissed his head, then his hands and feet.

Meanwhile, Utba and Shayba had been observing the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) from a distance and were disturbed when they saw Addas respecting the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) by kissing him and said to each other, "Look, he is already corrupting our slave!" When Addas returned to them they asked why he had acted as he did. Addas answered, "He is the finest man in this country and has told me things that only a prophet would know." To this Utba and Shayba exclaimed, "Do not let him seduce you from your religion - your religion is better than his!"

THE VALLEY OF NAKHLAH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) realized he could expect no help whatsoever from the people of Thakif, so he mounted his camel and set off back to Mecca.

Several days had passed and dusk was about to descend but he decided to continue on his journey then take his rest in the valley of Nakhlah -- which is about a day's ride from Mecca. Upon reaching the valley he dismounted and offered his prayer. Whilst he was standing in prayer a party of Jinn from Nasibhin happened to pass by and were captivated by his recitation of the Koran and stopped to listen.

The jinn were created before humans and unlike the human, who was created from clay and whose father is Adam, the jinn were created from smokeless fire and their father is satan, the stoned and cursed. But before the creation of the jinn and human, the angels were created from light. Despite the fact that satan is the father of the Jinn, there are among them believers.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had received several Revelations that spoke of not only mankind but also jinn, in which both were given good news of Paradise and warned of the punishment of Hell. Now, in the valley of Nakhlah, he received another Revelation:

"Say: 'It is revealed to me that a party of jinn listened and then said:
'We have indeed heard a wonderful Koran, that guides to the Right Path.
We believe in it and we will not associate anyone with our Lord.
He - exalted be the Majesty of our Lord
who has neither taken to Himself a wife, nor a son!
The ignorant fool among us has spoken outrageously against Allah,
we never thought that either human or jinn would ever tell a lie against Allah!'"
Koran 72:1-5

THE WITNESSING OF THE TREE

There was also another occasion when the jinn, unseen to human eyes, but seen by a tree were present and listening to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The jinn asked the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "Who will be a witness for you?" The Prophet, replied, "This tree, come forward tree!" and the tree came dragging its roots making a clumping sound and testified.

THE ROAD TO MECCA

As he set off on the final stage of his homeward journey, the matter of the people of the Thakif's refusal to accept the mercy of Allah weighed heavily upon the Prophet's mind.

Not long after he had set off, a Meccan riding a fast horse caught up with him whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) expressed his concern to him. The Meccan agreed to ride on ahead of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and go to Al Akhnas, Sharik's son to ask him if he would be prepared to ally his tribe to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). However, Al Akhnas was not considered to be a full-blood member of the Koraysh and sent a reply back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying that on this account he was unable to help in this matter.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of Al Akhnas' refusal, his thoughts turned to Suhail, Amr's son, so he asked the Meccan to return again to Mecca and approach Suhail, but Suhail also declined.

The Meccan returned yet again to Mecca, but this time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked him to approach Al Mutim, Adiy's son, who, some time ago had retrieved what remained of the boycott document posted in the Ka'ba.

Mutim was agreeable, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered Mecca with his support where, fully armed, Mutim stood near the Ka'ba with his sons and nephews and announced that he had allied himself to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Abu Jahl was among those present that day and asked, "Are you giving him your support, or are you following him!" "Support of course!" replied Al Mutim.

THE ANGER OF UTBA

One day, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Abu Jahl and some of the leaders of the Koraysh happened to be near the Ka'ba at the same time. In his usual way, Abu Jahl turned to some members of the tribe of Abdu Manaf and said in a tone that mocked, "Is this your Prophet, children of Abdu Manaf?" Utba, Rabia's son replied in an angered tone saying, "What is wrong if we have a Prophet or a king!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) overheard his reply and spoke to Utba in a kindly reminded, "O Utba, your anger was not for the sake of Allah, but on your own account." Then he turned to Abu Jahl and warned, "As for you Abu Jahl, a great affair will befall you. It will cause you to laugh a little, but weep a lot." Then he spoke to the leaders of the Koraysh saying, "A great affair will come upon you which you will indeed hate."

Despite Mutim's inclination toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he did not embrace Islam and died shortly before the encounter of Badr.

CHAPTER 43

THE MESSAGE AND THE TRIBES

It was the time of the pilgrimage and many pilgrims camped outside Mecca before visiting their idols at Ka'ba. It was also the season of many fairs such as the one at Ukaz, to which many eloquent poets would gather and compete against one another.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided to visit the camps of the tribes of Kinda, Kalb, Amir, Maharib, Fazara, Ghassan, Murra, Sulaim, Abs, Nadir, Adhruh, Hudharima, Hanifa, Harith, and Ka'b's son to recite portions of the Koran to them and then ask if they would like to ally themselves, but it was not to be, and the beauty of his recitation as well as his invitation to ally themselves with him fell on deaf ears.

The most bitter response to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) came from the tribe of Hanifa. Later, its chief, Musailima proclaimed that he himself was a prophet!

The fair was well underway when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) approached Bayhara, Firas' son, from the tribe of Amir the son of Sasaa. Bayhara listened to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then exclaimed, "By Allah, given this man I could conquer all of Arabia." Then, a thought occurred to him and he asked,

"If we give you our allegiance and Allah gives you victory over the enemies of Islam, shall we then be given leadership after you?" To this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) replied, "The matter rests with Allah." Bayhara didn't like the reply and exclaimed, "Then I think you want us to lend you our support against the Arabs, and then, if Allah gives you victory someone else will reap the benefit – no, we do not accept!"

Abu Bakr had accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) when he visited the tribe of Dhul, Shaiban's son - the chiefs of this tribe were Mafruk, Muthanna and Hani, Kabisa's son. When Abu Bakr met Mafruk, Mafruk asked if he had heard about the coming of a Prophet, whereupon Abu Bakr turned towards the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and introduced him saying, "This is he." Mafruk asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to tell him about the message entrusted to him, to which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) replied, "There is no god except Allah, and I am His Messenger." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) with the sweetness of his voice proceeded to recite the following verse from the Koran:

"Say: 'Come, I will recite to you what your Lord forbids you;
that you shall associate anything with Him;
(He orders you) that you shall be good to your parents
that you shall not kill your children because of poverty,
We provide for you and for them,
that you shall not commit foul deeds whether openly or in secret;
and that you shall not kill the soul that Allah has forbidden except by right.
With such Allah charges you, in order that you understand."
Koran 6:151

The three leaders listened to the recitation and all expressed their liking of the verse, however, they told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) they were reluctant to abandon the religion of their ancestors because they would lose their authority with their fellow tribesmen. They also pointed out that they had already pledged their allegiance to the King of Persia and as such were already bound.

The Prophet diligently (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) continued to invite all who would listen to Islam and asked their leaders to ally themselves to him. Like Abu Jahl, Abu Lahab viewed Islam as a threat and whenever he heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) preaching, he would make it his business to try and break-up the gatherings by crying out, "This man is an apostate, he lies. He is trying to mislead you and wants you to abandon Al Lat and Al Uzza as well as your allies, the jinn from the tribe of Malik!"

Although no allies were gained, many had listened to the verses of the Koran and were aware of the message the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) preached.

CHAPTER 44

THE NIGHT JOURNEY AND THE ASCENT

It was during these early years of his prophethood that one of the greatest miracles of all time occurred.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) happened to be visiting the house of Hubayrah, the husband of Hind, better known as Umm Hani, the daughter of Fatima and Abu Talib, when night fell so they invited him to stay overnight.

Although Hubayrah had not converted to Islam his wife, and mother-in-law had, and so they were blessed to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in offering the night prayer.

That night the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) slept but a little, then arose and made his way to his beloved Ka'ba. After a while drowsiness overcame him and he lay down to sleep near the Hijr Ishmael. Whilst he slept, the Angel Gabriel came to him and stirred him with his foot, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) awoke, sat up, but saw no one and so he settled himself down. The same thing occurred three times, but upon the third time as he looked up he saw Gabriel who greeted him and took hold of his arm to help him arise.

Gabriel led the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to the door of Ka'ba, and there before it stood Burak, a winged white animal from Paradise, greater in size than a donkey but lesser than a mule, with wings on its hind legs. Burak was surrounded by angels on either side but as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tried to mount, it shied away, whereupon Gabriel placed his hand on its mane and said, "O Burak, are you not ashamed to behave in such a manner? By Allah, no one that has ridden you before this is more honorable before Allah," whereupon, Burak broke out in a sweat and stood still for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to mount.

As soon as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was seated, the Angels Gabriel and Mikail also mounted. Gabriel sat in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) holding Burak's saddle and Mikail sat behind the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) holding its rein.

As Gabriel pointed the way Burak set forth. Each stride it took reached the end of his vision, miraculously breaking the barrier of light which NASA, the Space Agency, with all its technical advances has been unable to achieve, and as they passed over the mountains Burak raised his legs higher so that they passed over them in comfort.

When Burak reached Jerusalem, he stopped and raised his front leg so that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) could dismount. There, in Jerusalem, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was greeted by several prophets amongst whom were Abraham, Moses, and Jesus, and it was there on the site of the ancient temple of Jerusalem that Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led them in prayer. After its conclusion, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was offered two goblets, one contained wine and the other milk. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chose the goblet of milk and drank from it whereupon Gabriel said, "You have been rightly guided and so will your nation; for wine is forbidden."

After this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Gabriel ascended to the nearest heaven. Upon reaching it Gabriel asked for its gate to be opened whereupon its guardian inquired, "Who is there?" "Gabriel," he replied, and "who is with you," asked the guardian. Gabriel replied, "Muhammad," and the gate was opened. The same questions and replies were to be asked and given at the gate of each heaven.

THE FIRST, LOWER HEAVEN

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) entered the first heaven all but one of the angels expressed signs of happiness and smiled a welcoming smile. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) turned to Gabriel and asked about the unsmiling angel and was told, "He is Malik, the Guardian of Hell, he does not smile but if he were to smile at anyone, it would be to you."

Whilst the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was in the first heaven, he saw Prophet Adam observing the souls of the deceased. When a good soul passed by he was very happy and said, "A good soul for a good body," however when a bad soul passed by he would frown and say, "A bad soul for a bad body." Upon seeing Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) Prophet Adam welcomed and supplicated for him and asked Gabriel if the time had come when he had been sent for, and Gabriel confirm that it was so.

THE SECOND HEAVEN

In the second heaven, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and Gabriel were met by Prophet Jesus, the son of Mary, and John, the son of Zachariah who also welcomed him and supplicated for him and inquired if he had been sent for. Later the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) described Prophet Jesus as being a man of medium height, with straight hair and a reddish, freckled complexion.

THE THIRD HEAVEN

In the third heaven the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) met Joseph, the son of Prophet Jacob, who was so handsome that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) described him as being as beautiful as the full moon and had been given half of all the beauty, whereas Prophet Muhammad was given all the beauty. He welcomed and supplicated for the Prophet and also inquired if the Prophet had been sent for and was told that he had.

THE FOURTH HEAVEN

In the fourth heaven they encountered Idris of whom the Koran speaks:
"And mention in the Book, Idris;
he too was of the truth and a Prophet,
We raised him to a high place."
Koran 19:56 - 57

Idris welcomed and supplicated for the Prophet and inquired if he had been sent for and Gabriel affirmed that he had.

THE FIFTH HEAVEN

In the fifth heaven the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) met a handsome man with white hair and a long beard, it was Prophet Aaron, the son of Imran. Like the prophets before him he too welcomed and supplicated for him and inquired if he had been sent.

THE SIXTH HEAVEN

In the sixth heaven he met a man with a prominent nose, similar to those of the people of Shanu'a. The man was Prophet Moses, brother of Aaron and son of Imran, and as before he too welcomed and supplicated for him and inquired whether he had been sent.

When he was with Moses, Moses started to weep, whereupon he asked why he was weeping. Moses replied, O Lord, this is a young man who was sent after me, and more of his nation will enter the Garden than those of my nation."

THE SEVENTH HEAVEN

When Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Gabriel entered the seventh heaven they saw a man sitting on a throne at the entrance of an eternal, crowded mansion – Al Bayt al Mamur - the entrance of the eternal crowded mansion has been explained by scholars as being the entrance to Paradise. The man was Prophet Abraham of whom Prophet Muhammad observed, "I have never seen a man more like myself."

It was in the seventh heaven that the Prophet saw a beautiful, heavenly maiden -- a houri -- and asked to whom she would be espoused and was told Zaid, the son of Haritha.

Then he saw angels entering the gates of the mansion and was told that each day seventy thousand angels enter never to return again until the Day of Resurrection.

Then Gabriel took the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to the Lote tree of the Furthest Limit. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) described the tree as having leaves the size of elephants ears and fruit like earthenware vessels. When the command of Allah covers it, that which is covered undergoes a change, the beauty of which none in all creation is able to describe.

The Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was told, "This is the Lote Tree of the Ending. Each of your nation who travels your Path will reach it. It is the furthest Lote Tree. From its roots spring rivers of sweet water, rivers of unstaling milk, rivers of wine, a delight to its drinker, and rivers of pure honey. The tree is so huge that it would take a rider seventy years just to ride across its shadow. One leaf from it would shade all creation, light and angels cover it."

Thereafter Allah obligated that fifty prayers were to be offered during the day and night.

Before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left Allah said to him, "Peace be unto you, O Prophet," and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Peace be unto us all, and good worshippers."

THE PROPHET'S RETURN JOURNEY THROUGH THE HEAVENS

On the Prophet's return through the heavens he met Moses once again, who asked how many daily prayers had become incumbent upon him and his followers. When Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him fifty, Moses replied, "Prayer is a weighty matter, and your nation is weak. I have tested the Children of Israel and know by experience, return to our Lord and ask Him to reduce the number for you and your nation."

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his Lord and asked for a reduction, and the number was reduced to forty. Once again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) met Moses upon his return, who asked him the same question,

whereupon he returned, and so it continued until the number of daily prayers became reduced to five.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) met Moses upon his final return, Moses inquired as he had done before, but Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that he felt ashamed to ask Allah to reduce the number yet again.

In later years the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed his Companions that when they offer each of the five obligatory daily prayers in faith and trust, they receive the reward of ten prayers for each obligated prayer. He reminded them that they should be grateful to Moses for the reduction in number.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) also told his Companions that he was told that for whosoever intends doing something good and does not do it, a meritorious act is recorded for them, however, if he or she does it they are the recipients of the reward for ten meritorious acts. When a person intends to do a wrong action nothing will be written against them, but if the wrong action is carried through then only one wrong action is recorded against them.

Peace be upon all the Prophets of Allah.

THE RETURN JOURNEY

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Angel Gabriel now returned to Burak who waited patiently on the Mount in readiness for the return journey to Mecca.

As they sped over the mountains and desert they overtook several southward bound caravans. When they neared Syria a camel saw Burak, took fright and bolted away from its camp. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw where the camel had stopped and as the traders searched for the camel, they heard his voice telling them where it could be found.

They had reached Dajanan -- approximately twenty-five miles from Mecca -- when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw a caravan and stopped for brief moment. Not far from the sleeping traders was a covered jug of water, he removed its cover, drank the remaining water, replaced the cover and without disturbing anyone, left to continue home to Mecca.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arrived in Mecca before dawn and just before it broke, he awoke Umm Hani to pray. After the prayer he told her, "O Umm Hani, as you witnessed, I prayed here last night with you in this valley. After that I went to Jerusalem and prayed there. Now, as you have seen, I prayed the dawn prayer here with you." Umm Hani was concerned for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and said, "O Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), do not tell anyone about this because they will belie and insult you." As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made ready to leave for the Ka'ba he replied, "By Allah, I will certainly tell them," whereupon Umm Hani asked her servant to follow him to make sure no harm came to him and to report back to her.

ABU BAKR'S SINCERE BELIEF

Upon reaching the Ka'ba, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told those present, believer and unbeliever alike, about his miraculous journey. Immediately, the

unbelievers laughed and mocked him. They did not believe in his miracles and on no account would they believe him now, as the return journey of such distance was known to take well over two months.

Gloating in what they deemed to be their triumph, a group of Koraysh made their way to Abu Bakr's house to tell him the news. When they reached him they said, "What do you think of your friend now! He tells us that last night he went to Jerusalem, prayed there and then returned to Mecca!" Abu Bakr's immediate reaction was that they were trying to trick him, for he distrusted his visitors, but as soon as Abu Bakr realized they were in earnest, he turned to them and said, "If he said it, then it is indeed true! What makes you wonder, he tells me greater news that is sent down from the heavens to earth in any hour of the day or night. I know he speaks the truth!"

Then, Abu Bakr left his home and went to the Ka'ba and repeated his conviction. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of Abu Bakr's forthrightness, he named him "As-Sideek" -- "The Sincere" -- the confirmer of the truth.

THE CARAVAN RETURNS AND THE DELAYED SETTING OF THE SUN

Among the Prophet's followers were those who needed additional reassurance. They had heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tell of the caravans nearing Mecca and of the camel that bolted as well as the empty jug of water, so they waited for the caravans to return to ask them.

When he was asked on what day the caravaner's return might be expected, he told them it would be on Wednesday. They days passed, Wednesday came and the Koraysh looked curiously for the caravan. The day was about to pass and the caravan had not arrived, so the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, supplicated to Allah asking Him to increase the day by an hour, and the sun was withheld from setting until it arrived, and one by one the caravans returned and each trader confirmed the incidents.

THE PRIVILEGED FEW

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told only a few select Companions about his ascent through the heavens and the meeting at the Sidrat Tree. It wasn't until some years later that he narrated the events of his ascent to the rest of his Companions.

Concerning the Night Ascent it was revealed:

"Indeed it is not except a Revelation which is revealed,
taught by One who is Stern in power.
Of might, he (Gabriel) stood firm while he was in the highest horizon;
then he drew near, and become close
he was but two bows' length or even nearer
so (Allah) revealed to His worshipper (Gabriel) that which he revealed (to Prophet Muhammad).
His heart did not lie of what he saw.
What, will you dispute with him about what he sees!
Indeed, he saw him in another descent at the Lote Tree (Sidrat tree) of the ending
close to the Garden of Refuge.
When there comes to the Lote Tree, that which comes his eyes did not swerve,
nor did they stray for indeed he saw one of the greatest signs of his Lord."

CHAPTER 45

THE SIX MEN FROM THE TRIBE OF KHAZRAJ

The time for the annual pilgrimage to Mecca had arrived once again and pilgrims set up camp at Mina before going on to Ka'ba. It had become customary for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to journey to Mina each year and speak to the pilgrims about Islam, but all too often he and his message were met with rejection.

It was during this season, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was at Aqabah, that he met six men from the Yathrib tribe of Khazraj. The men were anxious to meet the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), many were the times they had heard the Jews speak of the expected Prophet and knew his time must be near at hand as the Jews had expressed their opinion that the signs heralding his appearance had reached their fulfillment.

As they sat before him, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) recited verses from the Koran and confirmed that he was the expected Prophet they had heard about. He spoke of the principals of Islam and as he did, the light of Islam was kindled in their hearts.

The Khazrajites asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) many questions and his replies satisfied their hearts. None doubted that the man sitting before them was indeed the one the Jews awaited and turned to one another saying, "This is indeed the Prophet the Jews warned us about, don't let them be the first to reach him!" They remembered how the Jews had told them that when he came they would be destroyed on account of their worshipping more than one god, just as the people of Aad and Thamood had been in centuries past, and so they embraced Islam.

Before they departed, the Khazrajites told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "We left our people because there are no other tribes like them torn apart by enmity and evil, perhaps Allah will unite them through you. We will go and invite them to Islam just as we have accepted it, and if Allah gathers them together on your account, then no man will be greater than you!"

THE ALLEGIANCE OF AQABAH

The year after the six Khazrajites embraced Islam, twelve men from Yathrib went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to embrace Islam.

The men were anxious to learn more about Islam and asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to send one of his Companions back with them to teach. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chose Musab, Umair's son, who was the grandson of Hashim. When he reached Yathrib they lodged him with respect in the home of a wealthy man of good standing by the name of Asad, Zurarah's son.

As the days passed new converts came into the fold of Islam, the only families not to respond to the invitation were those of Katimah, Wa'il, and Wakif.

SA'AD THE SON OF MUDAH

Sa'ad was the chief of the tribe of Aws and duly respected among his tribe. One day Musab visited him and invited him to Islam. At first Sa'ad did not incline to the invitation but when he heard Musab recite a portion of the Koran, Allah caused his heart to turn toward Him and he embraced Islam, whereupon he returned to his tribe to invited them to join him.

THE SEVENTY-TWO MEN OF YATHRIB

The following year, when the time for pilgrimage arrived, seventy-two men and women, set forth in a caravan to Mecca. Unknown to the unbelievers in their party were a group of new converts who, when the time was right, slipped away unnoticed to meet the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at Aqabah where they affirmed their belief in the Oneness of Allah and embraced Islam.

On account of the increased hostilities toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions in Mecca, the Prophet's thoughts turned to migrating with his Companions to Yathrib where a strong community of Muslims was now established. However, his own migration was out of the question until Allah made it known to him.

When Abbas, the uncle of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who had not yet embraced Islam, learned of the Prophet's inclination he became concerned for his safety and reminded him that at least in Mecca his family loved and honored him, and that they had always stood by him against his enemies.

On account of his concern, Abbas turned to the party from Yathrib and asked, "If he inclines to live with you, will you support him with your life and body? -- If you cannot, tell me." Bara turned and said, "We have been born and raised as warriors", just then Abu Al Haitham interjected saying, "O Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) we are on good terms with the Jews, after this pledge we shall have to break from them. Is it possible that you may leave us to return to your own City when your authority is realized?" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled reassuringly and said, "No, my blood is your blood, you are mine and I am yours." And he was, as was known, a man of his word.

Following this, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked them to take a pledge to abandon idolatry, theft, infanticide, and to promise to obey him. As they were about to take their pledge, Sa'ad, Zuraha's son, stood up and asked, "My tribesmen, do you understand what is meant by such a pledge, it is a declaration of conflict against Arab and non-Arab alike." His tribesmen replied that they had understood and were ready to pledge their word.

Sa'ad's statement is one of great significance and has regrettably been misunderstood and misinterpreted by some Muslims - especially in the recently emerged bellicose, non-mainstream Wahabi cult - who fail to understand one of the basic, elementary duties of a Muslim to his neighbor. It is *not* a call for Jihad or for hostilities to be levied against those who have not embraced Islam. Rather, it is obligatory upon all Muslims, especially those who have migrated to a foreign land, to tell their neighbors about Islam and demonstrate its teachings by leading an exemplary life in accordance to the Koran and teachings of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

From the gathering, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chose twelve men to go out and preach. Nine belonged to the tribe of Khazraj and three from the tribe of Aws. They were:

Usayd, Hudair's son, - Hudair had been the Aws commander at the encounter of Bu'ath.

Abu Al Haitham, Tihan's son.

Sa'ad, Khaithama's son, later to be martyred during the Encounter of Badr.

Asad, Zurarah's son, who would often lead the congregational prayer on Friday.

Sa'ad, Rabi's son, later to be martyred during the Encounter of Uhud.

Abdullah, Rawahah's son, a famous poet, martyred during the Encounter of Mutah.

Sa'ad, Ubadah's son, a close Companion of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Mundhar, Umair's son, martyred at the Encounter of Bi'r Maunah.

Bara Marur's son, spokesman during the Allegiance of Aqabah. Bara died before the migration of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Abdullah, Omar's son, martyred at the Encounter of Uhud.

Ubadah, Al Samit's son, a close Companion of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), transmitter of many prophetic sayings.

Rafi, Malik's son, martyred at the Encounter of Uhud.

THE KORAYSH LEARN OF THE ALLEGIANCE AT AQABAH:

The following morning, the Koraysh received word of the pledge and challenged their unbelieving companions, who remained ignorant of the meeting. The unbelievers told the Koraysh that what they heard must be just a rumor because if there was any truth in the matter they felt certain they would have knowledge of it.

CHAPTER 46

MADINAT AL NABI, THE CITY OF THE PROPHET salla Allahu alihi wa salaam

Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was satisfied that Yathrib, which in the years to come was renamed "Madinat Al Nabi" -- the City of the Prophet, later to be abbreviated as Medina -- was a safe haven for his companions and ordered all those who were able to, to migrate to Medina.

When the Koraysh learned of the impending migration they tried to prevent the

Companions. However, they were unsuccessful and all but a few of the Companions migrated, who had been permitted by the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to remain behind with him in Mecca remained.

In connection with the migration, Allah sent down the verses:

"Except the men, women and children, who, being abased have no means and they are unable to guide themselves to a way.
Those, Allah may pardon them, He is the Pardoner, the Forgiver."
Koran 4:98-99

THE FIRST IMMIGRANT TO YATHRIB

Abu Salamah's family originated from Yathrib, from the tribe of Asad, however some of his family had settled in Mecca under the protection and sponsorship of his uncle, the late Abu Talib.

Not long after Abu Talib's death, Abu Salamah and his wife Umm , from the tribe of Mughirah, a branch of the Makhzum tribe, and first cousin to the infamous Abu Jahl, converted to Islam, so they decided to migrate to the safety of Yathrib with their young son Salamah.

When the time came to leave, Abu Salamah saddled his camel and seated his wife as she cradled her young son in her arms, and set off walking alongside the camel leading it by a rope. Almost immediately, men from Umm Salamah's tribe perceived their intent and rushed up to Abu Salamah, snatched the camel's rope from his hand saying, "You can do as you like! As for your wife, do you think we will allow her to go with you?"

The disturbance caught the attention of Abu Salamah's own tribesmen who were greatly angered by the situation. In retaliation they grabbed hold of the young child, Salamah, with such force that they dislocated his little arm, and shouted as Abu Salamah was sent on his way, "You have separated her from our kinsman. We will not leave your son with her and you!"

THE GRIEF OF UMM SALAMAH

Umm Salamah was broken hearted and each day she would make her way to a nearby valley where she would weep for the family she had lost. A year or more had passed when one of Umm Salamah's cousins came across her in the valley and as he saw her weeping took pity on her so he returned to his tribesmen rebuking them saying, "You have separated her from her husband and child, why don't you let the poor woman go!"

Umm Salamah's tribesmen relented and told her that she was free to go to her husband, and upon hearing the good news, Abu Salamah's tribesmen returned her son to her so that the family might be reunited.

Once again Umm Salamah's camel was saddled, and she and her young son mounted then set off by themselves for Yathrib. They journeyed on to Tanim -- which lies approximately six miles outside Mecca -- when they were met by Othman, Talha's son who asked where they were going, and inquired if they were traveling alone. Umm

Salamah told him that except for Allah and her son she was traveling alone in hope of finding her husband.

Othman was perturbed by their plight and offered to accompany them to Yathrib. Umm Salamah accepted Othman's kind gesture and so she and her son continued their journey under Othman's protection.

Later, Umm Salamah would say of Othman, "Othman is one of the most honorable Arabs I have ever met. When we stopped for a rest he would make my camel kneel for me so that I might dismount and then withdraw and tend to the camel for me. Then, he would distance himself from me and sleep. When evening came, Othman would bring my saddled camel to me, then he would turn away so that I might settle myself. When I was ready he would take hold of the reins and lead us."

The days passed and eventually they drew near to the village of Quba, which lies on the outskirts of Yathrib near the ancient lava flows. Othman told Umm Salamah that she would find her husband in the village and to enter it with the blessing of Allah. Now that Othman had accomplished his mission, he wasted no time and returned to Mecca knowing that Umm Salamah would soon be safely reunited with her husband.

THE SECOND FAMILY TO MIGRATE TO YATHRIB

The migration of the Companions was accomplished in phases over an extended passage of time. Following Abu Salamah's migration, the next to migrate was Amir, Rabia's son, with his wife Leila, the daughter of Hathma.

THE MIGRATION OF OMAR

Omar, Khattab's son, together with Ayyash and Hisham, Al As' son, decided to migrate together and agreed to meet each other by the thorn trees that grew on land belonging to the Ghifar some six miles outside Mecca. It was a dangerous time, and so Omar told them that in the event of anyone's failure to reach the thorn trees by the following morning, whosoever was there must not wait, but go on as it would be understood that the missing party had been forced to stay behind.

Omar and Ayyash reached the thorn trees and waited for Hisham to arrive. There was still no sign of Hisham as the time approached, so reluctantly they left for Quba where they stayed with the children of Amr, Auf's son. As they suspected, Hisham had been detained, and forced to outwardly apostatize.

ABU JAHL ARRIVES IN YATHRIB

Shortly after their arrival, Ayyash received two unexpected visitors, Abu Jahl and Harith, both of whom were his relatives. Abu Jahl, knowing how much Ayyash loved his mother, concocted a story about her that troubled Ayyash deeply.

He told him his mother was greatly distressed by his leaving and had taken a vow that she would neither comb her hair, even if it became full of lice, nor would she sit in the shade of a tree but sit unprotected under the blazing heat of the sun until she saw her son again. The thought of his mother's suffering disturbed Ayyash greatly, so he went to Omar and told him of her vow.

Omar knew well the tricks of Abu Jahl and warned him that in his opinion it was nothing but an attempt to seduce him from his religion and that he must be very careful of them.

Ayyash could not be dissuaded and told Omar that he would return to release his mother from her vow and at the same time retrieve some of the money he had left behind.

In a final effort to prevent Ayyash from returning with Abu Jahl and Harith, Omar, in the spirit of true brotherhood, told him that he was willing to give him half of his wealth, if only he would stay.

When Omar realized that Ayyash was not going to change his mind, he gave him his camel telling him that it was well bred and easy to ride. Omar also advised Ayyash not to dismount and if he detected the slightest suspicion of treachery he could make good his escape on it.

Ayyash thanked Omar and gave him the farewell greetings, then set off towards Mecca with Abu Jahl and Harith. After they had traveled some distance, Abu Jahl said, "My nephew, my camel is proving hard to ride will you let me ride with you?" Ayyash agreed and they made their camels kneel. No sooner had the camels knelt, than Abu Jahl and Harith attacked him, bound him tightly and took him back to Mecca where they forced him to apostatize. As Abu Jahl and Harith entered Mecca they called out, "O people of Mecca, deal with your fools in the same way we have dealt with ours!"

The news of Ayyash's wretched condition reached Omar and he feared Allah would not accept the repentance of those who apostatized. Omar continued to be of the same opinion until the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arrived sometime later in Medina and the following verses were sent down:

"Say, 'O My worshipers, who have sinned excessively against themselves, do not despair of the Mercy of Allah, surely, Allah forgives all sins. He is the Forgiver, the Most Merciful. Turn to your Lord and surrender yourselves to Him before the punishment overtakes you, for then you will not be helped. Follow the best of what has been sent down from your Lord before the punishment overtakes you suddenly, while you are unaware.'"
Koran 39:53-55

When Omar heard these verses he wrote them down and sent it to Hisham who was in Mecca. Hisham had difficulty reading so in desperation he supplicated saying, "O Allah, make me understand it!" Allah heard his supplication and Hisham realized that the verses referred to Ayyash and himself whereupon he mounted his camel and set out to rejoin the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who had by then, migrated to Yathrib.

CHAPTER 47

THE VISITOR FROM NAJD

With the exception of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and two of his close Companions, Ali and Abu Bakr and his family, only those Muslims stricken by illness or forcefully detained by the Koraysh remained in Mecca.

The reason the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) remained behind was that he awaited the sending down of the permission of Allah to migrate, for he never did anything of significance without first receiving an instruction from Allah.

On several occasions Abu Bakr had asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for permission to migrate with his family, but each time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would say, "Don't be in such a hurry, Abu Bakr. Perhaps Allah will provide a traveling companion for you." So Abu Bakr waited obediently, ever hopeful that he would be permitted to migrate with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) himself.

Although the Koraysh hated having Muslims in their midst, they became increasingly anxious over the matter of their migration to Yathrib, for they knew that they would never migrate there unless they had the support of many of its citizens.

The Koraysh chieftains began to fear, with half-hearted contempt, the warnings of the Koran and those of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), the warning which bothered them most was: " ... as for you, leaders of Koraysh, a great affair will come upon you that you will indeed hate." So they decided it was time to call a meeting in the time honored house, the House of Assembly, to discuss how they might best rid themselves of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

It was agreed by those present to invite other Korayshi chieftains as well as the chieftains of other tribes to the meeting and that the meeting should take place at night. Trusted messengers were then sent to the outlying tribes and upon the appointed night, they and other chieftains met in secret in the House of Assembly.

The meeting proved to be less than harmonious as none could agree upon a solution and soon tempers became frayed as raised voices filled the air. All the shouting and arguing subsided when, suddenly, a very loud knock at the door was heard. Someone got up and opened it, and there before them stood a man, unknown to any of them. The newcomer's facial characteristics and clothing were those of the people of the Najd, and so when he told the gathering he was from that region he was not disbelieved -- later, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that the man was none other than satan in disguise.

The chieftains invited the newcomer to sit with them and satan inquired the reason for the meeting, then asked why there was so much discord between them. The situation was explained to him -- although he already knew it -- so satan asked each of the chieftains to tell him their proposal and listened to them but did not pass a comment, however, the situation changed when it came time for Abu Jahl to present his solution and their visitor listened enthusiastically.

Abu Jahl told him that in his opinion, the only way to rid themselves of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would be to kill him. However, this was not an easy matter. Abu Jahl went on to say that in his opinion the safest manner would be for each branch of the tribe to select and arm their strongest, most powerful warrior, then, upon a given night, wait of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to come out from

his house, then pounce upon him altogether at the same time and kill him. Abu Jahl drew the attention of their visitor and those present, that by killing the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in such a manner his blood would rest upon all their hands, and not just an individual branch of the Koraysh tribe which would, without a doubt, be singled out for the revenge of his killing.

Abu Jahl also pointed out that it was reasonable to assume that the family of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions would be unlikely to take revenge on all the branches of the Koraysh because not only were they united in the matter, great in number, but much too strong to oppose.

Up until that moment, satan had remained silent, but now his eyes darted with delight as he said, "Abu Jahl is right, in my opinion this is the only way to do it!"

The chieftains accepted his advice, plans were drawn up and satan left them gloating in his wickedness.

CHAPTER 48 THE MIGRATION

On the night the Koraysh planned to kill Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Angel Gabriel visited him and told him he must not sleep in his bed that night. He also gave him the news that Allah had given him permission to migrate. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Ali Gabriel's news he was delighted and volunteered immediately to sleep in his bed, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) assured him that no harm would befall him.

On account of his honesty, several people had entrusted their valuables to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for safekeeping. Now that permission to migrate had been given he could no longer take charge of them so he asked Ali to remain behind and return them to their rightful owners, then to come to Yathrib as soon as he had discharged his duty.

Later that night, Ali wrapped himself up in the Prophet's cloak and slept soundly on the Prophet's bed.

THE PLAN IS HATCHED

It was the month of Safar and in the still of the night warriors from each branch of the Koraysh concealed themselves around the Prophet's house and lay in wait for him to come out. Some time later during the night the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) emerged from his house and as he did so, he stooped to pick up a handful of dust and as he recited the following verses from the Koran he cast it over them

"Ya Seen. By the Wise Koran, you (Prophet Muhammad) are truly
among the Messengers sent upon a Straight Path.
The sending down of the Mighty, the Most Merciful
so that you may warn a people whose fathers were not warned,
and so were heedless.
The Phrase has become obligatory upon most of them, yet they do not believe.
We have bound their necks with fetters up to their chin,

so that their heads are raised and cannot be lowered.
We have set a barrier before them and a barrier behind them,
and, We have covered them so that they do not see."
Koran 36:1-9

Immediately, a deep sleep descended upon the warriors and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) passed through their midst without anyone seeing him.

The warriors slept on outside the house of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) until someone came and woke them up, asking why they were still there. When they replied they were waiting for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to come out, the man rebuked them telling them that he had seen the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) elsewhere in the City, and told them of the dust in their hair.

The warriors refused to accept the possibility that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had escaped without their knowledge so they entered the house and found Ali, who they mistakenly took to be the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), sleeping peacefully wrapped in the Prophet's green cloak. After having satisfied themselves that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was still in the house they continued to wait outside.

When Ali awoke they realized that the man had been correct and pandemonium reigned -- the Koraysh plan had been thwarted -- and the warriors returned to their chieftains to raise the alarm.

THE FIRST STAGE OF THE MIGRATION

Upon the noon of that same day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made his way to the house of his dear companion, Abu Bakr. It was unusual for him to visit Abu Bakr at that time of day so instinctively he knew there must be an important reason for his visit. After the exchange of greetings the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed him that Allah had given him permission to migrate from Mecca. Abu Bakr asked whether they were to migrate together and when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him they were, he was so overcome with joy that tears rolled down his cheeks.

Abu Bakr had hoped that Allah would permit him to accompany the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so in anticipation he had purchased two strong camels and set aside some provisions for the journey. Abu Bakr offered the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the finest of the camels, however on account of the importance of the occasion he declined his generosity saying, "I shall only ride a camel that belongs to me," so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) bought it from Abu Bakr.

In the past, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had accepted several gifts from his good friend, but this occasion was different from that of the others. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) named his camel "Kaswa" and of all the camels he was to own, Kaswa was his favorite.

At the back of the house, Abu Bakr had the camels prepared and asked his son Abdullah to accompany them to a cave in Mount Thawr, which lies to the south of Mecca, in the opposite direction to Yathrib. He also asked the shepherd Amir, Fuhayrah's son, whom he had freed from service sometime before, to follow behind

them with his flock to obliterate their tracks for the desert Arabs were expert trackers and the camel's hoof prints might easily be detected.

It was time to depart so Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Abu Bakr with Abdullah riding pillion behind his father mounted their camels and set off for Mount Thawr and left Mecca undetected. After they had been riding for a while, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought his camel to a halt and looked back in sadness at his beloved City and said, "Upon all the earth of Allah, you are the dearest place to me and the dearest to Allah. Had my people not driven me out from you, I would not have left you."

When they reached the caves of Mount Thawr, Abu Bakr told his son to return to Mecca with both camels and instructed him to pay attention to any plot he might hear. Abu Bakr also told his son to return only when he felt it was safe to do so and to bring fresh supplies.

It was common place to see camels being driven into Mecca, so Abu Bakr felt his son would not be in any immediate danger, also, it was logical to suppose the Koraysh would be searching for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on the road to Yathrib and not on the road to Yemen, at least for a while.

THE REACTION OF THE KORAYSH

The Koraysh were deeply angered that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had slipped through their fingers. They searched Mecca from beginning to end but there was no sign of him, nor could anyone throw light upon his whereabouts.

Abu Bakr had left his daughters Ayesha, who was now seven years old, and her elder sister Asma with his wife Umm Ruman in Mecca. Eventually several members of the Koraysh, including Abu Jahl, suspected that Abu Bakr might have accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), so they went to his house to demand his whereabouts.

Ayesha answered the door and when she told them that she did not know where her father was, Abu Jahl struck her with such force that her earring flew off. Abu Jahl and his companions failed to extract the information they sought and so they left in the hope that they would be more successful elsewhere.

In the meantime, the Koraysh chieftains offered a substantial reward of no less than one hundred camels for the Prophet's (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) capture. The lure of owning such a herd encouraged many parties to set off on the road to Yathrib in search of him.

Three days had now passed but this time when Abdullah and his sister Asma brought provisions they also brought news of the reward that had been offered. Abu Bakr then told his son that the next time he came, he should bring Abdullah, Arkat's son to guide them on to Yathrib and that they should also bring enough provisions for the journey and their camels. Although Abdullah, Arkat's son had not yet embraced Islam, Abu Bakr knew him to be not only reliable, but trustworthy and was confident he would never betray them.

THE SCORPION

There were many caves in Mount Thawr and when they found one which was suitable, Abu Bakr had entered first on that eventful first day of the migration. However, as he entered he had noticed there were several holes in both its walls and floor and feared they might be home to snakes or other poisonous insects, or even reptiles, so he looked around the cave and found some stones to plug them. He had almost finished plugging them when he ran out of stones. He searched for some more but there were none to be found so he tore pieces of cloth from his garment and pushed them deep down into the holes.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) entered he lay down and rested his head upon Abu Bakr's lap and slept. Only one hole remained unplugged, as there had been insufficient cloth with which to plug it so Abu Bakr lodged his elbow in it to seal the hole. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) slept, a scorpion that had been hiding in that very hole stung Abu Bakr. The sting was extremely painful, yet Abu Bakr, whose manners were of such high quality, did not move, nor yet did he cry out in pain as he feared he might disturb the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) whilst he slept.

The pain increased as the flesh around the sting became red and very swollen as the poison took effect. At last a tear fell from Abu Bakr's eye onto the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) before he could catch it and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) awoke. When he saw the very pained expression on his face he was troubled and asked what ailed him, whereupon Abu Bakr told him of the scorpion's sting. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) said, "Bismillah" and treated the sting with his saliva and breath and immediately both the pain and swelling left him -- Abu Bakr had been blessed with a miraculous cure.

A CHANGE OF DIRECTION

By now the search parties had exhausted the roads leading to Yathrib and they started to look in other directions, so it wasn't surprising that one such party decided to search the caves of Mount Thawr.

As they neared Mount Thawr, Allah caused yet another miracle to occur. A spider spun a huge web across the entrance of the cave and a pair of pigeons gathered some twigs from a nearby tree, then built a nest beneath the web on the ledge.

When the search party reached the Mount they explored the caves thoroughly and as they neared the cave the female pigeon settled herself on the nest and laid her eggs whilst her mate perched nearby.

The shouts and tramping of footsteps grew nearer and nearer. Soon, footsteps could be heard on the ledge directly above the cave. Abu Bakr became alarmed at the thought of being discovered and whispered to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), "If they look under their feet they will see us!" In his gentle, reassuring manner, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) consoled him, saying, "What do you think of two people who have Allah with them as their third?" When Abu Bakr heard these words peace descended upon him and his fear vanished.

Shortly after, one of the search party noticed the cave underneath the ledge on which he was standing and peered over to take a better look at it. When he saw the spider's web and the pigeon sitting on its nest he told the others that it would be a complete waste of time and effort to climb down to check the cave as he was sure it must be

empty on account of the nest and the spider's web. Another peered over the ledge and agreed, saying the cob-web was so old that it must have been spun before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had even been born!

The bounty hunters agreed and left not knowing how close they had been to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companion. As for the pigeons, their descendants are those that fly around Ka'ba today.

That night Abdullah and his sister Asma, accompanied by Amir the shepherd, who came without his flock this time, and Arkat's son Abdullah, made their way with the camels to the cave where they were awaited.

When they reached the mountain, Abdullah and his companions waited for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Abu Bakr to descend its slope. Asma had packed a bag full of provisions for the journey, however, in her haste she had forgotten to bring a rope to secure them on to the camel's back. Being a resourceful young lady, she untied the rope belt from around her waist, divided it in two and tied the bag securely onto the camel then used the remainder as her belt, from that time onward she was often referred to with tenderness as "She of the pair of belts."

And so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Abu Bakr, and their guide set out on the second stage of their migration to Yathrib, soon to be renamed Medina, whilst his children and the shepherd returned in safety to Mecca.

THE JOURNEY TO YATHRIB

Abdullah, Arkat's son, knew the trails of the desert well for he was a very experienced guide. It was decided that it would be more prudent not to go straight on to Yathrib, but to make an extensive detour and so Abdullah led the holy party across the desert to the sea near a village called Usfan.

UMM MABAD

At a place called Kudayd they met an old lady named Umm Mabad and asked if she would sell them some milk and meat. Meanwhile Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had noticed a weak goat lagging behind the others in the herd. It was evident that its udder was dry, so he went to it, massaged its udder, then miraculously milked it. There was so much milk that it filled a large jug and they all took their fill whilst Umm Mabad looked on in amazement. After they had enjoyed the milk, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) massaged its udder again and filled the jug to the brim with milk and gave it to Umm Mabad, then they continued on their journey.

From that time onward the goat never ceased to produce milk in the morning and night, and lived up until the caliphate of Omar, the son of Khattab.

Later, when Umm Mabad's husband returned she told him how a blessed man happened to have passed by and showed him the jug of milk then related what had happened. Her husband asked her to describe the man whereupon she described him in detail and her husband exclaimed, "By Allah, this is the companion of the Koraysh, if I see him, I will follow him!" Umm Mabad had no idea she had been in the company of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and had not been shy to observe his features; it is through her observations and another like her that we receive a detailed account of his physical description.

During their migration they also came across a slave shepherding his master's flock. When they asked if they might buy some milk, the slave told them that none yielded milk and that the one that lambed the year before was now dry. Once again, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently took the sheep, milked it three times and the shepherd embraced Islam.

THE ENCOUNTER WITH SURAKA, MALIK'S SON

Suraka, Malik's son, who was the son of Ju'shum, was among the bounty hunters with high hopes of capturing the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and claiming the handsome reward of one hundred camels.

One day as Suraka attended a tribal meeting, a man from the tribe of Madlij approached and told him that only a short while ago he had observed silhouettes in the distance riding by the beach and wondered if it might possibly be that of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his companion.

Suraka was quick to realize that the party was indeed most probably that of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) however, he wanted to claim the reward for himself so he told the man he must be mistaken as he had seen a party from Mecca earlier on that day set off in the same direction.

Suraka waited for an hour or two to pass, then armed himself with his bow and arrows, ordered his slave to bring his horse round to the back of the house and set off toward the shore.

When Suraka came within sight of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) Abu Bakr spotted him and cried out, "O Messenger of Allah, we have been discovered!" Whereupon the Messenger of Allah with calmness recited the verse "Do not sorrow, Allah is with us." 9:40 and supplicated to Allah for their safekeeping. Immediately, the legs of Suraka's horse started to sink deep into the sand whereupon Suraka cried out in alarm to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "I know you have supplicated against me, supplicate for me and I will act as a decoy for you; neither shall I harm you nor will others harm you." No sooner had the words left his mouth and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated than the legs of his horse were raised up out of the sand and he rode on to catch up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Upon catching up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) Suraka offered him his provisions, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) politely thanked him and declined. Then, quite unexpectedly the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "How would you like to wear the robes of Chosroes (the King of Persia)?" Suraka was astonished and knew that the word of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would surely be fulfilled, so he requested the statement be written down for him as a sign, and so Abu Bakr wrote it down on a piece of leather, which Suraka then placed in his quiver for safekeeping and returned to Mecca.

Suraka kept his promise and told no one of the encounter. In the years that followed when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was returning from the Encounter of Hunayn, Suraka met him again and embraced Islam.

Suraka's tribe opposed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for many years and in the years that followed when Khalid was sent to remedy the matter, Suraka interceded for them, but it was not until after the opening of Mecca that they all embraced Islam.

The promise made to Suraka was fulfilled during the caliphate of Omar, when the possessions of Chosroes came into the keeping of Omar. Omar was an upright caliph and had heard Suraka's story and so in obedience to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and in the honorable spirit of Islam, Omar sent for Suraka and placed the crown of Persia upon his head, then gave him the regalia and belt of Chosroes.

THE MEETING WITH TALHA

At sometime during their migration a small caravan was spotted traveling toward the holy party. However, there was no cause for alarm as it belonged to none other than the cousin of Abu Bakr, Talha who was returning to Mecca with merchandise from Syria.

Talha had broken his journey in Yathrib and told Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that the news of his migration had already reached them and that the Muslims anxiously awaited his arrival. As they parted company, Talha told them that as soon as he had sold his merchandise in Mecca it was his intention to join them in Yathrib.

THE JOURNEY TO YATHRIB CONTINUES

From Usfan the holy party journeyed to a place outside Amaj, then after passing Kudayd by way of Al Kharrar and Thaniyyatu'l Marra, they went on to Likf where they watered their camels.

From Likf they journeyed to Marjih of Dh'l Ghadwayn then on to the valley of Dhu Kashr. After crossing the valley they made their way to A'da, passing by Al Ajrad and Dhu Salaam by way of Al Fajja. Before they reached the valley of A'da, one of the camels started to show signs of weakness, so a man from the tribe of Aslam by the name of Aus, Hujr's son took the Prophet onto the outskirts of Yathrib on his camel.

THE RECEPTION IN QUBA

Each morning at dawn after Fajr prayer, the believers of Quba, a suburb of Yathrib, would make their way to the lava mounds near the fertile oasis which marked the City limits and anxiously awaited the arrival of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). There, they would stay until no shade was left to protect them from the harsh, relentless rays of the sun.

It was now midday, Monday 12th Rabi'ul Awwal, the Prophet's birthday, the sun had reached its height and the gathering had returned to the shelter of their homes when a Jew happened to observe the small party making its way to the lava mounds. The Jew had heard of the Prophet's expected arrival and called out loudly: "O children of Kayla, your luck has arrived!"

There was much rejoicing as the believers rushed from their homes and raced back toward the lava mounts where they found the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) resting with Abu Bakr under the shade of a palm tree. As they approached the Prophet

(salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), he smiled tenderly as the ladies and children burst into a song of welcoming they had composed in honor of the occasion:

"The full moon has appeared before us
from Thaniyyat, (the Place of Farewell).
Thanks is obligated upon us
whenever an inviter of Allah invites."

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), was greatly moved by their sincere welcome and exhorted his new Companions, saying, "O people, greet one another with peace, feed the hungry; honor the ties of kinship, pray when others sleep and you shall enter Paradise in peace."

This simple, yet beautiful song of sincerity in praise and love of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was among the first to be composed and sung in his presence. It is important for all those who love Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to realize that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) neither objected nor forbade such compositions and we would do well to remember the words of Allah that say:

"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet.
Believers, praise and venerate him,
and pronounce peace upon him in abundance."
Koran 33:56

One of the most famous poets during the life of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was Hasan, Thabit's son. His poetry extols and praises the virtues of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and is recited by the lovers of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to this very day.

Such was the acceptance of his poetry by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) that he requested Hasan's seat to be raised in the Mosque so that everyone in the congregation would be able to hear and enjoy his compositions. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) also informed Hasan that the Arch Angel Gabriel would defend him continuously whilst he was defending Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

Since that time and throughout the centuries, there have been many well-known Sufi (Ihsan) poets who continued in the same excellence. One such poet being Berzinji Bosairi whose poetry touched the heart and soul of so many that it was printed in gold.

In more recent times, the late Yusuf Ishmael of Nabahan, Mufti of Beirut, Lebanon wrote the most endearing poetry in praise and love of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). However, the Wahabi cult that emerged from the Najd in Saudi Arabia last century – and one would do well to remember the historical fact reported earlier on in this book of how Satan, disguised as a man from the Najd consulted with the unbelievers of Mecca as to the most effective way in which they should kill the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), and thereafter the authentic warning of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) that the horn of the devil would appear from the Najd – proclaimed that Mufti Yusuf Ishmael, on account of his poetry praising the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), as being a heretic and he like so many other innocent,

true lovers of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) became either hunted or martyred by the fanatical Wahabi cult.

Such has been the false influence of the innovated Wahabi cult that many innocent Muslims are now confused and fearful of reading these beautiful poems and have either overlooked or neglected the preceding verse.

A MATTER OF LODGING

It is uncertain in whose home the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stayed first in Quba. However, it has been reported that it was either the home of Kulthum, Hidm's son or else the home of Sa'ad Khaythama's son.

The same circumstances apply to the lodging of Abu Bakr, who either stayed with Khubab, Isaf's son from the children of Harith or with Kharija, Zaid's son.

ALI JOINS THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) AT QUBA

A few days after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had set out on his migration, Ali was able to complete his task of returning all the valuables entrusted to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). He was now able to journey to Yathrib and it was there at Quba that he finally caught up with him and was lodged in the house of Kulthum.

THE FINAL STAGE OF THE MIGRATION

Word reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that the people of the City of Yathrib anxiously awaited his arrival. However, before his departure three days later, the foundations for the Mosque of Quba were laid after Kaswa, the Prophet's camel, led by an angel, showed the Muslims where it was to be built.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arrived at Ranuna, in Yathrib at noon that Friday. A large crowd had accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) amongst whom were some of his kinsmen from the tribe of Bani Najjar that had ridden from Yathrib to meet him in Quba.

There, in the valley of Ranuna he met members of the Khazrajite tribe, the children of Salim. Their combined numbers were approximately one hundred and it is there, in his new homeland, that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led his followers in the first Friday congregational prayer.

After the prayer, Itban, Malik's son and Abbas, Ubada's son, together with people from the tribe of Salim invited the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to live with them. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) graciously declined their kind offer, saying that he would settle wherever his camel sat down to rest because Kaswa, his camel, had been ordered and was being led by an angel.

Kaswa wandered pass the homes of the children of Bayaa, and it was there that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was met by Ziyad, Labid's son and Farwa, Amr's son with more of their fellow tribesmen. They too offered the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the same invitation but he declined graciously with the same reply.

Invitations abounded from everywhere amongst whom were those of Sa'ad, Ubada's son and Al Mundir, Amir's son, and Sa'ad, Rabi's son and Kharika, Zaid's son, and

Abdullah, Rawaha's son from the tribe of Harith, Al Khazraj's son but once again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) declined and replied in the same manner.

At last the camel came to a house the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) remembered well from his childhood days, it was the home of his maternal relatives, the children of Adiyy, Najjar's son. His maternal relatives invited him to stay with them, but he told them his camel was being led by an angel and would take him to the place where he would stay.

Kaswa wandered on towards the houses belonging to the children of Malik, a branch of the Najjar tribe. Amongst their tribesmen were Asad and Awf, two of the six men that pledged their allegiance to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) during the first pledging at Aqabah the year before. When Kaswa reached the buildings she wandered into a walled courtyard in which there were a few date palms, a place used to dry dates, an ancient grave yard and a building that had fallen into a state of disrepair.

Asad had constructed a modest prayer area within the confines of the courtyard, and slowly Kaswa made her way to it, then knelt down. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) let go of the reins but did not dismount, then after a moment she got up and walked away. She had not gone far when she turned around and walked back to the place where she had knelt, and once again she knelt down, but this time settled herself upon the ground and Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) dismounted saying, "If Allah wills, this is the place."

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) then asked who owned the courtyard and so Mu'adh, the brother of Awf told him that it belonged to Sahl and Suhayl, two orphaned boys fostered by Asad. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) smiled as he asked for someone to bring the boys to him, but they were already in the gathering and stepped forward. He asked the boys whether they would sell the courtyard to him, but they refused saying, "No, we will give it to you, O Messenger of Allah!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was touched by the generosity of the orphans but insisted that he should pay them for it and so with the help of Asad, a price was determined.

During this time Abu Ayyoub Khalid Ansari, who lived nearby, had unloaded the Prophet's baggage from Kaswa and had taken it into his house. Once again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was besieged with invitations from his followers, but he declined, saying, "I must be where my baggage is." And so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) stayed in the home of Abu Ayyoub Ansari who had been the first of his tribe to pledge allegiance during the second pledging at Aqabah.

The girls of the household and the neighboring households were so happy to have the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) staying there that they went out to meet him beating their drums singing:

"We are the girls
from the children of Al Najjar,
Muhammad is the best neighbor!"

Once again, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) smiled as he listened to the song and neither objected nor forbade the girls to sing or beat their drums.

Abu Ayyoub's house had two storeys, so he and his wife moved upstairs leaving the ground floor for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). Each meal-time they would take the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) his food and ate whatever remained, putting their fingers in the imprint of the Prophet's in anticipation of receiving a blessing.

Shortly after, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) gave the Muslims of Medina a new title, from now on they were referred to as the "Ansar" - the "Supporters". As for those that migrated, they were also given a new title and referred to as the "Muhajir" - the "Emigrants". Allah honors these companions by mentioning them together with their reward in the Koran saying:

“As for the first Outstrippers among the migrants and supporters and those who followed them in doing good, Allah is pleased with them and they are pleased with Him. He has prepared for them gardens underneath which rivers flow, where they shall live for ever. That is the greatest winning.”
Koran, 9:100

THE BUILDING OF THE PROPHET'S MOSQUE

Immediately after his arrival in Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), together with the elated band of followers started work on building the Mosque. The graveyard was removed and the ground prepared; some brought stones whilst others made adobe mud bricks for its walls. The palm trees that once stood in the courtyard were felled and prepared for use as support pillars for the Mosque's roof, which was made from palm branches whilst the floor remained bare. It was a time for thanksgiving and throughout its building the happy band of Muslims would be heard supplicating to Allah asking Him for His Mercy and Help on both the Ansar and Muhajir saying:

“O Allah, if it was not for You we would not have been guided neither would we have fasted nor prayed.
Therefore send down upon us Your tranquility (Sakina) and strengthen us when we meet in times of war.”

At the end of the Mosque they erected another roofed area. It was to become the home of those who embraced Islam but had neither family nor a home of their own.

Upon the completion of the Mosque, the Prophet's home, consisting of two very simple, small apartments was built onto the side of the Mosque. One for Lady Swaydah and the other for Lady Ayesha.

Now that the Mosque and the Prophet's home were ready, he sent Zaid and Abu Rafi with two camels and five hundred dirhams to Mecca to bring his daughters and Lady Swaydah to their new home in Medina. Abu Bakr also sent word to his son Abdullah that the time was right for them to migrate with his mother and sisters, Lady Ayesha and Asma to Yathrib.

However, two of the Prophet's daughters were unable to return with Zaid and Abu Rafi'. One was Lady Rukiyah whose husband, Othman, was still in Abyssinia, and the other was Lady Zaynab whose husband refused to permit her to migrate, and so Zaid and Abu Rafi' returned with Ladies Fatima, Umm Kulthum, and Swaydah.

CHAPTER 49

A TIME FOR READJUSTMENT

Most migrants arrived in Medina with only a few possessions. Before their migration some had been in a position to re-establish their wealth, but as they had been forced to leave their homes in secrecy they were unable to take most of their possessions with them and everything they had left behind was now seized by the Koraysh.

THE BONDING OF THE ANSAR AND MUHAJIR

A day or so shortly after his arrival, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called the Muslims together and took one man from the Ansar and another from the Muhajir then announced: "Each of you is a brother to the other," whereupon each Ansari household took a Muhajir family into its own and shared all they possessed with them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took Ali for his brother and made Hamza the brother of Zaid.

The Ansars gleaned their livelihood from farming the fertile land of the oasis, whereas the Muhajirs had been traders and knew little about cultivating the land, so it was decided that the Ansars should keep their orchards and groves and divide its produce with their Muhajir brothers. Such was the extent of the brotherhood that when an Ansar died, his property was inherited not just by his family but by his extended Muhajir family. Allah refers to this in the Koran saying:

"Those who believed and migrated from their homes and fought for the Way of Allah, and those who sheltered them and helped them they are truly the believers. Theirs shall be forgiveness and a generous provision."

Koran 8:74

The generosity of the Ansars was widespread and it wasn't long before the Muhajir had settled themselves to their new life. Abu Bakr set up business trading in cloth and Omar took to trading that took him as far away as Iran, whereas some of the others traded on a lesser scale. However, they remained poor.

THE SUFFA

Amongst the Ansar and Muhajir were those that lived in the communal room adjoining the Mosque known as "As-hab al Suffa".

These companions rarely took to trade or farming, and then when they did it was only as a means to an end. Instead, they preferred to devote their lives to prayer and spiritual discipline under the guidance of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). These people had neither wives nor children, however marriage was not forbidden to them like the monks of Christianity.

The Suffa, better known as Sufi, contented themselves with the bare necessities of life; as a means of support they would also be seen gathering bundles of firewood and

selling it in order to feed themselves and their companions. They were extremely poor and none could afford two garments, instead they would wear a single piece of cloth fastened at the neck that reached a little above the knee. Whenever the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received a charitable gift of food, he would divide it amongst them and encourage his followers to feed them.

Many were the times that the Suffa did not eat on two successive days. On account of their lack of nourishment some would faint during prayers, which prompted the opponents of Islam to ridicule and denounced them saying they were either epileptic or else mad.

The Suffa as well as other Companions were blessed on many occasions and miraculously fed through the blessings of the supplication of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Among these occasions was the time when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called the Suffa together to eat from a single plate of food over which he had supplicated. Each of the Suffa, and there were many, ate until they were completely satisfied and after all had left, the same amount of food that had first been served remained on the plate.

ABU HURAYRAH, THE SUFI

It is through Abu Hurayrah that we are blessed to receive so many of the prophetic quotations known as Hadith. Abu Hurayrah had an excellent memory and would precisely memorize the words of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). When asked why he had not taken to trade or some other profession, he informed his inquirer that he was too occupied listening to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and preferred to remain in his company.

Unlike her son, Abu Hurayrah's mother had not embraced Islam and this was of great concern to him, so he went to her one day and tried yet again to persuade her, but she resisted and said something disagreeable about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that deeply upset Abu Hurayrah.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw Abu Hurayrah weeping, he asked what was troubling him, whereupon he reluctantly told him what had happened and asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to supplicate for his mother, whereupon he supplicated, "O Allah, guide the mother of Abu Hurayrah to the Straight Path."

Later on that day, Abu Hurayrah went to visit his mother and as he approached her home she recognized his footsteps and called out to him asking him to wait outside for a minute. As he waited he heard the sound of the splashing of water, and a few minutes later, after she had dressed, she opened the door and said, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is His Prophet." She had taken the major bath of purification before embracing Islam.

Abu Hurayrah means father of the kitten and he was given this endearing name on account of a kitten he befriended that would curl up and sleep in the sleeve of his shirt.

CHAPTER 50

THE JEWS OF MEDINA

PROPHET MUHAMMAD (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), THE DIPLOMAT

Although the majority of Jews in Medina refused to accept Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) as a prophet, they knew it was in their best interest to ally themselves to him as he had become the most influential person in Medina. So they went to him, without coercion, and a written contract was drawn up to which both parties pledged they would abide.

The contract afforded fair benefits to both Muslim and Jew. Amongst the contractual articles was that if a Muslim or Jew were harmed, then the harmed party would receive the support of both Muslims and Jews alike.

It was also agreed that in the event of war they would fight as one party against the pagans, and that the expense would be shared equally. It was also agreed that neither Muslim nor Jew would enter into a separate peace treaty behind the back of the other.

The Jews acknowledged the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to be both fair and diplomatic, so they willingly agreed that if a dispute should arise between a Muslim and a Jew, the matter would be decided by him. One day, a Muslim thinking he would have the support of his fellow Muslims, took advantage of a Jew. The issue was taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and the Jew received his rights.

On the surface things appeared to be in harmony, but the underlying resentment of the Jews lay dormant for the time being. There were also members of the Arab tribes of Aws and Khazraj who said, when they were invited to believe, that they believed. However they did not. To them it was simply a matter of politics, some doubted the Message whilst others were hypocrites. It was during this era that Allah sent down the second chapter of the Koran, the Cow chapter, in which the likeness of those who believe and those who disbelieve is clarified.

In the following verses the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and the believers were made aware that things were not always as they seemed:

"That is the (Holy) Book where there is no doubt.
It is a guidance for the cautious (of evil and Hell).
Who believe in the unseen and establish the (daily) prayer;
who spend out of what We have provided them.
Who believe in that which has been sent down to you (Prophet Muhammad)
and what has been sent down before you (to Prophets Jesus and Moses),
and firmly believe in the Everlasting Life.
These are guided by their Lord; these surely are the prosperous.

Those who disbelieve, whether you forewarn them or not, they will not believe.
Allah has set a seal upon their hearts and ears; their sight is dimmed
and for them is a great punishment.
There are some people who say, 'We believe in Allah and the Last Day,'
yet they are not believers. They seek to deceive Allah and those who believe,
but they deceive none except themselves, though they do not sense it.
There is a sickness in their hearts which Allah has increased.
For them there is a painful punishment because they lie.

When it is said to them, 'Do not corrupt in the land '
they reply, 'We are only reformers.'
But it is they who are the evildoers, though they do not sense it.
When it is said to them, 'Believe as (other) people believe,'
they reply, 'Are we to believe as fools believe?'
It is they who are the fools, if only they knew!
When they meet those who believe they say,
'We, too believe.' But when they are alone with their devils,
they say to them, 'We follow none but you, we were only mocking.'
Allah will mock at them and prolong them in sin, blundering blindly."
Koran 2:2-15

Later on in the same chapter, Allah informed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers of the jealousy the Jews harbored towards them:

"Many of the People of the Book wish they might turn you back as unbelievers,
after you have believed, in envy of their souls,
after the truth has been clarified to them.
So pardon and forgive until Allah brings His command.
Allah is Powerful over everything."
Koran 2:109

PROVOCATION

There were among those who did not believe, people who would seize any opportunity that came their way to cast doubt upon the prophethood of Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

On one such occasion a camel belonging to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) happened to stray, whereupon an unbeliever seized the opportunity to jeer saying, "Muhammad claims that news comes to him from the heavens, yet he does not know where his camel is!" When the matter was reported to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he was not angered and replied, "I only know what Allah permits me to know. Now He has made it known to me that her halter has become tangled in the branches of a tree in a valley which I will describe." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) described the valley, whereupon some of his Companions recognized the valley in which she was and went to retrieve the camel. When they reached the valley they found the camel's halter had indeed become tangled in the branches of a tree and brought it back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

THE TROUBLEMAKER

Among the Jewish tribe of Kaynuka was an elderly man known for his ability to stir up trouble. Before the advent of Islam and the Prophet's arrival in Medina, the tribes of Aws and Khazraj had been continually at each other's throat and consequently many conflicts were fought. The Jew felt uneasy about the newly established bond between the tribes and wished to see an end to it. With this object in mind he connived a plan to break up this newly established peace.

In recent years, there had been a conflict between the two tribes. In an effort to reinforce their numbers, the tribe of Aws had sent a delegation to Mecca to enlist the support of the Koraysh. However, the Aws were not successful as the Koraysh

deemed it more prudent to remain neutral in the matter and not long after, the conflict at Bu'ath had ensued.

Both sides had written impassioned poetry in tribute of their warriors expounding the merits and virtues of their tribe over the other. The Jew knew of a young man with a very fine, provocative voice who knew both these tribal poems and persuaded him to go and sit amongst the newly established friends and recite the poems to them. The result was exactly as the Jew planned, soon old passions were re-ignited, wounds reopened, memories revived, and a call to arms ensued.

As the tribes of Aws and Khazraj made their way to the lava mounds outside Quba to fight the matter out, news of the impending breach in the peace reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). Together with the Muhajirs they made haste to the lava mounds; the conflict was about to erupt when the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) reached them and called to them, passionately saying, "O Muslims!" He continued, "Allah, Allah -- would you do as you did in the Days of Ignorance even though I am with you? Allah has guided you to Islam, and honored you with it and rid you of your pagan ways saving you from disbelief, and has united your hearts!" Immediately, the two sides realized they had been easy victims of pride, so they laid down their arms and the Jew's scheme came to naught.

This fine example of the immediate response to the remembrance of Allah, obedience to His Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), and the unifying brotherhood of Islam in extenuating circumstances is one that in many cases, in this day and age, has been unfortunately forgotten or overlooked, and the Words of Allah neglected or even disregarded. He says:

"Believers are indeed brothers,
therefore make things right among your two brothers
and fear Allah, so you will be subject to mercy."
Koran 49:10

The Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) warned: "When two Muslims oppose each other with swords, both the killer and the murdered will be in Hell." A Companion asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) surely, it is only the killer. What about the one who has been killed?" The Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) answered, "The other was also eager to kill his companion."

THE DEATH OF TWO COMPANIONS AND TWO ADVERSARIES AND THE FIRST BORN IN MEDINA

During the first year after the Prophet's migration, Kulthum, Hidm's son, and Asad, Zurarah's son passed away. Both of the Companions had been very close to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). It was in Kulthum's house that the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) had stayed during part of his time in Quba; Kulthum had been especially kind to the migrants and given many of them a home.

Asad, Zurarah's son had been among the first men of Yathrib to pledge his allegiance at Aqabah and it was in his house that Mus'ab, Umair's son, the envoy of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) stayed in the very early days of Islam, in Medina. Later, Asad had become the Imam of his tribe, the tribe of Najjar.

There were those in Medina who chose to take these deaths as an argument against the prophethood, contending that if Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been a prophet, then these deaths would not have occurred. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard what was being said he was not angered but commented, "I have no power with Allah either for myself or for my Companions."

It was also during this first year that the infamous enemies of Islam, Waleed, Mughirah's son, father of Khalid and As, the son of Wa'il Sahmi, the father of Amr, who was later to become the famous Opener of Egypt, died.

Asma, the eldest daughter of Abu Bakr and her husband Zubair were blessed with a son whom they named Abdullah. Up until that time no child had been born to a Muslim family in Medina.

THE CHIEF RABBI OF THE TRIBE OF KAYNUKA

Ben Shalom was the Chief Rabbi of the tribe of Kaynuka and also the most knowledgeable Jew in Medina. He had already learned of the Prophet's teachings from traders returning from Mecca and was in no doubt that he was the one prophesied in the scriptures, for his message, description and circumstances exactly matched those he had learned by heart. However, he decided to conceal his conviction until he had a chance to meet him.

The time of year had come when the palm trees needed tending in his aunt's garden so he climbed to the top of one of them and set about his work. As he busied himself, a man from the children of Amr, the son of Auf, came bearing the news that the man the Arabs called the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had reached Quba and was staying there.

Much to the surprise of his aunt Khalida, who was sitting below the tree, Ben Shalom was so excited that he exclaimed, "Allah is Great!" and climbed down the tree. His aunt was surprised by his exuberant outburst and said, "Indeed, you could not have made so much fuss if you had heard that Moses, the son of Imran had come!" Ben Shalom replied, "My aunt, he is the brother of Moses and upholds his religion, he has been sent with the same mission!" His aunt inquired if he really thought that this man could be the long expected Prophet, whereupon he told her that he had absolutely no doubt whatsoever that he was, for all the signs had been fulfilled in him.

Without further hesitation, Ben Shalom went to Quba to meet the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and embraced Islam taking the name Abdullah -- worshiper of Allah. Upon his return to Medina, he spoke to his family and encouraged them to embrace Islam. However, he concealed his conversion from his fellow Jews for a while longer, as he anticipated an adverse reaction.

Abdullah had always been an exemplary figure to his community and knew both their strengths and weaknesses. He had, on many occasions, spoken of the prophecy and told his congregation that his time was near at hand. However, he knew it would be hard for all but the humble to accept the fact that the prophethood had been taken away from the Jews, but hoped that through his example they would trust him and accept Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). He also recognized the fact that once his conversion became known he would most likely be denounced by his

former colleagues, who as a result, would no longer utter a good word about him. So, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) reached Medina, he visited him and requested him to call the other rabbis and leaders of his tribe together and ask them for their opinion of him, not as a matter of self-esteem but as a matter of exposition.

The invitations were delivered and the rabbis and tribal leaders accepted. When the time arrived, Abdullah Ben Shalom concealed himself in the Prophet's house and awaited their arrival. Upon their arrival, the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) welcomed them in his usual hospitable, customary way and gave them food and drink, then during the course of the conversation, he asked their opinion of Ben Shalom. Without hesitation they spoke highly of him telling the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) that he was their chief rabbi, in fact he was the son of their former chief rabbi and without a doubt the most knowledgeable among them. Upon hearing their witnessing, Abdullah Ben Shalom stepped forward and said, "O Jews, fear Allah and accept what He has sent you, indeed you know that this man is the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam)." Then, before his peers, he declared his acceptance of Islam. Immediately the rabbis and leaders no longer had a good word to say about him, rather they began to rebuke and spurn him, which was a complete reversal of their attestation just a few moments before.

Later Abdullah was heard to say, "I recognized him as soon as I saw him, in the same way that I know my son, rather my knowledge of him is even greater."

Allah endorses the fact that the rabbis were able to recognize Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) from his description in their Holy Books by saying:

"Those to whom We have given the Book, know him (Prophet Muhammad) as they know their own sons.
But a party of them conceal the truth while they know."
Koran 2:146

RABBI ZAID

Another rabbi embraced Islam, his name was Zaid, Sa'nah's son. However, he did not embrace Islam immediately as he was not as knowledgeable as Abdullah. Later he explained the reason for his delay saying, "In the Prophet's face there were characteristics. I recognized all of the signs except two because I had not as yet had the opportunity to observe them. They are that his kindness is swift when facing the ignorance of others, and the second is that foolishness directed towards him only increases his kindness."

CHAPTER 51 LIFE IN MEDINA

THE FIRST ADHAN - CALL TO PRAYER

Up until this time, Muslims used their own judgment to determine the time of prayer by estimating the sun's passage through the heavens and as a result they arrived at the Mosque to pray at varying times. This state of affairs concerned the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) who asked his Companions if they had any suggestions as to how best they could announce the due time of prayer.

Several suggestions were made, amongst which was the hoisting of a flag, rattling a wooden clapper and the blowing of a horn. However, these suggestions were not acceptable to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Not long after, Abdullah, Zaid's son had a vision. In his vision a man with a clapper in hand, dressed in a green robe passed by, Abdullah noticed the clapper and asked if he would sell it. The man asked why he wanted it, whereupon Abdullah told him that he wanted it to call his fellow Muslims to prayer. The man told him that he knew of a better way than that, which was that the call to prayer should be made by a caller in this manner:

"Allah is the Most Great,
Allah is the Most Great,

Allah is the Most Great,
Allah is the Most Great,

I bear witness that there is no god except Allah,
I bear witness that there is no god except Allah,

I bear witness that Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah
I bear witness that Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah.

Come to prayer,
come to prayer.

Come to success,
come to success.

Allah is the Most Great,
Allah is the Most Great.

There is no god except Allah."

Abdullah went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him of his vision and Omar mentioned that he likewise had seen a similar vision. Happiness encompassed the Prophet's face as he told Abdullah and Omar that they had both seen true visions and informed them that this was the method they would now use to call the people to prayer.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then asked one of his Companions to find Bilal and ask him to come to him. Bilal, the former slave who had been so badly tortured for his belief, had a very pleasant voice and Abdullah was asked to teach him the words with which he was to call the worshippers to prayer. Bilal was honored to be chosen as the caller to prayer, and from that time onward, before each prayer, he made his way to the roof-top of the highest house near the Mosque and the sweetness of his voice would ring out across the City, calling believers to the prayer.

Later on, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that when the call to prayer is made, Satan, the stoned and cursed, turns his back and rushes away belching to prevent himself from hearing the words of the call.

The reason for his running away and belching is that all those who hear the call to prayer become a witness to it and Satan does not want to be a witness. However, once the call has finished he returns until the second call to prayer is made, then he runs away again only to return after it has finished to distract the minds of worshippers with his whispering, "Remember this, remember that", putting in the mind of the believer irrelevant matters until he/she does not know how many units of prayer they have offered.

THE PALM-TRUNK AND THE PULPIT

As the number of followers grew it was thought that a pulpit should be built on which the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, might stand so that every one could see him.

The Companions set about finding a suitable piece of wood and soon the sound of carpenters could be heard. The pulpit was finished and put in place and the palm-trunk on which the Prophet, (alla Allahu alihi wa salaam), used to lean when giving his sermon was moved to another part of the Mosque.

As the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, started his sermon there was suddenly a wailing sound so intense that everyone looked to see from where the sound came – it came from the old palm-trunk that had been replaced by the pulpit. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, went to the palm-trunk and comforted it, and it was consoled. Then, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told the congregation, "This tree trunk wailed on account of what it had lost."

Later the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, asked the palm-trunk, "If you should like, I will put you back in the garden you came from so that your roots can grow and your shape be restored, and you will bear fruit and leaves once more. Or, if you prefer, I will plant you in the Garden so that the friends of Allah may eat of your fruit." The palm-trunk replied, "Yes, plant me in the Garden so that the friends of Allah may eat from me, and I will be in a place where I will not decay." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "This I have done" then he turned to those who were with him and said, "It has chosen the Everlasting over that of the passing."

LADY SWAYDAH AND LADY AYESHA

When Lady Swaydah arrived in Medina, she lived in her quarters built onto the outside of the Mosque together with the daughters of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Later on, Lady Ayesha came to live in the room next to her.

Lady Ayesha had known the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) from a very tender age. She loved to be in his company and after his marriage to her he would often play and run races with her. But although he was very capable of outrunning her, he always, out of the kindness of his heart, let her win until she was mature.

Although she was married to the Prophet, her life had changed but a little; she still played with her girl friends from Mecca and also made new friends with the girls of Medina. However, the parents of her friends had taught their daughters that they must at all times respect the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and not to make a nuisance of themselves.

Fearing that he might disturb her, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would often take great delight watching her play with her friends from behind a curtain. However, if her friends happened to realize he was there they would stop playing and try to slip away, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would reassure them that there was no need for them to go and to continue enjoying themselves. On many occasions he would sit down and join them in their games, just as he had done with his own daughters, for he loved children and never turned them away.

Once, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned home after a journey he found Lady Ayesha playing with a small wooden horse that had a piece of cloth attached to its back. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was amused and inquired why she had tied the cloth to its back whereupon Lady Ayesha replied, "O Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), don't you know, it is the winged horse of Solomon," and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled as happiness spread over his caring face.

ILLNESS IN MEDINA

The native people of Medina were, for the most part, immune to the fevers that came during certain seasons of the year. However, for strangers who happened to be in the City during these seasons there was always the risk that they might contract them.

One day, Lady Ayesha went to visit her father, Abu Bakr and found that he, Bilal, and Amir had been taken ill with the fever; although Bilal was nearing recovery he remained extremely weak. She spoke to her father, but he answered her in a rhyme which she did not fully understand, although she remembered his words.

Amir and Bilal also spoke to her in rhyme and once again she remembered them but did not fully comprehend. Seeing them in such a pitiful condition distressed Lady Ayesha greatly, so she returned home to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him of their circumstances.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) comforted her and gently asked what they had said, so she repeated their words, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated saying, "O Allah, make Medina as dear to us as You have made Mecca, or yet even dearer. Bless its water and grain for us and remove the fever from it as far as Mahya'ah." Allah accepted the supplication and the illness left them.

CHAPTER 52 A THREAT FROM MECCA

THE LETTER

It is obligatory upon Muslims to protect their soul, the honor of their womenfolk, and wealth, but also to show mercy. No matter how good the philosophy of turning the other cheek may be for an individual in insignificant day-to-day affairs, it spells suicide for a community when it is implemented as an absolute value.

One might have supposed that the Prophet's circumstances in Medina were easier than in Mecca, and in many respects that was indeed the case. However, in Mecca it had been easy to determine who had given themselves to Islam and who had not.

In Medina the situation was somewhat different. Many of its citizens had embraced Islam, however several had done so not out of conviction but because they feared the loss of their status within their tribe as more fellow tribesmen started to embrace Islam. These people posed an undetectable source of treachery which was a factor the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had not had to contend with in Mecca.

Until this time, Medina had little or no influence on the affairs of Arabia, it had just been a place on the trade route where caravans would stop, replenish their supplies, sell their wares, then go on their way. As such it had been impervious to outside affairs, however now that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had settled there, the Koraysh viewed Medina in a different light.

It was not long after his arrival that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) met with neighboring tribes outside Medina - his reputation had preceded him – and gladly they contracted alliances that closed the access of the northern trade routes to the Koraysh had previously passed through Medina. This meant that from now on the Koraysh caravans would have to use the coastal road on their journeys and their paths would not cross.

However, shortly after the Prophet's arrival in Medina, the Koraysh sent a letter to Abdullah, Ubbay's son, who was a newly elected chieftain. The letter read: "You have sheltered one of our men. We tell you either to kill him or throw him out of Medina. If you do not, we swear by Allah we will attack, destroy you, and seize your women."

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of the Koraysh letter, he went to Abdullah and asked if he intended to fight against his own kinsmen for many of them had embraced Islam and were now his supporters. Abdullah weighed the implications and decided to ignore the letter.

The Koraysh had not only persecuted Muslims for their belief and robbed them of most of their possessions before and after their migration, but now the threat of war loomed large on the horizon. It was obvious they had no intention of letting Islam and its followers live in peace; their intent was annihilation.

THE FIRST ATTACK ON MEDINA

The first physical act of aggression by the Koraysh on the Muslims of Medina was perpetrated by Kerz, Jabir's son.

Kerz, together with a marauding party set off from Mecca with the intent of looting whatever property belonging to Muslims they could lay their hands on. Just outside Medina they came across and seized Sa'ad, Wakkas's son and Utba, Ghazwan's son and took them back to Mecca as prisoners together with a flock of sheep and a herd of camels.

This was the first attack and was soon followed by several similar incidents.

PERMISSION TO FIGHT FOR DEFENSE OR REVENGE

Under the patient guidance of the Prophet, salla Allahu alihi wa sallam, the Muslims had never taken a physically aggressive stand against their adversaries, for permission to do so had not been received from Allah.

Even when they had been subjected to outrageous provocation, they had restrained themselves by reciting the Words of Allah to state their case. One must not suppose them to have been faint hearted in such matters, rather they controlled themselves and obeyed their Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*. They remembered the mercy of Allah to mankind in the Revelation of the verse
"Whosoever obeys the Messenger,
Indeed he has obeyed Allah"
Koran 4:80.

The Companions knew they were incapable of pure obedience to Allah, and so it was that Allah in His Mercy honored His Messenger in this verse, by placing obedience to His Messenger before that of Himself. This is yet another indiction to us all of the very honorable rank Allah bestowed upon His Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, and His Mercy to us.

It was about this time that Allah sent down the following verse:

"Permission is given to those who fight because they were wronged.
Allah has power to grant them victory:
those who have been unjustly driven from their homes,
just because they said, 'Our Lord is Allah'"
Koran 22:39-40

But Allah also warned:
"Fight in the way of Allah those who fight against you,
but do not aggress. Allah does not love the aggressors."
Koran 2:190

This last verse is a clear warning to all Muslims that they must not be the first to aggress.

It was not the Prophet, *Salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, who instigated the state of war, persecuted, or pillaged, on the contrary, it was the Koraysh who were the open aggressors. Now, permission had come to the Muslims to assert themselves, stand up for their rights, and take back that which had been stolen from them.

With the possible threat of war on the horizon and the command to fight because of the wrongs afforded to them, the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) sent observation parties of migrants to monitor caravans.

From time to time they received news from their allies of caravan movements. However, more likely than not, by the time the news reached them, the Koraysh caravans were nowhere to be found. Nevertheless, the time was not wasted as successful treaties were negotiated with several Bedouin tribes along the coast of the Red Sea.

ELEVEN MONTHS AFTER THE MIGRATION

Eleven months had passed since the Prophet's migration when, in the autumn, news of a richly laden caravan escorted by a hundred armed men led by Ummaya, the chief of Jummah, was reported. Ummaya was one of Islam's greatest opponents and so the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) called upon the help of the Ansars to assist the

Muhajirs in ridding themselves of their adversary and seizing the spoils of war as restitution. However, Ummaya and his caravan eluded them and there was no encounter.

THE SECOND YEAR

Two months into the second year after the migration, news of another caravan on its way to Syria led by Abu Sufyan arrived. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions set off in search of the caravan, but the news they had received was old and when they reached Ushayrah, which lies in the valley of Yanbu near the Red Sea, their adversaries had long gone.

The cooler winter months were upon them and the number of caravans to the north dwindled. Since the time of their ancestor Hashim, caravans had taken advantage of these cooler months to cross the inhospitable, desolate southern part of the desert to Yemen.

The month was Rajab, one of the four sacred months in which fighting is not permissible, when news reached Medina that a caravan making its way from Yemen was nearing Mecca. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided to send his cousin Abdullah, Jahsh' son with eight of the Muhajir on a reconnaissance assignment. Before leaving, Abdullah was given written instructions and told not to read them until they reached a certain place. When they reached the given place, Abdullah read the instructions that told him to journey on to Nakhlah, observe the Koraysh and return with the news. There were no orders to attack the caravan.

Upon reaching the valley of Nakhlah, they concealed themselves not far from the main route and sat in wait. This time the information was correct and the Koraysh caravan stopped for a while not far from where the Muhajirs had positioned themselves. From their vantage point they observed that among the caravaners were those from the very hostile tribe of Makhzum who had been responsible for great harm to the Muslims. Abdullah was in a quandary not knowing what to do, he was unsure if the pre-Islamic rules not to fight during the Sacred Months still applied or not, and pondered deeply upon the verse:

"Permission is given to those who fight
because they were wronged."
Koran 22:39

The Sacred Month was nearing its end, and the moon of Shaban was expected that same night, however, Abdullah knew that if he waited until the sighting of the new moon was visible, the caravan would be miles away and no doubt have entered the sacred precincts of Mecca in which no fighting at any time is permissible.

Abdullah reflected upon the numerous occasions they had been so unjustly persecuted, provoked and plundered for no other reason than their belief in One God, Allah, and so it wasn't until after a great deal of deliberation he gave the order to attack. As they fired their arrows, the arrow of Wakid, Abdullah Tamini's son struck and killed Amr Hadrami, an ally of the tribe of Shams.

The caravaners realized they were outnumbered and their chances of survival were small indeed, so Othman Hadrami from the tribe of Makhzum and a freed man named

Hakam surrendered. However, Nawfal, the brother of Othman managed to escape and returned to Mecca. Now there was a blood feud with which to contend.

Abdullah and the Muhajirs returned to Medina with their prisoners, camels, and spoils. When they reached Medina they divided the spoils among themselves, leaving one-fifth for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to distribute as charity. When Abdullah and his companions took the spoils to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and presented them to him, he declined to accept it reminding them, "I did not order you to fight in the Sacred Months."

Abdullah and his companions were greatly distressed by the Prophet's refusal, and were rebuked by their fellow Muslims for their violation of the Sacred Month. The unbelievers of Medina took it upon themselves to say that this was indeed a bad omen for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and made great issue of the matter. As for the Koraysh, they falsely accused the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of being responsible for the violation of the Sacred Month of Rajab.

Abdullah and his companions were devastated; it had not been their intention to disobey the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and they had acted only after a great deal of heart-searching, but the fact remained that they had not been given permission to fight. After a while, relief came to them when Angel Gabriel brought down the verse from Allah that said:

"They ask you about the Sacred Month and fighting in it.
Say: 'To fight in this month is a grave (offense);
but to bar others from the Path of Allah,
and disbelief in Him, and the Holy Mosque,
and to expel its inhabitants from it is great with Allah.
Dissension is great than killing.
They will not cease to fight against you
until they force you to renounce your religion, if they are able.
But whosoever of you recants from his religion and dies an unbeliever,
their works shall be annulled in this world and in the Everlasting Life,
and those shall be the companions of Hell, and there they shall live forever.'
Koran 2:217

Now that this verse had been revealed, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew that Abdullah and his men had been absolved and accepted a fifth of the spoils which were then distributed as charity.

Abdullah and his companions asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "May we hope that this will count as a raid for which we shall receive a reward as combatants?" For they were more anxious to receive the reward of Allah than the worldly spoils they had repossessed. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in his customary manner did not reply straight away and waited until the following verse was sent down from Allah:

"But those who believe and those who migrate and struggle in the Way of Allah, those, have hope of the Mercy of Allah, Allah is Forgiving, Merciful."
Koran 2:218

THE RANSOM

Meanwhile, the tribe of Makhzum sent ransom money to Medina for Othman and Hakam. However, Sa'ad and Utba, who had been taken prisoners by Kerz remained in Mecca. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who was always concerned for the welfare of his Companions, did not wish to place them in life threatening situation, so he sent a message saying, "We will not accept your ransom until our two Companions are returned. If you kill them, we will kill your two."

After Sa'ad and Utba had been released and arrived safely in Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who was not one to break his word, released Othman and Hakam. However, Hakam expressed his wish to embrace Islam and remained in Medina whilst Othman returned to Mecca where he died an unbeliever. Hakam, on the other hand, was later to become a martyr at the encounter of Bi'r Ma'una.

CHAPTER 53

THE SECOND YEAR AFTER THE MIGRATION

THE DIRECTION OF PRAYER

In Medina there were now three communities: Muslims, People of the Book and unbelievers. The Jews and a handful of Nazarenes and Christians, or People of the Book as the Koran refers to them, offered their prayers in the common direction of Jerusalem, as it was there that many Prophets had preached. The unbelievers on the other hand would turn themselves toward their many idols housed within the confines of Ka'ba in Mecca.

Sixteen months had now passed since the Prophet's migration and during this time he had offered his prayers in the direction of Jerusalem rather than the direction of Ka'ba. However, his heart was far from being settled about the matter. Instinctively, he wished to offer his prayer facing the direction of Ka'ba, the House his ancestors, Prophets Abraham and Ishmael rebuilt so many centuries before, but the fact that there were so many idols in and around it prevented him from doing so.

The matter weighed heavily upon his heart, then Allah directed him in the following verses that were sent down at the time of the mid-day prayer on a Tuesday, sometime in the middle of the month of Shaban.

"We have seen you turning your face towards the heaven.
We shall surely turn you to a direction that shall satisfy you.
So turn your face towards the Sacred Mosque (built by Abraham);
wherever you are, turn your faces to it.
Those to whom the Book was given know this to be the truth from their Lord.
Allah is not inattentive of what they do.
But even if you brought those to whom the Book had been given every proof,
they would not accept your direction, nor would you accept theirs;
nor would any of them accept the direction of the other.
If after all the knowledge you have been given you yield to their desires,
then you will surely be among the harmdoers."
Koran 2:144-145

and

"The truth comes from your Lord, so do not be among the doubters.
And for everyone is a direction for which he turns. So race in goodness.
And wherever you are, Allah will bring you all together. He has power over all things.
From wherever you emerge, turn your face towards the Sacred Mosque.
This is surely the truth from your Lord. Allah is never inattentive of what you do.
From wherever you emerge, turn your face towards the Sacred Mosque,
and wherever you are, face towards it,
so that the people will have no argument against you,
except the harm-doers among them. Do not fear of them, fear Me,
so that I will perfect My Favor to you and that you will be guided."
Koran 2:147-150

From that time onward the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers offered their prayers facing the direction of the Ka'ba in Mecca.

The Mosque in which the verses were sent down was known from then onwards as "The Mosque of the Two Kiblas" - kibla meaning direction of prayer.

Before the advent of the Nazarenes and Christians, the Jews directed their prayers towards Jerusalem and prided themselves that the Nazarenes and Christians, and up until now, the Muslims had done the same, thereby acknowledging their importance through its religious significance. Without a doubt, Islam acknowledges the significance of Jerusalem as a very Holy site and the changing of the direction of prayer was by no means to demean it. But to the Jews, Jerusalem was not just a Holy place, it had become an important status symbol which served to enhance their self proclaimed superiority.

For many years the unbelievers respected the Jews, admiring their adeptness and business acumen. Such was their admiration that when faced by the death of a child they would often take a vow that if the child was spared, they would have him raised as a Jew.

When Allah changed the direction of prayer to Ka'ba, the Jews were very displeased, as they perceived it to be an outright rejection of their social status and this caused further resentment. The Muslims had not in fact rejected its religious significance at all, but the Ka'ba, the House which Abraham had built, the first House of Allah on earth, had been the direction chosen by Allah for Muslims to face during prayer.

Soon after, the Jews dormant resentment of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Message given to him by Allah began to surface. False accusations that he pursued a policy of opposition against them were common, for many of the verses in the recently revealed sections of the Cow chapter exposed the concealed corruption of their ancestors and revealed their present day contempt.

Their pride prevented them from acknowledging that some of their ancestors had clearly wronged themselves and that they themselves would follow parts of the Torah that were acceptable to them whilst neglecting or rejecting other parts.

Their contention that they were the chosen ones of Allah, despite the fact that they defied, killed, and rejected many of their prophets including their last prophet, Jesus,

the Messiah, the son of Mary, who warned them that if they did not reform, the covenant would be taken away from them.

Among the Muslims were some whose faith was yet to mature, they also questioned the changing of the Kibla to the Ka'ba, forgetting that the order was not the decision of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihhi wa salaam) but that of Allah, who warned that the Jews and unbelievers would question the redirection:

"The fools among the people will say,
'What has made them turn away from the direction they were facing?'
Say: 'The east and the west belong to Allah.
He guides whom He will to a Straight Path.'"
Koran 2:142

"... We did not change the direction that you were facing
except that We might know who followed the Messenger
from him who turned on both his heels.
Though it was a hardship except for those whom Allah has guided.
Allah is Gentle with people, the Most Merciful."
Koran 2:143

"Righteousness is not whether you face towards the east or the west.
But righteousness is to believe in Allah, and the Last Day,
in the angels and the Book, and the Prophets, and to give wealth however cherished,
to kinsmen, to the orphans, to the needy, to the destitute traveler,
and to the beggars, and to ransom the slave; who establish their prayers,
and pay the obligatory charity..."
Koran 2:177

CHAPTER 54 PRELUDE TO THE ENCOUNTER OF BADR

THE CARAVAN OF ABU SUFYAN

There was unrest amongst the unbelievers, the Jews, and hypocrites of Medina for each concealed either their own tribal or racial grudge.

When news that Abu Sufyan and his caravan -- which included a member from each branch of the Koraysh tribe -- had set out on its return journey from Syria laden with merchandise, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihhi wa salaam) called the Muslims together and informed them of his intent to attack so that the Muslims might have at least some of their former wealth restored to them.

Shortly after this, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihhi wa salaam) sent Talha and Sa'id, Zaid's son to reconnoiter the area near the coastal village of Hawra that lies approximately one hundred miles from Medina. At Hawra, Talha and Sa'id were met by the chief of Juhaynah who took them under his protection and concealed them in his home until Abu Sufyan's caravan had passed by.

THE CONSPIRACY OF THE UNBELIEVERS AND JEWS

Despite their alliance, the unbelievers and Jews of Medina conspired against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and sent word to Abu Sufyan informing him that he could expect to be attacked. Abu Sufyan was alarmed and hired Damdam, Amr Al Ghifari's son to hasten on to Mecca to rally the Koraysh to come out and join him in defense of the caravan as he feared the attack to be imminent.

NEW REACHES MECCA

Damdām did not spare his camel as he sped onto Mecca at break-neck pace. In order to draw immediate attention to the urgency of the matter, when Damdam reached the valley of Mecca he severely mutilated his camel, slitting its ears and cutting off its nose, then he turned his saddle backwards, tore his shirt, and screamed the news at the top of his voice as he entered the City.

The alarm soon spread through every quarter of Mecca, for they knew the caravan was richly laden and also, each tribe had one of their own accompanying it.

Abu Jahl immediately called the Koraysh chieftains, its warriors, and in fact all men able to fight, to prepare themselves and met him in the precincts of Ka'ba. Utba, Rabia's son was appointed their Commander-in-Chief and the combined Koraysh army looked formidable. There were no less than nine-hundred and fifty armed soldiers, seven hundred camels, and three horses with more than adequate provisions to feed themselves.

The tribe of Adi however, decided not to partake in the forthcoming hostilities and remained behind. Two other people also declined, they were Abu Lahab and Ummaya, Khalif's son.

Abu Lahab told Al-As, Hisham's son, that if he were to go in his place he would release him from the substantial debt of the four thousand dirhams he owed him. Al-As accepted his offer as he had no other way in which to repay the debt.

As for Ummaya, he was elderly and rather corpulent, so he decided not to go. However, his honor was challenged by Ukba, Abu Mu'ayt's son who sought him out near the Ka'ba with a vessel of burning scented wood and insulted him by saying, "Perfume yourself with this -- you belong with the women!" Outraged, Ummaya got up saying, "May Allah curse you and what you have brought!" and rode off to join the others who had already set off to engage the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). Meanwhile Abu Sufyan force-marched his caravan by day and night along the coastal route.

As for the tribes closely related to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), the tribes of Hashim and Muttalib, they too had reluctantly joined with the Koraysh. Talib took command of both tribes, whilst Abbas and Hakim, Lady Khadijah's nephew from the tribe of Asad accompanied them.

Before leaving, Abbas took his wife Umm Fadl to one-side and told her how he wished his wealth to be distributed in the event of his death and named Abdullah, Kutham, and Ubaydullah as his heirs.

THE FIRST STAGE OF THE PROPHET'S MARCH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided not to wait for Talha and Sa'id to return, but to press on. He appointed two standard bearers, one from the Ansar and the other from the Muhajir.

On 12th Ramadan, with the exception of eight Muslims, who for valid reasons remained in Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with 311 Muhajirs and Ansars set off in search of Abu Sufyan's caravan. The army was ill equipped and had provisions less than adequate due to their circumstances, but they trusted Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so their spirits were high. Between them they had but seventy-two mounts -- seventy camels and two horses -- which they took turns to ride, sometimes they rode two or three at a time.

Among those that remained behind was Othman, the husband of the Prophet's daughter, Lady Rukiyah. Lady Rukiyah had been taken seriously ill, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) compassionately told Othman to remain at her side. In his absence he appointed Amru, Ummu Makhtum's son to act as their leader as the hypocrites and Jews could no longer be trusted to remain loyal.

UMAIR, THE SON OF ABI WAKKAS

A mile or so outside Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called his army to a halt and discovered that in their anxiousness to support him, several youngsters had joined them. Out of kindness he told them they must return as it was no place for boys so young. Amongst them was a boy named Umair, Abi Wakas's son who cried inconsolably when he was told to return, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took pity on him and allowed him to accompany them. Umair stopped his crying and a great big smile spread over his face as his elder brother, Sa'ad hung a sword around his neck.

TWO TRIBESMEN FROM JUHAYNAH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave the order to proceed and so they continued their march southward and then turned towards Badr, which lay further down the coast from Hawra. The Prophet's intention was to reach Badr before Abu Sufyan and intercept him there. In the meantime, he sent two of his allies from the Bedouin tribe of Juhaynah, who were familiar with the area, to look for the caravan and bring news whilst he and his small army rested.

Just outside Badr lies a water-well at the foot of a hill. Upon reaching the hill, the tribesmen of Juhaynah went down to replenish their water supply and let their camels drink. At the well two girls were talking as they drew water, one girl was overheard saying to the other: "The caravan will arrive either tomorrow or the next day. I will work for them so that I can repay the money I owe to you." It was the news they had been hoping for, so they hastened back to the Prophet's camp to tell him.

ABU SUFYAN AT THE WELL OF BADR

The quickest route to Mecca lay through Badr, so Abu Sufyan rode on in advance of the caravan to make sure that it was safe for it to proceed in that direction. He reached the well only a short time after the scouts had left and came across a man from the village who had come to draw water. Abu Sufyan asked if he had seen any strangers recently whereupon the villager told him that the only strangers he had seen were two men who had come over the hill and stopped to draw some water.

Abu Sufyan was always on the alert for any signs and furtively glanced around for some camel's dung. He retraced the camel's hoof prints up the hill and found what he was searching for and examined it quickly. As he broke the dung in half his heart started to pound as he saw some date stones and undigested date fiber then cried out: "By Allah, its the food of Yathrib!" His worst fear was confirmed. He knew the Prophet's army could not be far away, whereupon he returned with great haste to his caravan camped further up the coast.

THE RETURN OF THE SCOUTS

By now the scouts of Juhaynah had returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that the caravan's arrival was imminent at Badr. It was good news, for they thought themselves to have the upper hand and that they would be able to overcome them in a surprise attack.

THE RESOLVE OF THE MUHJAIR AND ANSAR

Hopes were high when news arrived that a large army of Koraysh had set out from Mecca to support Abu Sufyan. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wasted no time and called the Muhajir and Ansar together to tell them the news.

Abu Bakr and Omar represented the Muhajir and Omar acted as their spokesman. Omar told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that they were of one voice -- they should advance. Then, one of the latest migrants, Mikdad from the tribe of Zuhra, got up and spoke saying, "O Messenger of Allah, do what Allah has directed. We will not be like the Children of Israel who said to Moses: 'Go with your Lord and fight, we shall wait here.' Rather, we say, 'Go with your Lord and fight, we will fight with you to the right and to the left, in front and behind!'" When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard these faithful words, his face shone knowing well the strength of the Muhajir's faith.

Then Sa'ad, Mu'adh's son, of the Ansar stood up and said, "O Messenger of Allah, we believe you and we believe what you have brought us. We bear witness that what you have brought is the truth. We have given you our oath to hear and obey. Do whatsoever you wish, we are with you. By Him who sent you with the truth, if you ask us to cross the sea and plunged yourself into it, we would do the same -- no man amongst us would not do so. We are not against meeting our enemy tomorrow, we have fought before and are to be relied upon. Allah willing, our courage will bring coolness to your eyes, so lead us with the blessing of Allah!"

There was great rejoicing, the Ansars and Muhajirs were united in their resolve, yet only a matter of a few years prior to this, such unification would have been absolutely unthinkable.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was greatly pleased by their united response and told them to be of good heart, because Allah, the Most High had promised him success over one of the two parties, and that even as he spoke it was as if he could see their enemy lying prostrate.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), together with his small army of Companions marched on toward Badr. Less than a day's march away, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for a halt and he and Abu Bakr rode on for a while

when they came across an elderly Bedouin. Abu Bakr asked the Bedouin if he had any news, but the Bedouin was cunning and asked to which party they belonged; that of Muhammad or that of the Koraysh. Abu Bakr told the man that if he told him the whereabouts of each party he would tell him where they were from. The old Bedouin knew well the paths of the desert and told him that in his opinion as Muhammad's party had left Yathrib on the 12th of Ramadan, they should by now have reached such and such a place -- his estimation was correct -- and that the Koraysh should be very near the place in which they were standing.

Then the man asked Abu Bakr where he and his companion were from, Abu Bakr could not afford to trust this wily old Bedouin, so he replied with a clever conundrum saying that they were from "Ma", which is Arabic for water, as man is created from water. The Bedouin was satisfied with his answer and supposed he referred to Iraq on account of its two rivers.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Abu Bakr returned to their camp and when night fell, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent for Ali, Zubair, and Sa'ad together with their companions and told them to go to the well and see if anyone there had news of their enemies, or if they had drawn water from the well.

THE FIRST PRISONERS

When they reached the well, they found two men from the Koraysh filling their containers with water and loading them onto the backs of their camels. One of the men was a slave belonging to the children of Al Hajjaj, the other was Arid Abu Yasar, from the children of Al-As.

Stealthily, Ali, Zubair, Sa'ad, and the others overcame them and took them back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as prisoners. When they reached the camp, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was occupied in his prayer, so a crowd gathered around the prisoners and started questioning them. The prisoners told them that they were only Koraysh water-men, whereupon their inquisitors started to beat them hoping that they had lied and were from the caravan. It became clear to the water-men that their captors wanted to hear them say that they were Abu Sufyan's men so the retracted their first claim and told them what they wanted to hear.

After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) concluded his prayer, he came out and told his Companions that they should not have treated their prisoners in that way, and informed them that their prisoners were indeed from the Koraysh and not from Abu Sufyan.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked them where the Koraysh were camped they told him without coercion, pointing to the hill of Akankal, that their camp lay on its slopes on the other side. He asked the size of the army but the men were unable to estimate its number, but said there were many. Wisely, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then asked how many camels were slaughtered each day to feed them and was told nine or maybe ten. From this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was able to deduce their numbers must be within the range of nine-hundred to a thousand.

Then he asked the prisoners for the names of their leaders and learned that the brothers Utba and Shayba were amongst them together with Abu Jahl, Abu'l Bakhtari, Hakim, Nawfal, Al Harith, son of Amir, Tu'mauma, Al Nadr, Zama'a, Ummaya, Nabih, Munabbih, Suhail, and Amr Abu Wudd's son. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then turned to his followers and said, "Mecca has thrown to you pieces of its liver!" And from this they understood that they would fight against the chief enemies of Islam.

A FEELING OF SAFETY

After Abu Sufyan had discovered date stones in the camel's dung, he decided to take the longer coastal route to Mecca feeling confident that he had escaped the attack. He now felt a sense of security and sent word to his fellow chieftains saying, "You came out to save your caravan, your tribesmen and your merchandise, but Allah has delivered us, therefore return." Strange as it may seem, despite all the idols worshipped in Ka'ba, the Koraysh preferred to swear by Allah even though they thought Him to be too remote to worship directly.

When Abu Jahl heard these words he rallied his men, saying, "By Allah, we will not return until we have been to Badr! We will spend three days there feasting, slaughtering camels, drinking wine, and the girls will play for us. When the other Arab tribes hear of us they will from hence forth hold us high in their esteem -- come on!"

TALIB, AL AKHNAS AND THE TRIBE OF ZUHRA

When Al Akhnas, Sharik's son, an ally of the tribe of Zuhra heard Abu Jahl's intent, he said to his allies, "Allah has saved you, your property and your tribesmen, Makhrama, Nawfal's son, your only reason for coming was to protect them; should you be charged with cowardice, blame it on me! There is no point going to war with this man without profit as Abu Jahl would have us do!" The tribe of Zuhra heeded Al Akhnas's words and together they returned to Mecca.

Talib, the son of Abu Talib, and uncle of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had reluctantly ridden out with the Koraysh hating the thought of fighting against his nephew so he had supplicated, "O Allah, it is not my desire to join the Koraysh in their way, but if it should be, let me be plundered and not the plunderer, and be the conquered and not the conqueror." Some of the Koraysh realized what was in Talib's heart and informed him that they knew, so he and some others with similar feelings returned to Mecca.

THE WELLS OF YALYAL

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered his followers to break camp and march on to the well near Badr before their enemy had chance to reach it. As they commenced their march rain began to fall and they gave thanks to Allah because it is both a blessing and purification. The sands of Yalyal were always soft, but the rain now made them firm and so the Muslims crossed the valley in comparative ease.

The rain helped the Muslims, however it was a hindrance to the Koraysh army for they had to climb the hill of Akankal that lay to the left of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions, on the opposite side of the valley of Badr.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reached one of the many wells, he called a halt. Hubab, Al Mundhir's son, an Ansar, approached and asked, "O

Messenger of Allah, is this the place which Allah has made known to you from which we should neither advance nor retreat, or is it a matter of opinion; a strategy of war?" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied that it was a matter of opinion, whereupon Hubab said that in his opinion it was not the best place to establish themselves. He advised the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that it would be much better to march on to one of the larger wells, closer to the Koraysh, and that once they had situated themselves, to send groups out to locate the remaining wells and plug them so that the Koraysh would be deprived of water. He also advised that a reservoir should be dug to contain water from the well. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was grateful for his suggestion and approved the plan, and so when they reached a larger well no time was lost carrying out Hubab's plan.

Sa'ad, Mu'adh's son was concerned for the Prophet's safety so he went to him saying, "O Messenger of Allah, let us erect a shelter for you and keep your camels in readiness next to it. If Allah gives us strength when we meet the enemy we will be victorious, but if it is not written, you can ride and rejoin those we left behind. They love you as much as we do and would never have remained behind if they had known there was going to be an encounter. Allah will protect you, and they will give you good advice and fight at your side." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) thanked him for his thoughtfulness, praised him and then supplicated for blessings upon him and so a shelter was built from palm branches.

HOURS BEFORE THE ENCOUNTER

It was the night of Friday, 17th of Ramadan and as the three hundred and thirteen believers settled themselves for the night, Allah in His Mercy sent down upon them a blessed, peaceful sleep so that when they awoke to offer their prayer in the morning they felt totally refreshed and prepared for the conflict.

Meanwhile in the other camp, the Koraysh army with their large, well equipped army stirred and struggled as they made their way with their camels to the top of Akankal.

By the time the Koraysh reached the top of the hill the sun had already risen and they were visible to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Upon seeing the army, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated saying, "O Allah, the Koraysh are here. In arrogance and pride they come, opposing You and belieing your Messenger. O Lord, give to us Your help which You have promised. O Lord, destroy them this day."

Not long after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chanced to see Utba, Rabia's son, riding a red camel and said to his companions, "If there is any good at all with any one of them, it will be with this man riding the red camel. If they obey him they will take the right path."

The Koraysh also had sight of the believers and were surprised to find they were so few and thought perhaps there may be another force concealed somewhere to the rear. When they reached the valley, the Koraysh made their camp and sent Umair on horseback to estimate their numbers and see if there were in fact any concealed reinforcements. When Umair returned, he proclaimed, "O men of Koraysh, I have seen camels carrying death. These men have no defense or refuge, they have only their swords, but I do not think any man of them will be killed before he has first killed one of

us. Even if each party were to kill the other in equal numbers what good will there be left in life after this, what will you do!"

Upon hearing Umair, Hakim from the tribe of Asad, the nephew of Lady Khadijah went straight to Utba, the father of Waleed with the men of Abdu Shams. Utba had consented to join the Koraysh against the believers on account of his dead kinsmen, the brother of Amir Al Hadrami, killed at Nakhlah during the Sacred Month. When Hakim found Utba he said. "You are the greatest man, the lord of the Koraysh, and one who is obeyed. Would you like men to remember you with praise for all time?" Utba asked, "How could this be?" "Lead them back, the Koraysh demand nothing more than blood from Muhammad for the blood of Al Hadrami," replied Hakim.

Hakim's words appealed to Utba and he agreed whilst encouraging him also to speak with Abu Jahl, but he had for many years opposed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and was the most anxious among them to wage war against him.

Utba spoke to his people saying, "O men of Koraysh, there is nothing to gain fighting Muhammad and his Companions. If you defeat them each man among you will always look with despise at another who has killed either his uncle, a cousin, or kinsmen. Therefore, turn back and leave Muhammad to the rest of the Arabs. If they kill him, you have your desire, on the other hand, if they do not, you will have shown self-restraint towards him."

When Hakim found Abu Jahl he was oiling his coat of mail and conveyed the message to him. Abu Jahl was infuriated and addressed the army saying, "By Allah, we will not turn back until it is decided between us and Muhammad." Then he called Utba a coward, afraid of death for himself and his son Abu Hudhayfah who was a Muslim.

To add fuel to the fire, Abu Jahl called upon Amir, the brother of the deceased Amr and challenged him not to let this opportunity to revenge his brother's death slip from him. Emotions ran high and Amir, in a state of traditional distress tore his clothes as he screamed at the top of his voice, "Woe for Amr, woe for Amr," which incited the army still further to fight.

Utba's words had fallen on deaf ears, nothing would stop them now. When he heard that Abu Jahl had accused him of cowardice his pride was challenged, so he searched for a helmet to prove him wrong, but was unable to find one large enough, so he wound a piece of cloth around his head to protect him -- the final preparations for the conflict were now underway.

ABDULLAH, SON OF UMMAYA JOINS THE PROPHET salla Allahu alihi wa salaam

Abdullah, Ummaya's son, was a Muslim, however his father, the chief of the tribe of Jummah and torturer of Bilal, had brought pressure to bear upon his son that prevented him from joining the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his brothers-in-law, Abu Sabra and Abu Hudhayfah in Medina.

Ummaya had forced his son to join him the march, however the opportunity to escape to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was soon to present itself as his father and every other soldier were busy with their preparations for the hostilities. Unnoticed, Abdullah managed to slip away and made his way to the camp of the Prophet (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam). As soon as he reached it, he made straight for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and as they greeted each other immense joy spread over both their faces.

Sometime later, several other Koraysh tribesmen dared to make their way to the reservoir the believers had made and drink from it. When the believers saw this they drew the matter to the attention of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who told them to let them take their fill. With the exception of Hakim, Lady Khadijah's nephew, all who drank its water were killed in conflict that day.

CHAPTER 55 THE ENCOUNTER OF BADR

As the Koraysh began to advance, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon his Companions to form their ranks and spoke to them with words of encouragement, and they knew Allah was with them. Their lines were as straight as arrow with one exception, an Ansar by the name of Sawad, stood slightly more forward than the rest, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to him and gently prodded his midriff with an arrow. Sawad seized upon the opportunity and said, "O Messenger of Allah, you have hurt me, Allah has sent you with truth and justice, so give me my rights." Upon this, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) uncovered his midriff and Sawad bent down and kissed it. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked him what had prompted him to do this whereupon Sawad said, "O Messenger of Allah, with matters as they are, and if it is written, it is my wish that my last moments should be spent with you -- that my skin has touched yours." Upon hearing these moving remarks, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated to Allah asking for blessings upon Sawad.

Not long after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) withdrew to his shelter with Abu Bakr and prayed to Allah for help. After his prayer, a short slumber overtook him and upon waking he said to Abu Bakr, "Be well pleased, Allah has sent His help to you. Gabriel is here and in his hand is the rein of a horse which he leads, and he is armed for the conflict!"

By now the Koraysh army had drawn nearer and Allah in His Mercy made their numbers appear to the believers to be considerably smaller than they; the unbelievers were now only a short distance from the reservoir.

Referring to their numbers and the prompts of satan, Allah says in the Koran:

"Indeed, there was a sign for you in the two armies which met on the battlefield. One was fighting in the way of Allah, and another unbelieving. They (the believers) saw with their eyes that they were twice their own number. But Allah strengthens with His victory whom He will. Surely, in that there was a lesson for those possessed of eyes."
Koran 3:13

"And when Allah made them appear to you in a vision as a small band, had He showed them to you as many, your courage would have failed you and you would have quarreled over the affair.

But Allah saved; He knows the innermost thoughts in the chests.
 And when you met them, He showed them in your eyes as being few,
 and decreased (your number) in their eyes
 so that Allah might determine what was ordained.
 To Allah all matters return.
 Believers, when you meet an army stand firm and remember Allah abundantly,
 in order that you are prosperous. Obey Allah and His Messenger
 and do not dispute with one another
 lest you should lose courage and your resolve weaken.
 Have patience - Allah is with those who are patient.
 Do not be like those who left their homes
 elated with insolence and showing off to people, barring others from the Path of Allah -
 but Allah encompasses what they do.
 And when Satan made their foul deeds seem fair to them, he said,
 'No man shall conquer you this day. I shall be your savior.'
 But when the two armies came within sight of each other he took to his heels saying,
 'I reject you, for I can see what you cannot. I fear Allah, Allah is Stern in retribution.'
 Koran 8:43-48

Al Aswad, Abdullah Asad's son from the tribe of Makhzum, known for his disagreeable personality, was the first to initiate hostilities as he cried out defiantly, "I will drink from their reservoir, destroy it or else die before reaching it." Hamza, Abdul Muttalib's son challenged him and as the two engaged in combat, Hamza struck him with such force that his foot and shin were severed and flew through the air. Al Aswad was determined to fulfill his word and crawled towards the reservoir, however Hamza killed him and his body fell into it.

Utba, Rabia's son, accompanied by his brother Shayba and his son, were the next to challenge and cried out for one-to-one combat. From the Ansar, three men stepped forward: they were the brothers Awf and Muawwidh, the sons of Afra and another, probably, Abdullah, the son of Rawaha. Utba asked who they were, and they replied, "We are from the Ansar," whereupon Utba replied, "Our affair is not with you, we know that you are equal to us in lineage but we wish to fight those of similar standing from our own tribe." At that moment, someone from the Koraysh called out: "Muhammad, send out against us our peers from our own tribe!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) called upon Ubayda, Harith's son, Hamza and Ali to go forth to meet their enemies and as they approached, the Koraysh asked them to identify themselves. After their identifications had been made known the Koraysh accepted to fight them.

Ubayda fought Utba, Hamza fought Shayba, and Ali fought Shayba's son. The fight between Ali and Shayba's son, and Hamza and Shayba was over quickly -- both Ali and Hamza killed the enemies of Allah. Meanwhile Ubayda and Utba had struck each other twice and Ubayda had fallen victim. When Hamza and Ali saw what had befallen their companion they turned upon Utba and he did not live to see the evening.

Gently, Hamza and Ali carried Ubayda to the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam). His leg had been severed and he had lost a tremendous amount of blood. When he saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) he gazed up at him and asked, "O Messenger of Allah, am I to be a martyr?" "Indeed you are," replied the Prophet (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam) in a soft tone and Ubayda was happy. Then Ubayda said in his weakened voice, "If Abu Talib were alive today he would know that his words: 'We will not give him up until we lie dead around him, forgetting our women and children,' have been fulfilled in me."

Three out of the four enemies of Islam that lay dead on the battlefield were killed by Hamza and were related to a high-ranking woman named Hind. Such was Hind's hatred of Hamza that she swore to take her revenge as soon as the opportunity presented itself.

Before the armies advanced on each other, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered his Companions not to attack until he gave the word and told them that in the event they should find themselves surrounded by the enemy, they were to keep them at bay by showering their arrows above their heads.

He also told them that among the Koraysh were those that had been forced to take up arms against them and if they happened to encounter any of them, they must not kill them. Those people were Abbas, the Prophet's uncle, the children of Hashim and Abdul Bakhtari who had supported the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on several occasions.

Meanwhile, the adrenaline coursed quickly through the veins of the Koraysh and in their anxiousness to ignite the conflict two arrows were fired. The first struck Mihja, the freedman of Omar who became the next believer to be martyred, then the second arrow pierced the neck of Haritha, Suraka's son from the tribe of Najjar as he drank from the reservoir.

THE ORDER TO FIGHT

The engagement was about to begin; the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) picked up a handful of small pebbles and said as he looked toward the Koraysh, "May their faces be defaced," then he threw the pebbles toward them and commanded his Companions saying, "Now, stand up and proceed towards Paradise. Its extent encompasses the heavens and the earth!"

When Umair, Hamam's son, heard this he inquired, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) does Paradise encompass the heavens and the earth?" "Yes," he answered, Umair exclaimed, "Well, well," so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "What prompted you to say this". Umair answered, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) by Allah, I uttered these words to express the hope that I might become an inhabitant of Paradise." Whereupon the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled as he gave him the good news, "You are indeed one of its inhabitants."

With happiness in his heart he took some dates from his quiver and began to eat them, then paused saying, "If I were to survive until I finished eating these dates, that would indeed be a long interval." So he threw down the remaining dates, plunged into the conflict, and fought with great courage until he was martyred.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heartened his Companions saying, "By Allah, in whose hand is the soul of Muhammad, there is no man killed this day; fighting against them with unwavering courage, advancing and not retreating, that Allah will not

cause to enter Paradise." The promise of Paradise was the best reward they could ever hope for and the intensity of the engagement accelerated.

THE SWORD OF UKASHAH

As Ukashah, from the tribe of Jahsh, fought valiantly against the unbelievers, his sword broke so he returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to request another weapon. Instead of a sword, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave him a wooden club. As Ukashah took hold of it, a miracle occurred, the club was transformed into a strong, long shining sword and he threw himself once more in the heat of the conflict. From that time onward, Ukashah used the sword in every conflict and called it "Al Awn" which means Divine Help.

At some point later on, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that 70,000 people from his nation would enter Paradise like the full moon. Ukashah asked if he could be among them, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated for him. When an Ansar heard this he asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for the same but he was too late and told, "Ukashah has beaten you to it, the prayer has been offered."

THE RECOMPENSE OF ABU JAHL

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had ordered his Companions to be on the look-out for Abu Jahl. Muawwidh and Awf, the young sons of Afra caught sight of Abu Jahl as he rode his horse. Abu Jahl was strong and no match for a young boy, so Afra's sons decided to attack him together and leapt upon him from either side of his horse, severely injuring him as his horse ran off. The boys thought he was dead and left him however, he regained consciousness sometime later and crawled to safety into a nearby thicket.

However, his escape had not gone unnoticed and Muadh, Amr's son overheard one of his companions report that Abu Jahl had been seen somewhere in a thicket, yet it was difficult to reach him. Muadh was not to be deterred and began searching for him. Shortly afterwards he found him and they engaged each other in fierce combat until Muadh struck him with such force that Abu Jahl's foot and shin were sliced off and literally flew through the air.

When Ikrima, Abu Jahl's son, saw what had happened he turned upon Muadh and yielded him such a blow that his arm was virtually severed and hung on dangling by a piece of flesh. Muadh continued to fight with his other hand until the pain became too great for him to bear, so he knelt down, severed his arm completely then courageously continued to fight as best he could. Muadh was to survive the hostilities of that day and died during the caliphate of Othman.

Sometime later, Muawwidh, Afra's son discovered Abu Jahl lying in the thicket and realized he was still alive. They engaged each other in combat during which both sustain severe injuries. At last, Muawwidh was able to inflict a tremendous blow to Abu Jahl and he fell unconscious to the ground. Muawwidh, whose hand had been severed, left Abu Jahl for dead, however Abu Jahl still hung on to life.

Muawwidh carried his severed hand to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who, by the Mercy of Allah replaced it and blew his saliva upon it. Immediately the hand was

restored to its former position. Muawwidh returned to the hostilities, and continued to fight with all his might and was among those martyred that day at Badr.

Later on during the day, after the cessation of hostilities, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered his Companions to search for the body of Abu Jahl, telling them that they would be able to identify him by a scar just above his knee. Abdullah, Massaud's son found him in the throes of death and put his foot upon his neck and said, "Allah has put you to shame, you are the enemy of Allah!" Arrogant to the end, Abu Jahl replied, "How has He shamed me, am I anything other than a man you are about to kill?" How did the fighting go?" whereupon Abdullah informed him that it had been in favor of Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then cut off his head.

MIRACLES DURING THE ENCOUNTER

Throughout the hostilities, continuous winds had blown against the unbelievers. Allah had answered the supplication of His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions were not left alone to fight the hostilities by themselves:

"And when you (Prophet Muhammad) prayed to your Lord for help, He answered, 'I am sending to your aid a thousand angels in succession.'" Koran 8:9

Directly after the hostilities the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received another Revelation that informed:

"It was not you who killed them, but Allah slew them, neither was it you who threw at them. Allah threw at them in order that He confers on the believers a fair benefit. Indeed, Allah is Hearing, Knowing." Koran 8:17

Miraculous events occurred continually throughout the encounter. Many were the times when the believers in pursuit of their enemy, found the heads of the unbelievers would fly off before they had chance to strike them.

After the hostilities were over, during the search for their martyred Companions, they noticed burn marks upon the necks of the dead unbelievers and drew the matter to the attention of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that they were the marks left by the swords of the angels. Some of the Companions were blessed to witness the angels fighting alongside them and reported that the hooves of their horses never touched the ground.

Later, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke of the winds saying that the first had been brought by the Angel Gabriel, together with a thousand angels. The second by the Angel Mikhail, with a thousand angels on his right flank. The third by the Angel Israfil with a thousand angels on his left flank, and that the angels had fought alongside the believers wearing turbans with a piece of cloth hanging down at the back; as for their mounts, they were piebald horses.

Amongst the many healing miracles that day was that of Khubayb, Yasaf's son. Khubayb's neck had been all but sliced in half and hung limply. When he came before

the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the Prophet gently repositioned the injured part, blew upon it with his saliva and his neck was immediately restored.

THE CLOUD OF ANGELS

A non-combatant from the tribe of Ghifar later told ibn Abbas that during the encounter he and his cousin had positioned themselves at the top of a hill overlooking the battlefield with the intention of looting once the hostilities were over. While they were waiting, a white cloud approached the hill, and in it they heard the whinnying of horses and a voice that struck terror into them saying, "Onward, Hayzum!" The man's cousin was terrified, it was too much for him and his head burst open and he died. The narrator himself told ibn Abbas that he too had almost died from absolute terror.

THE MARTYRS

Fourteen believers were martyred that day. Six were from the Muhajir and eight from the Ansar. Among their ranks were Umair, the young brother of Sa'ad who had pleaded with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to let him accompany them.

When the time came to bury the martyrs the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caringly informed his Companions that their bodies should not be washed, as on the Day of Judgement their wounds will exude with the fragrance of musk, and so it was that they were laid to rest.

THE LOSSES OF THE UNBELIEVERS

As for the Koraysh, their loss was many times greater than the Muslims. Seventy unbelievers were killed many of whom were the chieftains of the Koraysh and a further seventy taken captive, for whom their tribesmen were to pay ransoms of between three or four thousand dirhams each. However, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), was always merciful and set the standard of excellence by freeing many captives whose families were unable to pay the ransom.

CHAPTER 56

THE REVENGE OF BILAL AND THE PERSECUTED

Amongst those taken prisoner was Ummaya, the notorious persecutor of impoverished, underprivileged Muslims. Before Islam his captor, Abdu Amr, who had now taken the name Abdul Rahman, had been Ummaya's friend. However, Ummaya refused to recognize him by his new name and instead would call him Abdulillah, which was acceptable to Abdul Rahman.

After the encounter, as Abdul Rahman searched among the dead for coats of mail as spoils of war, he caught sight of Ummaya holding his son Ali's hand and heard him call out "Abdu Amr", but he ignored him until he addressed him as Abdulillah saying, "Won't you take me prisoner, I am more valuable than those coats of mail!" Abdul Rahman answered, "By Allah, I will!" as he threw down the coats of mail.

Abdul Rahman took them both by the hand and led them toward the camp. As they walked, Ummaya asked the name of the person that had worn an ostrich feather on his chest. Abdul Rahman told him that the man was Hamza, whereupon Ummaya commented that it was he who had harmed them most.

Bilal, who had been tortured unmercifully by Ummaya caught sight of Abdul Rahman leading his prisoners to the camp and cried out, "It is the great unbeliever, Ummaya, Khalaf's son, may I not live as long as he lives!" Abdul Rahman retorted, "They are my prisoners!" but Bilal continued to cry out, "O helpers of Allah, the great unbeliever Ummaya, Khalaf's son, may I not live as long as he lives!"

The believers soon began to gather around Abdul Rahman, Ummaya, and Ali, then one stepped forward and cut off Ali's foot and Ummaya screamed out in protest with all his might. Abdul Rahman told him that there was nothing he could do for him and the crowd set upon the two and killed them.

THE DRIED-UP WELL

When it came time to bury the twenty-four unbelieving Koraysh chieftains, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered their corpses to be cast into a disused, dried-up well. A few days after as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left Badr he passed by the well and addressed each of the corpses by their own name saying, "Would it have pleased you if you had obeyed Allah and His Messenger? We have found what our Lord has promised to be true, have you found what your lord has promised you to be true?"

When Omar heard him speaking to the dead he asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), do you speak to bodies without souls?" Thereupon he informed him that they could indeed hear him better than Omar had heard him ask.

As for Ummaya, he was not buried with his comrades as his body had swollen to such an extent that when they tried to remove his armor it started to disintegrate, so they covered him with earth and stones, leaving him where he had fallen.

THE BURIAL OF UTBA

As the body of Utba was about to be thrown into the pit along with the other unbelievers, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caught sight of Abu Hudhayfah who was Utaba's son.

Compassionately, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired about his feelings, whereupon he replied, "No, I have no misgivings about my father and his death, rather, I remember him for his wisdom, and better qualities. I had hoped that he would be guided to Islam and when I saw he had died in disbelief it saddened me." The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke kindly to him and then supplicated for Abu Hudhayfah.

THE APOSTATES

Amongst those who had fought against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were Harith, Zamaa's son; Abu Kays, Fakih's son, Al Walid's son; Ali, Ummaya's son; and Al As, Munabbih's son. All of these men had embraced Islam when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was in Mecca, however, when it was time for them to migrate their families had compelled them to stay behind and succeeded to seduce them once more into disbelief. Then more recently, when the Koraysh asked them to join against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) they had done so without the least hesitation. Now a verse referring to them was sent down.

"And the angels who take those who wronged themselves,

will say: 'In what condition were you?'
They will reply, 'We were oppressed in the land,'
They (the angels) will say,
'Was not the earth of Allah wide enough for you in order that you migrate in it?'
Those, their shelter will be Gehenna (Hell), an evil arrival."
Koran 4:97

CHAPTER 57 THE SPOILS OF WAR

Satan, the stoned and cursed, threw the seeds of discord among the Muslims who had but a few hours before fought as one against a common enemy -- now a dispute over the distribution of the spoils of war started to fester.

Some of the Muslims who had stood guard around the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) during the hostilities claimed that although they had not fought, they were entitled to a share of the prisoners, weapons, coats of mail, and rides. When the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard the arguing he immediately ordered all the spoils to be brought before him and it was during this time that a new Revelation was sent down that called them back to the remembrance of Allah, whereupon they felt ashamed of their actions.

"They ask you about the spoils (of war),
Say, 'The spoils belong to Allah and the Messenger.
Therefore, have fear of Allah, and set things right between you.
Obey Allah and His Messenger, if you are believers.'
Indeed the believers are those whose hearts quake at the mention of Allah,
and when His verses are recited to them it increased them in faith.
They are those who put their trust in their Lord.
Those who pray steadfastly, and spend of that which We have provided them,
Those are, in truth, the believers.
They shall have degrees with their Lord and forgiveness, and a generous provision."
Koran 8:1-4

After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received the new Revelation he appointed Abdullah, Ka'bs son to take charge of the spoils.

It was now time to set off on the return journey to Medina and so the Companions, together with their prisoners, made ready. But before they set off, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), knowing that his followers who had remained behind in Medina would be anxious for news of them, sent Abdullah, Rawaha's son on ahead of them to Medina and Zaid to its suburbs to convey the news of their blessed victory.

THE TREATMENT OF PRISONERS

Before Islam, when feuding Arabs were taken captive, they knew they could expect little or no mercy from their captors. When the unbelievers learned that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had given instructions that they should be bound but treated well, they were surprised and heartened still further upon learning that they were not to go hungry but to share their captors' food.

Amongst the prisoners were several members of the Prophet's own family including Suhail, the chief of Amir, cousin and former brother-in-law of Lady Swaydah, the Prophet's wife. Other family members were the Prophet's uncle Abbas, who inclined to Islam, but feared that if the Koraysh learned about his inclination they would refuse to repay the vast sums of money owed to him. Then, there was Abd Al As, husband of the Prophet's daughter, Lady Zaynab, with two of his cousins, Nawfal and Akil, who were also nephews of Abbas.

Earlier on that day Musab discovered that his brother Abu Aziz had been taken captive by one of the Ansar. When he saw him, he turned to the Ansar saying, "Bind him well, his mother is rich and she might be prepared to pay handsomely for him!" When Abu Aziz heard his brother's remark he exclaimed, "Brother, is this how you speak of me to others?" Musab replied, "He is my brother in your stead." Musab proved to be right, his mother offered 4,000 dirhams for her son's release. However, Abu Aziz never forgot how well the Ansar treated him and would often speak of it in the years to come.

That night as the Companions prepared themselves to sleep, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was restless. He disliked the thought of his uncle being bound so he sent word for him to be untied.

NADR AND UKBA

Amongst their captives, the Companions succeeded in taking two of their most hostile enemies -- Nadr, from the tribe of Ad Dharr and Ukba, from the tribe of Shams.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) contemplated on whether or not to let them live, for he knew that if they were to remain alive they would, no doubt continue to incite further hostilities against them. However, there was the chance that the events of the encounter had caused them to reflect and thereby convert to Islam. With this in mind, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) patiently decided to observe their attitude and actions before taking any further steps.

By the time they had reached their first halt, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had chance to assess Nadr and Ukba and found them both as resolute as they had always been. Nothing had changed, so he ordered Ali to put Nadr to death and an Ansar to put Ukba to death.

Three days before reaching Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) halted his army and divided the prisoners and spoils of war between them so that each Companion received an equal share.

REACTIONS IN MEDINA

When Zaid and Abdullah reached Medina, the news of the Prophet's victory spread like wild-fire throughout the City, whereupon the Muslims rejoiced and gave thanks to Allah.

Zaid now made his way to Afra's house to break the news that her two sons Awf and Muawwidh had both been martyred at Badr. It was indeed a great loss for Afra, but deep down she knew that her sons had been honored with the death of martyrdom.

From Afra's house, Zaid visited Haritha's mother and told her that her son had been one of the first to be mortally wounded at the onset of the hostilities and had died. A

few days after the Prophet's return, Haritha's mother went to him and asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), tell me about Haritha. If he is in Paradise I can endure it with patience, but if not I shall weep." The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) compassionately consoled her with the words, "O mother of Haritha, there are many ranks in Paradise and your son has achieved the best -- Firdous!" The heart of Haritha's mother was now at rest, and she gave thanks to Allah, she could not have wished for more than this for her beloved son.

As for the hypocrites and Jewish tribes of Nadir, Krayzah, and Kaynuka, their hopes were dashed. All had hoped for the destruction of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and his followers so that their way of life might return to how it had been before his arrival in Medina.

KA'B, THE SON OF ASHRAF

Such was the disregard for their faith, that many Jews had taken to marrying pagan Arabs, even though Judaism forbade it. Ka'b, Ashraf's son had been born of a Jewish mother and an idol worshipping father from the tribe of Tayy but on account of his mother being a Jewess, the Jews accepted him as one of their own into her tribe of Nadir.

Ka'b was wealthy and known for his poetry, and over the years had become an influential Nadir tribesman. When he heard the news of the Koraysh defeat, with the demise of so many of its chieftains, he could not accept it and his tongue revealed his innermost thoughts as he exclaimed, "By Allah, if Muhammad has killed these, can the depths of the earth be better than its surface!" Ka'b could not accept the news to be true so he questioned those whom he knew to be reliable, but to his dismay all confirmed the same account.

Despondent yet angered, Ka'b rode off for Mecca with the intention of inciting the Koraysh to revenge themselves by riding against the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) again, but this time to fight him in Yathrib. To add fuel to the fire he composed an impassioned poem in honor of the lamented Koraysh chieftains and their fallen tribesmen, which he knew would kindle the emotions of everyone in Mecca.

CHAPTER 58

THE DEATH OF LADY RUKIYAH, may Allah be pleased with her

Although it was a time for great elation in Medina, it was also a time for great sorrow. Shortly before the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) left for Badr, his daughter, Lady Rukiyah, had been taken seriously ill. Her illness has been of such great concern to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) that he had instructed her husband Othman to stay at her side and not to accompany them to Badr. Lady Rukiyah's illness proved terminal and on the very day Zaid and Abdullah brought news of the glorious victory, Othman and Osama buried her, may Allah be pleased with her.

One of the first things the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) did upon his return was to visit her grave. Lady Fatima, the youngest daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) was very upset by the loss of her sister and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) took her to visit the tomb. As they approached the grave Lady Fatima could not withhold her sorrow and many tears rolled down her cheek

whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) comforted her and dried away her tears with his cloak.

There had been a misunderstanding over the Prophet's instruction regarding the extent of expressing one's bereavement. Omar had heard someone weeping for the martyred of Badr and then again for Lady Rukiyah and spoken harshly to them. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of Omar's harsh words, he told him it was all right to let them weep, for what comes from the heart and from the eyes is from Allah and His Mercy. He explained that it was only the excess of the hand and tongue which was forbidden because they are the prompts of satan, the stone and cursed. By this he referred to the pagan custom where mourners would beat their chest, dig their nails into their cheeks, and scream in an uncontrollable manner.

CHAPTER 59

THE ARRIVAL OF THE PRISONERS

The Koraysh prisoners arrived in Medina the day after Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). They had been well cared for and the attitude of the Muslims towards them gave the Koraysh a chance to experience Islam in action. Not only had they been treated unexpectedly well, but they could not help but observe the considerate Islamic behavior of Muslims toward one another that had succeeded in breaking down what would have appeared to other Arabs as impregnable tribal differences and barriers.

THE RANSOM OF SUHAYL

Suhayl, Lady Swaydah's cousin and former brother-in-law was confined in the house of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as was Al As, the husband of Lady Zaynab, the Prophet's daughter.

When Suhayl arrived, Lady Swaydah was not at home, she had been to visit Afra whose sons had been martyred, so upon her return she was taken by surprise to find him sitting in the corner of a room in her apartment with his hands bound.

When Suhayl's tribesmen learned of his capture they made haste to Medina to negotiate his release, as he was considered by many to be the most able to lead the tribe of Amir.

Suhayl was Malik, the son of Al Dukhshum's captive, and so it was with him that the ransom was negotiated. The amount was agreed upon, however Suhayl's tribesmen had not brought the ransom with them, so he permitted Suhayl to return with them to raise the sum and left Mikraz, Haf's son behind as surety until their return.

THE RANSOM OF ABBAS

Abbas was a well-built man yet he had been taken captive by Abu'l Yassar who was of slight build. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked how he managed to capture him, Abdu'l Yassar told him that a man, the like of which he had neither seen before or after, had helped him, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed him that the man was none other than an angel sent for that purpose.

When Abbas was brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) he was asked, "You are a rich man, why don't you ransom yourself Abbas, and your nephews, Akil and Nawfal as well as Utba, Amr's son?" Abbas replied, "My tribesmen coerced me into joining them." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) answered, "Allah knows best. However, it would appear you have acted against us, therefore a ransom is due."

As part of the spoils of war Abbas had been relieved of twenty pieces of gold, so he reminded the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) of them telling him to use that as his ransom. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) heard this he replied, "Allah has taken this away from you and given it to us." Abbas insisted, "I have no money!" whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked, "Where then is the money you left with Umm Fadl, Harith's daughter when you left Mecca?"

Abbas was completely taken aback and exclaimed, "None except Umm Fadl knew of this -- now I know you have been sent with the truth!" whereupon Abbas ransomed himself, his nephews, and Utba.

CHAPTER 60

THE RETURN OF THE KORAYSH

The first people to reach Mecca with the news of the Koraysh defeat were Al Haysuman and Abdullah, Al Khuzai's son, who bewailed the fact that so many of their chieftains had fallen on the battlefield of Badr.

In the large tent of Zamzam, the converts Abu Rafi, the former slave of Abbas freed by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and Abbas' wife, Umm Fadl sat sharpening their arrows. They had both been overjoyed to hear the news of the Prophet's victory, however they felt it was more prudent to restrain their happiness.

As they sharpened the arrows, Abu Lahab, who had not taken part in the encounter but sent Al As in his place, entered. His face looked as black as thunder as he sat himself down at the other end of the tent with his back toward Abu Rafi.

Not long after, Abu Lahab heard some others in the tent saying, "Abu Sufyan, Al Harith's son has returned," whereupon he looked up, saw his nephew and called him. A small crowd gathered around the two as Abu Sufyan told his uncle, "The facts are that the Koraysh met our enemy and turned their backs. They put us to flight taking prisoners as they pleased, I cannot blame our tribesmen because they faced not only them, but men wearing white robes riding piebald horses, who were between heaven and earth. They spared nothing and no one had a chance."

When Umm Fadl and Abu Rafi heard the news of the men in white riding between heaven and earth, they could no longer contain their happiness and Abu Rafi exclaimed for all to hear, "They were angels!"

THE DEATH OF ABU LAHAB

Abu Rafi's outburst was more than Abu Lahab could bear, in a raging fury he forced Abu Rafi, who was frail, to the ground and struck him over and over again. Umm Fadl grabbed hold of a tent pole that lay nearby and with all her might hit her brother-in-

law's head with it crying out. "Do you think that you can abuse him just because Abbas is away!" She wounded him so severely that his head was split open and laid bare part of his skull. The wound was never to heal, it turned septic and its poison spread rapidly through his entire body erupting into open pustules that caused his death within the week.

When he died, his family, fearing that they might be afflicted with disease -- for they feared the plague and his condition resembled it -- were hesitant to bury him and so they left his decaying body decomposing in his home for two or three nights.

It was only when someone rebuked them strongly saying, "It is disgraceful, you should be ashamed of yourselves to leave your father to rot in his house and not bury him from the sight of men!" that they did something. With great reluctance and from a safe distance, his sons threw water over his body, then removed his corpse and left it by a wall on a high piece of ground outside Mecca and threw stones over it until it was completely covered.

CHAPTER 61 THREE RESOLUTIONS

As the fragmented Koraysh army returned home, the extent of their unexpected and devastating loss became apparent to the Koraysh. Each day, the Koraysh waited anxiously for their kinsmen to return or learn from others whether they knew if their kinsmen were alive, dead or taken captive.

It was feared, by the remaining Koraysh hierarchy, that the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) would soon learn that the people of Mecca were deeply affected by their defeat and grief-stricken, so a meeting was convened in the House of Assembly.

It was proposed that none should make an open issue of their grief and in an effort to make the matter appear light, the council of chieftains agreed that the Koraysh must delay sending the ransom money to free their kinsmen. As a matter of bravado in support of this resolution, Amr's father shouted out, "Must I lose twice! They have killed Hanzalah, now I must pay for the ransom of Amr! Let him stay with them, they can keep him as long as they wish!"

During the meeting it was also agreed that the profit from the sale of the caravan's merchandise would be spent on rebuilding their army. The consensus was that it should be larger, better equipped, and more powerful than ever before and from now on their women folk should accompany into battle and encourage them. It was also agreed to send messages to all their allies throughout the length and breadth of Arabia, explaining why, in their opinion, they should unite with them against the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

THE BREAKING OF THE RESOLUTION

For the majority of Koraysh tribesmen, the matter to delay sending the ransom for their loved ones proved too difficult, so they broke the resolution and sent fellow tribesmen to Medina to secure their release.

JUBAIR, SON OF MUTIM

Jubair, Mutim's son had been sent to Medina to ransom his cousin and two tribal allies. Before and after meeting with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Jubair had a chance to wander around Medina where he saw the small community of Muslims going about their daily business, sharing and caring for each other in a way he had neither seen nor yet experienced before. There was an air of unity, a sense of tranquility, devotion to Allah, and great love for His Messenger everywhere he went.

When he met the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he told him why he had come to Medina, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke with soft words and told him that if his father had been alive and come to ransom them he would not have accepted it, rather he would have released them without ransom.

As the daylight faded and evening approached, Jubair watched the believers make their way to the Mosque to offer the Maghrib prayer. Jubair felt drawn to the Mosque but did not enter though listened to the prayers from outside.

That evening, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) recited the chapter "The Mount" which warns at it's beginning of the Day of Judgement, its consequences, and the punishment of the Fires of Hell for those who belie it. The chapter then expounds the delights of Paradise with its serenity and rich, unending rewards. He heard how Allah challenges mankind with His ability to create and then draws attention to mankind's inability to do so.

"Or, were they created out of nothing?
Or, were they their own creators?
Or, did they create the heavens and the earth?
No their belief is not certain!
Or, are the treasures of your Lord in their keeping?
Or, are they the controllers?"
Koran 52:35-37

"So leave them till they encounter their Day in which they shall be thunderstruck.
The Day when their guile shall not relieve them a thing, and they shall not be helped.
For the harmdoers there is indeed, a punishment
before that, but most of them do not know.
And be patient under the Judgement of your Lord, surely, you are before Our Eyes.
And exalt with the praise of your Lord when you arise, and exalt Him in the night
and at the declining of the stars."
Koran 52:45-49

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reached the words:
"And be patient under the Judgement of your Lord, surely, you are before Our Eyes.
And exalt with the praise of your Lord when you arise, and exalt Him in the night
and at the declining of the stars."

Jubair said later that it was then that the light of belief was sown in his heart. However, he put it to one side for the time being, as the grief he felt for his beloved uncle Tuaymah, killed by Hamza during Badr consumed him for there was, in his opinion a matter of honor to be settled. He felt obliged to engage Hamza in mortal combat for his uncle's death, and so he distanced himself from his inclination and returned to Mecca with his cousin and the two allies.

THE RANSOM OF WALEED

Waleed, the chieftain of the Makhzum had been killed on the battlefield and his youngest son, also by the same name, had been taken captive and given to Abdullah, Jahsh's son and some of the other companions for ransom.

Waleed had two other brothers, one full blood and the other half, both of whom had made their journey to Medina to pay for his release. When his half brother, Khalid learned that Abdullah would accept no less than four thousand dirhams, he was unwilling to pay such a large amount. Hisham, his full blood brother rebuked him, saying, "Indeed, he is not your mother's son!" Thereupon, Khalid felt ashamed and agreed to pay the amount. However, before the final agreement was reached, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) advised Abdullah that he should also ask for their deceased father's coat of armor and weapons. When Khalid learned of this, he expressed yet again his reluctance to part with his father's possessions, but Hisham managed to convince him to part with them and so the armor and weapons were brought from Mecca so they could not longer be used against the Muslims.

The ransom was now paid in full and the three brothers left for Mecca. They had traveled for quite a while when they felt the need to rest. As the brothers took their rest, Waleed slipped away and returned to Medina where he went directly to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and embraced Islam. When his brothers awoke, they searched for Waleed, then decided to follow his tracks which led them back to Medina.

Upon reaching the City they searched for their brother and upon finding him, Khalid who was extremely angry, demanded to know why he had let them pay the ransom and surrender their father's armor when all the time he intended to convert to Islam and stay with the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) in Medina. Waleed's answer was direct, he told them that he had no wish for people to think that he had converted in order not to pay the ransom; it was a matter of honor.

Unwisely, Waleed decided to return to Mecca with his brothers in order to bring his belongings to Medina. As soon as he arrived home he was imprisoned and placed under heavy guard by Ikrima, Abu Jahl's son, whose uncles Ayyah and Salamah had embraced Islam.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) learned of Waleed's pitiful condition, he included him in his supplications along with the other Muslims who were unfortunate enough to be incarcerated in Mecca.

UMAIR AND HIS SON

The hearts of Ubay from the tribe of Jumah, his nephews Safwan and Umair, as well as many others, had not softened toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and his Message. Ubay had lost his brother Ummaya as well as his close friend Ukba during the hostilities. This grief, coupled with the humiliation of loosing the encounter in which their numbers far exceeded those of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) only accentuated their hatred and bitterness.

Umair felt further humiliated as he was already heavily in debt and now that his son had been taken captive he expected to have to pay a ransom. Umair's very being was

consumed with resentment and bitterness to the extent that he was prepared to die attempting to kill the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). However, the matter of his debt restrained him as he did not wish to leave his family destitute.

Safwan, the next-in-succession to the tribe of Jumah since the killing of his father, spoke in secrecy to Umair. He told him that, if as he had said, that the only thing holding him back from riding out to kill the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was the fact that he did not want to leave his family destitute, he would bear the debt for him, and in the event that anything should happen to him, he would look after his family. Umair was agreeable and both Safwan and Umair swore never to disclose their arrangement to anyone until after the event.

Umair returned home to prepare himself for the journey and as he sharpened his sword, he smeared its blade with poison and carefully placed it in its sheath then told his family he was going to Medina to ransom his son.

When he reached Medina, he found the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sitting in the Mosque. Omar immediately suspected Umair's intentions when he saw him wearing his sword and told some of the Ansar, who were nearby, to go and sit close to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and to be on their guard as he felt Umair was their enemy; a person not to be trusted.

Umair concealed his intention under the guise of politeness and greeted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in the way Arabs usually greeted one another. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) responded saying, "Allah has given us a better greeting than this Umair, it is 'Peace' which is the greeting of the people of Paradise."

Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired about the nature of his visit, so Umair told him that he had come on account of his son, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked why he wore a sword. Unexpectedly, Umair cursed the sword, exclaiming, "Have they done us any good!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke gently to him, asking, "Tell me the truth Umair, why have you come?" Umair repeated his reason, then much to his astonishment, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed him verbatim of the conversation he and Safwan exchanged in Mecca. Umair cried out, "Who has told you this, by Allah there were only two of us present -- no one else!" Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that Gabriel had informed him of their conversation.

Umair was in awe of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and said, "We called you a liar when you brought us news of Paradise, praise be to Allah who has guided me to Islam. I bear witness that there is no god except Allah and that Muhammad is His Messenger." It was a time for thanksgiving and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked his Companions to teach their new brother in Islam and to free his son.

The light of guidance had certainly shed itself upon Umair. Sometime after, when he was more knowledgeable of Islam, he asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for his permission to return to Mecca so that he might tell his family and friends. And so it was that Umair was blessed to guide many of his tribe to Islam. However, his one-time best friend, Safwan refused to have anything to do with him and viewed him as a traitor.

Such was the love of Umair for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he could not bear to be away from him for long and so several months after his return to Mecca, he and his family migrated to Medina.

AL AS, HUSBAND OF LADY ZAYNAB

Lady Zaynab had married Al As before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been given the command to preach and as a wedding gift her mother, Lady Khadijah gave her daughter a most beautiful necklace, her favorite necklace, one which she wore often. Much to Lady Zaynab's dismay Al As had not been among the early converts to Islam and their relationship had not been as close as it had once been.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) migrated to Medina, Al As refused to allow her to migrate with her sisters and this had caused her to grieve. Then in more recent days, their relationship had become even more strained when Al As sided with his fellow tribesmen to fight against her beloved father, and now Al As found himself a captive in Medina.

When Lady Zaynab learned of her husband's capture, she sent the necklace as part of the ransom to secure his release. However, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caught sight of the necklace, he immediately recognized it as having once belonged to his dearly beloved wife Khadijah and tears of loving remembrance swelled up and flowed from his eyes, then gently ran down his noble face as he softly said to his Companions, "If you would like to let her have her captive husband and return the ransom you may do so." The Companions realized the significance of the necklace and were overcome with emotion, whereupon the necklace, together with the ransom were returned to Al As and he was free to return to Mecca.

When Al As returned to Mecca, he told Lady Zaynab that she and their young daughter were free to join her father. Lady Zaynab was delighted and started to make preparations for the journey. One day Hind, Utba's daughter happened to see her packing and asked whether she was leaving for Medina. Lady Zaynab was unsure whether to trust Hind, so she replied with an evasive answer even though Hind offered to give her money as well as provisions for the journey.

A month had now passed since the encounter and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Zaid, Haritha's son and a companion to journey to the valley of Yajaj, which lies eight miles out of Mecca, and wait for her there, then accompany them onto Medina.

The time to leave had arrived, and so her brother-in-law, Kinanah brought her canopied camel for her and little Umama to ride and led the way out of Mecca with his bow in hand.

When the Koraysh learned of Lady Zaynab's departure, a party of them rode after her and finally caught up with them at a place called Dhu Tuwa. Habbar, Al Aswad's son was the first to approach and threatened her menacingly with his lance as she rode the camel. Kinanah armed his bow and cried out, "By Allah, if any one of you comes near us I will put an arrow through him!" The Koraysh knew Kinanah was in earnest and withdrew. Shortly afterwards, Abu Sufyan arrived with several other Koraysh chieftains and asked him to disarm his bow so that they might talk things over, and Kinanah agreed.

Abu Sufyan rebuked Kinanah for taking Lady Zaynab out of Mecca in broad daylight for all to see and asked why he had done such a thing. "Didn't he know their predicament and might it not be taken as a further sign of humiliation and weakness on their part?" he asked him. Abu Sufyan told him that they did not want to keep her, however she must return until things died down and then leave discreetly to join her father.

And so, Lady Zaynab and Kinanah returned to Mecca and waited until the time was right, then set off once again on their journey to Yajaj where arrangements had once more been made for Zaid and his companion to accompany the holy family on to Medina.

THE ELDERLY ANSAR AND ABU SUFYAN

In an attempt not to lose face among the Koraysh, Abu Sufyan continued to refuse to send money for his son's ransom. However, during the pilgrimage season of the following year, Abu Sufyan seized an elderly Ansar on his return to Medina from his pilgrimage and sent word that he would not release him until Amr was released. It was not an honorable act to capture one so elderly and without hesitation the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed to the exchange and both were reunited with their families.

CHAPTER 62 THE MARRIAGE OF LADY FATIMA

In the second year after the Migration, now referred to as Hijra 2, during the month of Dhul Hija, which equates approximately to the Christian era 623/624, Lady Fatima, daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Lady Khadijah, was married.

Lady Fatima was now eighteen years of age and her father had made mention to his family that he thought Ali, who had been raised with her for many years, but now lived in a very modest house near the Mosque, would be the most suitable husband for her. However, the issue had not been settled.

Lady Fatima was not without suitors. Abu Bakr and Omar had both offered their hand in marriage but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) deferred them saying he would wait until Allah clarified the matter.

A few weeks after the Encounter at Badr, in which Ali had fought so bravely, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) suggested that he might like to ask for Lady Fatima's hand in marriage. Ali had been too shy to come forward before now as he was very poor and did not consider himself to be in a position to offer Lady Fatima a worthy dowry and drew the Prophet's attention to it. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was touched by Ali's humility and asked, referring to a piece of armor he had won at the Encounter of Badr, "What have you done with 'Huttiyah'?" Ali replied that he still owned it, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said it was sufficient for his daughter's dowry.

Ali's worldly possessions were indeed meager; all he owned was the piece of armor, a sheep skin, and an old piece of Yemeni cloth that he used as a sheet. However, now that he had received encouragement from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he asked Lady Fatima for her hand in marriage in the presence of her father. It was customary in those days for brides-to-be not to answer her suitor if she was agreeable to a proposal, so Lady Fatima remained silent and Ali knew that his proposal had been accepted.

Up until now, several schools of Islamic jurisprudence consider a prospective bride's shy silence as an indication of acceptance to a proposal.

A HOME FOR THE BLESSED COUPLE

One of the Ansar, Haritha, Numan's son, owned many houses and had already given several of them to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who accepted them graciously and then gave them to those in need. Lady Fatima knew of Haritha's generosity, and asked her father if it might be possible for him to also give them one. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was reluctant to press upon Haritha's generosity, however when Haritha learned of Lady Fatima's forthcoming marriage, he went immediately to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "Whatever I have is yours. By Allah, whenever you accept any of my houses, it gives me greater pleasure than if I still owned them." Haritha's generous offer was accepted and Ali with his bride-to-be now had a home awaiting them.

As a wedding gift, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave his daughter and Ali a bed woven from Arkanda fiber. A leather mattress stuffed with soft palm leaves, a water-skin, two sets of mill stones with which to grind grain, and two earthenware pitchers.

When the day of the marriage arrived, Lady Ayesha and Lady Umm Salama went together to prepare the house for the young couple and soft sand was brought then strewn over the floor. In celebration of the occasion, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) requested that a ram be sacrificed and prepared in readiness for their guests. Grain, dates, figs, and perfumed water were also brought to feed their guests. It was a very happy occasion and one that was well remembered for a long time after.

As the celebration drew to a close, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arose and left whereupon the guests realized that it was also time for them to leave, but just before he departed he spoke to Ali telling him not to approach Lady Fatima until after he returned. The only person to remain behind was the faithful, long time family maid, Umm Ayman, who had consoled the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) upon the death of his mother nearly fifty years before, and she busied herself with tidying up after the guests had left.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned, Umm Ayman answered the door and he asked, "Where is my brother?" Umm Ayman was somewhat surprised and inquired, using an expression common to Arabs of that time, "May my father and mother be your ransom! O Messenger of Allah, who is your brother?" Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Ali, the son of Abu Talib." The reply puzzled Umm Ayman and she asked: "How can he be your brother, when you have just married your daughter to him?" "It is as I said," replied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and asked her to bring some water.

Upon hearing the Prophet's voice, Ali entered the room and sat down in front of him. Umm Ayman returned and gave the water to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), whereupon he took a mouthful of water then returned it to the vessel. Then he dipped his hand into the vessel and sprinkled some water over Ali's shoulders, chest, and arms. Then he called for his daughter and did the same as he supplicated for blessings upon them both and upon their children.

CHAPTER 63

“WHEN YOU ARE TOUCHED WITH GOOD FORTUNE, THEY GRIEVE”

The Jews of Medina had entered into a binding agreement with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and through it were afforded many benefits. However, an integral part of the agreement was that they would neither ally, nor assist the unbelievers against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

On the surface, with the exception of a few minor taunts, the Jews and the hypocrites appeared to tolerate the Muslims. However, deep-rooted resentment festered and the Jews yearned even more for the return of the old days even though they had been beholden to idolatrous Arabs.

When the news of the Prophet's victory over the Koraysh at Badr reached Medina, the Jews, hypocrites, and those who remained pagan were unable to conceal their great disappointment. The most disappointed were those from the Jewish tribes of Kaynuka, domiciled in the City of Medina, together with their cousins from the tribes of Krayzah and Nadir that lived on the outskirts; all had hoped that the Koraysh would rid them of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his followers.

It was during this time that Allah sent down the following verse which records and warned the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his followers of these hidden feelings:

"Believers, do not take intimates with other than your own.
They spare nothing to ruin you, they yearn for you to suffer.
Hatred has already shown itself from their mouths,
and what their chests conceal is yet greater.
Indeed, We have made clear to you the signs, if you understand.
There you are loving them, and they do not love you.
You believe in the entire Book.
When they meet you they say, 'We believe.'
But when alone, they bite their finger-tips at you out of rage.
Say, 'Die in your rage! Allah has knowledge of what is in your chests.'
Koran 3:118-19

Allah also drew the attention of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his followers to the following, saying:

"When you are touched with good fortune, they grieve,
but when evil befalls you, they rejoice.
If you are patient and cautious, their guile will never harm you.
Allah encompasses what they do."

Koran 3:120

Allah also sent down verses that permitted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to counteract acts of treachery with justice and instructions as to how his adversaries should be treated if they should incline to peace, saying:

"If you fear treachery from any of your allies, you can dissolve with them equally. Allah does not love the treacherous."
Koran 8:58

"If they incline to peace, incline to it also, and put your trust in Allah. Surely, He is the Hearing, the Knowing."
Koran 8:61

In the meantime, much to the delight of the Koraysh, they realized they had unexpected allies in Medina, for each time a Jewish caravan arrived in Mecca, they brought news of the Prophet's movements. And so it was that the Jews began to break the treaty, just as the waves of the sea gently erode a mound of sand upon the shore until none remains.

CHAPTER 64

THE MARKET PLACE OF THE TRIBE OF KAYNUKA

Not long after the Prophet's return from Badr, he went to the Jewish market place of the Kaynuka which was also frequented by Muslims. He hoped the widely reported miraculous events of Badr might have touched the hearts of the Jews and caused them to reflect.

As he walked through the market place he invited them to Islam and entreated them not to let the anger of Allah come upon them as it had just done upon the Koraysh. However, his invitation fell on deaf ears and someone called out in defiance, "Muhammad, do not be fooled by those circumstances. You fought against men who did not know how to fight; that is why you were able to get the better of them! By Allah, if you make war on us you will soon know that we are a force to reckon with!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not respond and returned home.

THE INSULT OF THE GOLDSMITH

A few days following the rejection, a Muslim lady made her way to the same market and was insulted in a despicable manner by a goldsmith. An Ansar happened to overhear the insult and came to her assistance. Sharp words were exchanged which ultimately led to blows during which the goldsmith fell and was accidentally killed.

Once again the Jews who had agreed that such matters were to be brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to be resolved, threw the agreement to the wind and sent word to their former Arab allies who had not converted, from the tribes of Aws and Khazraj, to rise up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with them.

THE FORTRESSES OF KAYNUKA

Many years before, not far from the market place the Jews had built fortresses to protect themselves in times of trouble. These fortresses were soon to become a hive

of activity, with provisions and arms being delivered by all possible available means. No sooner had the supplies been delivered than the Jews barricaded themselves inside and waited for their allies to arrive. The tribesmen of the Kaynuka numbered twice that of the Muslims who fought at Badr and expected their force to swell still further as soon as their pagan allies learned of their uprising.

When news of the Kaynuka's intent reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he gathered his men, surrounded the fortresses, and then sent word to them demanding an unconditional surrender.

During this time the call to rise up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reached the ears of the unbelieving chieftains of the Khazrajite tribe. Ibn Ubayy, one of its chieftains, was inclined to go their assistance, however another chieftain, Ubadah reminded him that the pact they had made with the Jews in years gone by was no longer existent. Ubadah shrewdly observed and drew ibn Ubayy's attention to the fact that the Jews had broken their pact with them in preference to one made with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who they now intended to fight.

Two weeks passed, and the tribesmen of Kaynuka remained barricaded in their fortresses waiting for their allies to come to their aid. As each day came and went their hopes started to dwindle; they had to face the fact that they would either have to engage the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions alone or accept the unconditional terms of surrender.

SURRENDER AND EXPULSION

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) waited for the Kaynuka's answer, ibn Ubayy sought him out in a belligerent manner. When he found him he demanded, "Muhammad, treat my allies well!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) declined to comment and turned away from him, whereupon ibn Ubayy seized him by the neck of his coat of mail. The expression of the Prophet's face changed and he asked him to release his hold. Ibn Ubayy swore that he would never do so until he received a promise from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), then he demanded to know whether it was his intent to kill the Jews. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed him that it had never been his intent, rather it was to spare their lives. However, he informed him that from now on they were to be banished and their possessions confiscated. He then told ibn Ubayy that if he desired to do so, he could escort them to wherever they wished to relocate. Ibn Ubayy accepted the Prophet's decision and sent word to his allies, informing them of their fate and then escorted them to a Jewish settlement at Wadi Al Kura, which lies some distance away to the north of Medina.

As for their confiscated possessions, they were to greatly enrich the Muslim armory, as the Kaynuka were highly skilled smiths and much needed coats of mail and weapons were among the spoils.

KA'B, THE SON OF ASHRAF

The Jew, Ka'b, Ashraf's son, had not only used his wealth against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but more recently composed a poem that served to stir and fuel the emotions of the Koraysh, now wrote another poem as he rode on his cloud of infamy in Mecca. This time however, it was not in praise of the Koraysh, it was a poem

written in extremely poor taste that not only degraded Muslim women but insulted them.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard of Ka'bs disgraceful conduct he ordered that if any Muslim should come across him, that he should be killed. Ka'b however, had not returned to Medina, he married and chose to live in a fortress near Wadi Mudhanib to the south of the City near a lava plain.

Silkan, Salam's son was the half brother of Ka'b and had converted to Islam. When he learned of the Prophet's order he, together with Abbad Bishr's son and Al Harith, Aus' son, who were joined by Abu Abs, Jabir's son conspired together to bring about the downfall of Ka'b.

The plan they devised was that Silkan should go to the fortress and entice Ka'b to come out while the others concealed themselves a distance away. With this intent, one moonlight night Silkan and his companions made their way to Wadi Mudhanib and just before they reached the fortress, Silkan's companions took up their positions whilst he went on alone to the fortress. Upon reaching the fortress, Silkan discovered the doors were locked, so he called out to his half brother, whereupon Ka'b peered out from behind the fortifications and upon realizing it was his brother, went out to meet him. Silkan told him that there were certain matters with which he wished to speak about in private away from the ears of the fortress, and so together they went for a stroll under the moonlit sky. When they reached the place where his Companions had concealed themselves, Silkan cried out, "Kill the enemy of Allah!" The Companions leapt upon Ka'b and accomplished their mission and so Ka'b never lived to write another poem.

During the attack, Al Harith was wounded and lost a lot of blood, however, when they reached Medina they went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him of their success. Upon seeing Al Harith's wound, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) massaged some of his saliva upon the wound and by the permission of Allah it healed immediately.

News of Ka'bs death spread rapidly throughout Medina and those whose intentions were to rid themselves of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers were, for the time being hesitant to take further action.

CHAPTER 65

THE OATH OF ABU SUFYAN

When news of Ka'bs death reached Mecca, Abu Sufyan was even more determined to take revenge and swore an oath that he would not bathe until he had led an attack against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). In a state of fury he mustered two hundred men from the remnants of the Koraysh army and left Mecca by way of Najd. After many days travel they reached a waterhole in the vicinity of Mount Thayb, which lies outside Medina and there he ordered his army to strike camp.

As darkness approached and the Muslims were at prayer in the Mosque, Abu Sufyan ventured into Medina and made straight for the house of a Jew named Huyay, Akhtab's son, and announced himself as he knocked at the door. Huyay took fright and refused to open the door, so Abu Sufyan made his way to the house of Shalom,

Mishkam's son who was not only a chief, but also the banker of the Jewish tribe of Nadir. This time he was made most welcome, Shalom invited him into his home, entertained him with food and wine for he guessed the reason for Abu Sufyan's visit and was eager to help him achieve his goal.

Later that same night, Abu Sufyan returned to his camp and the next day he sent a party of his men onto the outskirts of Medina. When they reached Al Urayd, a suburb of Medina, they found an Ansar and his companion tending to young palm trees, whereupon they attacked and killed them, then torched the newly planted grove and returned to camp. When news of the martyred Companions reached the ears of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he and his Companions rode out in pursuit of the aggressors. However, it was to no avail because upon the marauder's return, Abu Sufyan ordered his men to break camp. In their haste to break camp they left some of their provisions and baggage behind, for memories of Badr were still very fresh upon their minds and they did not wish to face the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) again.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions pursued Abu Sufyan until they reached a place called Karkaratu'l Kudr but the Koraysh were long gone and it was thought pointless to continue any further, so they returned to Medina.

THE PROPHET'S COMPASSION AND MERCY TO A BEDOUIN

Allah honors the rank and status of our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying:

"We have not sent you (Prophet Muhammad)
except as a mercy to all the worlds."
Koran 21:107

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never, ever refused or even hesitated to give anything away. Even when he had nothing at all to give, he would tell the asker to go to one of the merchants in the town, buy whatever he needed, and have it charged to his account. As soon as he was in a position to settle the matter he did so.

One day as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was with his Companions a Bedouin came to him and asked for a gift. As was his custom, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled and gave the Bedouin a gift and inquired, "Have I been good to you?" The Bedouin abruptly replied, "No, you have not, you have not done well." The Companions were outraged by the Bedouin's lack of manners and were about to seize him, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gestured to them to leave him alone, and went into his apartment.

A few minutes later, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked the Bedouin to join him, added more to his gift, and asked the same question. The Bedouin was delighted with the gift and replied, "Yes, may Allah repay you and your family well!"

Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said to the Bedouin, "What you said angered my Companions. If you like, say to them what you just said in my presence so that whatever is held against you in their hearts is removed." The Bedouin agreed and returned to them, repeated what he had said to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then left.

A short while after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his Companions and said, "The example of that man and myself is like a man who has a she-camel that bolted from him. But when people chase after it, it only makes her run away still further. Then the owner tells the people to leave him and his she-camel, saying, "I am more compassionate and better to her than you." Then he walks in front of it, takes several clods of dirt, and drives it until it comes and kneels. Then he saddles it and mounts it. If I had let you do what you had a mind when the man spoke, you would have killed him and he would have entered the Fire."

The sincere kindness and mercy of the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), were always present, he never lost his patience. Allah honored His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, by naming him with His Own attributes, the attributes of sincerity, kindness and mercy.

THE END OF THE SECOND YEAR HIJRA

The second year after the migration was drawing to an end. It had been a year of both happiness and sorrow. In it Allah had sent down the order to fight the unbelievers when provoked, and had given victory to the Muslims over them at Badr.

He had also sent down two new obligations. Obligations which were to constitute two of the pillars of Islam; namely, the fast during the month of Ramadan with its obligatory charity of 2.5% of one's lunar annual savings at the end of the month to those deservedly in need.

Regarding the Fast, Allah says:

"Believers, fasting is decreed for you
as it was decreed for those before you, perchance you will be cautious.
(Fast) a certain number of days, but if any one of you is ill
or on a journey let him (fast) a similar number of days later on;
and for those who are unable (to fast),
there is a ransom – the feeing of a needy person.
Whosoever volunteers good, it is good for him;
but to fast is better for you if you but knew.
The month of Ramadan is the month in which the Koran was sent down,
a guidance for people, and clear verses of guidance and the criterion.
Therefore, whoever of you witnesses the month, let him fast.
But he who is ill, or on a journey shall (fast) a similar number (of days) later on.
Allah wants ease for you and does not want hardship for you.
And that you fulfill the number of days and exalt Allah who has guided you
in order that you be thankful."

Koran 2:183-185

and regarding the obligatory charity Allah says:

"The obligatory charity shall be only for the poor and the needy,
and for those who work to collect it, and to influence hearts (to belief),
for ransoming captives, and debtors in the Way of Allah
and the destitute traveler.
It is an obligation from Allah. Allah is Knowing, Wise."
Koran 9:60

The direction of Kibla had been changed from Jerusalem to Mecca and Lady Rukiyah, may Allah be pleased with her, passed away and her youngest sister, Lady Fatima had married Ali.

THE PRINCIPALS OF ISLAM

At some point during those early years after the migration the Angel Gabriel was sent by Allah to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to complete the principals of the Islamic belief.

Omar, Khattab's son related the occasion when he and some of the companions were sitting with the Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) when an unknown inquirer suddenly arrived. Omar described him as having brilliantly white clothes and jet black hair, however there was no sign of traveling whatsoever upon him.

The inquirer sat down in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and their knees touched. He placed his hands on his thighs and asked, "Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), tell me about Islam." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Islam is that you bear witness that there is no god except Allah and that Muhammad is His Messenger, and that you establish the prayer, pay the obligatory charity (2.5% of one's annual lunar savings), fast the month of Ramadan, and make the Pilgrimage to the House (Ka'bah in Mecca) if you can afford it."

The Companions were surprised to hear their visitor confirm the correctness of the Prophet's answer saying, "That is correct." Then the inquirer said, "Tell me about belief (iman)." To this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "It is that you believe in Allah, His Angels, His Books, His Messengers, the Last Day, and that you believe in the Holy Planning. Yet again the inquirer said, "That is correct, now tell me about Perfection (ihsan)." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "It is that you worship Allah as if you are seeing Him, and if you do not see Him, know that He is watching you." And the inquirer confirmed the correctness of the answer.

Then the inquirer asked, "Tell me about the Hour of Judgement." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "He who is being asked knows no more about it than the one who asks." So the inquirer asked, "Then tell me about some of the signs of its approach." To this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied: "The female slave will give birth to her master, and the bare-footed, naked, penniless goat-herders will live arrogantly in high mansions." And the inquirer confirmed the correctness of the answer yet again.

Having asked these questions the inquirer departed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to Omar and asked, "Omar do you know who the inquirer was?" Omar replied, "Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) know best." Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him, "It was Gabriel who came to teach you your Religion."

Further details of these obligatory principals are given at the end of the book.

CHAPTER 66 LADY HAFSAH

Hafsah was the daughter of Omar and among the few who were literate. When Khunays returned from his migration to Abyssinia a few years before, she had married him, however the marriage was destined to be short lived as he had been recently martyred at Badr and it grieved Omar to see his eighteen year old daughter alone.

During the second year Othman, a friend of Omar, had lost his beloved wife Lady Rukiyah, daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so Omar proposed that he might like to marry his daughter. When Othman told Omar that he did not wish to remarry for the time being, he was disappointed and felt somewhat hurt by his answer.

Omar, as is the case of all fathers, was anxious to secure a good marriage for his daughter so he approached another of his dearest friends, Abu Bakr. Abu Bakr's answer was also evasive which really hurt Omar very deeply. He had offered two of his best friends his beloved daughter's hand in marriage, yet neither of them were prepared to accept the proposal.

A little while after, Omar went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him how upset he was at the reluctance of his close friends to marry his daughter. After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had listened to his grievance, he spoke with words of indication saying, "I will show you a better son-in-law than Othman, and I will show him (Othman) a better father-in-law than you." Happiness spread over Omar's face as he realized that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) after the completion of Hafsah's waiting period, would offer her his own hand in marriage; then the second realization dawned upon him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would give another of his daughters, Lady Umm Kulthum to Othman in marriage.

Later, when Omar met Abu Bakr, Abu Bakr told him that the reason he had not accepted his offer was that he had heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquiring about Lady Hafsah and that it was on this account alone that he had been evasive.

After the prescribed four months of the waiting period were concluded, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for Lady Hafsah's hand in marriage, whereupon a room was added on to the Prophet's quarters and the marriage took place. Lady Ayesha was happy to have someone nearer her own age as a companion, whilst Lady Swaydah loved her as if she were her own daughter.

Lady Hafsah was among those who was blessed to learn the entire Koran by heart.

CHAPTER 67

THE REQUEST OF LADY FATIMA

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been given several people who tended to the needs of his household. One might not have realized that those who served were not freemen as they were treated no differently than anyone else in his family and shared the same food. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was always mindful of other peoples' feelings and on this account he never referred to them with the degrading word "slave", rather he respectfully called them his "youths". Some of his youths had already embraced Islam and been freed, however, such was their love

of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his family that not even their freedom would tear them away from serving him, so they chose to remain in his household.

It was now several months into the third year and Lady Fatima and Ali like so many others, struggled hard to make a living. Every day Ali would go to the well, draw water then sell it in the market, whilst Lady Fatima, who was to give birth later that year, would grind grain for the community. There had been a time when her gentle hands had been soft, but now the arduous work of grinding had caused her hands to become callused and rough, and often her skin would crack and bleed.

Neither Lady Fatima nor Ali were of a complaining nature, rather they were grateful to Allah for His blessings, however one day Ali returned home with severe pains in his chest. He had strained himself drawing and carrying water from the well so he asked Lady Fatima to go to her father and ask him to release one of his youths to him.

Lady Fatima was hesitant to make such a request, but eventually she went to her father's house. When she met him, they greeted one another and during the time they spent together, he asked if there was anything special she wanted to say to him. Lady Fatima was overcome by embarrassment and told her father that she had come to give him the greetings and returned home without making the request.

Upon her return, Ali inquired what had happened, so she told him that she had been too shy to ask so they returned together to speak with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

News of Islam had started to spread throughout Arabia and people started to migrate to Medina and so almost every day a new face or two would arrive. Most of the migrants arrived hungry with only the clothes they wore on their back and so they were lodged in a building attached to the Mosque. There was barely enough food to go around as it was. Many were the times that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his family went hungry and would encourage his Companions to share whatever they had with each other saying that one portion of food would suffice two people, and that two portions would suffice four, and so on. When Ali asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for the services of a youth, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him he was unable to do so as it was his intention to raise money through their sale in order to feed the hungry new Muslims. Lady Fatima and Ali understood that the need of the new Muslims was greater than theirs and so they returned home.

SPIRITUAL HELP

Later that night after Lady Fatima and Ali had retired, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to visit them. When he reached their house he knocked at the door and out of politeness, asked permission to enter. After exchanging the greetings, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "Shall I tell you something better than that which you asked of me?" Gabriel has taught me to say ten times after each prayer, 'Exalted is Allah, and then ten times 'Praise be to Allah' followed by 'Allah is Great' ten times; when you go to bed repeat each exaltation thirty-three times."

In the years that followed Ali was heard to say that from that day onward he never failed to exalt Allah after each prayer and at night.

A HOUSE NEARER TO THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Although Lady Fatima's house was not too distant from the Mosque, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wished that his beloved daughter lived nearer to him. When Haritha, a distant relative of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of his wish, he went to him and offered his own home which was much nearer to the Mosque.

The Prophet accepted Haritha's generosity and supplicated for blessings upon him. Not long after, Lady Fatima and Ali moved to their new home and awaited the birth of their first child.

CHAPTER 68

THE CARAVAN TO IRAQ

The Muslims had succeeded to ally themselves with several tribes on the trade routes that lay to the north of Medina. As a result the Koraysh caravans were now forced to journey northwards through the practically waterless and desolate desert known as the Najd, and so it was for this reason the Koraysh caravans had all but ceased to travel northwards during the hot summer months.

As the cooler months of early autumn approached the Koraysh made plans for a northward bound caravan to Iraq. They were anxious on account of their delayed trading to sell their silver ornaments, ingots, and utensils so it was decided that Safwan should lead the richly laden caravan through the Najd, onto Iraq to trade their wares.

One day, an Ansar happened to overhear some Jews mentioning Safwan's caravan and went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to report the matter. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard the news, he appointed Zaid with a hundred horsemen under his command, to ride out to the water hole of Karadah and lay in wait for the caravan. At Karadah, Zaid put Safwan and his men to flight and returned in triumph to Medina with not only the silver merchandise, but camels and several captives.

CHAPTER 69

PRELUDE TO THE ENCOUNTER AT UHUD

During the Encounter at Badr the previous year, each Koraysh tribe had suffered loss of life and so it was not surprising that revenge was always on their mind.

Amongst the Koraysh were two poets who were held in high regard, their names were Amr Jumahi and Musafi. Amr had been taken prisoner at Badr but his family was poor and therefore unable to pay a ransom for his freedom. When the matter was brought to the Prophet's attention he, out of mercy and compassion, released him without a second thought. However, Amr soon forgot the Prophet's generosity and when Safwan offered to pay him to compose provocative verses extolling the merits of the Koraysh and their attempts to route the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he had no qualms and accepted.

Safwan had no doubt that Amr's poem would be a great asset in his effort to persuade new tribes to ally themselves to them and strengthen existing ties when the poem was recited to them. Safwan's assumption was right, his investment proved to be money

well spent and through it he was able to secure his aim as tribes sat mesmerized, inflamed by its words.

The poem was so potent that when the Koraysh womenfolk heard it their emotions ran wild as they took blood curdling oaths swearing to revenge themselves and welcomed the day when the Koraysh would rise up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The foremost amongst the women were Hind, wife of Abu Sufyan and the daughter of Utba who had been killed by Hamza at Badr, together with two other close relatives: Umm Hakim, wife of Ikrima the son of Abu Jahl; also Fatima, Walid's daughter; Barza, daughter of Masood Takafi, chief of Ta'if; Rita the wife of Amr, Al As' son, and Khunas the mother of Mus'ab, Umair's son.

WAHSHI, THE ABYSSINIAN

Tuayma, the uncle of Jubair, had also been killed at Badr by Hamza so Hind, wishing to avenge her father's death, approached Tuayma's Abyssinian slave Wahshi - who was an expert spear thrower and seldom known to miss his target - and promised to buy him his freedom if he killed Hamza during the next encounter.

THE KORAYSH ARMY GROWS

When news of the loss of Safwan's caravan reached Mecca, the Koraysh were more determined than ever to take their revenge, and so preparations of greater intensity were now set in motion. A hundred men from the Thakif and men from the tribe of Kinanah rallied to the side of the Koraysh and so it was that the Koraysh army started to expand.

CHAPTER 70

THE BIRTHS OF AL HASAN & AL HUSAIN

The cooler months of winter in which Ramadan fell that year had arrived and on 15th of Ramadan, Lady Fatima, lovingly known as "The Radiant Blossom" gave birth to a son. Word was taken immediately to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of his grandson's safe arrival whereupon he exalted Allah and made haste to visit his daughter and named his grandson Al Hasan. As Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) held the tiny babe in his arms for the first time, he gently whispered the words of the call to prayer into his ears and thanked Allah for his safe delivery. Just fifty-five days after his birth Lady Fatima conceived again and in the months to come bore another son whose name was Al Husain.

THE LETTER

A day or two after the birth of Al Hasan, a disturbing, urgent letter was delivered to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The letter was from Abbas, the Prophet's uncle who, although he had not as yet converted to Islam and remained in Mecca, held the best interests of his nephew at heart.

Abbas had observed the escalation and build-up of Abu Sufyan's army, together with its increased weaponry and noted that the new allies of the Koraysh were prepared to rise up with Abu Sufyan against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As soon as he learned that the army was about to march, he sent a rider post haste to Medina with the news.

Such was the speed of the rider that he made the regular journey of eleven days in just three, thereby buying the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) valuable time in which to prepare. The letter also informed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of the size of the army that had now reached three thousand strong; each soldier had a camel, seven hundred men had coats of mail, and then there was a cavalry of two hundred horsemen with a spare set of horses. The letter also spoke of their womenfolk's intent to ride out with their men to encourage them as well as their new allies from the tribes of Thakif and Kinanah.

PREPARATIONS

On account of the arrival of the new Muslim migrants to Medina, the army of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was now in the region of a thousand men, and with Abbas' advanced warning, they had a week in which to prepare themselves and were able to round up their livestock from the outlying areas of Medina and bring them into the City. However, there was nothing they could do to safeguard their crops, which they feared would provide fodder for the mounts of their enemy. Guards were positioned around Medina; when it came to guarding the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Sa'ad, Muadh's son and Sa'ad, Ubadah's son together with Usayd and another insisted on standing guard.

In the meantime, the Koraysh marched out of Mecca towards the coast, then turned inland and marched within five miles of Medina where they halted. Having taken a short rest, they marched on again in a north-easterly direction and struck camp in a valley that lay below the Mount of Uhud where their mounts could graze.

Meanwhile, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent scouts out to monitor the movements of the enemy who reported back that the account Abbas had sent was indeed accurate. However, the scouts told him that they were of the opinion that from their observations the enemy did not appear to be preparing themselves for an immediate strike; there was still some time left.

Shortly after this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had a vision in which he saw himself mounted on a ram wearing an impregnable coat-of-mail, carrying a sword with a dent in it. He also saw some animals, which he knew to be his, sacrificed before his eyes. The following morning he mentioned his vision to his Companions and explained that the impregnable coat-of-mail represented Medina, and that the dent in his sword represented a wound against his person, and that the sacrificed animals were some of his Companions. Then he made mention of the ram on which he rode and told them, that if Allah willed, it was a Koraysh chieftain whom they would kill.

A MATTER OF OPINION

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was of the opinion that they should stay in Medina and fight there, however there were among his Companions those more familiar with the strategies of warfare so he called for a meeting. Abdullah, Ubayy's son was the first to speak and he, like some of his elder companions was of the opinion that the engagement should be in Medina and that they should protect their women and children in its fortresses. However, a young Muslim stood up and said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), lead us out against the enemy. Do not let them think we are afraid of them or that we are weak." These few words were enough to rouse the hearts of the majority and Abdullah felt spurned at the rejection of

his opinion. In the meantime, Hamza and Sa'ad reminded the congregation of the blessings they received at Badr, when like now, they had been greatly outnumbered.

Amongst those gathered was an elderly Ansar by the name of Khaythamah, whose son Sa'ad had been martyred at Badr. Khaythamah stood up and told all those present of a vision he had seen the previous night saying, "Last night, I saw my son, he looked so radiant. I saw that from the fruits and rivers of the Garden he is given everything he might desire. Then he invited me saying, 'Come to us, be our companion in Paradise. All that my Lord has promised I have found to be true!' I am old and anxious to meet my Lord, so supplicate O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), that He will grant me martyrdom and the company of Sa'ad in Paradise." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was touched by Khaythamah's devotion and supplicated for him.

No sooner had Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) finished supplicating for Khaythamah than Malik, Sinan's son, from the tribe of Khazraj stood up and said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) there are two good things before us, Allah will either grant us victory over them -- and that is what we desire -- or else He will grant us martyrdom!" The gathering was motivated in such a way that the plan to march out of Medina to engage their enemy was adopted.

THE FRIDAY PRAYER BEFORE THE ENCOUNTER OF UHUD

It was Friday 15th of Shawwal so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) went to the Mosque to conduct the Jum'ah prayer. During the sermon he spoke of the merits and conduct of Holy War and told them that they would be victorious so long as they obeyed his instructions.

After the service was over, the congregation dispersed to make ready their final preparations for war, however two remained behind in the Mosque as they wished to speak with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) alone. One of the men was Abdullah, Amr's son who had been among those that pledged their allegiance at Aqabah on the second occasion.

THE VISION OF ABDULLAH

Abdullah had seen a vision and thought he understood its meaning, however he knew the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was more knowledgeable and wanted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to interpret it for him. Abdullah told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) that in his vision he had seen an Ansar by the name of Mubashir who told him that in a few days he would come to them. Abdullah had asked Mubashir in the vision where he was, to which he replied, 'In Paradise,' and then informed him that in Paradise they were able to do whatsoever pleased them. Abdullah told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) that at the conclusion of his vision he had inquired of Mubashir whether he had been among those martyred at Badr, Mubashir replied that he had. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) confirmed Abdullah's understanding and said, "This is your martyrdom."

Abdullah was happy with the news and returned home to make ready for the hostilities. As Abdullah entered his house he found his son preparing his weapons and armor for the morrow. Abdullah, whose wife had recently passed away, had just one son called Jabir, and seven very young daughters, so he spoke gently to his son saying, "It is not right that we should leave them (his sisters) without a man, they are young and I fear

for them. I will go alone with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tomorrow and if Allah chooses that I should be martyred, I entrust them to your care." Disappointed, but obedient to his father's wishes, when the time came to march Jabir remained behind to look after his sisters.

THE MARRIAGE OF HANZALAH

Weeks before, Hanzalah, Abu Amir's son who was betrothed to his cousin Jamilah, Ubayy's daughter, had set that very same Friday as his wedding day. He wanted to take part in the hostilities but was unsure whether he should postpone his marriage and upon this account he now waited behind in the Mosque to seek the advice of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was understanding and told Hanzalah that he should go ahead with the marriage as arranged, spend the night in Medina and then catch them up the following morning.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was always concerned for the welfare and protection of his community, so he issued instructions that the ladies together with their children be housed in the safety of the fortresses under the protection of Yaman and Thabit, who were instructed to provide for their needs and protect them.

THE WARNING OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Time for the afternoon prayer arrived and all assembled to offer their prayer. After its conclusion, Omar and Abu Bakr accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to his home and helped him dress in readiness for the march.

Soon after, the small Muslim army began to assemble outside the Prophet's house in preparation for the march. When Sa'ad, Mu'adh's son arrived, he spoke harshly to them saying, "You have forced the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to go out against his will. Perhaps a command will be sent down and the matter changed!"

Shortly after this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) came out from his house wearing his armor. Around his helmet he had wound a piece of white cloth to form a turban, and under his breast-plate he wore a coat of mail. His shield had been fastened onto his back and around his waist he wore a leather belt from which his sword hung.

The words of Sa'ad hung heavily upon the hearts of the Muslims and they wished they had held their tongues over the issue whether or not to engage the enemy outside Medina. They said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), it is not for us to oppose you in anything, do whatever you feel is the most fitting." However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reminded them, "Once a Prophet has put on his armor, it is not for him to take it off until Allah has judged between him and his enemies. Therefore, do as I say and go forward in the Name of Allah - victory will be yours if you are steadfast." Then he called for three lances and attached to each a banner giving one to Mus'ab, who represented the Muhajir, another to Usayd from the tribe of Aws and the other to Hubab from the tribe of Khazraj.

The Prophet's horse, Sakb, was brought for him to mount, but before mounting he appointed Abdullah, Umm Maktum's son to lead the prayers in his absence. Abdullah was blind and consequently unable to take part in the conflict although his heart was with them. After he settled himself on Sakb, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

asked for his bow and hung it over his shoulder and then his spear was handed to him. Only the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) was mounted and Sa'ad the son of Mu'adh and Sa'ad Ubaydah's son marched in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) while his ill-equipped army followed behind with just one hundred men having armor sufficient to protect their person; the remainder had nothing to protect themselves.

RAFI AND SAMURA

After the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and his army had marched but a few miles from Medina, he called for a halt to review his troops and noticed that many young would-be warriors had accompanied the army just as they had done at Badr. Much to their disappointment the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) told them that the forthcoming encounter was no place for them and they were to return home.

Amongst the youngsters were Zaid, Thabit's son; Bara, Azib's son; Abu Sai'd Khudri' Abdullah, Omar's son and Araba Ausi. Rafi, Khadij's son and Samura were so very anxious to be accepted as one of the Prophet's men that when the youngsters were gathered together they had stood on the tip of their toes in order to appear taller and Rafi had been accepted as he was already known as a skillful archer. However, Samura was at the point of being told to return when he pointed out that he had been the victor on many occasions when he and Rafi had fought competitively. To prove his point Rafi and Samura now fought each other in friendly combat and Samura, much to his delight, proved his strength and was allowed to join the ranks of the Prophet's men.

DESERTION

At a place halfway between Medina and Uhud the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and his army stopped to rest for a while and offer their prayer. During the rest period, Abdullah, Ubayy's son was approached by a party of his men who expressed their desire not to take part in the hostilities and return Medina. Abdullah who had already expressed his reluctance to march needed no further persuasion, so he gathered the rest of his men -- whose number accounted for one third of the Prophet's army -- and said, "He listened to them, and not to me. Why should we loose our lives!" Amongst Abdullah's men were doubters and hypocrites -- this was exactly the excuse they had been looking for as a means to escape the hostilities. All agreed to return to Medina and left without even mentioning their decision to the Prophet, salla Allahu alih wa sallam.

When one of the Companions also by the name of Abdullah learned of their desertion, he chased after them on his horse. Upon catching up with them he entreated not to abandon them, saying, "Fellow tribesmen, I call upon you by Allah not to abandon your people and your Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) now that the enemy is near!" In a patronizing manner they replied, "If we knew you were going to fight we would not have abandoned you, however we do not think there will be hostilities." Abdullah pleaded with them over and over again until he realized he was wasting his time and as he turned to leave them, he cursed them saying, "May Allah curse you, you enemies of Allah! Allah will make His Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) independent of you!" And then returned to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

Now that their numbers had been substantially reduced, a Companion asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) whether he thought they should call upon the

help of the Jews with whom they were allied and obligated to lend their assistance. However, in light of recent events, they could not be trusted and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied that there was no need for them.

THE SHORT CUT

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his army were refreshed from their initial march, so in the coolness of the evening they continued to march onto Uhud. Not long after they had resumed their march, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired if anyone knew a better road that would take them near to the Koraysh camp. Abu Khaythamah said that he knew of one, and led the army through land that belonged to the tribe of Haritha, and then through land belonging to a blind man by the name of Mirba, Kayzi's son.

When Mirba learned of the Prophet's approach, he came out of his house and started throwing handfuls of sand at the army muttering, "Perhaps he is the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) however, I will not allow you to pass through my gardens." He is also reported as having said, "By Allah, if I could be sure that I would not hit someone else, Muhammad, I would throw it in your face!" No sooner had the words left his mouth than several of the Prophet's Companions set upon him as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) mercifully called out, "Do not kill him! He is blind both in heart and sight." However, Sa'ad, Zaid's son, did not hear the instruction and struck Mirba, wounding his head.

THE SLOPES OF UHUD

In the darkness of night the army marched on, passing above the gorge of Uhud. As the thin thread of dawn appeared upon the horizon they reached a point that overlooked the wadi where the Koraysh had set up camp. The Prophet's plan was to march on a little further so that they would be protected by the mountain from the rear and have the advantage of being above the Koraysh and their allies. When at last they reached a suitable slope, they halted and Bilal made the call to prayer. After its conclusion the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to his men saying, "Indeed, whosoever remembers the purpose and directs his soul in earnest with patience and effort and does not doubt, will receive a rich reward as well as spoils."

THE VISION OF JAMILAH

Hanzalah, who had not marched out with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on account of his marriage, had, a few moments before, caught up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and went to greet him. On the night of his marriage, his bride, Jamilah, had seen a vision in which she saw Hanzalah standing at the Gate of Paradise. When she looked again she saw that Hanzalah had entered and knew she would never see her husband again in this world as martyrdom had been chosen for him.

THE INSTRUCTIONS OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

The freshness of the early hours of morning were now upon them and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon his Companions to assemble before him. Amongst those chosen to accompany the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were his cousins, Sa'ad, Said, and Sa'ib, Othman's son -- all of whom were excellent archers.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) now placed fifty of his best archers under the command of Abdullah, Jubair's son, an Ansar from the tribe of Aws. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) instructed the archers to take up their positions on an elevated part of foothill that lay to the left of the main detachment of the Koraysh army and then ordered them saying, "You must keep their cavalry away from us with your arrows. Do not let them come upon us from the rear. No matter whether the encounter goes in our favor or against us -- remain in your positions. Should you see us gleaning the spoils of war, do not try to take your share of it -- if you see us being martyred, do not come to our assistance." The instructions were very clear for he was an excellent communicator and administrator.

It was time for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to don his armor; having done so he took hold of his sword and brandished it in the air, asking, "Who will take this sword together with its right?" Omar did not hesitate to step forward but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not respond and asked the question once more. This time Zubair jumped at the chance of taking it but again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not respond and as he did an Ansar from the tribe of Khazraj named Abu Dujanah inquired, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) what is its right?" "Its right," the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "is that you should take it and kill the enemy with it until its blade is bent." Whereupon Abu Dujanah seized upon the opportunity to be the first to claim it.

Abu Dujanah's reputation as a warrior was well known and those who he came across on the battlefield were fearful of an encounter with him. In times of war Abu Dujanah would wear a red turban wrapped around his helmet and over the course of time, the turban had been rightly named by the Khazraj the "Turban of Death". Now, with the Prophet's sword in hand, wearing his red turban wrapped around his helmet, he strutted through the ranks of the army in such a fashion that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) commented, "Except in times and places such as this, that is the strut Allah hates."

With the Khazraj tribe of Alimah, the son of Jusham, on one side and the Aws tribe of Harith, Nabit's son, on the other, the final preparations for hostilities were now complete.

KORAYSH POSITIONS OF COMMAND

The Koraysh planned their mode of attack with much thought and arranged their ranks in a way so as to gain the best possible striking power. Commanding their cavalry were two of their best warriors: Khalid, Waleed's son commanded the right flank, whilst Ikrima, the son of Abu Jahl commanded their left flank with an additional two hundred horses in reserve. The various detachments of well equipped archers were commanded by Abdullah, Rabi'as son, whereas Talha was appointed to be the Koraysh standard bearer.

TWO OF THE BELIEVING LADIES

During the second pledge of allegiance at Aqabah, two ladies from Medina had also given their pledge. One of these ladies was Nusaybah, the wife of Ghaziyyah.

Ghaziyyah and his two sons had joined the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on the march to Uhud and Nusaybah longed to accompany them, however no permission had been given for women to take part in the forthcoming encounter. Nusaybah, being

of strong character, realized that the wounded would need care, attention, and water, so after the army left Medina, she filled her water-skin and followed their tracks taking with her a sword, bow, and a supply of arrows.

Another lady by the name of Umm Sulaym, the mother of Anas, had the same idea. Likewise, she had filled her water-skin to provide relief for the wounded on the battlefield and set off for Uhud. However, neither knew of each other's intention until they met each other near the Companions surrounding the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) shortly after the commencement of the hostilities.

CHAPTER 71

THE ENCOUNTER AT UHUD

The sun had now risen and the Prophet's army had been detected, so Abu Sufyan gave the order to advance. Instead of the customary beat of the drum that preceded hostilities, the Koraysh womenfolk, led by Hind, the wife of Abu Sufyan, burst into impassioned songs as they beat their tambourines. The themes of many of their songs were in praise of those killed at Badr and cried out for their menfolk not to forget but to remember and revenge themselves so that the honor of their tribe might be restored.

CALLS FOR DESERTION

The armies were but a short distance from each other when Abu Sufyan halted his men and called upon the Ansar to desert the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). He had not anticipated either the strength of their belief or the courage Allah had given the Ansar, nor yet the undivided loyalty and love they had for His Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), and so Abu Sufyan had not long before, assured his men that they could count upon the Ansar to turn and desert. The unexpected Ansar's reply came quickly as they hurled stones and invoked curses upon him; he had indeed miscalculated their response.

A former resident of Medina, Abu Amir, whose son Hanzalah had married Jamilah the day before had, unknown to Hanzalah joined with the Koraysh against the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). Abu Amir had claimed for many years that he followed the ways of Prophet Abraham and in light of his claim, one might have supposed he would have embraced Islam, for both prophets preached the same message that Allah is One and that it is He alone who is to be worshipped. However, stubborn pride stood in his way and he chose to side with the pagan idolaters, which was totally against the teachings of Prophet Abraham. If, as he claimed, he followed Prophet Abraham he would have recognized not only the truth in all the teachings of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) but also seen these teachings implemented in his exemplary day-to-day life, as well as that of his son Hanzalah, and the Companions of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

Before Islam, Abu Amir had been highly thought of by the people of Medina and regarded as being a pious person. He too thought that the Ansar would listen to him if he called upon them to lay down their arms and desert the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). His pride was soon shattered after he called out, "Do you remember me, I am Abu Amir!" "Yes, you evil-doer," came the reply, "we recognize you, may Allah frustrate your wickedness!"

The Koraysh standard bearer, Talha, now stepped forward and cried out in challenging mockery: "Muslims, is there any amongst you that can send me to Hell or else enter Paradise under my hand!" Ali was quick to respond and smote him with his sword. Talha's mockery then fell upon himself.

Othman, one of Talha's two brothers, grabbed hold of the standard whilst the Koraysh womenfolk goaded him into taking revenge, chanting, "It is the duty of the standard bearer to dip his spear in blood or to break it on the enemy!" This time Hamza stepped out to meet Othman wielding his double edge sword saying: "I am the son of Saki Hajaj!," which referred to the honored position his father had held to provide water for the pilgrims. With that he struck Othman on his shoulder with such force that his sword slit him right down to his waist.

During the course of the hostilities the sword of Abdullah, Jahsh's son, was smote from his hand, and no matter how hard he searched for it, it could not be found. He returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to ask for a replacement. However, there were none to be had, so, as at the Encounter of Badr, the Prophet picked up a palm branch, gave it to him and it was transformed into a sword and Abdullah rejoined the hostilities.

THE BRAVERY OF HAMZA, ALI AND ABU DUJANAH

By now the Koraysh womenfolk had retreated to a safe distance, where they continued to incite their men to fight. Hamza, Ali, and Abu Dujanah were foremost in leading the Muslim attack and plunged deep into the ranks of the enemy. Their gallantry succeeded in disrupting the lines of the enemy and as they advanced, they killed or injured anyone in their path. As Abu Dujanah turned to engage his next combatant, his sword touched the hand of Hind whereupon he quickly withdrew it as he knew it would be unworthy for the sword of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to kill a woman.

THE STANDARD BEARER OF THE PROPHET

Mus'ab had been entrusted to be the standard bearer and was finally martyred. As he was being martyred an angel came in his resemblance and raised the banner. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, turned to the one whom he took to be Mus'ab and said, "Advance Mus'ab", and the angel replied, "I am not Mus'ab" and he realized the standard bearer was an angel.

THE MARTYDOM OF HAMZA

In the meantime, the Muslim archers from their vantage point on the foot hill of Uhud directed their shots at Khalid and his cavalry, and many fell. As the hostilities intensified, the Abyssinian slave, Wahshi, searched for Hamza and did not concern himself with the fighting. The moment he awaited to earn his freedom was near at hand. Hamza was about to put an end to a standard bearer and in doing so, just as he raised his sword, a gap in his armor laid bare his navel. Wahshi seized upon the moment, threw his spear with such accuracy and force that it went right through Hamza's navel. Valiantly, Hamza tried to continue to fight but his legs collapsed and he lay martyred on the field of Uhud.

Wahshi cared nothing for the fighting going on around him and made his way to Hamza's martyred body, retrieved his spear and returned to the camp saying, "I have achieved my aim. I killed him only for the sake of gaining my freedom."

KORAYSH STANDARD BEARERS

Before the hostilities commenced, Abu Sufyan had spoken of the disgrace that had befallen them at Badr when their standard bearers had allowed themselves to be taken prisoner. He told his army that on no account should this be allowed to happen again.

The Koraysh standard bearers started to fall one after the other, but until that moment there had always been someone to grasp the standard before it touched the ground. As yet another standard bearer fell, Sawab grasped it from him, whereupon a Muslim struck him with such a severe blow that both his hands were severed. Sawab fell to the ground but managed to prevent the standard from touching it and held the standard pressed tightly to his chest. As he was dying he was heard crying out, "I have done my duty!"

During the confusion of the hostilities none of the Koraysh realized that their standard had fallen until one of their womenfolk saw it being trampled upon the ground and rushed over to raise it up. The Koraysh rallied around her and for a brief moment there was a resurgence of effort.

THE MARTYDOM OF HANZALAH

Hanzalah had thrown himself into the hostilities and was now at its center engaging Abu Sufyan in fierce combat. He was at the point of dispatching him when a man from Layth came to Abu Sufyan's aid and thrust his spear into Hanzalah. Hanzalah fell and Layth delivered a further thrust and the vision of his bride, Jamilah, was fulfilled.

As Hanzalah was being martyred, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was made aware of his circumstances by the angels and turned gently to his Companions saying, "The angels are washing your Companion." Later, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to Jamilah, he comforted her telling her that he had witnessed the angels taking her husband's body and washing it between the heavens and earth with water collected from the clouds in silver vessels. Jamilah told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of her vision and that when she had told Hanzalah what she had seen, he had been so anxious to join him that he left before taking a major shower.

THE DISOBEYED ORDER

Despite their overwhelming numbers, the Koraysh army had been beaten back and forced to retreat. Victory now lay insight for the Prophet's army and the opportunity to seize the spoils of war presented itself to those on the battlefield, whilst the archers entrusted to hold a strategic position on the foot hill slope looked down and saw their Companions helping themselves to the spoils of war.

Many of the archers thought the hostilities were over and were eager to claim their share of the spoils and so decided to abandon their position despite the Prophet's instruction. Their commander, Abdullah, Jubair's son, entreated them not to abandon their posts but the temptation was too great and all but a few obeyed the Prophet's instruction and remained loyal at their posts.

Khalid, Waleed's son, noticed that many of the archers had left their posts. Hastily, he regrouped his men and seized the opportunity to launch an attack on the Muslims from the rear. With the weakened position of the archers, the assault was successful and Abdullah, along with the few that remained faithful to the instruction of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were martyred defending their posts.

The way was now open for Khalid as he led an attack down upon the unsuspecting Muslims who were busy dividing the spoils of war. Ikrima observed Khalid's actions and rallied his men to come to Khalid's assistance and joined him on the battlefield.

Chaos reigned as the unbelievers charged forward on their horses, shouting the names of their gods in defiance, and the advantage started to slip away from the Muslims. When some of the Muslims saw the onslaught, they became filled with fear and fled to the safety of the mountain despite the Prophet's order to return and help their ailing companions to fight.

WAHB

The Muslims started to lose ground rapidly and were now being forced to retreat to the mountain where the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his close Companions were stationed. Fear for the Prophet's safety was paramount in the heart of many. Wahb and Harith from the tribe of Muzaynah were the first to reach him and rallied to his side followed by other warriors who took up their bows and kept the unbelievers at bay with volleys of arrows. Among the believers who took up their bows in defense of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) were the ladies Umm Sulaym, Nusaybah, and Umm Umara as well as several other ladies that had now joined them.

Suddenly, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) noticed a party of unbelievers riding towards them on the left-hand side. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked, "Who will take these on?" Without hesitation, Wahb engaged them and shot his arrows with such accuracy and speed that the unbelievers were forced to retreat.

No sooner than Wahb had rid them of their first batch of unbelievers, another batch was seen approaching. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked again for a volunteer to take on the unbelievers and once more Wahb rose to the occasion. With the same precision and speed, Wahb dispatched volleys of arrows into the midst of the unbelievers at such a rate one might have thought it impossible for just one man to deliver such an amazing shower of arrows, and yet again the unbelievers fled.

Arrows were now in short supply when a third party of unbelievers emerged and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked once more, "Who will take these on?" Wahb offered his services once more, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told him, "Arise and rejoice, Paradise is yours." As Wahb drew his sword he said, "By Allah, I will neither spare nor wish to be spared," and so single handedly, Wahb fought the unbelievers and as he fought, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) supplicated for the Mercy of Allah upon him.

Wahb fought valiantly paying no attention to the multiple wounds he sustained. At last the unbelievers succeeded in cornering him and so the promise of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) came to be. When his companions went to bury Wahb, they found he had sustained no less than twenty spear wounds as well as multiple sword wounds.

ABU BAKR AND HIS SON ABDUL KA'BA

As the Koraysh drew closer, a challenge rang throughout the air, "I am the son of Atik, who will come out against me!" The challenger referred to his ancestor and was none other than Lady Ayesha's brother Abdul Ka'ba, the son of Abu Bakr -- the only male member of his family not to enter Islam. Immediately, Abu Bakr threw down his bow and drew his sword prepared to engage his son in combat. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw what Abu Bakr had done, he told him compassionately to return his sword to its hilt and go back to his place and give him his company instead.

ZIYAD, SON OF SUKAIN AND THE ANSARS

Shortly after this, the Koraysh cavalry penetrated the Muslim line of defense and Abu Bakr's son retreated. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) now asked his Companions, "Who will sell themselves for us?" No sooner had the request been made than Ziyad, Sukain's son together with either five or seven Ansar -- their number is uncertain -- with swords in hand plunged themselves into the enemy. All were martyred except Ziyad, who fell to the ground after sustaining a life-threatening wound.

It was thought that Ziyad had been martyred along with his companions when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) noticed Ziyad doing his best to crawl back towards them. Immediately, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent two of his Companions to bring Ziyad to him. Gently, the Companions picked Ziyad up, brought him to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and laid him down with his head resting on the Prophet's foot whilst the Angel of Death took away his martyred soul.

THE STONE

Due to the increased deterioration of their situation, Ali, Talha, Abu Dujanah, and Zubair, who had fought at front line of the encounter since its beginning, started to fear for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and decided to fight their way back to him.

When they reached him, they found that an unbeliever had managed to come within close range of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and hurled a sharp stone at him. The stone had struck the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on his lower lip, chipped a tooth and blood flowed from the wound. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) assured his Companions that he was all right and that there was no need for concern, so all except Talha, who had now fainted on account of the amount of blood he had lost during the hostilities, returned to the battlefield. However, this condition was only momentary and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Abu Bakr, who was Talha's cousin, to tend to his needs. Sa'ad from the tribe of Zuhra and Harith from the tribe of Khazraj took Talha's place on the battlefield. Together they fought with all their might and gained some ground. However, their gain was short lived and once more the Koraysh and their allies advanced.

THE INJURY OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

The fighting around the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) intensified. Abu Dujanah now protected the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) using his back as a shield and had been hit by many arrows. The reputation of Abu Talha, step-father of Anas, as an excellent archer had been well tried that morning; he had fired so many arrows that three bows lay broken on the ground. Now, with his shield he did his very best to protect the Prophet's face from injury.

During the turmoil of the hostilities, with arrows falling like rain from the sky, an unbeliever made his way undetected through the Prophet's guards. The man was Abdullah, Kami'ah's son, a warrior of repute from a distant branch of the Koraysh, responsible for the martyrdom of many a Muslim that day. To everyone's surprise he now called out, "Where is Muhammad, may I not survive if he survives!" Just then, he caught sight of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and charged towards him brandishing his sword in the air and smote the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on his helmet with such a forceful blow that the links on either side of his helmet dug deeply into his cheeks and for a moment he fell stunned to the ground as Abdullah, made a quick retreat. But before he got away Umm Umara managed to strike Abdullah, whereupon he struck back and she sustained a major injury to her shoulder. However, he remained unharmed as he wore a double suit of armor. Nusaybah also fought alongside Umm Umara but remained unscathed.

When the Companions saw the extent of the Prophet's (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) injuries they became very distraught and exclaimed, "If only you would supplicate for a curse against them!" But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to them and said in his every caring and gentle manner, "I was not sent to curse, rather I was sent to invite and as a mercy." Such was his mercy and forbearance toward them that he supplicated for those who opposed him saying, "O Allah, guide my tribesmen because they do not know."

When Omar heard the Prophet's reply, he remarked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), may my mother and father be your ransom! Noah supplicated against his people when he said, 'My Lord, do not leave a single unbeliever upon the earth.' If you had supplicated for a curse like that, all of us would have been destroyed. Your back has been trodden upon, your face bloodied and your tooth broken, and yet you decline to say anything other than good."

Once again we are given a glimpse into our beloved Prophet's excellent character. He could have remained silent and done nothing but he chose otherwise. He pardoned them, then supplicated for their guidance and pleaded for them because they were yet to understand.

And so another part of the Prophet's vision had been fulfilled -- the dent in his sword -- which he explained would be a wound against his person.

Talha had tried to deflect the blow away from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and in doing so the fingers of one hand sustained such a harsh blow that it is reported that either his fingers were severed or that he lost the use of his fingers on one hand.

Shammas from the tribe of Makzum now stood in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and fought with outstanding bravery against a fresh onslaught until he fell, whereupon another Companion took his place.

A short while before, when the unbelievers had seen the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) fall, they raised the cry: "Muhammad is dead!" and proceeded to exalt their gods. The cry had a devastating effect on the Muslims and many despaired.

Mus'ab, Umair's son, the standard bearer of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) bore a slight resemblance to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), and was martyred by Abdullah, Kami'ah's son. In the chaos of the fighting it was thought that it was the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) himself who had martyred, and yet again the mistaken cry rang out that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been martyred.

Despair engulfed the hearts of many Muslims as they thought their Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been taken from them. The Muslims were devastated by the misinformation and soon found themselves almost completely surrounded by unbelievers, but they continued to fight for the sake of the truth the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had entrusted to them. Once again, Ali fought courageously and put many to the sword, but as he fought he looked constantly for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as he did not believe the rumor.

Such was Omar's despondency that he had thrown down his sword. The uncle of Anas, ibn Nadr chanced to see him and asked what he was doing. Omar replied, "Is there any reason to fight; the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) is no longer with us." Ibn Nadr was horrified by the news and exclaimed, "Life is not worth living now that he is no more!" and rushed off into the hostilities and was martyred.

THE RETREAT

Despite their bravery, many believers lay martyred on the field of Uhud; as for the survivors, their ammunition was almost spent. Now, the believers were in retreat and as they made their way higher up the slopes of Uhud the hostilities started to subside as the Koraysh deemed the day to be theirs. In relation to the size of the Koraysh army there was only a minimal loss of life, although hardly any of their men or horses had been left unscathed and a great number of men sustained very severe wounds.

YAMAN AND THABIT

When news of the Muslim's distressful circumstances reached the fortresses of Medina, Yaman and Thabit, who had been left behind to protect the women and children, armed themselves and sped with all haste to Uhud.

Such was the confusion on the battlefield that when Thabit arrived he was mistaken for a Koraysh ally and set upon by Muslims. When Hudhayfah saw his father, Thabit, being attacked he called out to his assailants that he was one of them but his voice was drowned under the clamor of the fighting and his father fell to friendly swords.

It was indeed a very sad event but Hudhayfah was not the sort of person to bear malice against his father's unintentional assailants, rather he would mercifully say, "Muslims, may Allah forgive this sin of yours." Later, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard of the sad occurrence, he offered to pay blood-money on behalf of the Muslims, however Hudhayfah waived his right.

THE VALLEY

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had only been incapacitated for a brief moment. Now, in the light of the present situation he deemed it best that he and his Companions should reposition themselves at the entrance of the valley overlooking the Koraysh camp so that they would be in a better position to monitor their movements.

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led his Companions along the track, the pain caused by the chain links embedded in his cheeks became apparent upon his noble face. The small band of Companions stopped for a moment and Abu Ubayda examined the injury and concluded that the only effective way to remove the links would be by extracting them with his teeth. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was agreeable and as he pulled the links out the wounds started to bleed.

In an effort to cleanse the wounds, Malik, Sinan's son from the tribe of Khazraj sucked away the blood and swallowed it. Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed his Companions, "The fire cannot reach those whose blood touches my blood." Both Malik and Abu Ubayda knew that they had been greatly rewarded for their action.

Meanwhile, Abu Sufyan observed the Companions making their way along the mountain and attempted to pursue them. However Omar, who had rejoined the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with some more Companions hurled rocks at him that forced him to retreat.

JUBILATION

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions continued on their way to the entrance of the valley and as they did Ka'b, Malik's son, who had recently retreated with some other Muslims to the safety of the mountain, spotted them. At first he thought his eyes deceived him, he had heard and taken the rumor of the Prophet's death to be true, yet there in front of him was a figure, walking slowly, that he felt sure he recognized. As Ka'b drew nearer his heart beat faster with joy, his eyes had not deceived him and in great jubilation he cried out to the others who were following behind, "Muslims, great news, it is the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gestured to Ka'b not to raise his voice and so the news that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was indeed alive spread amongst the Muslims quietly and there was great rejoicing in their hearts as they raced to join him.

THE PROPHET'S ENCOUNTER WITH UBAY

Ubayy, Khalaf's son had not as yet returned to the Koraysh camp and overheard the jubilant cry of Ka'b. Ubayy had sworn revenge that he would kill the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and galloped swiftly towards him with the intent of fulfilling his oath. As he approached with sword drawn, he cried out, "Muhammad, if you escape from me, may I not escape from you!" As the Companions grouped themselves around the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to protect him, ready to attack Ubayy, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them to step back and before Ubayy had a chance to strike, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took hold of Harith, Simma's son's spear and slightly scratched Ubayy's neck with it. Ubayy screamed out in excruciating pain and fell from his horse then remounted and galloped back to his camp.

Upon reaching the camp he was met by his nephew Safwan and other members of his tribe and croaked, "Muhammad has killed me!" However, his nephew and the others paid little attention to him as they viewed his scratch as being very minor. Instinctively, Ubayy knew that his time was running out and told them, "By Allah if he spat on me with his spittle, I would die." The Koraysh were not inclined to pay much attention to

Ubayy's scratch, nor did they incline to take the news that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was alive seriously, however the seed of doubt had been sown.

Ubayy's fear proved to be right. Death was soon to overtake him on their return journey to Mecca at a place called Sarif.

THE MIDDAY PRAYER

When the misinformation reached Medina that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been killed, Lady Fatima made haste to Uhud and caught up with the Prophet's party as it was about to reach the entrance of the valley. Lady Fatima was greatly relieved to find her father alive and only wounded, and thanked Allah for his safety.

Meanwhile, Ali went in search of water and came cross a small pool of water in the crevices of the rocks. Using his shield as a container, he scooped up some water and brought it back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to quench his thirst. However, the water was stale and odorous, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) declined to drink from it, whereupon Lady Fatima used it to wash away the blood from his face. The wounds continued to bleed and so in attempt to stop the bleeding, a piece of matting was scorched and placed over the wounds whereupon the bleeding ceased.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), very anxious for the safety of his Companions, felt that they were too exposed to take their rest at the entrance of the valley, so he ordered his Companions to climb to higher ground. There was no easy way up the mountain slope, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) started to raise himself up to one of its ledges. Despite Talha's multiple wounds, when he saw what the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was doing, he bent down and lifted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) up so that he could more easily reach the ledge, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) announced, "Whosoever wishes to look upon a martyr walking upon the earth should look at Talha, the son of Ubayd Allah."

It was now midday and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with some of his injured Companions sat as he led them in prayer, then they took turns to either rest or stand on guard.

HEALING MIRACLES

Amongst the many miraculous healings at Uhud were those of Katada, Kulthum, and Abdullah.

During the encounter Katada engaged An-Numan in combat. As they fought, Katada was struck so severely that his eye-ball came out of its socket and hung down up his cheek. When the fighting died down Katada made his way back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took pity on him and supplicated as he place his eye-ball back into its socket. From that time onward Katada would be heard telling his companions that the eye restored by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had the strongest vision.

An arrow aimed at Kulthum, the son of Al Husain severely pierced his throat. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw what had happened he supplicated then blew his saliva upon the wound and his throat healed instantly.

Abdullah, Anies' son sustained a severe wound to his head. Once again the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated and blew his saliva upon the wound and it healed. When Abdullah told his companions about the miraculous healing, he would add, "It never turned septic!"

THE KORAYSH CAMP

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions took their rest, many of the Koraysh picked their way through the dead on the battlefield searching for the Prophet's body whilst others either buried their dead or tended to the wounded. They had lost only twenty-two of their men, however their casualties, both human and animal, were substantial.

Wahshi was not content just to let Hamza's body rest on the battlefield. Now that the fighting was over he returned to his body, ripped open his belly and gouged out his liver then took it to Hind demanding, "What will I receive for killing the one who killed your father!" Excitedly Hind replied, "All my share of the spoils of war!" With that, Wahshi presented Hamza's liver to her which she snatched from him, and to fulfill her oath of hatred towards Hamza bit a piece out of it, chewed, swallowed some and spat the remainder out. Then she demanded to be taken to Hamza's body and upon reaching it, like a savage, she cut off his nose and ears. From that day onward she was often referred to as 'Jigar Khwar' - the liver eater.

Other Koraysh women delighted in similar barbaric activities and all but one of the bodies were savagely mutilated. The one that escaped further mutilation was that of Hanzalah. His father, who had fought alongside the Koraysh, pleaded with them to leave his body alone and so his body was left where it lay.

Hanzalah lay near the mutilated bodies of his relatives, Hamza and Abdullah, Jahsh's son. When it was time for their burial the Companions remarked upon the serenity that radiated from his face and commented that his hair remained wet from the washing of the angels.

THE REACTION OF THE KORAYSH ALLIES

When those that had allied themselves with the Koraysh against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) witnessed the barbaric actions of the Koraysh, many were appalled. Hulays, from one of the tribes of Kinanah was particularly repulsed when he observed Abu Sufyan standing over Hamza's already grossly mutilated body, driving his spear into his mouth saying, "Taste this you rebel!" In horror, Hulays cried out, "Sons of Kinanah, can this be the chief of the Koraysh doing such a thing to his dead cousin!" Abu Sufyan was annoyed that he had been caught and asked him not to tell of it.

On account of the Koraysh not being able to find the body of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) many began to believe Ubayy. However, they had not discounted the matter of his death completely as there remained the possibility that his body lay somewhere on the slopes of Mount Uhud itself.

THE SEARCH FOR HAMZA'S BODY

Later that day, Harith, As-Simmah's son was sent by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to search for Hamza's body. When he came across it he was so shaken by his condition that he just stood there transfixed, staring over him for a long time unable to comprehend how anyone could have acted in such a barbaric manner.

When Harith did not return, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Ali to look for him and together they returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), whereupon Harith and Ali lead him to Hamza's body. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gazed down at him, his heart overflowed with great sorrow and anger, and said, "I have never felt more anger than that which I feel now. Next time when Allah gives me victory over the Koraysh, I shall mutilate seventy of their dead." Shortly after this a Revelation was sent down saying:

"If you punish, let your punishment be proportionate to the punishment you received.
But if you are patient, it is better for the patient.
Be patient; yet your patience is only by the help of Allah.
Do not grieve for them (the unbelievers),
nor distress yourself because of their devising.
Allah is with the cautious and those who do good."
Koran 16:126-128

After receiving these verses the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) withdrew his intention and forbade mutilation.

THE BELIEVING LADIES

Whilst the Koraysh womenfolk were engrossed in their barbaric revenge, Ladies Fatima, Umm Sulaym, and Umm Salit tended to the wounds of the believers and brought them water.

By now several ladies had set out from Medina to nurse the wounded, amongst whom was Saffiyah, the sister of Hamza. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of her arrival he told her son, Zubayr not to let her see her brother's body. However, Saffiyah went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that she knew of her brother's martyrdom and that his sacrifice was not very great, for she remembered well the promise of Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to those martyred in His Name. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw the depth of her faith, he permitted her to see her brother's corpse.

When she came across the remains of his poor body the only words she uttered were those from the Koran:

"We belong to Allah and to Him we shall return."
Koran 2:156

and supplicated for his soul.

THE LOVE OF AN ANSARI LADY

When the news reached an Ansari lady that not only had her father been martyred, but also her husband and son, she became patient. However, when she heard the misinformation that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been taken from

them, it consumed her every thought and she put aside her own personal loss and made straight for Uhud.

When she saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and realized the report was false, she was so overwhelmed with joy that she exclaimed, "With you amongst us, our personal loss is insignificant." Such was the deep love and devotion of the early Companions for Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that their own welfare and matters were always a distant second to his.

IN SEARCH OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

As the Koraysh prepared to break camp, they loaded the meager spoils of war they had gained during the encounter onto the camels in readiness for their return to Mecca.

Whilst the Koraysh busied themselves with their final preparations, Abu Sufyan, who was anxious to learn whether or not the Prophet was dead or alive, rode out alone on his horse toward the mountain.

Upon reaching it he drew his horse to a halt and, looking up in the direction where the Muslims had last been seen, called out, "Exaltations to Hubal, may your religion prevail!" When the Prophet heard this he instructed Omar to reply, "Allah is the Greatest, Exalted in Majesty. We are not equal. Our martyred are in Paradise -- your dead are in the Fire." Obediently, Omar arose, went to the ledge of the mountain, and called out the words of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Abu Sufyan recognized Omar's voice and called up to him: "Omar, in the Name of Allah, I entreat you, is Muhammad dead?" Whereupon Omar replied, "By Allah, no! Even now he hears what you are saying!" Strange as it may seem, Abu Sufyan replied, "I believe you, your word is truer than that of Abdullah, Kami'ah's son." Then he cried out, "May Badr be our meeting place next year!" When the Prophet heard this he sent another of his Companions to the ledge with the message, "That is a confirmed agreement between us."

When Abu Sufyan returned to his army he found them assembled on the far side of the valley awaiting his order to march. They set out in a southerly direction and it was feared that they might now march on Medina. With this in mind the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for a volunteer to follow the army and bring back word of their movements.

Seventy Muslims volunteered, including Abu Bakr and Zubayr, however it was Sa'ad from the tribe of Zuhrah who was chosen. Before he departed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wisely informed him, "If they are leading their horses and riding their camels they are destined for Mecca, however, if they are riding their horses and leading their camels they are destined for Medina. By Him in whose Hand is my soul, if that is their aim, I will overtake and fight them." Sa'ad wasted no time and climbed down the mountain slope, mounted the Prophet's horse, and set out upon his mission.

THE MARTYR WHO NEVER OFFERED AN OBLIGATORY PRAYER

Amongst the mortally wounded was Usayrim, a man from Medina. When the Ansars came across him they were indeed very surprised to find him there. Many were the

times that they had spoken to him about Islam, but he had always been hesitant to embrace it, saying, "If only I could be sure it was true, I would not hesitate."

Gently, the Ansars inquired what had brought him to Uhud and asked on which side he had fought. Usayrim, who was by now very weak, told them that he had fought along with them and when they asked why he had done so he replied that it was for Islam because in his heart he believed in the Oneness of Allah and the teachings of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). As his frail voice weakened, Usayrim told his companions that earlier that morning he had armed himself with his sword and set off for Uhud to join the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and had fought until he fell. Shortly after this the Angel of Death took away his soul as his companions stood at his side.

When the Companions told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) about Usayrim, he informed them that Usayrim was among those who entered Paradise and in the years that followed Usayrim became known as the believer who entered Paradise without offering even one of the obligatory prayers.

GOOD NEWS

Meanwhile, Sa'ad had ridden as swiftly as he could and was now in sight of the Koraysh. It gladdened his heart when he saw the Koraysh leading their horses and riding their camels, and so he sped back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to convey the good news.

In the years which were to follow, Amr, who had fought with the Koraysh at Uhud but later converted to Islam said, "We heard of ibn Ubayy's return to Medina with one third of the Prophet's army, together with other men from the tribes of Khazraj and Aws and on that account we were unsure whether or not they would return and attack. Many of our men were wounded and most of our horses had been injured by arrows, that is why we decided to return to Mecca."

THE BURIAL OF THE MARTYRED

The bodies of the martyred were laid to rest in graves dug near the place where Hamza had fallen. Some were buried alone, whereas others were buried together -- Hamza and Abdullah, Jubair's son were among those buried together.

Such was their poverty that there was scarcely enough cloth to suffice as a complete shroud for any of them. If their head was covered their feet remained uncovered, and if their feet were covered their head remained uncovered. In order that they should be covered, fragrant grasses were used to shroud the uncovered limbs.

With compassion and tenderness, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told his Companions that the bodies of the martyred were not to be washed in the customary Islamic manner before burial. Then he gave his Companions the good news that on the Day of Judgement the martyrs will be raised, without pain, with their wounds bleeding and that although the color will be that of blood there will be no odor of blood at all, as it will have been replaced with the delicate fragrance of musk.

Under the guidance of the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihī wa sallam), the martyrs were buried in pairs and at each interment, he would inquire which of the two knew the most of the Koran by heart, whereupon the most knowledgeable was placed in the grave

first. Even in death the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was just and never one to show disrespect.

And it was revealed: "Among the believers there are men who have been true to their covenant with Allah. Some have fulfilled their vow dying, and others await, unyielding to change, so that Allah will recompense the truthful for their truthfulness and punish the hypocrites if He will, or turn again to them. Surely, Allah is the Forgiver and the Most Merciful."
Koran, Ch:33:23-24

THE MARTYRED FAMILY OF HIND, WIFE OF AMR

During the burial preparations, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked his Companions to search for the bodies of Amr, Jamuh's son and Abdullah the father of Jabir so that they might be buried together. The two men had been very close to one another during their lifetime and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) thought it appropriate that they should rest together, however their bodies could not be found.

Hind, Amr's wife lost not only her husband, but her son Khallad together with her brother Abdullah and wished to take them back to Medina for burial. As she made her way home to Medina with her martyred family, her mounts suddenly stopped and refused to go any further. She tried repeatedly to get them to walk, but when they still refused she turned them around, whereupon they started to walk back from whence they came. When she reached the battlefield, she went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him what had happened, whereupon he gently told her that it was the will of Allah that she return to bury them there and gave her the good news that they were all together in Paradise. When Hind heard this, her heart was content and she asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to supplicate that she might also join them there.

THE MIRACULOUS MEAL

It had been a very exhausting day and food was in extremely short supply, in fact there was only sufficient food to suffice one man. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for what little food there was to be brought to him, then supplicated saying, "O Allah" and all ate from the portion until they were replete.

CHAPTER 72 THE RETURN TO MEDINA

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions reached Medina at sunset and made their way to the Mosque to offer the evening prayer, after which they retired to their homes to tend to their multiple wounds and rest. Very few Muslims had escaped with minor injuries.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered his home he asked Lady Fatima to wash away the blood from his sword saying, "Wash the blood from this my daughter, for by Allah it has served me well this day." Ali also handed his sword to Lady Fatima and asked the same, then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to Ali and said, "You fought well as did Sahl, Hunayf's son, and Abu Dujanah."

When the time for the night prayer arrived, Bilal made the call to prayer but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), overcome by deep sleep, did not hear it and slept on. His family did not wish to wake him so later when he awoke, he offered his prayer alone.

There was always the possibility that the Koraysh would change their plan, turn, and march on Medina and so the two Sa'ads, together with others from the tribes of Aws and Khazraj, took it in turn to stand guard outside the Mosque.

REACTION OF THE UNBELIEVERS

Needless to say, those who did not wish the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) or the Muslims well were delighted with the news and spared them no sympathy. Rather, they spoke ill of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and mocked him, saying, "Muhammad is no more than a seeker of kingship! There has never been a prophet who faced such a reversed situation; even he has been wounded -- so were his Companions!"

When these sayings reached the ears of Omar, he was infuriated and went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to ask his permission to put the perpetrators to the sword. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in his mercy, forbade him to take such action saying, "Allah will make His religion prevail, and He will empower His Prophet." Then he consoled Omar by saying, "O son of Khattab, indeed the Koraysh will never again take from us like this, we will greet the Corner."

The latter comment referred to the Black Stone placed in the wall of the Ka'ba.

CHAPTER 73 THE DAY AFTER UHUD

Before sunrise the next day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to the Mosque to offer the early morning prayer with his Companions. He told Bilal that after the prayer he would make the announcement that they were to prepare themselves to ride out in pursuit of the Koraysh, however the deserters were not to be permitted to accompany them.

Those who had been able to attend the prayer in the Mosque returned to their fellow tribesmen who had offered their prayer at home on account of their wounds and informed them of the announcement. With the exception of two, none offered an excuse to remain behind.

The two that remained were Shammas who had sustained a fatal, paralyzing blow as he defended the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Malik who had also been fatally wounded and was now being cared for by his family.

Shammas had migrated from Mecca and had no family members to tend to him in Medina, so he had been taken to Lady Ayesha's apartment where Lady Umm Salamah, who was from Shammas's tribe, asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to permit her to nurse him. Before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left, he informed his household that when Shammas' soul was taken from him, he was to be buried with the other martyrs at Uhud and not in Medina.

In the meantime, Jabir, whose father had just been martyred, went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to entreat him to let him accompany them. He told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that it had been his wish to accompany his father to Uhud, however on account of his father's vision foretelling his martyrdom, his father asked him to remain behind to look after his seven young sisters. Upon hearing this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed to let him accompany them.

When Bilal announced that they were going to pursue the enemy he had not mentioned the time of departure, so Talha went to the Mosque to make inquiries. When he reached the Mosque he saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) already robed in his armor mounted on his horse with his visor pulled down over his face, and so he returned home in haste to get ready.

Very soon after, the believers gathered together outside the Mosque. As they lined up the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gazed upon the severely wounded tribe of Salimah. When he saw their loyalty and willingness to obey him in spite of their wounds, he was deeply touched and supplicated, "O Allah, have mercy upon the children of Salimah."

THE BONFIRES OF HAMRA AL ASAD

The unbelievers camped at Rawha, which lies some eight miles outside Medina, to tend their wounded. Abu Sufyan was not altogether satisfied with the victory of the day before and wished that he had ordered his men to fight on until the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Muslims were all dead. Medina was in easy reach of his army and he pondered upon the merit of leading a further attack.

As Abu Sufyan rested, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions reached Hamra Al Asad, which is but a couple of miles away from Rawha. News that Abu Sufyan was nearby was brought to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who now ordered his Companions to gather all the wood they could possibly find and make a series of bonfires, for he was a great strategist.

When night fell, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered the bonfires to be lit and soon their blaze was seen by Abu Sufyan and his army. It was a sight that struck terror into their hearts for no less than five hundred bonfires had been lit sending flames dancing high into the night air.

Abu Sufyan feared that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had succeeded in rallying not only the deserters but also a great number of supporters. The matter was of great concern to him as most of his men were wounded and their mounts weakened by injury and the journey.

In the meantime, Ma'bab, a chieftain from the tribe of Khuza who inclined toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Muslims, went to visit the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in his camp. He was greatly impressed by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and made up his mind to help him in whichever way he could, so he went to Abu Sufyan's camp.

When he reached Abu Sufyan, Abu Sufyan became fearful as he told him, "All of Medina have come out to support Muhammad, even those that turned back before the encounter!" Ma'bab's news confirmed Abu Sufyan's suspicion as he viewed the blaze

of bonfires, for he had no reason to doubt the veracity of Ma'bab's news as he knew he was not a Muslim. So, Abu Sufyan ordered his army to break camp and march back to Mecca, as he was not prepared to risk a further encounter nor yet risk humiliation.

As Abu Sufyan and his men returned to Mecca, they were met by riders from Abdul Kays who were on their way to Medina to purchase supplies. Abu Sufyan stopped them and asked them to go to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), with the promise that he would load their camels with raisins if they delivered his message. The riders agreed, so Abu Sufyan told them, "Tell Muhammad that we are resolved to engage him and his Companions again. But next time we will make sure to rid ourselves of them completely!"

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and the believers were still resting at Hamra Al Asad when the riders approached and delivered the message. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) responded with a verse from the Koran that reads:

" ... Allah is sufficient for us.
He is the Best Guardian."
Koran 3:173

The danger had passed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) out of concern and mercy for his Companions, sent a message to them telling them that they were to remain in the camp for three more days in order to recuperate. During this time Sa'ad Ubadha's son, returned to Medina and arranged for a herd of camels to be loaded with dates and driven to the camp. When they arrived some of the camels were slaughtered so that there was a plentiful supply of meat to strengthen the Muslims.

RETURN TO MEDINA

It was now Thursday and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) with his Companions returned to Medina and learned that both Shammās and Malik had died from their wounds. In accordance with the instructions of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) the body of Shammās had been taken to Uhud and buried in the company of his fellow martyrs. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) learned that Malik had been buried in Medina he told his family to re-bury him at Uhud and so he was mercifully laid to rest with his companions.

A TIME FOR MOURNING

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) passed the homes of the Ansar tribes of Abdul Ashhai and Zafar his eyes filled with tears when he heard the sound of women gently weeping and mourning the loss of their beloved ones, and he said, "There are no women to mourn for Hamza." Sa'ad Mu'adhs son overheard the Prophet's remark and asked the womenfolk of his tribe to go to the Mosque and pray for Hamza, this they did and after a while the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) thanked them, then supplicated for them and told them to return home.

THE DEBT OF ABDULLAH

Due to his circumstances, Abdullah, Jabir's father, had for the past two years, taken several loans from his Jewish neighbors. No sooner had Abdullah's creditors learned of his death than they wasted no time in pressing Jabir to settle the matter. There was

very little to offer, however there was the harvest of his father's date palms which Jabir hoped would satisfy them, but all refused saying the harvest was insufficient.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was concerned when he learned of Jabir's predicament, so went to him immediately and asked him to request his creditors to come and see him. The creditors arrived and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated to Allah, whereupon each creditor, to their absolute amazement, received dates equal to the repayment of Abdullah's debt. They were even more astonished when they observed the remaining amount of dates equaled that of Abdullah's usual annual crop, yet their hearts remained hardened.

THE JUMAH PRAYER

It was Friday, and the time had come to offer the congregational Jumah prayer. As the Companions arrived they seated themselves on the ground in rows and waited for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to enter and give the sermon.

Before Uhud, Abdullah, Ubayy's son had always been respected by the people of Medina and consequently afforded a much coveted position in the front line of prayer. It had been his practice since the Prophet's arrival in Medina to stand up before the Jumah prayer and say, "O people, this is the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Allah has honored and raised you by him!" However, this time when he stood up to make his pronouncement before the prayer some of the Companions tugged at his robe saying, "Sit down, you enemy of Allah! You are not worthy of this after what you did."

Abdullah was numb to the seriousness of his desertion and felt as if he had been treated badly, so he left the prayer line stepping over the heads of the congregation saying, "One would suppose I had done something terrible, I only got up to strengthen his position!" As he reached the door of the Mosque and Ansar was entering and asked him why he was leaving whereupon he repeated what he had just said so the Ansar advised, "Go back and let the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ask for your forgiveness." Steeped in blind pride, Abdullah refused saying, "By Allah, it is not necessary for him to do so!"

CHAPTER 74 REVELATIONS CONCERNING UHUD

A few days after the engagement, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received several verses concerning various aspects of the battle and its participants. One such verse spoke of previously unknown frailty of the tribes of Salamah and Haritha who had at one point considered desertion but Allah turned to them in His Mercy and strengthened them, so that they fought with great valor against the unbelievers.

"Two parties of you were about to fail,
though Allah was their Guardian,
and in Allah believers put all their trust."
Koran 3:122

When the tribe of Haritha heard the Revelation they went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that they thought they were one of the two parties

referred to in the verse and that it had been indeed been through the blessing of Allah that they had been strengthened and not turned away.

Those that had fled seeking the protection of the mountain despite the Prophet's order to return to the battle were also mentioned:

"And when you were going up, and paid no heed for anyone,
and the Messenger was calling you from behind;
so He rewarded you with grief upon grief
that you might not sorrow for what escaped you neither for what smote you.
And Allah is Aware of what you do.
Then, after sorrow, He sent down upon you safety.
Slumber overtook a party, while another party cared only for themselves
thinking of Allah thoughts that were not true, the guess of ignorance,
saying, 'Have we any say in the affair?' Say, 'The entire affair belongs to Allah.'
They conceal in themselves what they do not disclose to you.
They say, 'If we had any say in the affair we should not have been killed here.'
Say, 'Had you stayed in your homes, those of you for whom slaying was written,
would have come out to their (death) beds
so that Allah might try what was in your chests
and that He will examine what is in your hearts.'
And Allah knows the innermost of the chests."
Koran 3:153-154

Of some of those who were eager to engage the Koraysh at Uhud rather than in Medina and then deserted it was revealed:

"Did you suppose that you would enter Paradise
without Allah knowing those of you who struggled and who were patient?
You used to wish for death before you met it,
so you have seen it while you were looking."
Koran 3:142-143

Referring to the archers who disobeyed the Prophet's instruction:

"Allah has been true to His promise towards you when you routed them by His leave
until you lost heart, and quarreled about the matter, and disobeyed,
after He had shown you that which you loved.
Some among you wanted the world, and some among you wanted the Everlasting Life.
Then He made you turn away from them in order to test you.
But He has forgiven you, for Allah is Bounteous to the believers."
Koran 3:152

However, regarding those who deserted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) before they reached Uhud, it was later revealed when they proved themselves to be penitent believers:

"Those of you who turned away on the day when the two armies met
must have been seduced by satan on account of some of what they had earned.
But Allah has pardoned them. He is Forgiving and Clement."
Koran 3:155

In another Revelation, Allah challenged the Muslims who had despaired when it was rumored that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was dead, saying:

"Muhammad is not except a Messenger; Messengers have passed away before him. If he dies or is killed, will you turn about on your heels? And he who turns on his heels will not harm Allah a thing. Allah will recompense the thankful."
Koran 3:144

Regarding the martyrs, Abdullah, Masood's son said that it was explained to them by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that the souls of martyrs at Uhud had been placed in the bellies of a flock of green birds that come down to the rivers in the Garden to eat of its fruits. When they return, their home is in the shade of the Throne of Allah decked with candlesticks of gold. Upon their return Allah asks them, "O My worshipers, is there anything that you wish for so that I might give you more?" To which they reply, "O our Lord, there is nothing beyond the Garden which You have given us, from which we eat as we please."

Then, Allah asks them this question three times and each time the reply is the same except for the last when the martyrs add, "Except that our souls be returned to our bodies so that we might return to earth and fight for You until we are martyred again."

Ibn Abbas said that one day he heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tell his Companions that the martyrs reside in a tent by a river named Barik. He told them that Barik flows by the entrance to the Garden and that their provision is brought from the Garden each day in the morning and evening.

CHAPTER 75 AFTER UHUD

Two months of peace followed the hostilities of Uhud. However, the Muslims were rightfully on their guard against a surprise attack from the Koraysh and in particular their allies from the not-so-far away tribes in the Najd.

When news reached Medina that the tribe of Asad, Khuzaymah's son were planning an attack, the time had come to let it be known that even though matters had not gone as well for the Muslims at Uhud as they had at Badr, they were able to fight for their belief and right to exist. With this intent, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered a cavalry of a hundred and fifty well-armed men to ride out under the command of Abu Salamah to engage the enemy in a surprise attack.

When the time came, Abu Salamah lead the attack quickly and skillfully with the result that there was very little loss of life on either side. The unbelievers were routed and fled whilst Abu Salamah and his men returned to Medina with a large herd of camels and three herdsmen as spoils of war. The attack had further merits, not only had Medina been protected from the planned attack but their victory sent a clear message to the unbelievers that they were still very capable of defending themselves.

ABDULLAH, CHIEF OF THE TRIBE OF LEHYAN

Abdullah was the chief of the tribe of Lehyan, a branch of the Hudayl. He was a very evil man well known for his hatred of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and had succeeded to incite his tribe to take up arms against him.

When news reached Medina of Abdullah's action, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), rather than sending an army against the entire tribe, sent Abdullah from the tribe of Khazraj to put an end to his name-sake.

Abdullah had never seen the chieftain and asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) how he might recognize him whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed him, "When you see him, he will remind you of satan, and you will start to shudder."

Upon reaching his destination Abdullah had no difficulty identifying him, for sure enough right before him stood the most evil looking man he had ever seen and he began to shudder. Without a second thought Abdullah put an end to the chieftain and escaped unharmed to Medina. Now that their chieftain was dead the majority of the tribe had little interest left in attacking the Muslims, however, the matter of revenge remained upon the mind of several tribal members.

REVENGE

Sometime after the hostilities at Uhud, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent twelve of his Companions out on reconnaissance under the command of Asim, Thabit's son. When the party arrived at Hudat, which lies between Ufan and Mecca, they were spotted and their whereabouts relayed to the tribe of Lehyan, who set out in hot pursuit with approximately one hundred archers against the small band of men.

Soon after, Asim and his companions noticed clouds of dust rising high in the air coming directly towards them. Asim realized that he and his companions were greatly outnumbered, so he ordered them to climb to higher ground where they had a better chance to defend themselves.

When the enemy arrived they spread themselves out and surrounded Asim and his companions. As Asim and his companions prepared to defend themselves, one of the unbelievers called out to them saying, "If you come down and surrender to us, your lives will be spared!" Asim did not trust them and refused, saying, "We will not leave our positions to accept the promise of an unbeliever." Then he supplicated to Allah saying, "O Allah, convey our situation to Your Messenger."

Seconds after, volleys of arrows flew through the air and Asim, together with all but three of his companions were martyred. When the survivors, Khubaib, Zaid the son of Dathanah, and one other saw the condition of the rest of their companions they agreed to surrender with the promise that their lives would be spared, and went down to surrender.

THE THREE PRISONERS

As soon as the companions reached the bottom of the hill, the unbelievers overpowered them, took the strings from their bows then bound them. The third companion spoke saying, "This is the first violation of your promise. By Allah, I will not accompany you and will follow the example of my other companions!" The unbelievers

pulled him and tried to drag him along with them but he resisted with all his might so they martyred him and took Khubaib and Zaid back with them to Mecca to be sold.

Khubaib had killed Harith, Amir's son during the encounter at Badr, so when his relatives found out that he had been captured they bought him and bound him tightly in chains, and called for a family meeting to decide what they were going to do with him. All were in agreement that they should revenge themselves by killing him, however one of the Sacred Months was now upon them, a time when spilling blood was forbidden, and so Harith's relatives had to wait until the passing of the sacred period to resolve the matter.

Zaid had been sold to Safwan and he too decided that he would not spare his life, but like Harith's relatives, he too was bound by adherence to the Sacred Months.

THE MERCY OF KHUBAIB

During his imprisonment, Khubaib, who had been separated from Zaid, borrowed a knife from one of Harith's daughters. Shortly afterwards, her young son wandered up to Khubaib and sat on his lap whilst the knife still remained in his hand. When the child's mother saw what had happened she was terrified. Khubaib realized her great fear and asked, "Are you afraid that I would kill him? I am not capable of doing such a thing," and he sent the youngster back to his mother, for he had learned from our beloved Prophet's example that such an action was not only unjust and dishonorable, but more importantly forbidden, and there was no place for such a despicable action in Islam.

From that time onward, whenever Khubaib was mentioned, the boy's mother always spoke highly of him and would often remark how she had seen Khubaib eating fresh grapes even though they were not in season and would comment, "I am sure that it was Allah who sent Khubaib food!" And these two important factors made a great impression upon her.

When the time came for Khubaib and Zaid to be martyred, they were taken separately to a place outside Mecca called Tan'im. When they met, they greeted each other with peace and exhorted each other to be patient. Khubaib was the first to be martyred, but before his martyrdom he requested that he be permitted to offer two units of prayer. The unbelievers agreed and released him from his chains whereupon he offered his prayer. After its completion he turned to his captors saying, "I would have made my prayer longer if I had not thought that you might think I was afraid of death." Then he supplicated, "O Allah, count them and kill them one by one, and do not spare any of them."

THE MARTYRDOM OF KHUBAIB AND ZAID

Khubaib was bound to a stake and the unbelievers told him that they would spare his life if he recanted, but he refused, saying, "If you were to offer me all the things in the world I would still refuse." The unbelievers tried to persuade Khubaib still further and asked, "Don't you wish that it was Muhammad in your place and that you were sitting at home!" With deep affection for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), Khubaib replied, "No, I would not wish that Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) would even be pricked by a thorn and that I should sit at home." The unbelievers continued with their attempt to make him recant but their words fell upon deaf ears and a strong, believing heart.

Khubaib wished that he could be martyred facing the direction of his beloved Ka'ba, but the unbelievers refused, so he said, "If I am killed as a Muslim, I do not care on which side I fall. My death is in the Cause of Allah, and if He wills, He will bless the severed portions of my limbs."

Just before they began to martyr him, he offered a final supplication saying, "O Allah, there is no man present who will take my greetings of peace to Your Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), so convey my greetings of peace to him for me."

In the crowd that had gathered there were about forty young boys whose fathers had been killed at Badr. As the Koraysh prepared to take their revenge they gave each of the boys a spear saying, "This is the one that killed your father." One by one the boys wounded Khubaib with the spears but their strength was not enough to kill him and he lingered on for an hour until the fatal wound was delivered. During his last hour he repeated over and over again the words, "There is no god except Allah, Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah."

Khubaib was finally martyred when an older man placed his hand over that of one of the boys and plunged his spear forceful into him, and so Khubaib joined Asim and his companions. Khubaib was the first Muslim to offer two units of prayer before martyrdom.

As martyrdom fell upon Khubaib, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was sitting with his Companions in Medina. Unseen by his Companions, Angel Gabriel brought Khubaib's greeting of peace to him, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "And upon him be the peace and mercy of Allah," then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with sadness in his voice informed his Companions that Khubaib had been martyred.

Zaid's martyrdom followed soon after Khubaib's, he too offered two units of prayer and was martyred in the same manner of Khubaib.

THE SWARM OF BEES

As for Asim, who had been martyred before the onset of the forbidden months, he had killed a Koraysh chieftain at Badr. When the news reached Mecca that he lay dead on the hillside, a party set off to bring back a recognizable portion of his body to satisfy their lust for revenge. However, when the unbelievers reached the hill they found that Allah had sent a swarm of bees to protect his body and so they were unable to approach him and returned to Mecca without mutilating him.

CHAPTER 76

LADY ZAYNAB, DAUGHTER OF KHUZAYMAH

Lady Zaynab was the daughter of Khuzaymah from the Bedouin tribe of Hilal bin Amir and well known for her generosity. She concerned herself with the welfare of the poor and would go out of her way to help them whenever she could. It was on account of her caring nature that even before she embraced Islam she was endearingly referred to as "Mother of the Poor."

Zaynab had married Abdullah, Jahsh's son who had been blessed with martyrdom. She was sad at her loss but became patient and contented herself in the knowledge that her husband had been given the best of rewards, the reward of Paradise and continued to help those less fortunate than herself.

A year had passed since the martyrdom of Abdullah and Zaynab had not remarried. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) caringly proposed marriage to her, she felt honored and accepted so they were married in the 3rd year after the migration and a room was added onto the outside of the Mosque for her. The marriage was not destined to last long as in the months to come Lady Zaynab passed away. Through the blessing of her marriage to the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) Allah had raised and rewarded Lady Zaynab for her patience, virtue and charitable affairs, and she like her co-wives was honored by being given a title, the like of which, no other woman had been ever given, which is that of "Mother of Believers."

THE VISIT OF ABU BARA

Shortly after their marriage they received a visit from Abu Bara, the elderly chieftain of Lady Zaynab's tribe. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) welcomed him and spoke to him of Islam, and his heart inclined toward it, although he was not as yet prepared to make a commitment. Abu Bara recognized the high principals of Islam, and its morality and knew its teachings would benefit his tribe, so he asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to send some of his Companions to them so that they might learn.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) agreed to the request but at the same time expressed his concern for the safety of his Companions' journey, for Abu Bara's tribe lay beyond the land belonging to the hostile tribes of Sulaym and Ghatafan, and it was this that caused his concern.

After Abu Bara's assurance that the Companions would travel in safety under his protection, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) agreed and appointed Mundhir, Amir's son from the tribe of Khazrah to lead the delegation. As a matter of precaution, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) sent another of his Companions with a letter on in advance to Abu Bara's tribe informing them of their chieftain's request for the presence of the delegation. Forty Companions, known for their piety and knowledge were chosen and set off across the desert on their mission.

THE TREACHERY OF ABU BARA'S NEPHEW

During Abu Bara's absence, his ambitious nephew, who longed for tribal leadership, courted his fellow tribesmen in an attempt to overthrow their aging chieftain. When the Prophet's Companion arrived at their village, Abu Bara's nephew set upon him and martyred him. Then he called upon the rest of the tribe to do the same to the other Companions when they arrived.

The majority of the tribe remained loyal to Abu Bara and when his nephew realized they were not going to follow his orders, he sent a message to the tribe of Sulaym informing them that the Prophet's Companions would soon journey across their land. The tribe of Sulaym, always anxious to take revenge, lost no time and set off in search of the unsuspecting Companions.

THE ATTACK OF THE TRIBE OF SULAYM

At the well of Maunah, the Companions stopped to rest whilst Harith, As-Simmah's son and Amr from the tribe of Kinanah went off to tend to the camels. It was during this time that tribesmen from the Sulaym caught up with them and relentlessly attacked until they lay martyred by the well.

No sooner had the camels been settled and left to graze, Harith and Amr made their way back to the well. As they approached, to their great distress, they noticed birds of prey circling above the well and fear for their Companions engulfed their hearts. They approached the well with caution and to their great distress their fear was realized as their eyes gazed upon their martyred companions laying where they had fallen whilst the Sulaym tribesmen stood around talking to one another.

Amr thought it was best to return to Medina with the news, but Harith told him, "I cannot hold myself back from fighting here where Mundhir was martyred," whereupon he charged among the Sulaym and killed two of them. Amr joined in the fight and both were taken prisoner. Harith's captors asked him what he thought they should do with him, to which he replied, "Take me to the body of Mundhir, give me a weapon and let me fight." Strange as it may seem, his captors agreed and Harith killed two more of their tribesmen before he himself was martyred.

THE MISSING MARTYR

As for Amr, the Sulaym decided to release him and let him live, but before doing so they asked him to tell them the names of those whom they had killed. As Amr walked among his martyred Companions he informed them of both their name and lineage, then someone asked if any were missing and Amr replied, "I did not find Amir, Fuhayrah's son, the freed man of Abu Bakr." Whereupon the tribesman inquired what kind of position Amir had held amongst them. Amr replied, "He was among the best of us, one of the Prophet's earlier Companions." Upon hearing this the tribesman turned to Amr and said, "Shall I tell you what happened to him?" then called for a fellow tribesman named Jabar. Jabar had been the one to martyr Amir and related how he had thrust his spear into Amir's back with such force that it had gone straight through his chest, and that with his last breath Amir had cried out, "By Allah, I have triumphed!" Jabar told Amr that he was surprised to hear such words from a dying man, and as he removed his spear from his chest, he witnessed Amir's body being lifted gently into the air and taken away by unseen hands high into the sky until it was no longer visible. Amr explained that by "triumph" Amir had referred to his attainment of Paradise. When Jabar heard this he embraced Islam.

Just before Amr returned to Medina he was told that his aggressors had learned of their presence from one of Abu Bara's tribe. Amr was grieved by what appeared to be a treacherous act of the tribe and with a heavy heart set off for Medina.

As he journeyed, Amr came across two men from Abu Bara's tribe. Amr was unaware of the attempt to overthrow Abu Bara and that most of his fellow tribesmen had distanced themselves from the treachery of his nephew. Supposing the tribesmen were among those responsible for the loss of his companions, Amr attacked and killed both of them. It was a regrettable incident, both men were in fact loyal to Abu Bara.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of the martyrdom of his Companions and how Amir had been taken away, he told those around him that it was the angels that had taken him to Illiyyun which is among the highest of residences in

Paradise. As for the dead tribesmen, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was deeply saddened and justly ordered blood-money to be paid to their next of kin in restitution.

SEEDS OF BELIEF

When the tribesmen of the Sulaym returned to their people, they related what had happened by the well and told how they had stood in awe as Amr's body was carried away up into the sky and watched until he was no longer visible. The miraculous event was told and retold many times, and so the seeds of Islam were sown in the hearts of the tribe of Sulaym.

CHAPTER 77

A PLOT TO MURDER THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

The matter of how to raise sufficient money to recompense the family of the two innocent dead tribesmen of Abu Bara weighed heavily upon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Now, the Jewish tribe of Nadir had entered into an agreement with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and were also friendly to Abu Bara's tribe, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided to go to them and ask their help.

Omar and Abu Bakr accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to the fortresses of the Nadir that lay on the outskirts of Medina. Upon their arrival they asked to speak with their chieftains, whereupon they were taken to them and explained the reason for their visit. The chieftains appeared sympathetic and agreeable to help in the matter so they invited him and his Companions to stay a little while to eat with them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never refused an invitation and accepted, whereupon several of the tribesmen including Huyay, one of their fellow chieftains, excused themselves, which one could have supposed would have been to make preparations for the meal.

Not long after Huyay and the others had excused themselves, unseen by anyone else, the Angel Gabriel appeared to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that Huyay and his companions were planning to kill him and that he must return home immediately. As soon as Gabriel left, without saying a word, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) got up and left the gathering. The Companions waited for his return and when it became evident that he was not going to return, they too left and made their way back to the Prophet's house.

When the Companions arrived, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them of Gabriel's warning and described to them the manner in which the Jewish chieftains had planned to murder him. After that, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Muhammad, Maslamah's son back to the fortresses with a message. As Muhammad approached the fortresses the chieftains came out to meet him and Muhammad told them, "The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) has sent me to you and instructed me to tell you that on account of your plot to kill him, the treaty he made with you no longer exists." Then, much to their amazement he described in detail the plan they had devised, the plan of which alone they were aware. Muhammad continued to deliver the rest of the message and gave them an ultimatum saying, "The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gives you ten days in which to leave Medina, whosoever

remains behind after that will be killed." The Jews were deeply shocked to learn that their treachery had been exposed and that it was Gabriel who had been the informant and said as a matter of bravado, "O son of Maslamah, we never thought that a man from Aws would ever bring us a message such as this!" Muhammad replied, "Hearts have changed," and returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

CHAPTER 78

THE TRIBE OF NADIR DECLARE WAR

Word of the ultimatum spread through the tribe and preparations were in progress for their departure when a message was received from ibn Ubayy that promised his support and encouraged them to stay. Huyay was greatly heartened by the promise and convinced his people to stay. With high hopes, Huyay sent word to his cousins, the tribe of Krayzah, and asked them to lend their support, for he was confident that they would not let him down, and at the same time he sent word to their allies, the tribe of Ghatafan, known for their hostility towards the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to come to their aid.

As soon as the messages had been sent, Huyay and his tribesmen stocked their fortresses with rocks, catapults, arrows, and whatever weaponry they could lay their hands on in readiness. Huyay was confident that his cousins and allies would arrive at any moment and sent his brother to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with a message that informed him they were prepared to fight. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received the message, he exclaimed: "Allah is Great," and his Companions around him reiterated his exaltation -- the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "The Jews have declared war."

Immediately, the Muslims rallied to the side of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who then handed the standard to Ali. That afternoon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his army marched until the fortresses of the Nadir were in sight and observed that the Jews had barricaded themselves within their walls and that the settlement was now completely deserted.

After the prayer had been offered, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led his Companions on toward the fortresses. The Jews let loose a volley of arrows and they whistled through the air and thereafter the hostilities continued up until nightfall.

During the night hours, the number of the Prophet's Companions increased as those who had only just learned of the Prophet's march joined them. As their numbers swelled, the Muslims were soon able to surround the fortresses and this alarmed the Jews. However, they expected their kinsmen to arrive the next day which would ease the situation.

After offering the night prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entrusted Ali with the command of the army and together with ten of his Companions returned to Medina. Throughout the night Ali led his brethren praising and exalting Allah, the hours slipped away, and soon the sky began to lighten, it was time to offer the Fajr prayer.

There was still no sign of the help the Jews so confidently relied upon. Unknown to Huyay and his tribe, their cousins from the tribe of Krayzah were not inclined to break

their pact with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As for ibn Ubayy, the circumstances were such that he felt unable to keep his promise, and so Huyay continued to wait in vain for their arrival together with the expected support from the tribe of Ghatafan.

Later on that morning the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his Companions and fighting broke out once more. The days passed and Huyay's hopes turned into fear. Ten days later, the Angel Gabriel brought the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) a new verse:

"Whatever palm-tree you cut down or left standing upon its roots,
it is by the permission of Allah, so that He might humiliate the impious."
Koran 59:5

Thereupon he ordered the cutting down of several highly prized date palms belonging to the Nadir. Dates were a vital part of the Nadir's economy so when Huyay saw the trees being felled he was greatly dismayed. In the back of Huyay's mind he remembered the promise of the Koraysh to annihilate the Muslims one day and thought if he and his tribe were compelled to temporarily leave their homes, they could return later, reclaim their palms, and re-establish their settlement. But now the trees were being felled and he knew it would take many years to replace them, which would greatly affect their livelihood.

With this harsh reality on his mind. Huyay begrudgingly sent word of surrender to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) accepted but told them that they were to be expelled from their land. Even in such circumstances, the mercy of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was manifested as he allowed them to take their camels and all that they could carry with the exception of weapons and armor. He was indeed generous and merciful to them for it was in his power to seize everything they owned and expel them with nothing except the clothes on their back, but this was not his way.

Huyay was ungrateful and did not like the terms of surrender, he knew that their camels were incapable of carrying all their possessions, and then there was the matter of weapons and armor. However, his tribesmen were not in a mood to listen to him and forced him to accept.

The confrontation was over and the Nadir tribesmen left their fortresses and returned home to pack as much as they could onto their camels. Once the packing had been completed, their women-folk adorned themselves with all their jewelry, then mounted their camels laden with rugs of the finest quality. It had always been known that the tribe was extremely rich, however it was not until that moment that the extent of their wealth was realized. With an air of insolence and in single file, the tribe of Nadir left Medina defiantly flaunting their wealth as they rode out, accompanied by music.

Most of the tribe decided to resettle at Khybar where they owned land, however others preferred to journey further afield to either Jericho or southern Syria.

As for the many date palms still left standing, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received a new Revelation that said:

"(A share of the spoils shall also be given)
to the poor emigrants who were expelled from their homes and their possessions,
who seek the Favor and Pleasure of Allah, and help Allah and His Messenger.
These are they that are truthful.
And those before them who, had made their dwelling in the abode (Medina),
and because of their belief love those who have emigrated to them;
they do not find any (envy) in their chests for what they have been given
and prefer them above themselves, even though they themselves have a need.
Whosoever is saved from the greed of his own soul, they are the ones who win."
Koran 59:8-9

And so in compliance with the verse, the spoils were distributed among the new immigrants and Muhajir. When the Muhajir first arrived in Medina the Ansars had generously shared their groves with their new brothers, but now even though the Muhajir had been given the groves of the Nadir, the Ansar still wished them to keep the groves they had given them.

THE END OF THE 3RD YEAR

The third year was drawing to a close, it was the year in which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had married Lady Hafsa, Omar's daughter and Lady Zaynab, daughter of Khuzaymah and Lady Umm Kulthum, the daughter of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had married Othman, Affan's son.

The encounter at Uhud had all but been lost on account of the disobedience of some of the Companions, who were later forgiven by Allah through their sincere repentance.

It was after Uhud that Allah sent down verses that forbade alcohol. Now not only the consumption and production, but its transportation was also forbidden.

Then, more recently the treachery of the Jewish tribe with Nadir's attempt to poison the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been exposed that finally resulted in their expulsion from Medina.

CHAPTER 79 THE FOURTH YEAR

Eight months after their marriage in the 4th year after the migration, Lady Zaynab was taken ill and passed away. She was buried near the grave of the Prophet's daughter, Lady Rukiyah, in the graveyard of Baki, may Allah be pleased with them and grant them perfect peace.

THE DEATH OF ABU SALAMAH

Abu Salamah's family were originally from Medina, from the tribe of Asad. However, they had at one time, settled in Mecca under the sponsorship of his uncle, Abu Talib. It was there that Abu Salamah, met and married Umm Salamah from the tribe of Mughirah, who was then eighteen years of age. From the very beginning their marriage had been a happy one, and they had been among the early converts that migrated to Abyssinia.

ALLAH ACCEPTS THE TENDER PRAYER OF ABU SALAMAH

Such was their love for each other that one day Umm Salamah told her husband that if he should die before her, she would not remarry. It was a touching gesture, times were difficult, especially for a woman, so Abu Salamah told her that if this should be the case, she should remarry. He then supplicated, saying, "May Allah grant Umm Salamah, after I am gone, a man better than myself who will neither sadden nor harm her."

Several months before, during the hostilities at Uhud, Abu Salamah had been severely wounded and his wife nursed him as best she could. The wound appeared to heal and he went about his daily life, however a deep infection lay dormant below the injury and the festering wound broken open. The infection could not be contained and soon the poison spread rapidly through his body until he passed away.

Abu Salamah was a cousin of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and when he learned of his death, he went straight to his house to pray for him. Upon reaching the grieving household he bent over Abu Salamah and gently closed his eye lids as he told his family, "When the soul of a person is taken away, the vision of the eye also follows it."

There was great sadness in the household and tears began to flow as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) consoled them saying, "Supplicate for that which is good for yourselves, because the angels say Ameen to your supplications." Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then supplicated, "O Allah, forgive Abu Salamah and exalt his rank among those who are guided, and be the Guardian of those he has left behind. O Lord of the worlds, forgive him and all of us, and make his grave spacious and illumine it for him."

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew well the great bond between Umm Salamah and her husband, and understood the loss she now felt, so he turned to her and told her to supplicate saying, "O Allah, forgive me and him and give to me in return a good replacement," so Umm Salamah offered the supplication. But deep in her heart she knew that none of the Companions could ever replace Abu Salamah, for he was so very loving and caring and she choked back her tears as she said, "No one could be better than Abu Salamah."

THE MARRIAGE OF MERCY

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) MARRIES LADY UMM SALAMAH

Four months after the death of Abu Salamah, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Umm Salamah to be his wife. Umm Salamah was completely overwhelmed and totally unprepared for the proposal and modestly said, "I am no longer young and the mother of orphans. By nature I am a jealous person and you, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) have other wives." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "I am older than you; as for your jealousy, I will supplicate to Allah that it is taken away from you. As for your orphaned children, Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) will take care of them."

The sincere response of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) touched Lady Umm Salamah's heart and shortly afterward, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Lady Umm Salamah were married, whereupon she lived in Lady Zaynab's apartment adjoining the Mosque.

THE BIRTH OF AL HUSAIN

During the 4th year, Lady Fatima and Imam Ali were blessed with a second son whom the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) named Al Husain.

It was a joyous event and everyone gave thanks for the safe delivery of Hasan's baby brother.

CHAPTER 80 THE SECOND MEETING AT BADR

After the encounter of Uhud, Abu Sufyan had challenged the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to a second encounter at Badr the following year. The months had passed quickly and the time for the challenge approached.

Drought had stricken the region yet again and food for both human and livestock was in very short supply. Abu Sufyan was aware of the fact that once he and his army left Mecca the vegetation of the desert would be insufficient to support the need of his mounts and that he would be forced to take fodder with them, and that was by no means an easy task.

The challenge was a matter of honor not only for Abu Sufyan but for the entire tribe of Koraysh. He knew well that if he were to fail to meet the challenge that he himself had initiated, disgrace would fall upon him and his tribe as its news spread throughout Arabia.

As Abu Sufyan pondered over the matter, news arrived that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his army had already begun to prepare themselves for the encounter, so Abu Sufyan wasted no time in calling his fellow chieftains together to discuss the matter.

Suhail, a Koraysh chieftain, was among those that attended the meeting and it so happened to Nu'aym, an influential friend with the power of persuasion from the tribe of Ghatafan, happened to be visiting him. Suhail told his fellow chieftains of Nu'aym's presence and so it was decided that they would approach him with the offer of twenty fine camels if he could persuade the Muslims to back down from their side of the challenge. Deep down in his heart Nu'aym had already started to incline towards the message the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) preached, as he instinctively knew that the idols he and his tribe held as gods were nothing but the fabrication of his ancestors. However, the temptation of owning twenty fine camels swayed his reasoning and he decided to accept the challenge and set off for Medina.

As Nu'aym approached the oasis outside Medina, he noticed a group of Muslims so he made his way over to them and started to sow the seeds of apprehension. Nu'aym spoke with such conviction that it was hard not to believe him as he mentioned the supposedly formidable, well-equipped army of Abu Sufyan.

Nu'aym continued on to Medina where he spread his alarming tales amongst each section of the society. After each narration he would conclude with words that urged the Muslims not to go out against Abu Sufyan and conveyed his fear that not one of them would remain after the encounter. Needless to say, those in opposition to the

Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) were greatly heartened by the news and not only helped to spread the tales but embellished them.

Nu'aym was so convincing that a large number of Muslims inclined to his concluding remarks. When news of this reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) he was concerned. However, during a consultation with Abu Bakr and Omar, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told his Companions, "I will go, even if I go alone," whereupon his Companions said in support of his resolve, "Allah will support His religion; He will give strength to His Messenger." When the Muslims learned of the Prophet's intent to go alone if needed, they rallied around him and completely disregarded Nu'aym's rumors.

Nu'aym had been so close to receiving his reward, however it was surprisingly of little concern to him that he had failed in his mission. Like so many others he had observed the ways of the Muslims and been impressed by their conviction so much that his heart inclined still further to Islam.

THE MARCH TO BADR

Shortly after this, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his army set off for the second encounter at Badr with fifteen hundred riding camels and ten horses.

It so happened that this time of year was also the time of Badr's annual fair, a time when merchants from all over Arabia journeyed there to sell their wares, and then perhaps continue onto Mecca to offer their pilgrimage. Such was the strength of the Muslim's faith that many of them, despite of the challenge that loomed over them, loaded their mounts with merchandise to sell or trade at the fair.

THE DILEMMA OF ABU SUFYAN

Abu Sufyan remained reluctant to set forth for Badr, however the matter of honor or dishonor weighed heavily upon him. In an effort to keep face, whilst quite unaware of the fact that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had already departed from Medina, Abu Sufyan called upon the other chieftains, saying, "Let us set out and journey for a couple of nights, and then return. If Muhammad has not already left, he will soon learn that we went out to meet him and on account of not finding him we returned home. In this way it will be counted against him and for us!"

THE FAIR AT BADR

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his Companions reached Badr five days before Abu Sufyan and the Koraysh set out from Mecca. As there was neither sign nor news of Abu Sufyan, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his men continued on to the fair where they not only traded and sold their wares, but also reported the fact that Abu Sufyan had failed to keep his part of the challenge.

Abu Sufyan's failure was the main topic of conversation at Badr and soon the traders who had journeyed from all over Arabia spread the news as they traveled homeward. It was a moral victory for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and disgrace fell upon Abu Sufyan and the Koraysh.

Meanwhile, in Mecca the Koraysh chieftains chided Abu Sufyan for his lack of leadership, and told him that he should never have issued the challenge in the first

place. Discontent was evident among the Koraysh and they became further committed to ridding themselves of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers.

As for the Muslims, they returned to Medina rejoicing in the blessings Allah had sent them. As the summer's heat intensified, the fourth year drew to a close and with it came a blessed month of peace.

CHAPTER 81

THE FIFTH YEAR

The fifth year after the migration had just begun when news reached Medina that some of its neighboring tribes from the Ghatafan intended to raid their southern oasis.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of the news he called upon four hundred of his followers and together they rode out to the plain of Najd in pursuit. However, they reached the plain after the Ghatafan had left.

THE BIRD AND THE ANT COLONY

One day on the expedition, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left his Companions for a while. In his absence they found a red bird with two fledglings and caught them whilst their mother stood nearby, flapping her wings in distress upon the sand.

When the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned, he noticed the distraught mother bird and exclaimed, "Who has distressed this bird on account of its young -- return them to her." His mercy and respect for life was not restricted to humans for he was sent by Allah to be a mercy for all the worlds, and that included the avian, insect and animal kingdom.

Then he noticed an ant-hill that had been set on fire and asked, "Who has set this on fire?" Meekly his Companions replied that it was they that had done so whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) guided them telling them, "It is not right to torment with fire -- it is for Allah alone to punish with Fire."

THE CAMEL OF JABIR

On the return journey to Medina, the majority of the Prophet's Companions rode on ahead whilst he and some of his close Companions rode a distance behind to care for and ensure the safety of those who were unable to keep up.

Jabir, whose father had been martyred at Uhud, had a camel that was old and so frail that it could not keep up with the others. It wasn't long until the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caught up to Jabir whereupon he inquired why he was not with the rest of his companions, so Jabir mentioned the camel's condition. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Jabir to make his camel kneel and then dismount and he did the same. Then he asked Jabir to hand him his riding stick whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently prodded the old camel with it and told Jabir to remount. By the blessing of Allah, a miracle occurred and the camel's strength was revived to such a degree that it ran even faster than the Prophet's camel and they continued to ride together.

THE THREAT

THE HEART OF FREEDOM

The sun had reached its height and so when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his close Companions reached a valley in which thorn trees grew, he decided they would rest and each sought the shade of a separate tree.

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) dismounted, he took off his sword and hung it upon a branch then lay down to rest and fell asleep. Shortly after, a Bedouin named Ghawrath, Al Harith's son, came upon him, drew his sword and said in a voice that awoke him, "Do you fear me!" whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) answered calmly, "No". Ghawrath was surprised and demanded, "Who then will save you from me?" and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Allah," whereupon the sword fell from Ghawrath's hand to the ground. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) picked it up and asked, "Now, who will save you from me?" Ghawrath was shaken by the turn of events and pleaded, "Be a good captor," whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Will you bear witness that there is no god except Allah and that I am His Messenger?" Ghawrath answered, "No, but I promise that I will neither fight against you, nor will I join those who do so." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took Ghawrath at his word, for he was never oppressive, and let him go. Ghawrath was so struck by the leniency of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that upon his return to his tribe Ghawrath announced, "I have returned to you from someone who is the best of all mankind!"

THE COMPASSION AND GENEROSITY OF THE PROPHET salla Allahu alihi wa salaam

It was time to continue once more on their journey and as they rode, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Jabir if he would sell him his camel. Jabir replied that he preferred to give it to him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) declined Jabir's offer telling him that he wished to buy it from him, so Jabir asked him to name his price. In jest, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Jabir that he would buy it for a dirham. Jabir realized the jest and in the same tone replied, appreciating that the camel was no ordinary camel as it had been blessed, said that a dirham was insufficient. And so they continued until a price of forty dirhams was reached -- which was at that time equal to an ounce of gold -- and Jabir accepted.

As they continued their journey, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Jabir if he was married. Jabir replied that he was and that his wife had been married before. Jabir was a young man and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired why he had chosen a mature lady rather than a girl of similar age. Jabir told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that the reason for his choice was that his mother had passed away and after the martyrdom of his father at Uhud he had become responsible for his seven young sisters, so he had chosen a motherly kind of lady for a wife who would help him to care for them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was touched by Jabir's noble decision and commended him for his choice.

Medina lay but three miles away, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stopped at a place called Sirar and told Jabir of his intent to sacrifice some camels before entering the City. During the course of their conversation, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) commented to Jabir that by now his wife would have learned that he was almost home and be preparing the house for him, beating the sand from the cushions. Jabir told him that they had no cushions to which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied. "Allah willing, you will have some soon."

The morning after their return, Jabir took his camel and made it kneel outside the door of the Prophet's house. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) came out to greet him and asked him to leave the camel, and go to the Mosque, and offer two units of prayer, which he did.

After Jabir had offered his prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) instructed Bilal to weigh an ounce of gold, to which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) -- as was his generous custom -- added some extra. Jabir was pleased and gratefully took the gold, but as he turned to go the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called him back and told him to take the camel as a gift and keep the gold as well.

There are many other such accounts that relate to the Prophet's generous and caring nature. In turn, his Companions tried hard to emulate his fine example and it was through such fine examples that many a heart was reached and guided.

CHAPTER 82

SALMAN OF PERSIA

Many years before the advent of Islam, Salman had been raised by his father to serve in the temples of Persia. As Salman grew, he secretly started to challenge the validity of worshipping idols and started to search for the truth.

There were two sects of good living people who did not worship the Persian idols that interested Salman but both claimed that they followed the teachings of Jesus, however the doctrines were distinctively different. He listened to both sects and chose not to follow the one that preached the concept of the trinity as it occurred to him that worshipping three gods instead of One was very much akin to the pagan religions of Persia. Instead, he chose to follow the Nazarenes who taught the Creator was One and that Jesus was His prophet, not a god or yet His son. However, he hid his conversion from his father.

Salman had many experiences in his search for the truth, and served several bishops. The first bishop was however, corrupt. He took from the poor and used the proceeds to satisfy his lusts, so Salman abandoned him in search of one more pious.

He found an elderly, pious Nazarene bishop to teach him and in return he served him for many years until his death. When he died Salman sought to serve another Nazarene bishop and was blessed to find one who was more knowledgeable and pious than the last.

BISHOPS OF 1400 YEARS AGO

The bishop spoke to him many times about a special prophecy of Jesus. Salman was taught that it was written in the Holy Scriptures that Prophet Jesus had prophesied the coming of a new prophet who would be sent after him, and that he would appear in Arabia and went on to described the location of his appearance. As death approached the bishop, Salman asked if he knew of another bishop to guide him, but the Nazarene bishop said he knew of none. However, he advised him to go in search of the city he described in Arabia.

BISHOPS OF TODAY

It seems strange that the bishops of 1400 years ago awaited the coming of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). They knew his signs and even his birth-place, yet after his coming and their rejection, they abandoned this prophecy so that they neither await the coming of the last Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) nor even speak of it.

SALMAN'S ARRIVAL IN MEDINA

It was shortly after the death of the bishop that Salman's father learned of his son's conversion and in a burst of rage he had his son bound with rope so that he could not leave the house. Salman was a strong young man and one day as he sat bound in his room, news arrived that an Arab caravan was about to return to Arabia. It was the opportunity he had been waiting for, so he summoned all his strength, broke loose from the ropes that bound him and went to them. When Salman met the leader of the caravan he offered him a herd of camels and all his wealth if he would take him with them. The deal was struck and so shortly thereafter he left with them.

Just before the caravan reached Yathrib, as Medina was then called, the Arabs took not only Salman's camels and wealth but sold him into slavery to a Jew from the tribe of Krayzah. Salman was very disheartened by the turn of events until the Prophet's arrival in Medina. It was then that he was able to recognize that his circumstances had not been a misfortune as he had previously thought, but a very great blessing of Allah to him, for he had unknowingly, and certainly not through his own planning, arrived at the place the bishop described to him. And so it was that Salman converted to Islam.

Salman did his best to follow the ways of Islam but it was difficult and it grieved him when he was unable to take part in the encounters of Badr and Uhud, but as he was a slave he had no choice but to remain behind.

Salman seldom had a chance to meet his fellow Muslims as his owner made him work long hours in the fields and groves. He longed to be free and join his brethren and so one day he decided to go to his owner and ask how much he would need to buy himself out of his bondage. His owner demanded a very high price for his release -- no less than forty ounces of gold as well as three hundred planted date palms, whereupon Salman became very disheartened.

One day, Salman was blessed to meet the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him of his predicament. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who was deeply touched by Salman's story, told Salman to write his owner an agreement, saying that he would pay the amount required in full.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions about Salman and asked them to donate as many date palms as they could, the Companions responded generously. Some gave as many as thirty young palm tress, others twenty and so on until the required number was satisfied.

THE HUMILITY OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) WHO LABORED TO SECURE THE RELEASE OF HIS FOLLOWER

Now that the palms had been gathered, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Salman to go and prepare the land in readiness to plant the saplings and that once he

had finished, he would plant the trees himself. The Companions joined Salman in the preparation of the ground and together they dug the holes. As soon as the work was finished they told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so he returned with them to the grove and planted all but one of the trees. All except for one sapling flourished, the one that had not been planted by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), whereupon a new sapling was brought and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) planted it.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been given a nugget of gold -- about the size of a hen's egg -- and without a second thought gave it to Salman telling him to buy his freedom with it. Salman was concerned that the weight of the nugget would be insufficient and asked how much more gold would be necessary to complete the agreement. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated to Allah, then took the nugget, put it in his mouth, rolled his tongue around it, then gave it back to Salman saying, "Take it, and pay the full price with it." When the nugget was weighed, it weighed exactly forty ounces and Salman was released from slavery.

CHAPTER 83

THE MARAUDERS OF DUMAT AL JANDAL

For sometime, caravans destined for Medina carrying merchandize and provisions for the Muslims from Syria had been attacked and plundered. The perpetrators were, for the most part, marauders from the tribe of Kalb, and the attacks were usually carried out in a place called Dumat al Jandal, an oasis that lay on the border of Syria.

Another caravan destined for Medina had been robbed and it was clear that the marauders had no intention of ceasing their activities. It was time to take affirmative action and so with the intent of scattering the marauders and regaining their property, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), together with a thousand Muslims sped in haste across the desert to Dumat al Jandal. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers were well aware that news of their determination would spread swiftly throughout Arabia and that the desired message would reach its intended destinations.

CHAPTER 84

A PATTERN OF LIFE EMERGES

Only a few years prior to Islam, each tribe had governed itself. There had been little or no unity among the many tribes except for the occasional alliance that lay dormant until a situation arose. Now, Arabs from every quarter of Arabia began to flock to Medina bringing with them diversified approaches. To an unbeliever, the situation might well have spelled internal disaster, however Allah, in His Mercy united them all with one heart and sent down the verses:

" ... It is He who supported you with His victory and with believers, and brought their hearts together. If you had given away all the riches of the earth, you could not have so united them, but Allah has united them. He is Almighty, Wise."
Koran 8:62-63

And so it was that Muslims from a multitude of different backgrounds now settled in Medina and put aside their differences. They were united as one under Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), for Allah made obedience to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the same as being obedient to Him.

Each of the five obligatory daily prayers were offered in the Mosque and when Bilal called them to prayer, those able to attend made their way to join their brothers and sisters in the congregation.

During the interval between the obligatory evening and night prayer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would encourage his Companions to offer voluntary prayers informing them that, if Allah willed, it would increase their rank in Paradise. He would also expound the meaning of the verses of the Holy Koran and speak of the many rewards of Paradise as well as the punishment of Hell. He never spoke upon religious matters without either receiving instructions from Allah via the Angel Gabriel or having been shown them in a vision.

The sincere yearning of the Companions to come closer to their Lord was evident as they spent many hours during the night worshipping Allah. Allah makes mention of these Companions in the Koran saying:

" ... whose sides forsake their couches
as they supplicate to their Lord in fear and hope;
who give in charity of that which We have given them.
No soul knows what pleases the eye is in store
for them as a recompense for what they used to do." Koran 32:16-7

THE VALUE OF THE REMEMBRANCE (ZIKR) OF ALLAH AND HIS PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Allah said:
"So remember Me.
I will remember you.
Give thanks to Me
And do not be ungrateful towards Me."
Koran 2:152

He also said:

"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet.
Believers, praise and venerate him
and pronounce peace upon him in abundance."
Koran 33:56

One day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked his Companions, "Is there anyone of you who has enough strength to do a thousand goods in a day?" The Companions asked how this was possible, to which our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, 'If you exalt Allah a hundred times, you will be recompensed with a thousand good deeds, or a thousand of your sins will be wiped away.' He also told them if they said, 'Exalted is Allah, and to Him belongs all praise' a date palm would be planted for the suppliant in Paradise. The Companions were so grateful and

delighted with the news that they would often exceed the number, hoping for even greater rewards and forgiveness and the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never discouraged them from doing so,

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) taught his Companions that the example of one who remembers his Lord and the one who does not is like the difference between the living and the dead.

The Companions were overjoyed when he (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that Allah said, "I am to My worshipper as he imagines Me to be. I am with him when he remembers Me. If he remembers Me in his mind, I remember him in Mine, and if he remembers Me in company, I remember him in better company."

There were many poor people among the Companions who grieved at not being able to be charitable like their richer brethren. One day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions, "Shall I tell you what your best and purest deed is with your King that will raise your rank to the highest. One which is better for you than spending gold and silver, and is even better for you than if you should be engaged with the enemy and cut off their necks, and they cut off yours?" The Companions anxiously replied, "Indeed, please tell us!" He replied, "It is the remembrance of Allah, the Exalted."

THE PRAYER ON THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Such was the great love for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that his Companions were even more elated when he told them that every time they supplicated to Allah for praise and veneration upon him, (and even after Allah had taken him to Himself) an angel would come to him (in his resting place, rawdah) and inform him of the supplication and that Allah, in His Mercy, increased the supplication tenfold.

It is no wonder that no matter whether the companions were engaged in their work, daily chores or family life that one would see and hear them continuously supplicating for blessings upon our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and exalting Allah by remembering Him in His Precious Names.

SALMAN AND ABU DARDA

There were, however, some Companions that had become over zealous in their devotions and when it was brought to the attention of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he advocated moderation, for his manners were those established in the Holy Koran and he did not desire hardship for his followers. He recommended that the twenty-four hours of the day and night be ideally divided into three sections, a third for worship, a third for work and a third for the family.

One day, Salman decided to visit his friend Abu Darda. When Abu Darda's wife opened the door, he could not help but notice that her appearance was somewhat unkempt, so he inquired what the matter was, whereupon she told him that her husband had no desire for her.

Abu Darda heard the voice of his friend and came to greet him then prepared some food for Salman but told him to eat alone as he was offering voluntary fast. Salman refused to eat and told him that he would not eat unless he ate with him. So, Abu

Darda broke his voluntary fast and they ate together, later on that day he invited Salman to spend the night with him.

During the middle of the night Abu Darda arose to offer some voluntary prayers but Salman told him to go back to sleep, so he went back to bed. Later, Abu Darda arose again and Salman told him yet again to go back to bed. Towards the latter part of the night, Salman awoke him and together they offered their voluntary prayers.

After the conclusion of their prayers Salman reminded his friend that it is indeed true that one owes one's duty to his Lord, but, at the same time, the body has rights as well as his wife, and as such he must fulfill those duties accordingly.

The next morning the two friends went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to relate the matter, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) confirmed that Salman's moderate approach was the better.

THE FAST OF AMR

Abdullah, Amr's son told a friend of his intention to fast every day and spend the night offering voluntary prayers reciting the Koran in its entirety each night.

When news of Abdullah's intent reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he sent for him and asked if the report he heard was correct, whereupon Abdullah confirmed it to be so. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was concerned for Abdullah and told him that his intention would prove too difficult and advised that he offer the voluntary fast just three days a month as the value of a good deed is tenfold, and by fasting just three days a month his fast would be equal to the fast of a lifetime.

THE RECOMMENDATION OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) TO RECITE THE KORAN ONCE A MONTH AND TO FAST THREE DAYS A MONTH

Abdullah, who was a strong young man, told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he was capable of better than that, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) suggested that he fast every third day instead. When Abdullah persisted with his intention, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) advised him to fast alternate days. He told him that this way of fasting was the same way in which Prophet David, peace be upon him, fasted and that his fast was the most fair and that there was no fast better than that.

The compassionate wisdom of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) could not dissuade Abdullah, and so he fasted every day, prayed and recited the Koran during the night.

When old age overtook Abdullah, he told his family and companions that he wished he had taken the advice of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to fast three days during the month and complete the recitation of the Koran once during month. However, not wishing to abandon the word he had given to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he continued to fast until death overtook him, but would offer his complete recitation of the Koran over the course of the day and night.

THE VALUE OF THE CHAPTER "AL IKLAS – THE ONENESS"

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wished to tell his Companions about a certain subject, he would not force them to listen, rather, in humility he would ask if

they would like to know something. On one such occasion he asked his Companions, "Would any among you find it burdensome to recite one third of the Koran during the night? By He in whose Hands is my life, the recitation of the chapter "Al Ikhlas – the Oneness" is equal to one third of the Koran."

This short chapter is the essence of the Islamic belief and the simple unchanged and unchangeable message the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought:

"Say: 'He is Allah, the One, the called upon.
who has not given birth, and has not been born,
and there is none equal to Him.'"

Koran Chapter 112 Al Ikhlas – The Oneness

Such was the degree of the Companions sincerity not only in belief, actions, and deeds that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) described them as being like the stars shining brightly in the dark night sky. Whenever he ordered them to stop doing something, they had no hesitation in abandoning it completely. He would often tell them of a voluntary deed which, through its doing, would benefit them in the Hereafter; of these deeds he recommended that they were done as often as his Companions were able, for he disliked imposing hardship upon his followers.

THE DAILY LIFE OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would neither turn away nor look down upon anyone, no matter whether they happened to be a believer or an unbeliever, rich or poor. His patience and genuine care were unparalleled, and no one except the most hard-hearted, ever left his company except with a gladdened heart.

PROPHET MUHAMMAD (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) PRACTICED WHAT HE PREACHED

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led an exemplary life. He practiced what he preached, and Allah honors him and bears witness in the Holy Koran saying:

"Surely, you (Prophet Muhammad) are of a great morality." 68:4

He taught his followers to care for one another and not to ignore a fellow Muslim when they were greeted with peace, but to respond with a greeting like it or one better. Under his guidance, the elderly were now respected and looked after with kindness. He encouraged the visitation of the sick and protecting one's neighbors, no matter whether they were believers or not. He encouraged truthfulness, forbearance, and suppression of anger, saying that anger was from the heat of Hell, and promoted tolerance and forgiveness. He also told them that when a fellow Muslim passed away, one should walk in the funeral procession and pray for the deceased.

He warned his followers not to pass slanderous remarks, to lie, to be greedy, miserly, rude, arrogant, or conceited. He warned of obscene language, envy, injustice and amongst other harmful destructive characteristics, oppression.

One day Saad, Hisham's son asked Lady Ayesha about the Prophet's character. She asked Saad if he recited the Koran, whereupon he replied that he did. Then she told him, "The moral nature of the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was that of the Koran."

Amongst his practice and characteristics mentioned in the Koran are:

“Allah orders justice, and good deeds, and giving to one’s kindred.
He forbids indecency, dishonor and insolence.
He admonishes you in order that you take heed.”
Koran 16:90

“Surely, he who bears patiently and forgives, indeed that is true constancy.”
Koran 42:43

“... Let them pardon and forgive. Do you not yearn that Allah forgives you?”
Koran 24:22

“Repel with that which is most just, and see, the one whom there is enmity between
you will be as if he were a loyal guide.”
Koran 41:34

“who spend in prosperity and in adversity,
for those who curb their anger and those who forgive people.
And Allah loves the charitable.”
Koran 3:134

“Believers, abstain from most suspicion, some suspicion is a sin.
Neither spy nor backbite one another.”
Koran 49:12

JUSTICE PREVAILS

Whenever disputes arose between Muslims and other citizens of Medina, he would arbitrate fairly between the parties and, as one might expect, justice always prevailed regardless of belief.

In his personal life he treated his wives with equal fairness. He had no room of his own and devised a rota whereby he would stay one day with one wife, the next with another and so on.

Even though he was the greatest prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he did not consider it beneath himself to help with the daily household chores and would often be found modestly helping around the house and when the need arose, even mending his clothes.

THE PROPHET’S LOVE OF LITTLE CHILDREN

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) loved the company of little children and always had time to spare for them. He would listen to them and talk gently to them, and there was nothing the little ones loved more than when he kissed them or they held his hand as they walked with him.

O mummy dear, O mummy dear,
Why do trees bow in the wind?
My darling child, my darling child,
they bow in obedience to Him.

O mummy dear, O mummy dear,
how many leaves grow upon trees?
My darling child, my darling child,
Allah alone knows the number of these.
O mummy dear, O mummy dear,
who should I love best?
My darling child, my darling child,
It's Allah and His Prophet,
the kind, the blessed!

AL HASAN AND AL HUSAIN

It was always a great delight when Lady Fatima brought her two very young sons, Hasan and Husain, to visit -- they were very dear to him and he would play with them and refer to them as "his sons".

Little Hasan and Husain loved to accompany their beloved grandfather to the Mosque and would pray as best they could alongside him. However, one day as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prostrated in his prayer, one of his young grandsons climbed upon his back and sat there for quite a while. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) showed no sign of irritation and waited patiently for his grandson to climb down and then continued with his prayer. The Companions who were praying behind the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were also prostrate and did not know the cause of its prolongation and wondered whether perhaps a new command had been sent down to extend the prostration. After the conclusion of the prayer they inquired about its length, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled and told them what had happened.

Through the blessing of Allah and the example of His last Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), there was harmony among the believers and no human being became dearer to them than their beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

In the years that followed, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that when they were asked to lead the congregational prayer on Friday, they should make the sermon brief out of consideration for the young and those in the congregation who were sick.

PROMOTION OF PERSONAL HYGIENE

The Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), also spoke to his Companions on matters of personal hygiene and advised them to brush their teeth with the splayed end of a twig called a "Miswak", and informed them that their stomach should be filled with a third of food, another third with liquid, and the remaining third with air. He also taught them to cleanse themselves with water after having answered a call to nature, and amongst other things, to keep their nails short.

ANXIOUSNESS FOR HIS COMPANY

Many were the occasions that Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) invited his Companions to share a meal with him. However, in their anxiousness for his company and to learn more from him, some had taken to arriving before the meal and then lingering after they had eaten, which was an intrusion on the Prophet's time. Then Allah sent down the verse:

"Believers, do not enter the houses of the Prophet for a meal without waiting for the proper time, unless you are given permission. But if you are invited, enter, and when you have eaten, disperse, not desiring conversation, for that is hurtful to the Prophet and he would be shy before you; but of the truth Allah is not shy."
Koran 33:53

On other occasions, rather than disturbing the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), some of his Companions had taken to asking his wives from behind a curtain to relay their matters to him, as a curtain as Allah had sent down the instruction:

" ... And when you ask his wives for any thing, speak to them from behind a curtain, this is cleaner for your hearts and theirs."
Koran 33:53

Allah also informed the Companions that they were not permitted to marry his wives after the death of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying:

" ... nor shall you ever wed his wives after him, surely, this would be a monstrous thing with Allah."
Koran 33:53

THE BEDOUIN AND THE MIMOSA TREE

It is unclear on which journey this story occurred, but one day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and some of his Companions were traveling they reached a wadi where they met a Bedouin. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked where he was going and the Bedouin replied that he was returning to his family. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Would you like something which is good?" "What is it?" inquired the Bedouin. "It is that you bear witness that there is no god except Allah and that Muhammad is His worshiper and Messenger." The Bedouin asked, "Who will bear witness to what you say?" Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "That mimosa tree." Without hesitation the tree uprooted itself and came walking to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked the tree to bear witness to the truth whereupon it confirm the truthfulness of the matter three times then returned to its place.

THE SON OF ABU TALHA

Abu Talha's young son had been taken very ill and the family became very concerned about his condition.

Much as he would have liked, Abu Talha was unable to stay by his son's side all the time and had left the house to attend to a certain matter, and it was during that time the angels took away the little one's soul. There was great sadness in the house and his mother, Umm Sulaim asked the rest of her household not to speak of the matter to Abu Talha until she had done so.

That evening when Abu Talha returned, he asked his wife about his son whereupon she replied, "He is more settled than he was," and gave him his evening meal. After he had eaten, they slept together then she broke the news to him gently, saying, "Abu Talha, tell me, if someone lends something to another and afterwards asks for it back,

would the borrower be right to withhold what was borrowed?" Abu Talha answered, "No," whereupon she softly said, "Then hope for your reward from Allah for that which has overtaken your son." Abu Talha became upset and exclaimed, "You kept me in ignorance about my son's condition until after we had been together!"

The following morning Abu Talha went to the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him what had happened, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Were you and your wife together last night?" Abu Talha replied that they had been. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) raised his hands in supplication, saying, "O Allah, bless them both."

Umm Sulaim had become pregnant on the night she lost her son and nine months later, as they were returning with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) from a journey, Umm Sulaim's contractions started. She knew it would not be long before her baby arrived, so Abu Talha stayed with her whilst the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued on to Medina, which was but a few halts away.

Abu Talha had always been anxious to accompany the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) no matter where he went, so he supplicated to Allah saying, "O Lord, you know I am eager to go with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wherever he goes and to be with him upon his return, now I am detained as You see." No sooner had he supplicated than Umm Sulaim said, "Abu Talha, I no longer feel the pain, let us continued." So they continued and when they reached Medina she gave birth to a baby boy.

Abu Talha took his infant son to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who named him Abdullah, then he chewed upon a date, placed some in the baby's mouth and supplicated for blessings upon the baby. Abdullah was indeed a very blessed child, when he grew up he had nine sons and each one was able to recite the Koran by heart.

THE DAUGHTER WHO WAS BURIED ALIVE

One day a Bedouin who had just embraced Islam went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and with great shame told him that before he embraced Islam he had buried his five-year old daughter alive in a certain valley then taken her gold and silver. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked the Bedouin to take him to the valley and so he took him there.

Upon reaching the place where the little girl lay buried, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called her saying, "By the permission of Allah, live," whereupon she was restored to life and her head appeared above the ground. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told her that her parents had embraced Islam and if she wished she could be with them, but the little girl declined saying, "I have no need, Allah is kinder and more merciful than they."

THE BEDOUIN AND THE GAZELLE

Lady Umm Salamah, may Allah be pleased with her, related that one day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was in the desert, and came across gazelle that had been caught by a Bedouin. When the gazelle saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) it cried out in human speech, "O Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), a Bedouin has caught me and wants to kill me. I have young; please ask him

to release me so that I may go and suckle them, and then return." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Will you return or not?" "Yes," replied the gazelle, "I will." So he released her and went to suckle her young, then as promised, she returned. The Bedouin asked what the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wished him to do with her, so he told him he would like him to release her, whereupon the gazelle was set free. As she ran off to her young, she raised her voice and said, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and you are His Prophet."

CHAPTER 85

LADY ZAYNAB, DAUGHTER OF JAHSH

Many years before, when Zaid and his mother from the Syrian tribe of Kalb were visiting his maternal grandparents from the tribe of Tayy, the village had been attacked by marauders from the tribe Kayn and Zaid, who was young, had been seized and taken to Mecca to be sold.

Upon the arrival of the tribesmen in Mecca they proceeded to auction the boy off to the highest bidder. When Lady Khadijah saw him, she took pity on him and paid the price. Upon her wedding day, she gave Zaid to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as part of her wedding gift to him.

Zaid, like other members of the household, was never treated as or thought of as being a slave, as he would have been in other households. He grew to love his new family dearly and had chosen to remain with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in preference to returning with his father who, when he learned of his son's whereabouts, traveled to Medina to ransom him.. But money wasn't the issue, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Zaid's father that if Zaid desired he was free to return with him as he did not want any compensation. However, to the astonishment of Zaid's father, he told him he was very happy and did not wish to return. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was greatly touched by Zaid's reaction and took him to the Ka'ba where he not only announced that from that moment onward was he free, but that he had taken him to be his son. When Zaid's father realized just how happy his son was, he accepted the matter and returned home happy in the knowledge that his son was not only free but loved and well cared for.

Zaid had been amongst those who had converted to Islam in its very early days and now that he had come of age, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) suggested that he might like to marry Zaynab, a relative of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Zaid was agreeable, however Zaynab was not sure if she wanted to marry him, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not press the matter any further. After some time, Zaynab decided to accept Zaid's proposal and so the young couple were married.

Not long after their marriage, problems arose between them. For a year or so they tried to resolve these differences but they remained unresolved and their lives were not in harmony with one another. One day Zaid became very upset and went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him of their problems and asked his permission to divorce his wife, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) advised him not to do so and to fear Allah. However, their circumstances did not improve and

he went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on several other occasions, but each time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave him the same advice.

Matters deteriorated further between them to the extent that Zaid went yet again to the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but this time he entreated him to let him divorce her, whereupon the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) finally gave Zaid permission.

The waiting period of four months had elapsed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) contemplated upon marrying Zaynab. However, at that time in Arabia, when someone proclaimed that they had taken a non-blood outsider to be their son, it was considered that the outsider was now as closely related as their own flesh and blood, and as it was forbidden to marry the wife of your son, he kept his thoughts to himself fearing the talk of people until Allah clarified the situation.

Then Allah send down the following verse:

"And when you said to he (Zaid) whom Allah had favored
and yourself have favored:
'Keep your wife and fear Allah,' and you sought to hide in yourself
what Allah was to reveal, fearing people:
although Allah has a better right for you to fear Him.
And when Zaid had accomplished what he would of her (divorce),
We gave her to you (Prophet Muhammad) in marriage,
so that there is no fault in believers concerning (marriage to) the former spouse
of their foster children if they divorced them.
The decree of Allah must be done."
Koran, 33:37

Then, referring to the relationship between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Zaid, Allah tells us:

"Muhammad is not the father of any of your men.
He is the Messenger of Allah and the Seal of the Prophets.
Allah has knowledge of all things."
Koran, 33:40

And so, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took Lady Zaynab to be his wife.

To celebrate the Prophet's marriage, Anas' mother, Umm Sulaim prepared some cakes made with dates and flour and put them in an earthenware container then asked her son to take it with her greetings to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Lady Zaynab were touched by the kind gesture and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Anas to go out and invite everyone he met to come and partake of the food. Later, when Anas was asked how many guests there were he replied that there had been about three hundred people and all miraculously ate their fill of cake, yet after they had departed, the earthenware container remained full.

Lady Zaynab had many fine qualities, she was known for her piety and fasting. She was loved by the poor and needy and more often than not she would give away her earnings as a skilled leather worker to help ease their situation..

The love the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) held for his foster son continued to flourish, but Zaid reverted to his original name, Zaid, the son of Haritha, as Allah had made it very clear that adoption is forbidden in Islam. However fostering is highly recommended but the child must retain its biological father's name.

CHAPTER 86

THE REVENGE OF THE TRIBE OF NADIR

As the fifth year drew to a close, the expelled Jews from the tribe of Nadir who had relocated to Khybar a little over two years before became more restless than ever.

There had been talk for a long time that the Koraysh were bent on revenge and planned to rid themselves of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers. With this in mind, Huyay -- who had been the chief conspirator in the failed attempt to kill the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) -- together with the chieftains of Khybar, journeyed across the hot pebbled desert sands to Mecca to progress the matter.

They were taken to Abu Sufyan upon their arrival, who welcomed them as they ingratiated themselves telling him that the Koraysh were dearer to them than anyone else on account of their intent to rid themselves of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Abu Sufyan was heartened by these words and together with Safwan, and the other Koraysh chieftains they made their way to the Ka'ba, entered it, and took a solemn oath that they would not fail one another in the achievement of their mutual goal.

During this congenial occasion, Abu Sufyan inquired of his new allies, "You are knowledgeable of the first scripture, therefore, give us your opinion. Is our religion better than that of Muhammad?" Without hesitation, and despite the undeniable fact that both Judaism and Islam preached the same message, the Oneness of the Creator and the abomination of idols, the Jews replied, "Your religion is better than his -- you are nearer to the truth!"

In an effort to enlist the hostile or indifferent nomadic tribes of the Najd, it was agreed that the Jews should visit with their chieftains and if revenge was insufficient enough reason to win their support, then they would offer handsome bribes.

There was no need to offer a bribe to the tribe of Asad; they readily lent their support. However, the tribe of Ghatafan with its branches declared their need to be recompensed. Eventually a deal was struck with the Ghatafan being promised half the date harvest of Khybar.

As for the tribe of Sulaym, there were among them those who inclined to Islam and so the leaders of the Nadir were unable to secure their full support. When the tribe of Amir was approached they declined, remaining loyal to the alliance contracted earlier with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

The current strength of the Koraysh army and its previous allies was four thousand strong. However, through the effort of Huyay and his fellow chieftains, their ranks were now swelled by an additional two thousand, seven hundred men -- more than double their number at Uhud and so the preparations for further hostilities were once again set in motion.

CHAPTER 87

THE KORAYSH PREPARE FOR THE ATTACK

The enemies of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were divided into two divisions, the Koraysh, together with its proven allies from the south were to set out upon their march to Medina via the coastal route which was also the same route they had taken to Uhud. As for the second division, it was agreed that they would approach Medina from their homelands of the Najd.

There was much prestige to be gained in the forthcoming encounter so, although Abu Sufyan was the commander of the Koraysh army, it was agreed among the Koraysh chieftains that they would take it in turns to lead the army, so that the honor would be evenly divided.

THE WARNING

Not everyone in Mecca supported Abu Sufyan. There were a few, including Abbas, the uncle of the Prophet, who once again feared for his nephew's safety, so under the cloak of secrecy he dispatched several horsemen to Medina with the news. The urgent state of affairs compelled them to ride with such haste that they reached Medina in just four days.

Upon reaching Medina, the horsemen wasted no time and went directly to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to inform him of the two armies advancing on Medina on either side giving details of their numbers and weaponry. Once again, the Muslims had a week in which to prepare for the hostilities.

Immediately, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) shrewdly sent word to his followers in the outlying areas of Medina to return to the City, and called for a meeting to discuss the strategy that would best serve them. Once more he reminded the Companions that if they obeyed Allah and were patient, victory would be theirs. His words made an indelible impression upon the Companions as they remembered the disobedience of some among them with its consequences at Uhud.

Ideas abounded from every quarter, however Salman proposed a plan that had been both used and proven effective in Persia. Salman advised the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that when the Persians feared a cavalry attack, they would dig a large, circular trench around them as it was extremely difficult for the horses of the enemy to cross the wide divide and consequently they were better able to defend themselves. Salman's proposal met with great enthusiasm and so it was agreed that this would be the best course to adopt.

THE DIGGING OF THE TRENCH

It was unnecessary to dig a complete trench around the entire City as there was an unbroken line of fortified houses, strong enough to resist the advance of the enemy in

one part. Then again, outside the City lay the fortresses of their allies from the Jewish tribe of Krayzah that also afforded them additional protection.

There was yet another blessing, outside the City towards the north-west lay impenetrable hillocks of rock. One of these hillocks was called the hill of Sal, and it was there that they decided to make their camp after connecting the existing fortifications together by the trench. The site had other advantages; the ground on the near side of Sal's slope was considerably higher than in other places, not only did it afford additional protection but from it they would be able to monitor the movements of the unbelievers.

There was no time to waste, so Salman instructed the Companions on the depth and width of the trench, and the digging began. Salman had until recently been the slave of the tribe of Krayzah and knew that his former masters owned many tools, so it was agreed that they should be asked to loan them in accordance with the pact they had signed with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) a few years ago that also stated they would not ally themselves with the enemy of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

The Krayzah were quick to realize that they stood to lose their possessions and date groves if they did not help defend Medina and so every tool they possessed was made available and work began.

Each section of the Muslim community was assigned a specific area to excavate and soon the continuous sound of axes hacking away at the ground and shovels removing the loosened ground filled the air, coming only to a halt at the time of prayer and when sleep finally overtook them.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) worked tirelessly alongside his Companions, who encouraged one another to work harder. As for Salman, he was an extremely strong, fit person. During his years of slavery he had labored tirelessly in the fields digging and carrying, and his companions were amazed to see just how strong he actually was; all were of the opinion that he was worth ten of them put together.

As the digging progressed, rocks were excavated and put to one side for use during the anticipated encounter. There were not enough baskets to go around to transport the earth so the Companions took to using their upper garments as bags. Young lads came out to lend a hand, but the work was much too arduous, so much to their sorrow, they were thanked but told to return home.

THE MIRACLE OF THE BOULDER

Jabir and his companions were working hard on their section when they struck a huge boulder. Try as best they might, no one, not even the strongest among them could shatter it, let alone move it. When the news of the boulder reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he left his section of digging and made his way to it. Then, taking hold of an ax struck the boulder three times whereupon it disintegrated into a pile of sand.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) struck the boulder the first time, a light shone so brilliantly from it that it reached the ramparts of the castles in distant Yemen; which was then under the rule of Abyssinia. Upon his second strike, the light stretched

as far away as the fortresses of Syria and upon the third, it reached and lit up the white palace of Chosroes in Madian. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) later explained that the miraculous light was a sign that one day Islam would spread to these distant lands.

THE MIRACULOUS MEAL

Before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his digging, Jabir asked permission to return home to his wife, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed and Jabir went home. Jabir had noticed that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had strapped a stone to his stomach to ease the pains of hunger and had been told that he had not eaten for three days. It distressed him greatly to see him in such a condition and so upon reaching his home he asked his wife if she had any food in the house. Jabir's wife told him that the only food they had was some barley and their nanny goat. Immediately, Jabir went out, slaughtered the goat, and ground the barley. A fire was kindled and a large cooking pot filled with water placed on it to which the goat meat was added, and then the oven was made ready to bake the bread.

When the food was almost ready and the barley flour kneaded, Jabir returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that he had prepared some food at home and asked if he and some others would care to join him in a meal. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was grateful and asked what he had prepared, whereupon Jabir told him and he remarked, "That is indeed a lot of food." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Jabir to return to his wife and tell her not to remove the pot from the fire, nor yet the bread from the oven until he arrived. Then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to all his Companions and said, "Let us go," and so they all laid down their tools and made their way to Jabir's house.

Jabir reached his home shortly before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions arrived and told his wife, "The blessing of Allah be upon you, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with all the Muhajir, Ansar, and others are coming!"

Shortly afterwards, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered and told his Companions to take their place a few at a time and not to overcrowd the room. Then, he broke the bread into pieces and put some of it on top of the meat. Following this, he took some more bread from the oven and asked his Companions to pass the food around. As soon as the first group had taken their fill, the next group entered and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) humbly served his Companions until all were replete.

Even after everyone had eaten, then same quantity of bread and meat remained as it was before they had all eaten. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to Jabir's wife saying, "Eat some and send some as a gift to the hungry."

CHAPTER 88 THE ENCOUNTER AT THE TRENCH

Six days had now passed since word reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of the Koraysh and their allies march. By now, the Muslims whose home lay on the outskirts of Medina had left seeking the safety of City.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions, who numbered three thousand, had just finished digging the trench when news arrived that the Koraysh army had been seen marching along the valley of Akik, which lies to the south-west of Medina, and that the Ghatafan and Najd tribes were but a short distance from the mountain of Uhud.

Time was short, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent word that the women and children should confine themselves to the upper rooms of the fortified houses, however Ladies Ayesha, Umm Salamah and Zaynab took it in turns to go the Prophet's tent at the foot of Sal to tend to his needs.

The Koraysh had relied heavily upon being able to pillage the crops of the Muslims to provide fodder for their horses, however, much to their dismay, when they reached the oasis they found the fields had already been harvested. There was nothing to feed their hungry horses and the supplies they brought with them were limited. However, the camels of the tribes of Ghatafan and the Najd were more fortunate as they were able to graze upon the herbage and bushes that grew near Uhud.

Due to the unexpected circumstances, the Koraysh knew that they must strike quickly, otherwise their cavalry would be too weak to make an effective strike, and so word was sent to their allies to join them immediately outside Medina.

PRELUDE TO THE ATTACK

The Koraysh had expected the believers to defend themselves from the fortified buildings and fortresses of Medina. When they saw that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had made his camp outside the City their spirits rode high as they thought the battle would be over quickly and victory would soon be theirs.

However, as Abu Sufyan and his men drew closer to the Prophet's camp their spirits were soon deflated. They had thought they would be able to overcome the Prophet's army by the sheer force of their numbers, but now, their eyes fell upon the deep, wide trench with archers poised ready to fire.

The Koraysh advanced and as soon as they came within range, a warning volley of arrows hurtled through the air and fell but a short distance in front of them. The Koraysh realized it was going to be difficult for them to even get as far as the trench and that their prospect of breaching it was considerably more difficult, so they retreated to assess the situation.

The chieftains were in agreement that the best approach would be to apply tactics that would weaken a section in the line of defense, then, cross the trench and attack from within. With this intent, Khalid and Ikrima, two of the Koraysh commanders, examined the trench from a safe distance to determine its weakest part. During their surveillance they noticed that a section of the trench was not as wide or as deep as the rest, however, it was heavily guarded and the guards needed to be eliminated if they were to penetrate the trench at that point.

HUYAY AND THE TRIBESMEN OF KRAYZAH

Huyay, from the expelled tribe of Nadir, knew that one of the fortresses blocking the approach to Medina belonged to a fellow Jew from the tribe of Krayzah by the name of Ka'b, Asad's son. Huyay hoped that he might prevail upon him to break the pact he

had made with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so that the Koraysh would be able to attack the City from two directions at the same time. If he succeeded, it would mean that their pact ceased to exist and that their numbers would swell by a further seven hundred. With this in mind he went to Abu Sufyan to propose his plan. Abu Sufyan thought the idea was sound, and so Huyay made haste to the fortress.

Upon reaching the fortress Huyay announced himself as he knocked at its door, but Ka'b would not open it as he suspected the reason for his visit. He, like many others of his tribe considered that it was on account of Huyay's pride and poor judgment that had led to the expulsion of the tribe of Nadir, and that his domineering personality was something they could do without. Huyay knocked several times but Ka'b still refused to let him in and reminded him that he had a pact with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him he was not prepared to break it.

When Huyay realized he was getting nowhere, he changed his tactics and resorted to shaming Ka'b for not affording him the customary hospitality. He told him that in his eyes he was too mean to even share his food with him!

Huyay's ploy worked, and reluctantly Ka'b opened the door. Huyay told Ka'b that he had brought the chieftains and armies of the Koraysh, Ghatafan, Najd and Kinanah to Medina and that their force was now ten thousand strong. He told Ka'b that they had all sworn allegiance to one another to rid themselves of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers, and that this time he was sure that he would not escape.

THE WAVERING HEART

Ka'b was still reluctant to break his promise. However, the overwhelming number of the Koraysh army was something he had not reckoned upon and his heart started to waver as Huyay's persuasive tongue worked upon him. But Ka'b continued to resist and told him that if he broke the pact it would bring shame upon him. Huyay was quick to realize that Ka'b was weakening and continued to elaborate on what he deemed to be multiple advantages for them if they were rid of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and stop his preaching.

Huyay was so convinced that this would be the last of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he swore by Allah, that if the Koraysh and their allies returned to their homes and had not rid themselves of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) this time, then he would stay in Ka'b's fortress with him and take the consequences.

The oath Huyay had just taken was sufficient to convince Ka'b that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions would not withstand the onslaught of the Koraysh army. When Huyay asked to see the pact the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Ka'b had agreed upon, Ka'b fetched it, showed it to him and Huyay tore it in half.

Ka'b went to his people to relate the conversation he and Huyay had just exchanged. Despite the convincing arguments, there was an element among them who were not convinced and refused to break their word, amongst them was Amr, Suda's son.

In the Jewish community there was an elderly man by the name of ibn Al Hayyaban. He had left Syria many years before to await the coming of the last Prophet (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam), for he was knowledgeable of the scriptures and expected his prophesied arrival in that region and taught its signs to all who would listen. Like him, many of his followers believed that the time had arrived and recognized the fact that Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had the qualities mentioned in the scripture. However, the fact remained he was not a Jew, and to many this was a great obstacle as their racial pride was at stake. Like their ancestors they refused to accept the teachings of Prophet Jesus who had warned that if they did not reform themselves and follow him, the covenant would be taken away from them and given to another.

Meanwhile, several of Ka'bs tribesmen decided to go out of the fortress to determine for themselves if the report Huyay had brought was true. When their eyes fell upon the formidable sight of the huge, unbelieving army, terror struck their hearts, they had never seen anything like it before in their life and returned quickly to tell their tribesmen what they had seen.

For the most part, the Krayzah no longer needed to be convinced and so their principals were put to one side; some even turned informant and went to the Koraysh camp to tell them of the weaker parts of the City's defense, whilst a few slipped away from the fortresses to take the news to the Prophet's camp.

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) LEARNS OF THE BETRAYAL

Omar was the first to learn of the betrayal and went straight to tell the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). It was indeed an act of treachery, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Zubair to determine if the report was correct. Then he sent Sa'ad from the tribe of Aws and Sa'ad from the tribe of Khazraj together with Usayd for additional confirmation, for he was never a person to act in haste nor take a decision without first having verified the matter.

Zubair reached the fortress before his other Companions and learned that the report was correct. When his companions arrived they pleaded with the Krayzah not to pursue their intention, but it was to no avail, they informed him that as far as they were concerned the pact no longer existed between them -- they had become enemies.

THE WEAKENED LINE OF DEFENSE

The breaking of the pact caused a weakness in the line of defense. The Jewish fortresses were no longer a protective barrier but a gate through which the enemy could advance with comparative ease, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) immediately sent a hundred men to strengthen the area.

Shortly afterwards news reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that Huyay had urged the Koraysh and their allies to send a thousand men to the fortresses and then launch an attack on the fortified buildings in which the Muslim women and children had been housed for protection. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wasted no time in sending Zaid together with three hundred men to protect them. Each night as the Companions patrolled the streets they exalted Allah with such intensity that their voices rang out through the City and they appeared far greater than their number.

For one reason or another, the unbelievers abandoned their intent and no harm came to the women and children, however, the Koraysh had succeeded in weakening the Muslim army through the re-deployment of their forces. As a result the Companions

were forced to take longer periods patrolling the trench, and now weariness posed an additional hazard. However, spirits were lifted by the kind words and encouragement of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who reminded them that victory would be theirs if they were steadfast, and obeyed Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

THE PENETRATION OF THE TRENCH

Days and nights passed and Khalid and Ikrima waited for the right opportunity to attack. However, they didn't have to wait too long as one day Ikrima noticed that the narrowest section of the trench was less well guarded than usual and so he, Khalid, Amr and two others were able to jump over it on horseback. Just as the last man cleared the trench, Ali together with some of his companions arrived to reinforce the section leaving no way for the unbelievers to retreat.

Amr shouted out a challenge for someone to engage him in single combat. Without hesitation, Ali took up the challenge, but when Amr saw him he declined to fight on account of the friendship that had existed between their fathers many years before. Ali was adamant and refused to back-down, and so Amr accepted the challenge and dismounted. As they fought, clouds of dust arose in the air and the onlookers were unable to determine exactly what was going on. Then, much to their relief they heard Ali's voice exalting Allah, and his companions knew that Amr must be dead.

The fight had distracted the Companions attention, so one of the Koraysh seized the opportunity to try and make his escape back to the other side of the trench. Turning his horse around, he raced toward the trench only to find Nawfal from the tribe of Makhzum was in his way quick and so the tribesman, with his horse, plunged headlong into the trench.

When the believers saw what had happened, they made use of the stones excavated from the trench and pelted him with them. From the bottom of the trench, the unbeliever cried out saying, "Arabs, death is better than this!" whereupon they ceased their stoning and one of them climbed down into the trench and the unbeliever took his last breath.

Up until now there had been considerable apprehension among the unbelieving cavalry concerning their ability to cross the trench. However, Khalid and Ikrima had demonstrated that although it was difficult it was not impossible, so several attacks were made that day and in the days that followed, but, all were of no avail. The fighting was spasmodic but none-the-less wearisome for the believers who could not afford to relax and risk being caught off guard. No fatalities were sustained on either side although Sa'ad was severely wounded when an arrow pierced an artery in his arm, however, many of the unbelievers horses were wounded.

THE MIRACULOUS SUSPENSION OF THE SETTING SUN

One day during the siege the intensity of the fighting was such that both the Zuhr and Asr prayers remained unoffered and now the daylight had started to fade which concerned the believers. The believers went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell them of their concern whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated to Allah and sun's descent in the heavens was suspended and remained suspended until both prayers had been offered. Immediately after the conclusion of the prayers, the sun sank and darkness fell.

Now that the sun had set the unbelievers returned to their camp and so the comparative peacefulness of the evening descended. However, the believers could not afford to relax as there was always the possibility that the unbelievers might strike and take them unaware. Later that night Khalid and his cavalry returned, however Usayd and his companions spotted them and launched volleys of arrows that prevented their advance.

Amongst the believing host were hypocrites and those whose faith was yet to mature. The believers did not complain of their circumstances and their faith increased in times of hardship. However, the hypocrites and those of weak faith found it increasingly hard to endure the pangs of hunger now accentuated by the onset of cold nights and lack of sleep. Their support started to falter, soon, murmuring from these groups were heard that attempted to undermine the order of the Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*. In their opinion it was thought that the Prophet's decision should be overridden as they thought the trench afforded very little protection compared to that of the City. Their murmuring fell on the deaf ears of the strong believers and Allah sent down a verse that sustained them that reads:

"Or did you suppose that you would go to Paradise untouched by that endured by those before you! Affliction and adversity befell them; and they were shaken until the Messenger, and those who believed with him said: 'When will the victory of Allah come?' Is it not so that the victory of Allah is near."
Koran 2:214

THE FAZARAH AND MURRAH, TWO TRIBES OF THE GHATAFAN

Hardship affected not only the believers, the fodder the unbelievers brought with them was virtually deplete and their horses lay wounded or weakened, however, on account of their vast numbers, tiredness was a lesser factor as they were able to take turns to rest.

Out of compassion for his Companions, Prophet Muhammad (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) sent envoys by night with a message to two branch chieftains of the tribe of Ghatafan, namely the tribes of Fazarah and Murrah. The message contained an offer of one third of the highly prized date harvest of Media if they would lay down their arms and not fight against them.

The dates of Medina were famous and their quality superior to those of Khybar, and so the chieftains preferred the offer of the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) to that of Huyay, but they were greedy, and sent word back to the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) that they would only settle for half the harvest. The Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) declined and sent word that he was only prepared to let them have a third, whereupon the chieftains agreed.

The Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) asked Othman to come to his tent to draw up the peace treaty between them; then sent for the chieftains of Aws and Khazraj, the two Sa'ads, and told them of his plan. Sa'ad, who had been severely injured, asked the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) if his plan was something he would have them do or if Allah had commanded that it should be so, or, whether perhaps it was something he was doing out of concern for them.

Sa'ad was touched by the Prophet's concern, however he told him that not long before both he and the unbelievers worshiped false gods besides Allah, and that they had been idols worshipers, neither knowing Allah, nor yet worshipping Him. He continued to tell the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that during that era the Ghatafan had not eaten their dates unless they were given to them on account of them being their guests, or else they had bought them. He said that he felt that now that Allah had blessed them with Islam, guided and strengthened them with it and sent them His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he did not see why they should be given their property. Then Sa'ad swore by Allah that the Ghatafan would be given nothing except the sword until such time that Allah decided between them.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was pleased by Sa'ad's strength of belief and agreed to abandon the gesture. Othman, who had by this time, finished drawing up the peace treaty, now struck the message through and wrote, "Do your worst!"

NU'AYM FROM THE GHATAFAN TRIBE OF ASHJA

After Nu'aym's encounter with the Muslims of Medina before the second challenge of Badr, his heart inclined still further to Islam. Now that Abu Sufyan had called upon the support of the Ghatafan tribe, his branch tribe, the tribe of Ashja, had lent their support and so with reluctance he had been drawn into the conflict.

It was shortly after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided not to proceed with the treaty with the two other branches of the Ghatafan, that Nu'aym knew deep in his heart that his allegiance belonged to Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

When he was in Medina he had heard some of the Prophet's teachings promoting brotherly love, peace, justice and mercy. He had witnessed the unifying effect of Islam upon its very diverse congregation, now there they were, with just one third of the number of the unbelieving army, prepared to defend their religion without any thought of tribal superiority or surrender, it was indeed an act of bravery through absolute conviction and love of Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

It was the turning point in Nu'aym's life; that night he made his way to Medina, through its City and then on toward the camp of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). When he reached the camp he asked to be taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and upon seeing him the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) welcomed him and inquired as to the nature of his visit. Nu'aym told him that he had come to declare his belief and bear witness to the truth in the Oneness of the Creator that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought, adding that he would do whatever he commanded. In passing, he mentioned that his people and the other tribes knew nothing of the teachings of Islam, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Nu'aym to go out and do his best to bring about discord among his people so that they would withdraw. Nu'aym thought for a minute and then asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) if deception would be permissible for he had a plan that he thought would work. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Say whatever you will to draw them away from us; war is nothing but deceit."

It was time for Nu'aym to leave, and after the greetings of peace had been exchanged he made his way back through the winding streets of the City to the Krayzah fortress.

For many years Nu'aym had been friendly with the Krayzah and when they saw him they welcomed him and offered him food. Nu'aym thanked them for their offer but told them that he had come to them upon a more important matter. He told them that he feared for their safety if the Koraysh and Ghatafan failed to defeat the Muslim army and returned home leaving them alone to face the Muslims.

It was a matter that concerned many of the Krayzah since their chieftains had broken the pact. They remembered well how, although, Huyay and his fellow tribesmen's lives had been spared after their attempt to murder the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), that they had been expelled from Medina and forced to leave their homes and date groves behind -- and this was something they did not want to happen to them.

Nu'aym told them that in his opinion, if he found himself in a position such as theirs, he would not strike a blow against the Muslims unless the Koraysh and Ghatafan were prepared to hand over to them some of their leaders as a guarantee that they would not be deserted in the event that their allies were forced to retreat. Nu'aym's logic made a lot of sense, the Krayzah needed no further convincing and adopted his suggestion.

Now that Nu'aym had succeeded in the first part of his plan, he made his way to Abu Sufyan's tent. He found Abu Sufyan in the company of the other Koraysh chieftains and embarked upon the second part of his plan. He told them that he had come across a very alarming piece of information which was vital to them, however, he told them that he would only divulge the matter if they swore they would never tell anyone who gave it to them.

Anxiously, Abu Sufyan and those with him swore never to turn informant. Nu'aym then told them that the Jews were having second thoughts about their treatment of Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and that they had sent word to him informing him of such. Nu'aym had caught their attention and proceeded to tell them that in order to repair their relationship they would take leaders from both the Koraysh and Ghatafan tribes as hostage and then deliver them to Muhammad so that he may put an end to them, and thereafter fight alongside him. Nu'aym further alarmed Abu Sufyan when he told him that the terms had been accepted. He concluded his devising with the warning that they, in his opinion, should not let anyone remain with the Krayzah, and so the seeds of mistrust were sown and took root.

Abu Sufyan, together with the other chieftains met with those of the Ghatafan and decided to assess the loyalty of the Krayzah themselves rather than relying entirely upon the report of Nu'aym. However, in the interim period, both allies agreed to postpone telling Huyay about the matter.

The allies agreed to send Ikrima to the Krayzah with a message. The message was brief and straight to the point and read, "Prepare yourselves to fight tomorrow so that we may rid ourselves of Muhammad." No sooner had the Krayzah received the message they sent one back saying, "Tomorrow is the Sabbath, and we will not fight with you against Muhammad unless you send us some of your men that we might hold until we have rid ourselves of him. It is our fear that if things go against us you will retreat and leave us to face him -- this, we cannot do alone."

Ikrima returned in haste to Abu Sufyan and his fellow chieftains and the message was duly delivered. No sooner had the message been read they swore, "Nu'aym has told us the truth!" Immediately, another message was dispatched informing the Krayzah that they would not be sending any one but that they must fight all the same. The Krayzah's fears were confirmed and they sent back another message stating, yet again, that they would not fight until they received their demands.

In a state of rage, Abu Sufyan went to confront Huyay. He demanded to know where the help was that his people promised, and told him that they had deserted him with the intent of betrayal. Huyay was taken aback by the accusation and swore by the Torah that the reason his fellow Jews would not take up arms against the Muslims was that it was the Sabbath and without doubt he would see them fight with all their might against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) the day after.

As of yet, Abu Sufyan had not told Huyay of the demand for hostages, but when he told him his reaction was indifferent and Abu Sufyan took it to be indicative of his guilt and swore by his god, al-lat, that the whole affair was nothing but treachery on both his part and theirs. Huyay swore yet again by the Torah that he was not a traitor, but Abu Sufyan refused to believe him, and so Huyay, fearing the wrath of Abu Sufyan, made a hasty retreat to the safety of the Krayzah fortresses.

THE MORALE OF THE UNBELIEVERS

Two weeks had passed, and little except mistrust of one another had transpired among the Koraysh and its allies. Fodder was in very short supply, wounded mounts often died, and in addition, the weather turned to be exceptionally cold and wet. It was a time of frustration on their part. Many had hoped that by now the engagement would have been resolved and that they would be reaping the coveted spoils of war, but it wasn't so, and discontent became widespread.

THE MORALE OF THE BELIEVERS

The believers were better protected from the rain and the cold as they had the hill of Sal to shelter them. However, they were very tired on account of their constant vigil and signs of hunger were apparent, but unlike their adversaries, their morale was high and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated to Allah after each obligatory prayer for three successive days for the unbelievers to be put to flight.

WIND AND RAIN

Added to the extreme cold and rain, Allah now sent unseen angels driving a bitterly cold wind from the east that brought torrential rain that forced the unbelievers to take shelter in their tents as the wind rushed howling between them. As the night progressed, the storm worsened to such a degree that their tents were ripped from the ground, tossed in the air and torn into shreds -- not one of the unbeliever's tents remained standing. Allah speaks of this in the Holy Koran saying:

"Believers, remember the Favor of Allah to you
when there came against you hosts (armies),
We unleashed against them a wind
and hosts (of angels) you could not see.
Allah sees the things you do."
Koran 33:9

As for the Muslim tents, Allah protected them all and none were wrecked by the wind.

As on many other occasions, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spent most of the night in prayer. After the conclusion of his final prayer, he visited a neighboring tent and asked Hudhayfah to go among the enemy and bring word of their condition.

As Hudhayfah made his way towards the Koraysh encampment he found them shivering, huddled and crouched together trying to warm themselves as the winds roared about them. No one paid any attention to him and so he was able to get close to Abu Sufyan without being noticed.

As dawn approached, the ferocity of the wind died down and the unbelievers started to try and warm themselves as Abu Sufyan cried out for all to hear, "People of the Koraysh, our horses and camels are dying, the Krayzah have let us down and betrayed us. We have suffered on account of the wind! Leave this place, I intend leaving!" Abu Sufyan was so anxious to leave that he forgot his camel was still hobbled and made it rise on three legs.

Just then, Ikrima called to him with the reminder that he was their chieftain and demanded to know if he was prepared to abandon his men, whereupon Abu Sufyan felt ashamed of his actions and dismounted. Everyone had had enough, and not long after the Koraysh army broke camp and started out on its long wearisome march home, however, Abu Sufyan remained behind with Khalid to ride behind his beleaguered army.

As they rode together, Khalid had time to reflect upon the words of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and commented, "Any sensible person knows that Muhammad does not lie." Abu Sufyan was astonished and retorted, "You, of all people have lesser right to say such a thing!" Khalid asked why, whereupon he replied, "Muhammad belittled the honor of your father; he killed Abu Jahl your chieftain!"

Everyone had been so busy with their own affairs that Hudhayfah was able to slip away unnoticed to where the Ghatafan had camped. When he reached their camp-site he found they had dispersed and so he returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with the welcome news, for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) hated fighting as his preference was always that of inviting his adversaries to the mercy of Allah.

When he reached the encampment he was told that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was praying, so Hudhayfah went to him and waited for him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) noticed his arrival and beckoned him to come and sit beside him as prayed. As Hudhayfah sat down, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) covered him in the folds of his cloak to warm him, and there he remained until the prayer reached its conclusion. After the prayer, Hudhayfah related the blessed news of the enemies retreat and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) immediately thanked Allah for His Mercy, for Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was sent as a mercy for all people, not as a promoter of war.

The thin thread of the light of dawn had appeared on the horizon so Bilal arose to call the believers to prayer. After the prayer was finished the believers turned to look in the direction of the enemy camp site – it was completely deserted. It was indeed a time for

thanksgiving and rejoicing, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) gave his Companions permission to break camp and return to their families.

The immediate danger was over, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was still on guard. There was always the possibility that the unbelievers had retreated out of sight only to await news from the Krayzah that the trench had been abandoned. With this in mind the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) sent Jabir and Abdullah, Omar's son to call his men back. Jabir and Abdullah set off calling at the top of their voices telling them to return, but it was to no avail, so they returned to tell the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) what had happened but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) just smiled and returned home himself with his close Companions.

CHAPTER 89 THE AFTERMATH

It was noon, the obligatory prayer had been offered and the believers began to disperse. Not long after the prayer, Angel Gabriel came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) dressed in fine clothes. Upon his head he wore a turban of silver and gold brocade; the mule he rode was adorned with a saddle of velvet brocade. After the greeting, Gabriel asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) if he had laid down his arms, then informed him that the angels had not laid down theirs. He told him that he was on his way to cause the souls of the Krayzah to tremble in fear, then he told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) that Allah, the Exalted, had sent him to deliver the command that he should retaliate against treachery of the Krayzah.

THE SEIGE

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) called upon his three thousand strong army to reassemble and informed them of the Command of Allah. The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) gave Ali the standard and instructed his followers not to offer the afternoon prayer until they reached the outlying fortresses of the Krayzah. However, Sa'ad who had been severely injured during the battle was not to accompany them but to remain behind in the tent that had, by the instruction of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), been pitched inside the Mosque so that he could be near him.

Just before sunset, the Muslims surrounded the fortresses and terror struck deep in the hearts of its inhabitants. The position remained unchanged for twenty-five nights until at last the Krayzah sent a message to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) requesting Abu Lubabah, a tribesman from Aws with whom they had a long association, be allowed to consult with them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) agreed and Abu Lubabah went to the fortresses accompanied by several other companions who remained outside.

As the doors to the fortress opened, Abu Lubabah was overcome by the plight of women and children crying and his heart softened toward them. For a brief moment, the fact that the Krayzah had betrayed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and had been willing to kill Muslims, including himself, slipped from his mind. It was almost like old times and together he and some of their elders climbed five flights of stairs to a room where they sat down to discuss the matter. After the usual pleasantries, the Krayzah asked whether or not he thought they should surrender, he told them that they

should, but at the same time pointed to his throat indicating that they would be put to death.

Suddenly, Abu Lubabah was jolted back to reality and horror stricken by his action and cried out with a verse from the Koran:

".. to You we turn, and to You is the arrival."
Koran Ch.60:4

Meanwhile, outside the fortresses, Abu Lubabah's companions awaited his return, however, such was his deep shame and regret that he left the fortress by another entrance and returned to Medina alone.

Upon reaching Medina, Abu Lubabah tied himself to a pillar in the Mosque saying that he would not move from it until Allah relented towards him. He remained tied to the pillar for either ten or fifteen days, only being released by his daughter when the time for prayer arrived.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) waited patiently for his return, but not long after Abu Lubabah had tied himself to the pillar news of what transpired reached him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that if he had come to him, he would have supplicated to Allah for his forgiveness, but as he had chosen this course of action there was nothing he could do until Allah pardoned him.

THE DILEMMA OF THE KRAYZAH

Amongst the Krayzah were several whose only barrier to their acceptance of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was that he was not a Jew. Ka'b now went to them and suggested that they accept the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and thereby save themselves as well as their property. However, they refused saying that the preferred death and would accept nothing else other than the Torah and the Law of Moses, peace be upon him. Ka'b was a resourceful man, and suggested several other solutions, but all proved unacceptable to his fellow tribesmen.

Amr, Su'ads son, had been against breaking the pact right from the start and openly declared that he would not take part in its breaking. He now offered his fellow Jews a solution, but said he was unsure whether or not the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would accept it. Amr suggested that they offer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) a form of tax in exchange for their freedom. Like Ka'b's suggestions his was also rejected. That night, Amr left the fortress alone and made his way to Medina where he spent the night in the Mosque. What happened to him afterwards is unknown, however, the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that Amr was a man whom Allah saved on account of his loyalty.

Sometime before the siege, the three sons of Hadl, who was the brother of Krayzah himself, had come to visit relatives in the fortresses. They had been students of the elderly Syrian Jew, the son of Hayyaban, who had spoken so many times of the signs that would announce the coming of a new Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). They remembered well his words and reminded their fellow Jews with them, but as before, their words fell on deaf ears. When they realized they would never convince them they decided to slip away in the still of the night and embrace Islam. As they left the fortress they told the Muslim guards of their intent and were guided to the camp.

There was yet another person who left the fortresses, his name was Rifa'ah, Samawal's son. With stealth he managed to escape from the fortress unnoticed and slipped through the Muslim guards to the house of Salma, the daughter of Kays. Salma was the half sister of the Prophet's mother, Lady Aminah, who had married into the tribe of Khazraj, and it was there in her house that he embraced Islam.

THE END OF THE SIEGE

The next morning the Krayzah decided to surrender and opened the doors to the fortresses. The women and children were separated from the menfolk, taken to one sector of the camp and placed under the supervision of Abdullah, Salaam's son, who had once been their rabbi. In the meantime, the men's hands were tied behind their backs and led away to a different sector of the camp.

The Companions went inside the fortresses and brought out the spoils of war which were piled high outside the walls. Amongst the spoils was a plentiful supply of wine and fermented date juice, all were poured away, for Allah had forbidden Muslims to consume intoxicants.

THE REQUEST OF SA'AD, MU'ADHS SONS TRIBE

Many years before Islam, the Sa'ad, Mu'adhs son's tribe established deep ties with the tribe of Krayzah and on that account they now went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to ask him to extend the same kind of leniency he had shown to the tribe of Kaynuka, former allies of the Khazraj, two years before. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) listened to them and asked if they would be satisfied if one of their own pronounced judgment upon their former allies and they accepted.

The person the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chose to pass judgment on the Krayzah was their chieftain, Sa'ad, Mu'adhs son and so some of the Companions returned to Medina to convey him and found him being attended to in the Mosque by Rufaydah, a lady from the tribe of Aslam.

A mule was prepared for Sa'ad and the party set off for the fortresses. During the course of the ride, Sa'ads companions told him that he was to pass judgment on their former allies and asked him to treat them well on that account.

Sa'ad was not a person to let emotion interfere with justice. He had witnessed with his own eyes how those that had been taken captive at Badr and allowed to ransom themselves had ridden against them at Uhud, and yet again their treachery during the recent encounter. He was also aware of the tribe of Nadir's incitement of the Koraysh to take up arms against the Muslims, and seen how the Krayzah had been ready to follow the lead of their peers and broken their pact with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

As Sa'ad approached the camp, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw him and out of respect for Sa'ad said: "Stand up for your master" and told the tribesmen to greet their chieftain, which they did. Without wasting time, they approached Sa'ad saying, "Father of Amr, the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) has appointed you to judge our former allies." Sa'ad asked them to swear by Allah that they would accept his judgment, and this they did. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Sa'ad that his judgment would also be binding upon himself. Then, Sa'ad

proceeded to pronounce judgment saying, "It is my judgment that the men shall be killed, and the women and children taken captive." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to Sa'ad and said, "You have judged with the judgement of Allah from above the seven heavens." Shortly after, the women and children were escorted into the City.

That night, the men of the Krayzah spent their time reciting the Torah and supporting one another in their decision. None, on account of racial pride, had the slightest wish to embrace Islam, and as they had done so many times before with the full support of their wives said that death was better for them than embracing Islam.

The next morning trenches were dug in the market place and all except one of the Krayzah men were put to death. Huyay, who had once plotted to murder the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), then incited the Koraysh to rise up against him was also put to death with them.

The only man to be spared was Zabir, Bata's son, an elderly man whose hatred of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Islam was well known. His fate was yet to be determined because he had once spared the life of a Muslim named Thabit, Kays son, so Zabir was taken to Medina where he was lodged with the women and children.

Although the women had strongly upheld the declaration of their husbands that they preferred death rather than embracing Islam, cries of grief and anger filled the air as Zabir told the women of the fate of their men. Zabir tried to quieten them but told them that if there had been any good in their men they would have been saved, then he urged the widows to seek refuge in their religion.

Thabit went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to ask him to spare the life of Zabir whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) granted his request. When Thabit told Zabir of his reprieve all Zabir would say was, "What is there left in life for an old man without a wife or children!" So Thabit went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) again and told him what Zabir said, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) mercifully told him to return his wife and children to him. Zabir was still unthankful and asked Thabit, "Is it possible for a family to survive without property?" Once again Thabit went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him of Zabir's request and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered Zabir's that with the exception of his weapons and armor that all of his property be returned to him.

Zabir's hatred of Islam had blinded him to the mercy and generosity now offered and so he went to Thabit yet again saying, "By Allah, I ask you Thabit, by your indebtedness to me that I should join my people. They are gone and there is no good left in life." At first Thabit did not take him seriously, but when Zabir insisted, his request was granted. As for Zabir's wife and children, the Prophet's mercy towards them still prevailed and they were freed under the protection of Thabit and retained their possessions.

The other captives were given to the believers who took part in the siege. Many were ransomed by their fellow tribesmen from Nadir and returned to live with them in Khybar.

CHAPTER 90

THE DEATH OF SA'AD, MU'ADHS SON

Shortly after Sa'ad had pronounced sentence on the Krayzah he returned to the Mosque in Medina where his condition continued to deteriorate. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) visited him frequently and then one night as he entered he found Sa'ad in a semi-unconscious state. He sat down near his head and tenderly cradled it close to his chest then supplicated saying, "O Allah, in sincerity Sa'ad has labored on the Path with Your Messenger attending to every aspect, take now his soul with the best acceptance in the way that You take the souls of Your creation." Sa'ad, who had supplicated sometime before that his soul should be taken if he had served his purpose, regained consciousness and opened his eyes and said in a weakened voice, "Peace be upon you, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), I bear witness that you have delivered your message." When Sa'ad was comfortable, the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left his tent and a few hours later Angel Gabriel came to tell him that Sa'ad had passed away.

The funeral arrangements were made and men, women and children walked in his funeral procession. As his bier was carried to his grave its bearers were surprised how light it seemed. When they reached the grave the bier was placed at its side and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led the funeral prayer. As Sa'ads bier was lowered into his grave the Prophet's face turned ashen and he exclaimed, "Exalted is Allah!" three times, whereupon the exaltation was taken up by the mourners. After a short pause the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "Allah is the Greatest!" and once again his mourners repeated the exaltation.

A little while after the funeral the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was asked what had caused his face to suddenly turn ashen, whereupon he told his inquirer, "The grave closed in upon your companion and he felt constructed, and if any man could have escaped it, it would have been Sa'ad. Then, Allah relieved him from it."

The bearers also commented to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) upon the lightness of Sa'ads bier as he had been a large person and they expected it to have been heavier whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that he had seen angels bearing his bier along with them.

THE FORGIVENESS OF ABU LUBABAH

Several days later, just before the dawn prayer when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was in the home of Lady Umm Salamah, he told her that he had received news that Abu Lubabah had been forgiven. It was wonderful news and Lady Umm Salamah was given permission to convey it to him. Immediately, Lady Umm Salamah went to the door of her room that opened into the Mosque and called to Abu Lubabah saying, "Abu Lubabah, good news, Allah has relented toward you."

Several men had already gathered in the Mosque to await the dawn prayer, when they heard the good news they raced toward him to untie the ropes, but Abu Lubabah stopped them saying, "Do not untie me, let the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) set me free with his own hands." When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered the Mosque Abu Lubabah told him that he wished to give a third of his property in charity to atone for his action. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

accepted and loosened the ropes that bound him and his property was given to the poor.

CHAPTER 91

THE KORAYSH CARAVAN

News reached Medina that a richly laden Koraysh caravan was homeward bound from Syria. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of the news he placed Zaid in command of a cavalry of one hundred and seventy and sent them after it.

The expedition was successful and the Koraysh merchandise confiscated, including silver that belonged to Safwan. There were also captives, but several managed to escape amongst whom was Al As, the son-in-law of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Shortly after the encounter, Al As who had lost everything, made his way to Medina where, his estranged wife, Lady Zaynab lived with their daughter Umama. Al As waited until all was still in the City and under the cover of night made his way to Lady Zaynab's house.

Lady Zaynab was indeed surprised to see him after such a long time and invited him into her home. A while after, Bilal arose to call the believers to prayer and so Lady Zaynab left Al As and Umama in the house whilst she went to pray. After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had exalted Allah, there was a brief pause and Lady Zaynab announced for all to hear, "O people, I have given protection to Al As, Rabi's son." Then she joined the congregation in prayer.

THE PROTECTION OF THE WEAKEST IS BINDING

At the conclusion of the prayer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked the congregation, "Did you hear what I heard? By Him in whose hand is my soul, I knew nothing of this until now. The protection of even the weakest Muslim is binding upon all other Muslims." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to his daughter telling her to treat her estranged husband honorably but not to allow him the rights of a husband, because, by law he was no longer her husband.

Lady Zaynab told her father that Al As, who was one of the most trusted men of Mecca, had gone to Syria on behalf of several Koraysh to trade for them and was deeply troubled because he had lost it all. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) approached those who had confiscated his trusts saying, "This man is related to us, and his property has come to you. If you would like to return it to him that would please me, but if you choose not to, then it is bounty which Allah has given you and you have a better right to it." None of the Companions choose to keep the merchandise and everything was handed back to him, including old water-skins, some small leather bottles and a few pieces of wood.

A STANDARD TO BE EMULATED

Now that everything had been returned one of the Companions asked him, "Why don't you enter Islam and keep these things for yourself; they are the property of idolaters?" But Al As replied, "If I did such a thing then my entrance into Islam would not be good and I would have betrayed my trust."

Shortly afterward, Al As took his leave from his family and set off to Mecca. Upon reaching Mecca, Al As wasted no time and distributed his trust whilst asking everyone if they considered they had received their dues. Everyone was in agreement that everything was in order whereupon he returned to Medina to embrace Islam and was reunited once more with his wife and daughter.

CHAPTER 92

THE TRIBE OF MUTALIK

Needless to say, the successful raid against the Syrian caravan was a thorn in the side of the Koraysh. Some time before, the Koraysh had allied themselves with the tribe of Mutalik, a branch of the Khuzah whose territory lay along the coast of the Red Sea. The Koraysh now approached the Mutalik urging them to attack Medina with the hope that their kindred tribes would support them. However, the Koraysh had not realized that the other tribes inclined more to the Muslims than they did toward themselves and it wasn't long until the news reached Medina of the intended attack.

The Mutalik were unaware of the fact that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew anything about their plans so they took their time before even starting to prepare themselves for the encounter. Meanwhile, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided not to wait for them to make the first move and ordered his forces to march to the Mutalik territory. The forthcoming encounter was not expected to be very dangerous so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) allowed Ladies Ayesha and Umm Salama to accompany him. Eight days later he reached the Mutalik territory and, unknown to the Mutalik, struck camp near a watering hole.

The element of surprise was a great advantage and it wasn't long until they were able to surround their settlement. Some of the Mutalik warriors took up arms and fought, ten were killed, however, there was very little resistance, and only one Muslim was martyred. The spoils of war were considerable, just under two hundred families were taken captive, and large herds of two thousand camels and five thousand sheep and goats were confiscated.

Amongst those who had ridden out with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were hypocrites. They were not ill-disposed to join him on account of the brevity of the march with the expectancy of reward for their minimal effort. However, they resented the fact that they would be obliged to share the spoils with the impoverished Muhajir who they considered to be intruders, and were of the opinion that all should belong the tribes of Aws and Khazraj.

Two days after the encounter, a dispute over the ownership of a bucket erupted between two coastal tribesmen, one from the Ghifar and the other from the Juhaynah. Omar had hired the services of the tribesman from the Ghifar who wrongfully laid claim to the bucket and struck its owner, but, he shouted out to the Muhajir for help whilst the Juhaynah tribesman called upon his long-time allies from the Khazraj to support him. Both the Ansars and Muhajir came running, swords were drawn and had it not been for the quick intervention of the Prophet's closer Companions, the matter might have got out of hand.

In another part of the camp, Abdullah, Ubay's son, was sitting with some of his close friends as the disturbance broke out and asked one of them to go and find out about it. His companion returned and told him that the trouble had been initiated by Omar's man and this added further to his contempt. Abdullah, was a proud man and felt that the power of leadership should have fallen into his hands and resented the Prophet's presence among.

Not long before, he had seen his Jewish allies, who betrayed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) during the recent encounter at the Trench, punished and now this incident had occurred. He refused to take into account that the incident had been settled fairly and disregarded the established fact that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would never entertain injustice, no matter whether the complainers were Muslim or not. After having listened to his companion he became enraged and urged, "Spend nothing on those who follow the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) until they have dispersed!" Then exclaimed, "If we return to the City, the strong will expel the more humiliated!"

Zaid, Arkam's son, a Khazraj youth, heard Abdullah and went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to report the matter. The Prophet's displeasure was clear upon his face whereupon Omar expressed his opinion that Abdullah should be dealt with as a traitor, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke gently and replied, "Omar, what would happen if it is said that Muhammad kills his Companions?"

An Ansar heard the boy's report and went to Abdullah to ask if the report was correct. Abdullah was shaken to learn that his intent had been reported and went directly to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and denied the matter on oath. A small crowd had gathered around the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), amongst whom were some people of the Khazraj who stood up for Abdullah and made Zaid appear as if he were a liar which upset him greatly.

The situation was tense, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in his wisdom temporarily dismissed the incident and unexpectedly gave orders to break camp. The timing was unusual as it was not his custom to march in the middle of the day when the heat was at its worst. Apart from a few short stops for prayer, the march continued until well past the mid-morning of the following day when the combination of both heat and tiredness compelled them to stop and they were too exhausted to continue their quarrel.

During the march, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Sa'ad, Ubadah's son, that he believed Zaid had spoken the truth, whereupon Sa'ad said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), if you wish you can drive him out, for indeed he is the lower and the weaker, and you are the higher and mightier!" However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not respond and let it pass until he received a new Revelation, which was the short chapter called "The Hypocrites". In it Allah exonerates Zaid and quotes the words of Abdullah, Ubayy's son.

In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful

"When the hypocrites come to you they say:

'We bear witness that you are the Messenger of Allah.'

Allah knows that you (Prophet Muhammad) are indeed His Messenger, and Allah bears witness that the hypocrites are truly liars!

They have taken their oaths as a cover and barred others from the Path of Allah.
 Evil is what they have done. That is because they believed, then disbelieved,
 because of this a seal has been set upon their hearts
 so they are unable to understand.
 When you see them their bodies please you,
 but when they speak and you listen to their sayings, they are like propped-up timber.
 Every shout (they hear) they take it to be against them.
 They are the enemy - be wary of them. Allah kills them!
 How perverse they are! When it is said to them,
 'Come, the Messenger of Allah will ask forgiveness for you,'
 they turn their heads in pride and you see them go away.
 It is equal for them whether you ask for their forgiveness or you do not ask
 for their forgiveness, Allah will not forgive them.
 Allah does not guide the evildoers.
 It is they that say, 'Spend nothing on those who follow
 the Messenger of Allah until they disperse.'
 Yet to Allah belong the treasures of the heavens and the earth,
 but the hypocrites do not understand.
 They say, 'If we return to the City, the strong will expel the humiliated.'
 But the might belongs to Allah, and His Messenger and the believers,
 but the hypocrites do not know.
 Believers, do not let either your possessions
 or your children divert you from the Remembrance of Allah.
 Those who do that shall be the losers.
 So spend of that with which We have provided you
 before death comes upon any of you and he then says:
 'O my Lord, if only You would defer me to a near term,
 so that I could give in charity and be among the good-doers.'
 But Allah will never defer any soul when its term comes.
 Allah is Aware of what you do."
 Koran Chapter 63

However, the Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, did not recite this new chapter until
 after his return to Medina.

Meanwhile, Zaid continued to ride on in misery dwelling upon the hurt that anyone
 could even think that he would lie to the Messenger of Allah (*Salla Allahu alihi wa
 sallam*). The Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) understood how very sad Zaid was
 feeling, so he rode up to him, and spoke in a gentle, comforting voice that no other
 could hear saying, "Your ear heard the truth; Allah has confirmed it." Zaid's misery
 vanished, he was so very happy, but knew he must not say a word about it until after
 Prophet Muhammad, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, had made known the truth.

Abdullah's son knew that his father had lied, he also knew that Omar had asked the
 Prophet, *salla Allahu alihi wa sallam*, to deal with him as a traitor and was afraid of his
 tribes reaction should it be carried out. With this in mind he went to the Prophet (*salla
 Allahu alihi wa salaam*) and told him that he knew of Omar's opinion and asked that if it
 was proven to be true, that he be permitted to be his father's executioner. He told the
 Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi wa salaam*) that if anyone else were to do it, that every time
 he saw that person he would want to kill him and thereby be responsible for killing a
 believer for the sake of an unbeliever and enter Hell. But the Prophet (*salla Allahu alihi*

wa salaam) told him that this was not his intention to harm him and said, "Let us deal with him gently and make the best of his company while he is with us."

When they reached Medina, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for the hypocrites so that he might ask for their forgiveness but they turned away in arrogance; and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) recited the newly revealed chapter that exposed them.

Allah tells us that Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, was sent as a mercy to all the worlds (21:107). His mercy even reached the hypocrites. He knew who they were but because they had born witness with their tongues in the belief of the Oneness of Allah, and of his Messengership their lives were spared.

CHAPTER 93 THE NECKLACE OF LADY AYESHA

At sunset, a few days after the forced march, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for his men to halt to offer the evening prayer. Lady Ayesha's camel was made to kneel and as she dismounted the weakened clasp of the onyx necklace her mother had given her on her wedding day came undone and her necklace fell off. She did not notice it was missing for sometime but when she did she became very sad.

The sun had set and it was impossible to find it even though she tried very hard. It had been the Prophet's intention not to stay long at the halt as there was no water for miles around and there was very little water left in their water-skins, but knowing how upset Lady Ayesha was he gave the order that they would remain there that night.

News of the loss of Lady Ayesha's necklace circulated amongst the Companions and on account of the lack of water there was much concern about their ability to offer the dawn prayer the following morning. They wondered if they would have to delay saying the prayer for it would be necessary for everyone to renew their ablution. That night, Allah in His Mercy sent a new Revelation that spoke of an alternate way in which one might make ablution when water was unavailable:

"If you are ill or on a journey, or if any of you come from the toilet or you have touched (had intercourse with) women, and you cannot find water, so touch pure dust and wipe your faces and your hands.
Allah is the Pardoner, the Forgiver."
Koran 4:43

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) recited the new verse to his followers and demonstrated how to make the dry kind of ablution, tayamun, with pure, unpolluted dust and the Muslims rejoiced at not having to delay the Dawn prayer.

After having heard this Revelation, Usayd went to Abu Bakr telling him that it was not the first blessing they had received on his account.

It was daybreak, the prayer had been offered and there was still no sign of the necklace. It was time to move and as Lady Ayesha's camel got up, there, lying underneath it lay her necklace.

THE RACE

As they journeyed back to Medina they came across a valley in which it was decided to camp and the two tents of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) were erected some distance away from the others.

Lady Ayesha, who was young and full of energy, invited the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to race with her as he had done in Mecca before the migration, and so they raced with one another. This time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) won the race whereupon he said, "This is for the other race, the one in which you were the winner." Later, Lady Ayesha explained that one day, when she was little, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to visit her father and saw she had something in her hand. He asked her to bring it to him, but in her playfulness she would not and had run away from him whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) pretended to run after her, but let her get away.

THE LAST STAGE OF THE JOURNEY

Medina was but a few stops away when the order to halt was given. Once more, during their rest period, the clasp of Lady Ayesha's necklace came undone and slipped from her without notice.

The time had come to resume the march, but just before she mounted her howdah she felt the need to answer the call of nature and slipped away far from everyone's sight. When she returned, Lady Umm Salamah and herself seated themselves inside their individual howdahs and drew the curtains around them as they waited for them to be lifted up on to the back of their camels. To her great alarm, as Lady Ayesha was making herself comfortable she realized her necklace had slipped yet again and so she left her howdah to go and look for it. Everyone was busy with their own affairs and nobody noticed her leave the howdah. Whilst she searched for the necklace the howdahs were mounted onto the camels, and no one realized that she was not inside, and the order to march was given.

Lady Ayesha found her necklace but when she returned everyone had left. She didn't know what to do for the best so she thought if she remained where her howdah had been, then, sooner or later, someone would be sure to notice she wasn't with them and realize that she had been left behind at the last halt, and as she waited she was overcome by tiredness and fell sound asleep.

Safwan, Muattal's son had been designated to trail behind the army. His duties were to be on the look out for any possible threat from the rear and to retrieve any item that may have either been left behind or dropped as the army marched on ahead.

The hours passed by and as Safwan drew near to the last camp he noticed a figure asleep in the sand and decided to investigate. When he reached the camp he dismounted from his camel and went over to the sleeper.

Lady Ayesha was not wearing her veil so he was able to recognize her as he had seen her before the Prophet's wives were obliged to wear the veil. As soon as he realized

who the sleeping person was he exclaimed, "Indeed we are for Allah, and to Him we return. It is the wife of the Messenger of Allah, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)!" Until that moment Lady Ayesha had remained asleep, but upon hearing his voice she woke up and quickly drew the veil over her face. She was relieved to see him and Safwan offered her his camel and walked on foot as he led the camel on to the next halt.

At the next halt, the howdahs had been lifted from the camels and set down upon the sand. When Lady Ayesha did not come out of her howdah it was presumed she must have fallen asleep, and no one thought anymore about it. It was almost time to resume the march, when to everyone's astonishment Safwan entered the camp leading Lady Ayesha riding on his camel.

Neither the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) nor the Companions thought anymore about the incident, they were glad that she was safe and sound, but the tongues of the hypocrites, ever searching for a way to harm the holy family, started to concoct slanderous lies about Lady Ayesha and Safwan.

THE DIVISION OF THE SPOILS OF WAR

Upon their return to Medina the spoils of war were distributed evenly amongst those that had taken part in the campaign. Among those taken captive was Juwayriyah, the daughter of Harith, chief of the Mutalik. Juwayriyah had been given to an Ansar who decided to ask a high ransom for her release on account of her father's rank. Juwayriyah was troubled by the price so she went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who was staying in the apartment of Lady Ayesha that day, to request him to intervene on her behalf.

Meanwhile, Juwayriyah's father learned of his daughter's position and set off with his sons for Medina with a fine herd of camels to ransom her. However, when he reached the valley of Atik his love of two extremely fine camels prompted him to keep them and not to offer them as part of the ransom, so he hid them with the intent of retrieval after he had secured his daughter's release.

When Harith reached Medina he went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and offered the camels, but much to his astonishment and that of his sons, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired, "Where are the other camels?" Then he proceeded to tell Harith the exact place where they were hidden in the valley of Atik. Harith and his sons were completely overcome, for no one except the three knew what they had done nor yet where they had hidden the camels. Harith and his sons exclaimed, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah!" The two camels were fetched and given to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Juwayriyah was returned to her father, and like her father, she too embraced Islam.

Tribal ties had been strengthened enormously through the bonds of the Prophet's marriages and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) proposed marriage to Juwayriyah. Juwayriyah accepted and an apartment was added to those of her co-wives.

When the Ansars and Muhajirs learned that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was going to take Lady Juwayriyah to be his wife they released all the unransomed captives, of whom there were approximately one hundred families, and Lady Ayesha

was heard to say, "I know of no woman, who was a greater blessing to her tribe than her."

CHAPTER 94

THE VICIOUS LIE

Soon after their return, Lady Ayesha was taken ill and during this time the slanderous lies the hypocrites concocted started to circulate throughout the City. The majority of Muslims refused to accept or even listen to them, however, there were a few including Lady Ayesha's own cousin, Mistah, who believed and helped to spread the rumor.

Despite the fact that everyone in Medina knew about the rumors, Lady Ayesha remained completely unaware, and when her illness worsened she asked the Prophet's permission to return to her mother so that she might look after her and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed.

Twenty days after she had gone to stay with her mother, her illness abated. One evening, shortly thereafter, as she was walking with her paternal aunt, Mistah's mother, her aunt's foot became entangled in her gown and caused her to stumble, whereupon she surprised Lady Ayesha with her exclamation, "May Mistah stumble!" Lady Ayesha exclaimed, "Allah! That is not a good thing to say about a Muhajir who fought at Badr!" Then it dawned upon her aunt that Lady Ayesha knew nothing of the rumors and asked, "Haven't you heard what is being said?" Lady Ayesha was puzzled and replied that she had no idea to that which she referred, whereupon her aunt broke the news of the vicious lies the hypocrites and her son were spreading about her.

Lady Ayesha could not believe her ears and exclaimed, "Can this be so!" and with deep regret her aunt swore by Allah that it was. Lady Ayesha burst into tears and returned home sobbing so much that later on she said that she feared her liver would split. When she reached home she went straight to her mother saying, "May Allah forgive you, people talk, yet you did not tell me anything of it!" Her mother did her best to comfort her but it did nothing to alleviate the great sorrow and hurt she felt as she lay awake all night sobbing her young, innocent heart out.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew Lady Ayesha to be innocent of the charges but had to wait for a Revelation to be sent down that would exonerate her before everyone. In the meantime he approached his wives and asked their opinion of her so as to confound the whisperings of satan. Without exception all praised Lady Ayesha saying that they only knew good things about her.

The following morning when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was in the Mosque he climbed the pulpit, praised Allah then said, "O people, what do you say of men who seek to hurt me with regard to my family by spreading untruths about them? By Allah, I know nothing but good about my household, and nothing but good about the man they mention who has never entered a house of mine except that I was with him." As soon as the words had left the Prophet's mouth, Usayd jumped up and said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), if they are from the Aws, we will deal with them; but if they are from our Khazraj brothers then command us -- they should be killed!" Amongst the chief perpetrators other than Mistah, and ibn Ubayy, was Hamnah, and Hasan, Thabit's son from the Khazraj. When Sa'ad, heard Usayd's

words he exclaimed, "You will not kill them, nor can you. You would not have spoken like this if they had been your people! A heated argument broke out as Usayd said, "We will kill them, and you are a hypocrite to take their side! The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) intervened and quieted them down and they left the Mosque in peace.

A well intentioned person thought Lady Ayesha would be comforted when she learned of the kind words her co-wives had said about her when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired about her. However, it caused her greater distress as she began to wonder whether he had asked them because he distrusted her. Had she also been told about the events in the Mosque she would have realized otherwise but she remained unaware.

Lady Ayesha wept continuously for two days and nights during which time one of the ladies from the Ansar came to visit her and she too sat and wept with her. A while later, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) came to visit her and sat down and said, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah," then he explained the situation to her saying compassionately, "O Ayesha, I have heard such and such a thing concerning you. Allah will surely declare the innocence of the innocent. Should it be that you have done something that is wrong, then repent to Allah, for Allah is the Receiver of repentance." When Lady Ayesha heard these words she stopped crying and asked her father to speak on her behalf, but he said, "I do not know how to reply." She asked her mother to do the same, but like her husband she did not know how to reply. Lady Ayesha, who was still extremely distressed, replied with the best reply against the slanderers and quoted the words Prophet Jacob had uttered when Joseph's brothers claimed that a wolf had devoured him:

"... 'But come sweet patience!
The help of Allah is always there to seek
against that which (some of) you describe.'"
Koran 12:18

then she went and laid down upon her couch, hoping all the while that Allah would clarify the matter. Such was her humility that she did not expect to be worthy of a Revelation being sent down proclaiming her innocence, but she hoped that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would see a vision that would exonerate her.

Not long after Lady Ayesha had laid down Allah sent Gabriel with a Revelation of exoneration to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whereupon he called to her with great happiness, "O Ayesha, praise Allah, for He has announced your innocence."

"... those who came with slander were a number of you.
Do not regard it evil for you, rather it is good for you.
Every person of them shall have the sin that he has earned charged to him.
As for he who took upon himself the greater part there is a mightier punishment."
Koran 24:11

The Revelation spoke not only of Lady Ayesha's innocence but the punishment of those who slander innocent women.

The verse Allah sent down regarding the punishment of slanderers read:

"Those who accuse chaste women and cannot produce four witnesses,
you shall lash them with eighty lashes.
And never accept their testimony, for they are evildoers,
except those among them that afterwards repent and mend their ways.
Allah is Forgiving, Merciful."
Koran 24:4-5

And so in compliance with the Word of Allah, those who admitted taking part in the slander were punished. As for the hypocrites, they did not admit their part, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left them alone committing their affair to Allah.

Prior to the slandering, it had been the custom of Abu Bakr to give his nephew, Mistah, who was poor, an allowance. Now that Mistah's mischief had been revealed he swore by Allah never to give him anything again on account of the harm he had caused. But, unknown to Abu Bakr at that time, Allah had sent down another verse that instructs:

"Do not let those of you who possess bounty and plenty
swear not to give kinsmen and the poor
and those who emigrate in the Way of Allah.
Let them pardon and forgive.
Do you not yearn that Allah forgives you?
And Allah is the Forgiver, the Most Merciful."
Koran 24:22

When this verse was recited to Abu Bakr he exclaimed, "Indeed, I yearn that Allah forgives me," and went to Mistah to give him his allowance saying, "I swear that I will never again withhold it from him!"

CHAPTER 95

THE DEATH OF UBAYD ALLAH, SON OF JAHSH

A month or so before Ramadan, news reached Medina that Ubayd Allah, the son of Jahsh had died. Before Ubayd Allah's conversion he had been a Christian but when he and his wife Umm Habibah, Abu Sufyan's daughter converted to Islam, they had been among those that migrated to Abyssinia to escape persecution. However, much to Umm Habibah's sadness her husband reverted to Christianity and died as such.

CHAPTER 96

THE PRELUDE TO THE OPENING OF MECCA

"The first House ever to be built for people was at Bakkah (Mecca)
blessed and a guidance for the worlds.
In it there are clear signs; the station where Abraham stood.
Whoever enters it let him be safe.
Pilgrimage to the House is a duty to Allah
For all who can make the journey.
And whosoever disbelieves,
Allah is Rich, independent of all the worlds."
Koran 3:96-97

The blessed month of Ramadan had come and gone. Not long after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had a vision in which he saw himself with his head shaven with key in hand entering Ka'ba. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions of the vision great elation spread amongst the majority when he announced his intention to lead them on pilgrimage to the Sacred House. However, there were some hypocrites that decided they would not to go with him on account of the fact that there would be no spoils of war to bring home.

It had been several years since the would-be pilgrims had been able to visit the House of Allah. Their hearts yearned to offer their prayers at the Ka'ba once more and so preparations commenced with the white robes of pilgrimage being made ready and the purchase of seventy sacrificial camels to be offered upon the completion of the pilgrimage.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prepared himself by shaving his head and dressed in the same white clothes that all the other pilgrims wore, then, lots were cast to see which of his wives should accompany him and the lot fell in favor of Lady Umm Salamah.

Although the pilgrimage was to take place in one of the sacred months, months in which all forms of hostilities are strictly forbidden, Sa'ad Ubadah's son and Omar were of the opinion that they should, nevertheless, go fully armed to protect themselves just in case the Koraysh should take advantage of their vulnerability, and try to attack them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was not agreeable to the suggestion and declared, "I will not carry arms, I go only to offer the pilgrimage."

When the day arrived, one thousand, four hundred pilgrims left Medina for Mecca dressed in regular attire. At the first halt the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for one of the sacrificial camels to be brought to him, as it stood before him he made the intention to sacrifice it, then, adorned it with garlands around its neck, after which he marked it on its right side and told the pilgrims that they should do likewise.

After the dedication of the camels many pilgrims dressed themselves in their white robes in preparation for making their personal intention to offer their pilgrimage. However, some delayed as they intended to hunt as once a pilgrim puts on his pilgrimage robes hunting is no longer permissible to him until the completion of the pilgrimage.

Those now dressed in pilgrim's robes followed the example of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "Labbayk Allahumma Labbayk," which means, "Here I am O Allah, obedient to You," a supplication which is made by every pilgrim since the time of Prophet Abraham up to this day.

Shortly after the dedication of the camels, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent a man from the tribe of Khuzah -- a branch of the tribe of Ka'b -- to observe the reaction of the Koraysh.

THE KORAYSH LEARN OF THE INTENDED PILGRIMAGE

As soon as the word reached Mecca of the Muslims intent to offer their pilgrimage at Ka'ba they were gripped in a state of panic. The fact that those who reported their

approach told them that they bore no arms, that is, with the exception of a few carrying their sheathed hunting knives, which could not, by any means, be taken as a threat against them, did not help the matter. Shortly after their approach had been announced, the Koraysh chieftains called for a meeting of the utmost urgency in the House of Assembly to establish the course of action they should take.

TWO FACTORS

There were two factors at stake; since the time of, Prophets Abraham and Ishmael, the Ka'ba had always been a place where pilgrims from all over Arabia and beyond had been free to come to offer their pilgrimage. The Koraysh had, since the very early days, been the guardians of Ka'ba and never in the history of Mecca had a pilgrim been prevented from entering the City. The opposite had always been the case, they had been welcomed and afforded the traditional hospitality of food and water which was an obligatory honor upon the tribes of the Koraysh.

The problem that now presented itself was if the Koraysh refused to permit the Muslims to offer their pilgrimage, their much coveted honor would be at stake, and soon all Arabia would learn of their refusal to admit the Muslim pilgrims. On the other hand if they let the Muslims enter Mecca it would be yet another moral victory for them especially in the light of their recently failed attempt to conquer Medina.

After great deliberation it was agreed that despite their situation, on no account would they permit them to enter Mecca, and so Khalid -- who had led the Koraysh against the Muslims at Uhud -- with a cavalry of two hundred was dispatched to prevent the Muslims from entering the City.

KHALID'S ATTEMPT TO STOP THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ENTERING MECCA

The Khuzah scout rejoined his fellow pilgrims at a place called Usfan and related the news of Khalid's intended blockade to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Upon learning their plans the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) enlisted the help of a pilgrim from the tribe of Aslam, who knew the area well, to lead them through the rugged mountain passes away from Khalid and then down into Mecca.

It wasn't until it was too late that Khalid spotted a cloud of dust in the distance that he realized the Muslims had taken the mountain route, a route virtually impossible for him and his men to pursue, so with all haste he sped back to Mecca to warn the Koraysh of their approach via the mountains.

The journey through the mountains proved to be both tiring and arduous, however it was of no concern to the pilgrims. When they reached easier terrain the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to the pilgrims and told them to supplicate saying, "We ask Allah to forgive us and we repent to Him", and with humble hearts the pilgrims supplicated.

HUDAYBIYAH

Upon reaching a place called Hudaybiyah, which lies not far from Mecca on the boundaries of the sacred land, the Prophet's favorite camel, Kaswa -- the camel he had ridden during his migration to Medina several years before -- suddenly knelt down and refused to go any further. At first the pilgrims thought she must be tired or perhaps a little stubborn, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them, "The same

Power that prevented the elephant from entering Mecca is now preventing us," whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave the instructions to strike camp.

THE MIRACLE OF THE WATER

As the pilgrims set about striking camp, some went in search of water. Eventually they came across a well, however, it was almost dry so they returned to inform the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whereupon he returned with them to the well. Upon reaching it he sat down beside it, then blew some saliva in to the well and supplicated. Suddenly, water gushed forth and the pilgrims filled their water-skins and watered their animals.

When the need for more water arose, some of the pilgrims went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to inform them of their circumstances. As they approached they saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) completing his ablution with water that had been poured into a vessel. After he had finished his Companions told him that they had no more water and that his ablution water was all that remained. Upon hearing this, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) dipped his hands into the vessel and water began to flow from his fingers, just like springs, so that the need of each and every pilgrim was satisfied.

THE CHIEFTAIN'S GIFT

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been given a gift of some camels and sheep by two Bedouin chieftains from the tribe of Khuzah and so the animals were slaughtered and the pilgrims ate their fill. The tribe of Khuzah had not as a whole entered the fold of Islam although they inclined towards it as did their branch tribes of Aslam, Mustalik and Ka'b, however, they had allied themselves to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

The alliance not only benefited the Muslims but also the Khuzah as they had, for many years, been adversaries of the Bani Bakr who had strengthened their position by allying themselves to the Koraysh. These alliances were, within the course of a short time, destined to play a crucial role between the Muslims and the Koraysh.

THE PEACEFUL WAYS OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

A man by the name of Budayl and his companions who inclined towards the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) happened to be in Mecca during this time so they left Mecca and made their way to Hudaibiyah to inform the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of the hostile atmosphere. When they reached him they told him, "They are swearing by Allah that they will never leave a way open between you and the House until all their warriors lie dead!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Budayl, "We did not come here to fight, we come only to offer the circumambulation around the House. Whosoever tries to prevent us, we will oppose, but I will give them time to make their arrangements to leave the way unhindered for us."

In an effort to mediate, Budayl and his companions returned to Mecca only to be shunned by many. They approached Ikrima, son of the infamous Abu Jahl and tried to tell them of the Prophet's position, but he refused to listen. However, Safwan and Urwah happened to be present and told Ikrima that his attitude was unreasonable whereupon Safwan asked Budayl to tell him what had transpired at Hudaibiyah. Budayl told them that the Prophet's intent was none other than peaceful, and that he

was prepared to give the Koraysh sufficient time to prepare themselves for their entrance.

Urwah was of the opinion that the proposal was fair and that if it was not accepted it would harm them. He further suggested that he would go to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), both as an envoy and as a scout, observe for himself the attitude of the pilgrims, return, and give them his opinion. His proposal was accepted and Urwah left for Hudaibiyah.

THE MISCALCULATED INSULT

In the meantime, the Koraysh, who had allied themselves to the tribes of Ahabish, asked one of its chieftains named Hulays, from the tribe of Al Harith, a branch of the Kinanah, to also go and investigate. Hulays had taken part in the encounter at Uhud but had been appalled by Abu Sufyan's mutilation of the bodies of fallen Muslims; he was also known to be a man that respected religious rites. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw him approaching, he told the pilgrims to let the sacrificial camels wander freely towards him and this they did. When Hulays saw the garland camels coming towards him, it was enough to convince him that the intent was indeed peaceful and so he returned to Mecca.

Upon his return he gave them his opinion, however, the Koraysh rebuked him harshly, and referred to him as being incapable of assessing the situation saying he was no more than a desert Arab, who knew little of these kind of affairs. It was a miscalculated insult. With authority Hulays responded, "People of Koraysh, by Allah, it was not for this that we allied ourselves with you, neither are we with you in this concern. When someone comes to honor the House of Allah should they be barred from it? By Him in whose hand is my soul, you either let Muhammad do what he has come to do, or, I will withdraw each and every man of the Ahabish!" The Koraysh had not reckoned upon Hulays' response and now pleaded with him to delay taking action until they had chance to draw up terms acceptable to both parties.

URWAH'S AUDIENCE WITH THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

By now, Urwah had reached the Prophet's camp and made straight for his tent. Urwah was made welcome and as they sat together Urwah addressed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at his own level and grasped hold of the Prophet's beard. Mughirah, who was standing near the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tapped Urwah's hand gently with the flat of his sheathed sword as a warning and Urwah removed his hand. The conversation was quite lengthy and Urwah forgot himself again and once more took hold of the Prophet's beard whereupon Mughirah tapped him a little harder but this time said, "Take your hand from the Messenger of Allah's beard while it is still yours to take!" Urwah removed his hand immediately and did not forget his manners again.

HOW ALL MUSLIMS AND NON-MUSLIMS SHOULD RESPECT AND HONOR THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Urwah was constantly on his guard for signs of hidden hostility, however, he found none whatsoever and was very impressed by the way in which the Muslims respected and honored the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Upon his return to Mecca he addressed the Koraysh saying, "I have been sent as an envoy to kings; to Chosroes and to the Negus, but I have never seen a king whose subjects honored any one of them as the followers of Muhammad honor Muhammad. When he orders anything they

vie with one another to fulfill it. When he makes his ablution they almost fight over the remaining water. When he speaks, they become quiet and refrain from looking at him straight in the face, rather, they lower their eyes in humility before him. He has offered us a fair compromise, so accept it from him."

IKRIMA'S TREATMENT OF KHIRASH

Whilst Urwah was in the Prophet's camp, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had sent yet another envoy, on camel-back, by the name of Khirash from the tribe of Ka'b to Mecca. Khirash was met by Ikrima who wasted no time killing his camel and was about to turn on Khirash when Hulays and some of his tribesmen saw what had happened, restrained Ikrima and demanded that he should be allowed to return to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

OTHTMAN NEGOTIATES WITH THE KORAYSH

When Khirash returned to the camp he went immediately to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him what had happened then advised him saying, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), send someone to them who is more respected than myself." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) accepted his humble advice and called upon Omar, but Omar reminded him that the Koraysh were very hostile towards him and that there was no one in his own tribe strong enough to lend his support. Omar then suggested that Othman, Arfan's son, should go on account of the fact that he was not only highly respected amongst many of their tribesmen but also wise. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed and Othman made his way to Mecca to reason with the Koraysh.

The days went by, and the pilgrims waited patiently for his return. Each day they looked anxiously for his return until they began to fear that something evil had befallen him.

THE OATH OF ALLEGIANCE

It was during this time that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called his followers around him under an acacia tree and asked them to renew their oath of allegiance.

The first to give his oath was Sinan from the tribe of Khuzaymah, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) extended his left hand and held it with his right hand saying, "I pledge my allegiance for Othman", then, one by one the Muslims renewed their oath of allegiance.

"To Allah belong the armies of the heaven and the earth.
Allah is the Almighty and the Wise.
We have sent you (Prophet Muhammad) as a witness
and as a bearer of glad tidings and warning,
so that you believe in Allah and His Messenger
and that you support him, revere him, and exalt Him,
at the dawn and in the evening.
Those who swear allegiance to you swear allegiance to Allah.
The Hand of Allah is above their hands.
He who breaks his oath breaks it against his self,
but for he that keeps his covenant made with Allah,
Allah shall give him a mighty wage.

The Bedouins who lagged behind will say to you:
 'We were occupied with our possessions and families,
 so ask Allah to forgive us.'
 But they say with their tongues what they do not mean in their hearts.
 Say, 'Who can help you against Allah if it is that He wills harm for you
 or desires benefit for you?
 Allah is Aware of what you do.'
 No, you thought that the Messenger and the believers
 would never return to their families,
 and this was made to seem fair in your hearts so you harbored evil thoughts,
 and so you are a destroyed nation.
 But whosoever disbelieves in Allah and His Messenger,
 We have prepared a Blazing Fire for the unbelievers.
 To Allah belongs the Kingdom of the heavens and the earth.
 He forgives whom He will and punishes whom He will.
 Allah is Forgiving and Merciful.
 Koran 48:4-14

OTHTMAN'S RESPECT FOR THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Not long after the pledging Othman returned unharmed. He had been well received but the Prophet's request had been rejected, however he had been given the opportunity to offer his own personal pilgrimage but out of respect for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he declined.

THE THWARTED PLAN

Meanwhile, some of the Koraysh set out from Mecca with the intent of initiating a surprise attack upon the Muslims. However, their plans were thwarted and the aggressors brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who justly released them after they gave their promise never to attack Muslims again.

CHAPTER 97 THE TREATY OF HUDAYBIYAH

Shortly after the failed attempt, a delegation from Mecca arrived at Hdaybiyah. They were treated with courtesy and found their host to be amenable and soon negotiations were underway.

The verbal negotiations resulted in a ten-year peace treaty between them. However, as a token of good will it was agreed that the Muslims would forego their pilgrimage that year, but, it was agreed that thereafter they would be permitted to offer their pilgrimage each year at the Ka'ba for three days during which time the Koraysh would leave the City.

THE OBJECTION OF SUHAYL

A problem arose when it came to writing down the terms and conditions of the treaty. The Korayshi, Suhayl, Amr's son, objected when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) started to dictate to Ali the phrase, "In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful" and said, "Write, 'In Your Name Allah.' I do not know Him, the Merciful, the Most Merciful." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), providing there was no

harm in it, always took the middle course and accepted and so Ali wrote, "In Your Name Allah".

Suhayl objected still further when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued his dictation with the words, "This treaty is between Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), and Suhayl, Amr's son," saying, "It is not my belief that you are the Messenger of Allah, if it were my opinion then I would not oppose you!"

THE PEACEFUL, WISE APPROACH OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Ali had already written the words "the Messenger of Allah" and could not bring himself to strike the words out of the treaty, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who could neither read nor write, took the document and erased the words from the treaty. It was a time for wisdom and diplomacy, and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed that the treaty should be recorded instead as, "Muhammad, Abdullah's son." When Omar heard this he cried out with indignation, "Aren't you the Messenger of Allah, and aren't we Muslims! Should we accept this, when we are in the right and they are in the wrong, people will scoff at our religion!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made no comment for he was wise and the signing of the treaty was concluded without further incident.

Omar was still very upset and went to Abu Bakr to tell of his feelings. He repeated what he had said to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), whereupon Abu Bakr responded in almost exactly the same way of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Omar became quiet and accepted it fearing that he had spoken out of turn.

THE CONDITIONS OF THE TREATY

Added to the ten year peace treaty was that both parties agreed that they would neither undermine each other nor yet indulge in treachery of any kind. The treaty also contained the condition that Muslims forcefully detained in Mecca and those Meccans inclining toward Islam would thereafter be permitted to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in Medina, providing permission was granted by their guardians. It was also agreed that in the event that any should leave without permission they would be returned. The agreement was reciprocal and anyone in Medina who wished to join the Koraysh was free to do so under the same terms.

The signatories to the treaty were the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Ali, Abu Bakr, Omar, Abdur Rahman, son of Awf, Mahmood, son of Maslamah, and Abdullah, the elder son of Suhayl.

ABU JANDAL

For some time Suhayl's son, Abu Jandal, had longed to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) just as his brother had done, and had accompanied his father with the intention of joining the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at Hdaybiyah. Now that this clause had become part of the treaty, Abu Jandal knew that his father would never permit him to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and if he tried to join him, he would be returned to Mecca. Abu Jandal was deeply upset, broke down, and wept, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) consoled him saying, "Be patient Abu Jandal, Allah will help you and find a way for you and others like you."

THE COMMITMENT OF THE TRIBES OF KHUZAH AND BAKR

Among those present during the drawing-up of the treaty were notable tribesmen from the tribe of Khuzah allied to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and notables from the tribe of Bakr allied to the Koraysh. The notables from the Khuzah announced that they too wished to be included in the treaty saying, "We are with Muhammad in his bond and treaty." The representatives from the tribe of Bakr also made it clear that it was their wish also to be included but that they stood with the Koraysh in both their bond and treaty. The matter was then taken to their chieftains who were agreeable and so they became party to the terms and conditions of the truce.

THE PILGRIMS DISAPPOINTMENT

Tremendous disappointment and a feeling of numbness spread among the pilgrims as they learned that they were not going to be able to offer their pilgrimage that year, however, they were heartened to learn that they would be able to do so in subsequent years.

THE SACRIFICE AND THE SHAVEN HEADS

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ordered the shaving of their heads and the sacrifice of the camels at Hudaybiyah, and not in the traditionally ordained places, the pilgrims were somewhat bewildered and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had to repeat the order twice, but the pilgrims remained as if frozen, uncomprehending.

EAGERNESS TO FOLLOW WHAT THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) DID AND SAID

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his tent and told Lady Umm Salamah what had transpired and during the conversation it was thought best that he should go out but not speak to anyone until he had sacrificed his camel. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left his tent and went to the camel he had dedicated for sacrifice and in a clear voice proclaimed, "Bismillah, Allahu Akbar," and slaughtered the camel. Immediately the numbed condition of the pilgrims vanished as they raced with one another to offer their sacrifices, eager to obey their beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called to Khirash and told him to shave his head whereupon most of the pilgrims followed his example.

Such had been their enthusiasm to shave that Lady Umm Salamah remarked some time later that she feared they might seriously injure themselves. There were however, a few others who did not shave their heads entirely, preferring just to cut it short as it was known that this too is acceptable.

Whilst the shaving was in progress the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to his tent with Khirash and came out shortly afterwards and supplicated, "May Allah have mercy on those that shaved their heads." The barbers exclaimed, "And upon the shavers of the hair, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)?" But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) repeated his supplication again, which was met by an even greater outcry and he repeated his supplication yet a third time, but this time he added, "And the shavers of hair!" When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was asked why he had supplicated only for those that had shaved their heads he replied, "Because they did not doubt." Suddenly, there was a strong gust of wind,

and the hair that lay strewn across the camp was lifted up into the air and blown towards Mecca.

PREPARATIONS FOR THE RETURN TO MEDINA

It was now time to dismantle the tents in readiness for the return journey to Medina. Much had been achieved but still the deep disappointment of not having been able to offer their pilgrimage at Ka'ba weighed heavily upon the hearts of the pilgrims.

OMAR'S REMORSE

Omar deeply regretted his uncontrolled outburst during the writing of the treaty, for he knew that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) obeyed Allah, and that he should neither have questioned the authority nor yet the wisdom of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). He also felt his outburst was reprehensible and so he rode quickly until he caught up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) however, was preoccupied with other affairs and did not pay much attention to Omar and he felt even worse whereupon he rode ahead muttering to himself, "Let my mother mourn for her son Omar!"

As Omar rode on alone his fears overwhelmed him and he was deeply troubled that his actions might be the subject of a Revelation. Immersed in sincere regret, Omar did not hear the pounding of horses hooves until its rider caught up with him. The rider bore a message from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asking him to return to him. Obediently, Omar turned his mount around and rode toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As he approached, Omar's fears were waylaid as he saw the Prophet's face aglow with happiness. As Omar drew alongside the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that he had receive a Revelation which was dearer to him than anything else under the sun. It was the chapter Alfat-h; The Opening, which begins with the verses:

"Indeed, We have opened for you (Prophet Muhammad) a clear opening,
that Allah forgives your past and future sins,
and completes His Favor to you, and guides you on a Straight Path,
and that Allah helps you with a mighty help ..."
Koran 48:1-3

The chapter also spoke of the allegiance given to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) under the tree saying:

"Allah was pleased with the believers
when they swore allegiance to you under the tree
and He knew what was in their hearts.
Therefore, He sent down tranquility upon them
and rewarded them with a victory close by."
Koran 48:18

The vision that prompted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to make the pilgrimage to Mecca is also spoken of with reassurance:

"Indeed, Allah in truth, has realized His Messenger's vision.
You shall enter the Sacred Mosque in security if Allah wills,
with hair shaven or cut short and without fear.

He knew what you did not know and granted you a near victory."
Koran 48:27

Much to the elation of the pilgrims their beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that Allah had accepted their pilgrimage on account of their intention.

CHAPTER 98 THE ESCAPEES FROM MECCA

When the pilgrims returned home to Medina the news of the peace treaty was welcomed with great rejoicing by those unable to accompany the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The prospects of being able to offer their pilgrimage the next year without the fear of hostile action was indeed a blessing.

Shortly after their return, Abu Basir, a young tribesman from the Thakif arrived in Medina. Abu Basir had converted to Islam and when the Meccans discovered his conversion they had, as was the case with many converts, imprisoned him, however, Abu Basir managed to escape.

Upon reaching Medina, Abu Basir went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him of his circumstances, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was bound by the terms of the treaty and told him that he must return, but comforted him saying that Allah would soon open a way for him.

Abu Basir's escape had not gone unnoticed in Mecca and soon a tribesman was sent by the Koraysh together with his freed slave, Kawthar, to ask for his immediate return. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) honored and abided by the terms of the treaty, and so Abu Basir was returned to them.

Abu Basir loathed the thought of returning and planned to rid himself of the two tribesmen whilst they journeyed back to Mecca. At the first halt, Abu Basir seized the Korayshi's sword and killed him, whilst Kawthar fled in terror back to Medina where he made straight for the Mosque. As Kawthar entered he saw the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), raced over to him and threw himself down at his feet, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said with concern, "This man has witnessed a terrible thing." After Kawthar had a chance to gather his breath he told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) what had transpired and shortly afterwards, Abu Basir arrived with his sword still drawn.

Abu Basir wanted the camels and the dead man's weapons to be divided according to the distribution of the spoils of war, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) declined saying, "If I did such a thing it would be thought that I had not kept the terms of the treaty I had sworn to keep." Then he turned to Kawthar and said, "The spoils taken by this man are your concern, return them and the man, to the one who sent you." Kawthar was shaken by the Prophet's instruction and in fear for his life referred to the fact that he was just one person, and very unwilling to take him back to Mecca.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had abided by the treaty, but now that Kawthar, the Koraysh representative, refused to return with Abu Basir he had done all that was necessary on his part and Abu Basir left Medina for the coast.

THE ESCAPE OF UMM KULTHUM

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received a new Revelation that forbade the return of believing women to unbelievers, so when Umm Kulthum, half sister to Othman, escaped to Medina she came under its protection. Shortly after her arrival, Umm Kulthum's full blood brothers arrived to take her back to Mecca, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) refused and her brothers accepted as they agreed that women had not be mentioned in the treaty.

Umm Kulthum had indeed shown great courage and soon found that she had several suitors, namely Zaid, Abdur Rahman, son of Awf and Zubair. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) suggested that she marry Zaid, she consented and they were married shortly afterwards.

THE MUSLIMS OF MECCA LEARN OF ABU BASIR

Omar made it his duty to find out where Abu Basir had settled and whenever coastal tribesmen came to Medina he would inquire if they had seen him and then managed to get word of Abu Basir's circumstances to the detained Muslims in Mecca. When Abu Jandal learned of Abu Basir's exploits, he, together with several other youths, amongst whom was Waleed, brother of Khalid who had played a major role in the hostilities against the Muslims, decided to escape and join him.

As time passed, seventy converts managed to make good their escape and joined Abu Basir who had by now established himself within striking distance of the northern trade route to Syria frequented by the Koraysh. Now they were strong they took to harassing and often plundered the Koraysh caravans in retaliation for their confiscated property, and the harm they had suffered simply because they worshipped Allah alone.

CHAPTER 99

THE WAIVING OF THE CLAUSE

The raids of Abu Basir and his companions were something the Koraysh could do without, it disrupted their trade and made their journeys difficult with the result the Koraysh decided to waive the clause preventing those that wished to join the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) from joining him.

Now that the clause had been waived, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent word to Abu Basir and the others that they were free to join him in Medina. However, Abu Basir had been taken seriously ill but lived just long enough to read the Prophet's letter and passed away with it in his hand in the knowledge that his companions would soon be with their beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in Medina. Before his companions set off for Medina they laid Abu Basir to rest and built a simple mosque over his tomb.

THE DEATH OF WALEED

The long awaited day was near at hand. As Abu Basir's companions reached the lava plains that lay on the outskirts of Medina, Waleed's camel tripped causing him to fall and gash his finger on a rock. The finger became infected and he grew weaker each day as the septicemia spread through his body.

WALEED'S LETTER TO KHALID

Before the angels of death finally took away his soul he had a chance to write a letter to his brother Khalid in which he encouraged him to convert to Islam. In the letter he told him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) occasionally inquired about his welfare and had commented, "If Khalid were to redirect his strength on the side of Islam against the idolaters it would be better for him, and we would prefer him to others." Waleed concluded his last letter to his brother with the words, "You see my brother what you are missing!"

CHAPTER 100

THE BLOWERS UPON KNOTS

The victory of the encounter at the Trench and the more recent treaty between Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Koraysh left a very bitter taste in the mouths of the Jews remaining in Medina and elsewhere. The likelihood of defeating the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was now very remote and resentment ran deep.

JEWISH SORCERY

Amongst the Jews remaining in Medina was an old man named Labid and his daughters. Before the time of Moses, the Jews had become skilled magicians and passed their practices down from one generation to the next, and so it was that Labid became among those highly skilled in the art and over the years he taught those practices to his daughters. One day, a Jew from Khybar approached Labid with the offer of an extremely handsome reward if he would formulate a spell of deadly proportions against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Labid accepted and contrived a way to acquire several strands of the Prophet's hair vital to the success of his sorcery.

In the days that followed Labid managed to acquire enough strands of the Prophet's hair and set about his evil work. He placed the strands before him and tied eleven knots and upon each tying his daughters would breathe upon them and utter devilish incantations. Now that the knots had been tied and the incantations made, Labid attached a twig with the pollen of a male date palm to the hair and cast it into a deep water well known only to himself. The only way to annul the wickedness was to untie each of the knots that would first have to be recovered from the depths of the unknown well.

PROTECTION FROM EVIL

As the sorcery started to work, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) started to feel an indefinable weakness in his body but was unable to discern what ailed him. When he was offered food he had no desire for it and his condition deteriorated rapidly, so he supplicated to Allah for a cure. As he slept he became aware of the presence of two angels, one sat at his head and the other at his feet and they informed him of the reason for his illness and mentioned the name of the well. Not long after Gabriel came to him and verified the matter and gave to him two short chapters to recite that contained eleven verses:

"Say: 'I take refuge with the Lord of Daybreak
from the evil of what He has created,
from the evil of the darkness when it gathers

from the evil of the blowers on knots;
from the evil of the envier when he envies."
Koran Chapter 113

"Say: 'I take refuge with the Lord of people
the King of people
the God of people,
from the evil of the slinking whisperer
who whispers in the chests of people
both jinn and people.'"
Koran Chapter 114

After the Prophet's recitation of each verse one of the knots became untied and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) regained his strength.

THE PROPHET'S BEHAVIOR TO LABID

As for Labid, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) showed no anger and called for him but took no further action when he confessed he had taken a bribe in exchange for his sorcery. Soon after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave instructions for the well to be filled in and a new one dug in its proximity.

CHAPTER 101 A TIME FOR SADNESS, A TIME FOR REJOICING

Not long after Hdaybiyah, Lady Ayesha's mother, Umm Ruman, wife of Abu Bakr, was taken ill and destined never to recover. When it came time for her burial, she was laid to rest in the Baki, the cemetery, in which members of the Prophet's family had been buried, alongside many Companions. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prayed for Umm Ruman after which he climbed down into her grave before her burial.

Umm Ruman had another son named Abdul Ka'ba who had sided with the Koraysh during the encounter at Uhud. Despite his parent's and sisters acceptance of Islam he resisted, but as time passed his heart softened.

It took a while for the news of his mother's death to reach him as his home was in Mecca but when it did he was deeply touched by the Prophet's gesture and his thoughts turned deeper towards Islam. A little while after Abdul Ka'ba journeyed to Medina where he was welcomed by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and there he converted to Islam, changing his name to Abdur Rahman.

CHAPTER 102 THE MARRIAGE BETWEEN THE PROPHET AND LADY UMM HABIBAH

Four months had passed since the death of Ubayd Allah, Jahsh's son and his widow Umm Habibah, remained in Abyssinia. One day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent a messenger with a letter to the Negus asking him to stand proxy for him in the marriage between himself and Lady Umm Habibah.

The night before the letter reached the Negus, Lady Umm Habibah had a vision in which she had been addressed as "Mother of the Believers", a title given only to the wives of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and was therefore not surprised when a messenger came from the Negus the following day with news of the Prophet's proposal. Lady Umm Habibah sent word to the Negus that she accepted and gave her relative, Khalid, the son of Sa'id, the power of attorney to act upon her behalf. The Negus was a generous man and prepared a lavish marriage feast for Lady Umm Habibah and married her by proxy to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

The letter to the Negus bore not only the request for Lady Umm Habibah's hand in marriage but also an invitation to the remaining migrant Muslims to return to Arabia where they would be able to live with their fellow Muslims in the safety of Medina. It was a day they had all been waiting for and soon their belongings were packed and loaded ready for their long return journey. As a parting gift, the Negus gave the Muslims two ships to ease their crossing.

In the meantime, building was underway in Medina for Lady Umm Habibah's new home which adjoined the others built onto the Mosque.

CHAPTER 103

THE JEWS OF KHYBAR

The Jews of Khybar had for many years been hostile toward the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and his followers. Only months before it had been their tribesmen that had joined Huyay from the tribe of Nadir and incited the Koraysh to rise up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam). Then again, in an attempt to ensure the Koraysh victory at the encounter of the Trench they had bribed the Ghatafan with one third of their date harvest in return for their support, and more recently procured the services of Labid in an attempt to murder the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam).

When news reached them of the signing of the ten-year peace treaty between the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and the Koraysh, the Jews were devastated for they knew the Koraysh would no longer pursue or assist them in their goal to bring about his downfall.

The Jews of Khybar were known to be particularly wealthy and their circumstances had been enhanced still further upon the arrival of their exiled relatives from the tribe of Nadir, in fact, the community at Khybar might well have been considered the most wealthy of tribes of Arabia. This in itself presented a source of danger to the existence of the Muslims as the Jews had already shown their ability and willingness to use their wealth against them.

To ensure the future safety of the Muslims it was evident that something had to be done about Khybar, attempts to live peacefully with the Jews through alliances had been drawn up, agreed upon, then broken by the Jews and tossed to the wind; there was only one course left open to the Muslims and that was to quell their resistance.

THOSE THAT REMAINED BEHIND

The chapter sent down during the return journey from Hdaybiyah had spoken of the spoils that would soon come to hand. It also mentioned the condition of the those that remained in Medina instead of joining the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and

their fellow Muslims on their pilgrimage to Mecca on account of the fact that there had been no prospects of gaining any spoils.

The Revelation also spoke of how these people would soon come to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and plead with him to allow them to take part in the next engagement when they realized that there would be considerable wealth to share. But, in the same Revelation, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) received another instruction which was that they should not be permitted to take part in the next encounter, so, when they came to him permission to accompany the Muslims was denied. However, he told them that they would be permitted to take part thereafter

“When you set forth to take the spoils, those Bedouins who lagged behind will say: ‘Let us follow you.’ They hope to change the Words of Allah. Say, ‘You shall not follow us. Allah has said so before.’ They will reply, ‘No, you are envious of us.’ Rather, they have only understood a little! Say to the Arabs who lagged behind, ‘You shall be called upon to fight a mighty nation, unless they embrace Islam. If you are obedient you shall receive a good wage from Allah. But, if you turn away, as you turned your backs before, He will punish you with a painful punishment.’
Koran 48:15-16

CHAPTER 104

THE MARCH TO KHYBAR

It was the policy of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) never to divulge his plans until the last moment so that they might retain an element of surprise. However, this time news reached the Koraysh who paid close attention to the scene now about to unfold in the hope that the tribes of Khybar would succeed where they had failed.

The fortifications erected before the advent of Islam around Khybar were exceptionally strong so when the Jews learned of the pending attack they were not particularly perturbed and discounted the possibility of being routed. However, they did contact their brethren at Wadi al-Kura who had also built fortresses and agreed to support one another should the need arise.

The confidence of the Khybar chieftains was such that they did not concern themselves with bothering their Arab allies of the Ghatafan for support until the very last minute, when one of their chieftains, named Kinanah, learned that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his army had set out from Medina. Once again the Jews offered the Ghatafan a handsome bribe and four thousand from the Ghatafan prepared themselves in readiness to lend their support to the already ten thousand strong Jewish army against the relatively small army of just one thousand, six hundred Muslims.

THE CLOAK OF ABU ABS

Poverty was commonplace among the Muslims, and those who had accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) on the pilgrimage had spent much on their sacrificial camels and robes. Shortly before the Muslims were due to embark on their

march, Abu Abs from the tribe of Aws went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him of his plight. He had been able to secure a camel but his clothes were in tatters and he had no money to leave with his family for food nor yet to buy provisions for the journey.

It was the custom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never to keep the gifts he had been given, rather, he would distribute whatever came his way to the needy and it so happened that he had been given a fine cloak so he gave it to Abu Abs. Abu Abs was delighted, but instead of keeping it he sold it and with its proceeds bought a cloak of lesser quality, some food for his family and journey.

As the Muslims rode to Khybar, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chanced to see Abu Abs wearing his new cloak so he inquired what he had done with the cloak he had given him. When he learned of Abu Abs' action he was well pleased and told him that if he lived long enough he would indeed have more than enough to suffice his needs, indeed, he told him, that he would have so much that it would not be good for him!

THE SONG OF IBN AL AKWA

As the journey progressed, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon ibn Al Akwa, a man from the tribe of Aslam, known for his melodious, sweet, voice and asked him to sing. Amongst the many songs he sang were the words the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had taught the Companions as they dug the trench around Medina:

"Allah, except for You we would never have been guided,
nor yet given charity, nor prayed Your prayer."

The camels also enjoyed hearing his sweet voice and responded by running quickly.

When ibn Al kwa finished singing the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated for him saying, "May Allah have mercy on you."

Among those accompanying the army were several ladies whose intention was to nurse the wounded. They were Lady Umm Salamah, Safiya, sister of the martyred Hamza, Umm Ayman, the childhood nurse of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Nusaybah and Umm Sulaym both of whom had tended to the wounded during the hostilities at Uhud.

THE DATE GROVES OF KHYBAR

Two and a half days had now passed, and as evening approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon a guide to take him nearer to the fortifications, for it was his plan to position his army between the inhabitants of the fortresses and the Ghatafan whose arrival was anticipated.

The night was dark and all was still behind the ramparts; no one detected their presence so they were able to reach the clearing that lay in front of the ramparts, then return undetected to the camp.

As dawn approached, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers offered their prayers and as the sun spread its rays, they saw the fields and date groves beyond which lay the fortresses.

Soon after, the farmers came out from the fortresses to tend to their groves and fields, and were panic stricken as they caught sight of the Prophet's army. The farmers dropped their tools and fled back to the fortresses to raise the alarm whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) exalted Allah, saying, "Allah is the Greatest, Khybar is crushed!" Then he recited:

"When it descends upon their courtyards,
evil will be the morning of those forewarned."
Koran 37:177

CHAPTER 105

THE EVENTS OF KHYBAR

As the alarm rang out, the Jewish chieftains met hastily to discuss their course of action. All except one felt their fortresses were strong enough to ward-off the Muslims. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew well from a previous Revelation, that despite their numbers, their hearts would be divided. The Revelation was fulfilled yet again as each party chose to defend themselves in individual groups.

"Their fear of you in their hearts is greater than their fear of Allah;
that is because they are a people who do not understand.
They will never fight against you all together
except from fortified villages or from behind walls.
Their courage is great among themselves;
you think them to be united, yet their hearts are not united.
That is because they are a people who have no sense."
Koran 59:13-14

Outside the fortifications, the small Muslim army stood as one in readiness with heart, mind, body and soul, trusting, loving and fearing Allah rather than being terrified by what would have appeared to the unbeliever as a daunting army of first rate archers protected by very strong fortifications.

The order was given and the first assault was launched upon the fortress nearest to them. The Jews remained behind the fortress walls, some busied themselves strengthening its weaker parts whilst the remainder engaged themselves showering beves of arrows down upon the Muslims from the ramparts. Never before had the Muslims faced such ferocity, and the ladies accompanying them were kept busy tending the wounded.

THE SPY

The hostilities raged for five days and nothing as yet had been gained. One night during Omar's command, a spy infiltrated the Muslim camp and was caught, then brought before Omar. The man feared for his life and offered to give Omar information if he would spare him. Omar accepted and the Jew told him that there was another fortress less well guarded than the one they were attacking and that its strongholds

housed an arsenal of weapons, amongst which were those used to breach the walls of fortresses.

The next day, Omar launched an attack on the less well-guarded fortress and Allah blessed the Muslims with success, and the fortress fell.

As they searched its strongholds, and cellars they found the information they had been given to be accurate as their eyes fell upon not only an arsenal of hand weapons but a large catapult strong enough to hurl heavy rocks at the fortress walls and two long, strong shields under which several men could walk and thereby get close to the fortress walls without being harmed.

THE GHATAFAN

The four thousand strong tribe of Ghatafan had set out upon their march to Khybar intending to support their allies. At nightfall, after their first day's march, they struck camp and settled themselves down to sleep, however, they had little rest because during the night a strange, urgent voice was heard calling to them saying, "Your people, your people, your people!" They were very startled and looked around them but were unable to detect whether the voice came from the heavens or the earth. All manner of thoughts raced through their minds, but their paramount thought was that their families were in some sort of danger, so they returned home.

When they reached their homes their families were very surprised to see them, all was well and no harm had come to them. However, the Ghatafan were reluctant to set out again as they feared that perhaps harm was on its way, and then again, it was in their opinion, mostly likely that if they did set out they would arrive too late.

THE FORTRESS OF NAIM

With the capture of the arsenal came the turning point of the encounter, and one by one the fortresses started to fall. However, there remained five strong fortresses, some of which were better equipped and greater in man power than their counterparts. Naim was the first of the five to be targeted, unlike the other fortresses, its soldiers came outside its walls to fight and the Muslims faced strong resistance that forced them to temporarily withdraw. That evening, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) announced, "Tomorrow, I will give the banner to someone whom Allah, and His Messenger love. In his hands Allah will give us victory -- he is not a person to turn away and flee."

The next day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for Ali, whereupon he was informed that Ali's eyes were troubling him. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for him to come and upon seeing the soreness of his eyes, he rubbed some of his saliva over them and supplicated for his recovery. Ali's eyes recovered immediately and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) handed him a large black banner made from a cloak that once belonged to Lady Ayesha. Then, Ali asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), shall I fight them until they become as us?" Once again the just nature of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was apparent in his reply, "Continue until you reach them, then invite them to Islam and explain their obligations to Allah. If just one person is guide by Allah through you that will be better for you than a herd of red camels."

As the small, but valiant army attacked, Zubair and Abu Dujanah, recognizable by his red turban, fought with the same extraordinary zeal as they displayed at Uhud. Ali led the final attack that caused the enemy to retreat. Some of the Jews took refuge in the fort, but many escaped through a back entrance to neighboring fortresses. However, most made their way to a fortress called "Zubair", which was by far the most formidable of the remaining four and had been built on a high cliff that provided a natural defense.

In the meantime, the Muslims took control of the main entrance of the fortress of Naim.

THE FORTRESS OF ZUBAIR

Only the fortresses of Zubair, Kamus and two others remained. For three days the Muslims concentrated their efforts on the fortress of Zubair, but its natural defense together with its additional soldiers made things very difficult.

Then, a Jew fearing for his life, family and property, made his way in secret to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and told him that he would disclose vital information in return for the safety of his family and possessions -- the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed.

The Jew informed him that the fortress had an underground supply of fresh water capable of sustaining them for as long as they wanted to hold out. However, there was a place outside the fortress where the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) could dig and divert the stream so that no water flowed into the fortress. The informant further told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that on account of the constant supply of fresh water, the army had not concerned themselves with its storage.

Work to divert the water was soon under way and when the Jews realized that their stream had been diverted they came down from their fortress and another very fierce encounter ensued in which they suffered defeat.

THE MARTYDOM OF THE SON OF AL AKWA

During the turmoil of the encounter, the sword of ibn Al Akwa, who had sung for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on their journey, slipped and he wounded himself so critically that he died.

It had been an exhausting day and as the Muslims took their well-earned rest some spoke of their martyred companions and the son of Al Akwa was mentioned. Some of the Ansars, had not heard of the Prophet's supplication for him and were in doubt as to whether he could be considered to be a martyr. When the matter was drawn to the Prophet's attention he informed them saying, "Indeed, he passes through the Gardens of Paradise as freely as a swimmer passes through water," and they were very happy for him.

THE FORTRESS OF KAMUS

The fortress of Kamus belonged to the richest of all the families of Khybar, the family of Kinanah. Kinanah belonged to the tribe of Nadir. Like others in his tribe, Kinanah had been amongst those exiled from Medina for their treachery and as they left had taunted the impoverished Muslims by wearing and flaunting their excessive wealth and fineries as they rode out of the City.

Kinanah could not fathom out why the Ghatafan had not as yet come to their aid, however, he had not given up hope. Each day he would look for distant clouds of dust to herald their arrival but there were none. Two weeks later when it was apparent that the Ghatafan were not coming he finally sent word to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he wished to surrender.

TERMS OF SURRENDER

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) accepted, so Kinanah and several members of his family left the fortress to surrender.

The terms agreed to were such that their lives would be spared and no prisoners taken in exchange for their wealth, property and the evacuation of Khybar. It was not the Prophet's intention to expose the Jews to further hardship, rather it was to confiscate their wealth in order to suppress their multiple attempts to prevent and destroy the message the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) warned that these terms of safe passage would not apply to any one who tried to smuggle or hide any of their wealth or possessions. The terms were very clear and accepted, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon Abu Bakr, Ali, Zubair and Omar and ten Jews to witness the agreement.

THE CONCEALED WEALTH OF KINANAH

The Muslims remembered well the excessive display of opulence the tribe of Nadir had made when they left Medina, and were quick to realize, as did their fellow Jews, that the wealth they now declared as being their total wealth was but a mere fraction. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) questioned the Jews about it and in response they offered excuses saying they had sold their finery to pay for weapons, and fortifications.

As before, some of the Jews realized that Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) Muhammad was no ordinary man, but refused to accept him as a Prophet as he was not of their race, however, they were aware that he was a man that could not be deceived. This conviction was demonstrated when one of Kinanah's friends went to Kinanah and begged him not to hide his wealth as he was confident that everything he had hidden would be found and then he would be put to death. Kinanah was extremely angered by his friend's advice for he had many hiding places he thought to be completely undetectable and refused to give them up.

Shortly afterward, Kinanah's hiding places were discovered.

THE FINAL SURRENDER

The two remaining fortresses surrendered without further hostilities and accepted the same terms and conditions. Many of the Jews were farmers and knew how best to reap the blessings of the land, with this in mind they sent a deputation to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying that if he would permit them to continue as before and live in their homes, they would in return tend the land and pay rent for half its harvest each year. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) accepted, however, he reserved the right to expel them at any time if they did not live peacefully.

THE OASIS OF FADAK

News of Khybar's defeat soon reached the Jewish owned oasis of Fadak and with it rumors that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) intended to engage them. Not

wishing to suffer the fate of their brethren, they sent word to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that they wished to surrender upon the same terms and conditions offered at Khybar. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) accepted because his way was always that of peace.

THE POISONED LAMB

The Word of Allah had been fulfilled, and the band of believers took a well-earned rest before their victorious march back to Medina.

A Jew by the name of Shalom, Mishkam's son, who had aided Abu Sufyan in Medina, had been killed during the hostilities and his wife sought to take revenge.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never refused the invitation of anyone, no matter who they were, so when Shalom's wife invited him and his Companions to a meal the invitation was graciously accepted. In preparation for the meal Shalom's wife had a lamb slaughtered, then, as she prepared it, poisoned it, paying particular attention to its shoulders as she had heard that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) like that part of meat.

When the lamb was ready she set it down in front of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who took a bite of the meat. Before he had chance to swallow it, the shoulder spoke and informed him that the meat had been poisoned whereupon he spat it out and told his Companions not to eat it. Bishr, Bara's son, who was sitting next to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had already swallowed a piece of the meat and became ill.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent for Shalom's wife and asked why she had poisoned the lamb, whereupon she asked who had informed him that it had been poisoned; the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied: "The shoulder."

In reply to his question she told him that he must already know the reason why she had poisoned the lamb. However, she continued saying that it was on account of her dead husband, father and uncle. She then told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that she thought if he was a king she would be better off without him, but on the other hand, if he was a prophet then the poison would inform him.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had mercy upon the woman and pardoned her for the attempt she had made against him. However, Bishr's condition continued to deteriorate in the days that followed and he passed away whereupon for the sake of justice the Jewess was handed over to his family and they put her to death.

From that year up until the time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) passed away, at the same time each year, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would suffer on account of the tiny bit of poison he swallowed.

THE DONKEY THAT SPOKE

When it came time to distribute the spoils of war, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received, amongst other things, a black donkey whereupon he asked the donkey its name. The donkey answered, "Yazid, son of Shihab. Allah created me from a line of sixty donkeys, and none but prophets have ridden us. Of them only I remain, and of prophets only you; I was waiting for you to ride me. I used to belong to a Jew

who gave me very little to eat or drink; he made me carry heavy loads and beat me." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had mercy upon the poor animal and renamed it Yafur and it accompanied him back to Medina. Thereafter, Yafur would take him to the homes of his Companions, knock at their door with its head and call them for him.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) passed away, the donkey was so distraught that it threw itself in to Abu Al Hashim's well and died.

CHAPTER 106

LADY SAFIYA, DAUGHTER OF HUYAY

Lady Safiya was the daughter of Huyay from the Jewish tribe of Nadir. She was quite unlike her father and since early childhood had grown in piety and become an upright young lady in search of the truth. During her childhood she had heard stories about the expected coming of a new prophet and learned that the reason why her ancestors had settled in Yathrib, as Medina was then called, was because the prophecies foretold he would appear in that vicinity and each tribe hoped the honor would belong to their own tribe.

Lady Safiya remembered well the days, when she, as a young girl, had heard from traders returning from Mecca of a man claiming to be a prophet and that he denounced idol worship and preached the Oneness of Allah. She also remembered how it had caused such an upheaval in her community as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was an Arab, a descendant of Ishmael rather than a Jew descended from Isaac.

She also remembered how, at the age of ten, she had seen both her father and uncle journey from Medina to prove to themselves that the rumors were unfounded. Both of them knew the characteristics of the expected prophet as well as the signs to look for as they had been recorded in their scriptures. Also his expected arrival was a constant topic for discussion amongst the Jews.

Upon their return Lady Safiya had been unable to comprehend their reaction and even more so their state of depression. In the purity of her heart, she had expected them either to return with the news that he either fulfilled or did not fulfill the conditions in the scriptures, but they were silent and their silence had puzzled her.

Shortly before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) set out for Khybar. Huyay had married the now seventeen-year old Safiya to Kinanah. To the onlooker it may have appeared that the marriage was all a young girl could ever hope for on account of Kinanah's wealth and standing. However, she was a reluctant bride and far from happy.

One night Lady Safiya had a vision in which she saw the moon suspended over a city, which she knew to be Medina. In her vision she saw the moon drift towards Khybar and when it reached the city it had come to rest in her lap. Innocently, Safiya told Kinanah of her vision whereupon, in an uncontrollable burst of anger, Kinanah struck her violently upon her face saying, "This can mean but one thing, you desire Muhammad the King of Hijaz!"

When Lady Safiya was brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he noticed her badly bruised face and asked her about it whereupon she told him of her vision and how after she had related it to her husband he had struck her.

When the spoils of war were being divided, Lady Safiya had been given to a man from the tribe of Kalb by the name of Dihyah. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of her vision he asked him to release her to him and take her cousin instead. Dihyah agreed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) offered her, her freedom telling her that if she wished she may remain as a Jewess or embrace Islam. Without hesitation, Lady Safiya replied, "I choose Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)." And so when the time came for the Muslims to leave Khybar, Lady Safiya left with the ladies. Soon thereafter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Lady Safiya to marry him. She welcomed the proposal and the two were married.

THE NEWS OF WADI L-KURA

As for the Jews of Wadi I-Kura, supporters of the Khybarites, they were not to escape. For three days before the Prophet's return to Medina they fought against him and finally surrendered under the same terms as their brethren in Khybar.

CHAPTER 107

THE VICTORIOUS ARRIVAL

It had been seven weeks since the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers left for Khybar and during that time his Companions from Abyssinia arrived in Medina and with them his new bride, Lady Umm Habibah.

It was a time for thanksgiving, rejoicing and reunion. Ladies Swaydah and Umm Salamah had been close friends of Lady Umm Habibah in Abyssinia and were happy to see her once again. Her room adjoining the Mosque had been completed and upon the Prophet's return a second marriage feast was prepared in their honor.

THE INVITATIONS

At the encounter of the Trench when the Companions were digging they had been unable to move a boulder and had called upon the help of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) struck the boulder three times and upon the third strike it disintegrated into a pile of sand. However, each time the boulder had been struck it emitted a brilliant light, so bright that it lit up three far away cities. The first stretched as far as Yemen, lighting up its castles, the second reached the castles of Syria and the third had lit the Persian city of Madian whose ruler was Chosroes.

On account of this miracle the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew that Islam would spread to these great cities and beyond to all the other great cities, towns and villages of the world, and so he wrote a letter to the rulers of Yemen, Syria and Persia inviting them to embrace Islam.

Chosroes had heard about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and had, before the letter reached him, sent word to Badhan, his Governor in Yemen, requesting a report about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) together with his circumstances

and so Badhan wasted no time in dispatching two of his most reliable envoys to Medina to investigate the matter.

Upon their arrival they sought an audience with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and were intrigued by the devotion and readiness of his followers to obey him which in turn prompted them to pay close attention to his teachings. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) first saw them he was surprised by their appearance, for they followed the style of Chosroes and had shaved their beards and sported large mustaches. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked them who had told them to do this, whereupon they told him, referring to their ruler, "My lord." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) answered saying, "My Lord has commanded me to grow my beard and trim my mustache short." The initial meeting was brief and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) requested them to return the next day.

That night, Angel Gabriel came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) informing him that Chosroes had been overthrown and killed in an uprising and that his son, Siroes, was now the ruler. When the two envoys returned the next day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) informed them of what had happened in Persia and told them to return to Badhan with a message saying, "Tell him that my religion and nation will extend far beyond that of Chosroes, and that I invite him to embrace Islam. Whatever he has now he will retain, and I will appoint him as King of Yemen, ruler of its people."

The bewildered envoys took their leave and returned to Yemen, conveyed the message then spoke to Badhan about Islam. Badhan informed his envoys that he would wait and see if the situation in Persia had changed and if it was as they narrated, then indeed he would believe that Muhammad was a Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) sent by Allah. Badhan didn't have to wait long until a messenger arrived from Persia, saying that Siroes was their new ruler and as such required their allegiance.

Without hesitation, Badhan, rather than giving his allegiance to Siroes, embraced Islam along with his two envoys and several others. Badhan then sent messengers to Medina and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told his Companions that Badhan was the new ruler of Yemen.

SIROES RECEIVES THE PROPHET'S LETTER

The letter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) sent to Chosroes arrived in Madian after his death and so it was given to his son, who after reading it, tore it in shreds. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) learned of Siroes response he supplicated, "O Lord, tear his kingdom from him" and the supplication of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) came to be.

CHAPTER 108

THE TRIBES OF HAWAZIN AND GHATAFAN

Now that the Jews of Fadak had surrendered and their arms confiscated, the Jews of Khybar felt insecure as the tribe of Murrah -- a branch of the Ghatafan -- were hostile toward them, so they sent word to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) requesting his protection.

MUSLIMS SENT TO PROTECT THE JEWS

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) dispatched twenty Muslims to protect the Jews, however, the Murrah struck quickly and all but a few Muslims were martyred defending the Jews.

When news of the attack reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he sent two hundred of his men to replace them, amongst whom was Osama, Zaid's son, both of whom the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) loved dearly. Soon after their arrival, the Murrah attacked again but this time after heavy combat it was they who sustained a heavy loss of life.

OSAMA, THE SON OF ZAID

Osama was a youth of seventeen years and during the hostilities a Murrah tribesman challenged and jeered at him on account of his youthfulness. Orders had been given that the Muslims should fight near each other, however, in the heat of the moment, Osama chased the man into the desert. Osama's youthfulness soon overtook the man and he smote him with his sword whereupon the man cried out, "There is no god except Allah!" However, Osama overcome by the circumstances, did not heed the man's witnessing and killed him.

Osama did not return to camp until nightfall, his failure to return caused his companions considerable anxiety whereupon Ghalib, Abdullah's son, the commander, reprimanded Osama when he eventually returned. Osama explained to Ghalib that he had pursued a man who challenged him and related what had happened. When Osama reached the point where the man had proclaimed his belief, Ghalib stopped him and asked if he had laid down his sword, but to his great dismay, Osama replied that he hadn't until after the man had breathed his last. The disturbing news spread throughout the camp and everyone rebuked him until he clasped his head in his hand in deep regret for a Revelation had been sent down sometime before that spoke of such circumstances:

"Believers, if you are journeying in the way of Allah,
do not say to those who offer you peace, until it has been clarified:
'You are not believers,' seeking the enjoyment of the worldly life,
with Allah there are many spoils.
You were like that before, and Allah has been gracious to you.
Therefore let it be clarified.
Surely, Allah is Aware of what you do."
Koran 4:94

Situations similar to this had arisen before, however, they were over the prospects of receiving the spoils of war when an enemy, at the point of death, had proclaimed his faith, and then been reprieved on account of the Revelation.

ALI'S WARNING

There had also been another occasion when Ali was about to slay an unbeliever and the man spat at him. As the man spat Ali became enraged but spared his life and said afterwards, "If I had killed him then it would have been through pride, and not for the Sake of Allah."

OSAMA'S RETURN TO MEDINA

Upon their return to Medina, Osama went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who greeted him affectionately and asked him to tell him about the encounter. Osama related the events and it was only when he reached the point where he had killed the man that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) interrupted him asking, "Osama, did you kill him when he said, 'There is no god except Allah?'" "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)," replied Osama, "he only said it to escape the sword." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "Did you open his heart to know if he lied or was telling the truth?" Osama felt sick inside and was extremely sorry for his actions and said: "I will never again kill anyone who says 'there is no god except Allah.'"

When Osama returned to his friends they witnessed how greatly troubled he was about the whole affair especially when he told them, "I wish I had not entered Islam before this day," as he knew that when someone embraces Islam all their previous sins are wiped away and they start a new page.

CHAPTER 109

THE TRIAL OF WEALTH

The months that followed were comparatively peaceful. The Muslims were looked upon in a different light and their opponents were reluctant to initiate further major hostilities against them although there were a few minor incidents.

The Muslim society had never enjoyed such affluence as they currently experienced, as each of the participants in the recent encounters received their fair share of the spoils of war including the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for whom Allah had decreed should also receive a share.

"And know that one fifth of whatever you take as spoils belong to Allah, the Messenger, kinsmen of the Messenger, the orphans, the needy, and the destitute traveler ..."
Koran 8:41

The new found wealth had no effect on the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), rather, he either put it to one side in order to be sold in the cause of Islam, spent on the needs of his family or gave it to the needy whenever a situation arose.

THE DEMANDING WOMEN

In the apartment of each of the Prophet's wives hung a curtain to ensure their privacy when any of his Companions came to visit. One day, two migrant women from the Koraysh went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whilst he was in one of the apartments and asked him for some clothes that had been taken as spoils of war. They knew they would not come away empty handed for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was known never to refuse a request, however, the women forgot in whose presence they were and became over-demanding, and raised their voices.

Omar happened to be passing by and heard the raised voices so he knocked upon the door and asked permission to enter. When the two women heard Omar's voice they were struck with fear and rushed to hide themselves behind the curtain, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) started to laugh. As Omar entered he said,

"O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), may Allah fill your life with laughter!" Amidst his laughter, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "It is indeed remarkable how quickly these women, who are still with me, hid behind the curtain when they heard your voice!" Omar humbly replied, "It is you they should be in awe of rather than me!" Then, Omar turned toward the curtain and said, "You are enemies of yourself, do you fear me rather than the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)?" In a timid voice the reply came: "Yes, it is so because you are rough and harsh whereas the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) is not." "This is so, son of Khattab," said the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "by Him in whose hand is my soul, if Satan knew you were traveling upon a certain road, he would choose an alternate route to be alone."

CHAPTER 110

GIFTS FROM THE MUQAWQAS, PRIMATE OF THE CHRISTIAN, COPTIC CHURCH IN EGYPT

Sometime before, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent a letter to the Coptic Christian leader of Alexandria, Egypt inviting him to Islam. Much to the Prophet's disappointment the reply he received was noncommittal, however, it was not hostile, and the leader of the Christian church sent an assortment of generous gifts to him including honey, a mule the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) named Duldul, a donkey and a young Coptic Christian girl by the name of Maryam who was escorted by Hatib, Abi Baltaah's son.

Upon her arrival, Maryam was taken to live in the house in which Lady Safiya had stayed near the Mosque prior to the completion of her apartment and there the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would visit her. Maryam was, at that time, one of those to whom Allah refers in the Koran as being "those whom your right hand possess" for He never referred to such people as slaves, and as such a relationship was permissible.

Allah says:
"O Prophet, We have made lawful to you the wives
to whom you have given dowries
and those whom your right hand possesses,
of whatever spoils of war that Allah has given you ..."
Koran 33.50

Such rights are referred to in several places in the Koran.

CHAPTER 111

UMRAH - THE LESSER PILGRIMAGE

Almost a year had passed since the signing of the Treaty at Hudaibiyah so two thousand pilgrims busied themselves with their preparations to offer the lesser pilgrimage at their beloved Ka'ba.

Neither Khalid nor Amr wished to be in Mecca when the news arrived that the Muslims had left Medina to offer their pilgrimage as they both held the opinion that the treaty had been a moral victory for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and signaled the beginning of the end of the Koraysh resistance. However, they had kept their

opinion to themselves and had, unknown to one another, left Mecca well in advance to avoid their arrival.

A TIME FOR REFLECTION

There was, however, a difference between the two. Amr remained adamant in his resistance whereas Khalid, although it was hard for him, started to examine his motives. Traditional pride, no matter whether it could be proved to be sound or baseless, had always been a matter he considered too blasphemous to question. However, he could not help but think that the encounters at Uhud and the Trench had been futile, and when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) eluded him before the treaty of Hudaibiyah he was heard to exclaim, "This man is protected!" Then there was Khybar, Khalid could not help but wonder in amazement at its fall; the band of Muslims had been so small against the large, well armed Jewish army. It was time for self-examination, and soul searching.

THE KORAYSH VACATE MECCA

The Koraysh were true to their word, when news reached Mecca that the pilgrims had reached its outer limits they vacated Mecca to stay in the surrounding hills and mountains. As for the Koraysh chieftains, they situated themselves on the Mount of Abu Kubays from whence they could view the Ka'ba and monitor the movements of the Muslims.

THE PILGRIMS ENTER MECCA

The Koraysh now gazed down from the mountain as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), riding his favorite camel Kaswa, led the procession of pilgrims into Mecca with Abdullah, Rawahah's son walking beside holding Kaswa's bridle. The pilgrims arrived on camels and foot dressed in white, whilst all chanted the compelling supplication Prophet Abraham had offered so many centuries before on the first pilgrimage: "Labbayk Allahumma Labbayk! - Here I am O Allah, obedient to You with pleasure and happiness!"

At the entrance to the Holy precincts of Ka'ba, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), still mounted on his camel, rearranged his pilgrimage attire, tucking it under his right arm so that his shoulder was bare, then he crossed the two ends over his left shoulder so that one piece hung down in front and the other at the back. All eyes were on the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions followed his example and adjusted their robes likewise. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) rode to the south-east corner of the Ka'ba and reverently touched the Black Stone with his staff, then he circumambulated Ka'ba seven times, after which he made his way to the foot of the hill of Safwa and walked quickly between it and the hill of Marwah seven times, just as Lady Hagar had done so many centuries before when she searched for water for her infant son, Ishmael.

The sacrificial animals had been led to the foot of Marwah and now that the rites between the two hills had been completed, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sacrificed a camel. The lesser pilgrimage was complete and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to the Sacred House with the intent to enter it.

Before vacating Mecca, the Koraysh had locked the door to the Ka'ba -- which still housed numerous idols -- and a man from the tribe of Abd Ad-Dharr had taken its key with him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent one of his Companions to

ask for the key but the Koraysh chieftains refused saying that entry into the Sacred House had not been part of the agreement. It was a great disappointment to the pilgrims and none entered.

The time for Zuhra prayer approached so the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) asked Bilal to climb up on top of the roof of Ka'ba and make the call to prayer. Bilal climbed up on top and his dulcet, penetrating voice called the pilgrims to prayer. Bilal's call did not go unnoticed by the Koraysh chieftains who were extremely agitated when they realized that the caller was Bilal, a former slave, and that he was calling from the roof of Ka'ba.

The three days allotted for the pilgrimage were among the happiest days they had spent since the Migration to Medina, and Muslims, forcefully compelled to remain in Mecca, were reunited with their fellow Muslims as they slipped away at dusk to join in the prayers.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) had pitched his tent near the Sacred House, and it was there that his uncle Abbas, who had not yet converted to Islam, went to visit him despite the frowns of the Koraysh. During these brief days, Abbas suggested to the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) that he might like to take his widowed, believing sister-in-law, Maymunah, to be his wife and the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) accepted the marriage proposal.

UMARAH, DAUGHTER OF HAMZA

Ali and Lady Fatima had accompanied the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) on the pilgrimage. When Abbas told the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) that Umarah the daughter of Hamza's widowed wife Salma, was living with them on account of his wife's kinship to her, Ali suggested that when they returned to Medina, Umarah should return with them in Lady Fatima's howdah. The arrangement was accepted and so when the time came the ladies traveled to Medina together.

Salma shared the same mother as Umm Fadl and Lady Maymunah, as did her full blood sister, Asma. However, Umm al Fadl and Lady Maymunah had another half sister on her father's side who was also called Asma and happened to be the widow of the Makhzumite chieftain Waleed through which union Khalid had been born, and so it was through these bonds of kinship that Khalid was related to the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam).

THE TIME TO LEAVE

As the three days drew to a close, the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) was found sitting with Sa'ad, Ubadah's son and several other Ansars when Huwytib and Suhail came down from Abu Kubays and approached him saying abruptly, "Your time has reached its end, so go!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) requested a little more time saying, "Would it harm you to give me a little more time so that I may prepare a feast and celebrate my marriage amongst you?" The reply was sharp, "We do not need your feast - leave us! We ask you by Allah, and by the treaty we have with you to leave our City, the third night has now passed!"

Sa'ad took offense at their abruptness, but the justice of the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) prevailed and he stopped him saying, "Sa'ad, do not speak harshly to those who come to visit us in our camp." Then he gave instructions that no pilgrim

should remain in Mecca after dusk. However, he made one exception, which was that Abu Rafi should remain behind to bring Lady Maymunah to him as soon as she was ready to travel. By dusk, the pilgrims had left their beloved Ka'ba and when Lady Maymunah joined the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at Sarif their marriage was consummated.

CHAPTER 112

THE DISPUTE

The return journey to Medina was full of happy memories and those unable to offer their pilgrimage waited anxiously for the pilgrims homecoming to hear their news.

UMARAH

Several days had passed since their return when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was awakened from his afternoon nap by the sound of heated voices. He was able to discern that the voices, which were growing increasingly persistent, were those of Zaid, Haritha's son and two of the sons of Abu Talib, Ali and Jafar. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arose, opened the door and called them to him then inquired the reason for their dispute.

The Companions told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) it was a matter of honor over who should be the guardian of Umarah, Hamza's daughter. Ever since Umarah's arrival in Medina she had lived with Lady Fatima and Ali. Ali claimed he had a better right than the others to her guardianship as he was her paternal uncle and had been entrusted with her safekeeping on the journey from Mecca. In turn, Jafar told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that she was his uncle's daughter and that his wife, Asma, was her maternal aunt. On account of the brotherhood established by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) between Zaid and Hamza, Zaid was of the opinion that he should be her guardian as he had been left in charge of Hamza's affairs after his martyrdom.

It said much for the character of these noble Companions who were all very willing to take Umarah under their guardianship, and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) praised them accordingly, then told them, "Jafar, you are like me in both looks and character, you have most right to her guardianship. A mother's sister is like a mother." Jafar was delighted but arose and said nothing then danced around the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in a circle. "What is this?" asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with amusement. Jafar replied, "I have seen Abyssinians honor the Negus in such a way. When the Negus gave anyone a good reason to be happy, that person would rise, then dance around him."

In the months to come, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arranged for Umarah to marry Salamah. Salamah was the son of Lady Umm Salamah and her martyred husband, Abu Salamah, and was the son of Hamza's sister, Barra.

CHAPTER 113

THE TURNER OF HEARTS

Khalid, had for some time, respected the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but his pride and position in the Koraysh tribe prevented him from entertaining the promptings of his heart. However, after each encounter, no matter whether it had been a victory or

defeat, reason started to erode his resistance and the light of truth began to prevail as he accepted the fact that his values pivoted on nothing other than baseless, traditional pride.

He remembered the letter his younger, convert brother Waleed had written to him just before he died and how it had mentioned that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had inquired about his welfare and spoken of his regard for him; then there was his brother's last wish which urged him to embrace Islam.

His younger brother was not the only one in his family to convert to Islam, there was his aunt, now Lady Maymunah, the wife of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), and more recently his own mother, Asma.

THE VISION OF KHALID

The matter weighed heavily on Khalid's heart, then, one night he saw a vision in which he first found himself in a barren land, closed in from all side. Then, he saw himself in a land lush with vegetation, with seemingly never-ending green fields. It was a vision he could not dismiss and he felt a compelling urge to go to Medina. He wanted to share his vision with Amr but he had not as yet returned to Mecca so he went to his friends Ikrima and Safwan to tell them.

Both the fathers of Safwan and Ikrima -- the infamous Abu Jahl -- had been killed at Badr, and Safwan had also lost his brother, so, in reflection, their replies were not surprising. Safwan was so adamant that he declared, "If every man of the Koraysh decided to follow Muhammad, I would not follow him!" so Khalid did not pursue the matter further and set off for Medina alone.

KHALID AND OTHMAN

Shortly after leaving home Khalid met Othman, another friend, who was closer to him than the other two. The two rode in silence for several miles, then, Khalid spoke in a tone that prompted a reply, "Our situation is no better than a fox in his lair -- pour a bucket of water into it and it must come out!" Othman was quick to understand Khalid's point, so Khalid ventured further and told him where he was going and the reason. Othman was of the same mind as Khalid and decided to accompany him to Medina. However, Othman was unprepared for the journey so Khalid agreed to wait for him while he returned home to gather some clothes and provisions. Early, the next morning Othman joined Khalid again and together they set off for Medina.

AMR AL-AS'S SON

Amr Al As's son held the same opinion as Safwan and Ikrima, but viewed the situation in a different light than his friends. Amr did not let emotions sway his reason, he was shrewd and known to analyze a situation then act accordingly.

In the early days of Islam when Muslims sought refuge in Abyssinia, it was he who attempted to bribe the court of the Negus to ensure support for their return. His efforts had failed miserably and he left Abyssinia without achieving his goal, however, over the years he fostered a friendship between himself and the Negus. Occasionally he would send gifts together with his greetings, however he never mentioned the matter of the Muslims to him again.

AMR AND THE NEGUS

Amr decided to visit the Negus, and together with several of his companions from the tribe of Sahm set out across the sea to Abyssinia taking with them much prized gifts of leather. When Amr reached the court of the Negus he was courteously given an audience whereupon Amr presented the leather gifts. After having surmised his presence was acceptable Amr wasted no time asking the Negus for permission to stay in his country. However, Amr's tongue slipped when he ventured to speak about the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in an unacceptable manner. The Negus held the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in great esteem and would not tolerate a word said against him and warned Amr that the best way for him in his court would be to become a follower of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) rather than bringing him gifts.

Amr was shaken by his reply and asked, referring to the prophethood, "Do you bear witness to this, O king?" Without hesitation the Negus replied, "Indeed, I bear witness to this before Allah." The Negus continued, "Do what I advise Amr and follow him. He is the truth and by Allah he will triumph over anyone who sets himself against him; in the same way that Moses triumphed over Pharaoh and his army."

Amr took his leave from the Negus and set off for the sea. As he journeyed he pondered deeply upon the issue of the prophethood and could no longer push aside the truth the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) brought that Allah is One and has no associates, and that idolatry was worthless. He reflected upon the Prophet's character, his exemplary life style and his just dealings with everyone, no matter whether they believed in his message or opposed him. He could not accuse the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of any wrongdoing.

Days later he came across a boat destined for Yemen so he boarded and set sail. As for his companions, it is unknown whether they accompanied him or remained in Abyssinia.

When Amr reached Yemen he bought a camel together with some provisions and rode northwards with the intention of going to Medina. At a place called Haddah -- which was one of the stops on the coastal route from Mecca to Medina -- he met Khalid. After a while they confided their intention to one another, however, both expressed deep concern whether or not they would be accepted into Islam, for they had both been responsible for the persecution and martyrdom of many Muslims.

KHALID EMBRACES ISLAM

When Khalid and Amr reached Medina Khalid went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and embraced Islam.

AMR'S CONCERN

Amr was unaware that when a person embraces Islam all their previous sins, no matter whether they are major or minor are completely wiped out so the convert starts his/her life absolutely anew, clean and sinless.

Coupled to this he was also completely unaware that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had informed his Companions that every sin committed before Islam is automatically exchanged for merits that await them in Paradise.

AMR'S HESITATION

When it came time for Amr to give convert he was very apprehensive, but finally he asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "Give me your right hand so that I may swear allegiance to you." As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) reached out to take his hand, Amr quickly withdrew his whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired, "What is the matter Amr?" Amr replied that he had a condition to make, which was, that all his past sins would be forgiven. Much to Amr's relief, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently told him, "Don't you know that (embracing) Islam wipes out all the sins that have gone before?" Amr's heart leapt for joy and he embraced Islam. From that time onward no one was dearer to him than the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

CHAPTER 114

THE EIGHTH YEAR

THE DEATH OF LADY ZAYNAB, DAUGHTER OF THE PROPHET may Allah be pleased with her

It was now eight years since the Migration. Early that year there had been yet another great sadness in the Prophet's household as Lady Zaynab, the eldest daughter of the Prophet, had been taken ill and passed away. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was with his daughter as the angels took away her soul and offered comforting, reassuring words to his young granddaughter and son-in-law.

When it was time to make arrangements for her burial the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked Umm Ayman, Ladies Swaydah and Umm Salamah to prepare his daughter. After the completion of the ritual washing the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) removed an underwrap he was wearing and told them to wrap her in it before her shrouding. Then, he led the funeral prayer after which the funeral procession sadly made its way to the graveyard where she was lowered gently into her place of rest and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prayed for her yet again.

THE LONG AWAITED NEWS

Lady Khadijah was the only wife to bear the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) children. None of his later wives conceived his child, although, Ladies Umm Habibah and Umm Salamah had borne children by previous marriages.

Not long after Lady Zaynab's death, Lady Maryam became pregnant. It was a time for great rejoicing; companionship and help abounded as everyone waited for the blessed event.

CHAPTER 115

THE INTERCEPTED LETTER

Approximately three months had elapsed since the pilgrimage when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent fifteen Companions in peace to invite the tribes along the border of Syria to Islam. Several of the border tribes were hostile and when word reached them that the Companions were about to arrive they lay in wait and ambushed them with showers of arrows. The Companions defended themselves as best as they could, but their effort was to no avail, and all but one was martyred.

A while before, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Dihyah Al Kalbi to the governor of Bostra with a letter for Heraclius, the Christian, Emperor of Rome (ruled from 610 CE – 641 CE) whose vast empire reached as far west as the river Danube in Europe, the Balkans, the Mediterranean countries, Turkey as well many Arab countries that read:

In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful.

From: The Prophet of Allah

To: Heraclius, the greatest of Romans

Peace be upon those who follow Divine Guidance. I therefore invite you to embrace Islam. Surrender to Allah and live in peace. Allah will doubly reward you, but if you turn away, the sin of the Arians will rest upon you."

Then he quoted the Koran:

'Say, People of the Book! (Jews, Nazarenes and Christians)

let us come to a common word between us and you,

that we will worship none except Allah, that we will associate none with Him,

and that none of us take others for lords beside Allah.'

If they turn away, say, 'Bear witness that we are Muslims'

Koran 3:64

However, Heraclius had not replied so a second messenger was dispatched to Bostra with a duplicate letter, but this time the letter was intercepted by the chief of the Christian tribe of Ghassan who seized it and unjustly put the messenger to death.

HERACLIUS WISHES TO LEARN MORE ABOUT THE PROPHETHOOD OF MUHAMMAD (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Now that there was a treaty between the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Koraysh, Abu Sufyan knew he could rely upon the safe passage of his caravan to trade in far away Syria (Ash-Shams). When Heraclius learned of a caravan traveling from Mecca he sent a rider with a message to the caravaners saying he wished them to accompany his rider back to Jerusalem as he wished to speak with them.

As Abu Sufyan and his caravan journeyed to Jerusalem, he wondered why the Emperor of Rome had sent for him but he didn't have to wait long. As soon as they reached Jerusalem, Abu Sufyan and his companions were presented to Heraclius and his court whereupon Heraclius called for an interpreter and inquired about Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

He asked Abu Sufyan and his companions who amongst them was closest in kinship to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Abu Sufyan replied that it was he and told him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) hailed from a noble lineage. Then, Heraclius turned to his companions and said, "If he says something you know to be contradictory, you must speak."

Heraclius' questions were direct. He asked Abu Sufyan if any of his tribe had ever before claimed to be a prophet whereupon Abu Sufyan replied that none had. Then he asked if any of his ancestors had been a king and Abu Sufyan replied that they had not. Heraclius was interested to know what kind of people followed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and if their numbers were increasing or decreasing. Abu

Sufyan told him that they were poor people and that their numbers were increasing. Then, Heraclius asked if he knew of anyone of his followers had reverted to their old religion, and Abu Sufyan replied that he knew of none.

Referring to the Prophet's character Heraclius asked Abu Sufyan if he had ever known the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to lie, or if he had ever betrayed or broken his word, whereupon Abu Sufyan replied no to all counts, then, referring to the latter Abu Sufyan commented in a tone of resentment, "We have a treaty with him, but we do not know what he will do."

Heraclius asked next if they had ever fought against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and if so, to tell him about the outcome. Abu Sufyan replied that they had fought; sometimes they had been victorious and upon other occasions victory belonged to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

Then, Heraclius inquired about his teachings whereupon Abu Sufyan told him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) ordered his followers to worship Allah alone and not to associate anything with Him, and to renounce the idols their forefathers had worshipped. Abu Sufyan continued to tell him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) also ordered them to pray, not to lie, to be chaste and to foster kindred relationships.

From these answers Heraclius derived his opinion of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) saying, "All the prophets came from noble families, I asked you if anyone before him from your tribe claimed to be a prophet and your reply was no. If your reply had affirmed it then I would have deduced he was mimicking that man. I asked if any of your ancestors had been a king, you replied they had not. If your answer had been otherwise I would have assumed that he wanted to reclaim his ancestral kingdom. When I asked if he lied, you replied that he did not, so I wondered how a person who does not lie could ever tell a lie about Allah.

I also asked you about his followers, whether they were rich or poor and you replied they were poor -- the followers of all the prophets were poor. When I asked if his followers were increasing or decreasing, you replied increasing; this is the course of true belief. Then, I asked if there was anyone, who, after embracing Islam recanted and you replied that you knew of none; this is another sign of belief as it enters the heart.

When I asked you if he had ever been known to betray, you replied that he had not; this is the way of all prophets. Then I asked you what he ordered his followers to do, and you told me that he orders that Allah alone is to be worshipped, and forbade the worship of idols. Then you told me that he orders you to pray, speak the truth, and be chaste. If what you say is true, he will, in the near future occupy this seat." Then Heraclius told Abu Sufyan:

"I knew he was about to appear, but did not know he would be from you. If I could be sure of him I would go to him and wash his feet."

Then Heraclius called for the letter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had sent him awhile before and read it aloud whereupon there was a sudden outcry from the court and Abu Sufyan and his companions were thrown out onto the street.

As soon as they were able to pull themselves together Abu Sufyan told his companions, "He has become so prominent that even he is afraid of him!"

Abu Sufyan was a proud man and his reputation mattered greatly to him and was heard to say in the years to come, "By Allah, if it were not for the fact that I would have been ashamed that my companions label me as a liar, I would not have told the truth."

THE ENCOUNTER AT MUTAH

Although the slaying of the Prophet's messenger to Heraclius may appear to have been a minor incident, it was not. It was of political importance and as such could not be overlooked as a matter of justice had to be served against the perpetrators.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon three thousand of his Companions to take up arms and placed Zaid in command with the instructions that if he were to fall then Jafar, Abu Talib's son should succeed, then Abdullah, Rawahah's son. He told his Companions that in the event that all three were no longer able to command they were to choose their own leader.

As they left upon their mission, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) handed Zaid a white banner and rode out with him and his men to the pass known as the "Place of Farewell" which lies to the north of Uhud.

When the Muslims reached the border of Syria they learned that a legion of the Roman army together with Arab tribes from the north had banded together against them. Reports reached them that their numbers were quite possibly a hundred thousand, which was far in excess of their own. However, there was always the possibility that they were less, but that did not discount the fact that their army would, in any event, be much greater than their own.

It was time to call for a council meeting; the majority were in favor of sending a messenger back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with the daunting news, so that he might decide whether they should return or send reinforcements. Abdullah was against such action and as before, at the encounter of Uhud, he encouraged them to go forward in the Name of Allah and concluded with the stirring words, "We are certain of two things that are before us. We will either be given victory or martyrdom and join our brothers in the Gardens of Paradise -- let us go forward!"

As before, Abdullah's words spurred them on and they continued to march northwards. A few hours after having reached the Dead Sea their eyes fell upon their enemy. It was apparent that they were indeed greatly outnumbered and the very sight of the Roman legion donned in their armor with their shining weapons and cavalry laid pale the sight of the Koraysh army at Badr. The enemy had already taken up their positions ready to advance with the Roman legion at its center flanked by the Arab tribes on either side.

It was not to their advantage to engage them immediately so Zaid issued the order to withdraw southwards to a place called Mutah where the terrain offered more protection. However, the enemy spotted their arrival, and wishing to finish the matter in the shortest time possible, marched after them. As soon as Zaid reached Mutah he ordered the Muslims to prepare themselves for the hostilities.

THE VISION OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

As the attack was launched against them, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who remained in Medina, had a vision and saw Zaid with the white banner leading his men into the hostilities. He witnessed Zaid sustain many wounds until, finally, he lay martyred on the battlefield. He witnessed Jafar take the banner from Zaid and saw him fight valiantly until he too was overcome. Then, in obedience to his instructions, he saw Abdullah seize the banner and charge against the enemy. As the ferocity of the hostilities intensified he saw Abdullah martyred as the Muslims were driven back. Then he witnessed Thabit, Arkam's son take hold of the banner and give it to Khalid, who at first declined the honor, telling Thabit that he was more worthy of it than he. As Thabit insisted, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard Thabit telling Khalid that he had only taken it so that he could give it to him, and so it was that Khalid took command.

Khalid rearranged the ranks so that their effort would be more effective and as a result they were able to hold off the advance of their enemy and ensure a safe retreat. The enemy were victorious, although there was nothing to gain; the hostilities were over and to the wonder of all, apart from the three commanders only five believers were martyred.

Khalid had demonstrated both skill and wisdom during the encounter and after it was over, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with tears in his eyes gently informed his Companions of the martyrdom of Zaid, Jafar and Abdullah then said, "One of the Swords of Allah took the banner, and Allah opened the way for them." And so it was that Khalid was often referred to as "The Sword of Allah."

The devoted Umm Ayman, who cared for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) since childhood, and watched Zaid grow into manhood in his household, as well as Zaid's wife and his much loved son Osama were in the same house, and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to break the news to them and console them with the blessings of their martyrdom. Zaid had been among the first to embrace Islam and had always been very dear to him since he had chosen to remain in his household rather than return to his own family so many years before.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went next to Jafar's house. As he entered he asked Asma, Jafar's wife, to bring her three sons to him. Asma went to fetch them, but already perceived something was amiss. When the boys entered, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), with tears welling up in his eyes gently kissed each of them on his forehead and began to weep. Then, Asma asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), you are dearer to me than my father and mother, why do you weep? Have you received news of Jafar and his companions?" thereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently broke the news and she too began to weep whilst the women of her household rushed to her side to try to comfort her. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) departed and asked for food to be prepared and sent to them in the coming days as he knew their mourning would prevent them from tending to their needs.

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned home from his uncle's house, Zaid's little daughter came running up to him in the street with tears streaming down her darling little face, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) bent down

and held her tightly to him. It was a very emotional moment and tears flowed like a river from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Sa'ad, Ubadah's son happened to be passing by and saw them, then, trying hard to find suitable words could only say, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), what is the matter?" Amidst his tears he replied, "This is one who loves to long for his beloved."

The time for prayer was at hand and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to the Mosque to lead the congregation, then returned home immediately without his customary glance towards them; he did the same after both the evening and night prayers.

That night as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) slept he saw a vision in which the Muslims, together with Zaid, Abdullah and Jafar -- who was flying with wings like those of an angel -- had all entered Paradise. At the dawn prayer, the congregation sensed that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) felt less saddened as once again he turned his face towards them. Directly after the prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to Asma to tell her of his vision, and although she grieved for her beloved husband, she was happy for him and her heart was at rest.

THE RETURN OF KHALID

Days later, news of Khalid and his fellow Muslim's approach to Medina reached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whereupon he asked for his mule, Duldul, to be brought to him, then, he seated Jafar's eldest son on it and together they rode out to meet the returning Companions.

Many of the citizens of Medina had gathered upon the road leading into the City and as Khalid led the Companions they shouted words of rebuke as they threw dust at their faces asking why they had fled from fighting in the way of Allah. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard the shouts he rebuked them saying, "No, they are not fugitives, rather, they are returning to fight again, if Allah wills."

RENEWED TURBULENCE

The recent encounter at Muthah encouraged the northern Arab tribes to initiate a further uprising against the Muslims. Winter was now upon them and within a month news reached Medina that the tribes of Kudadh and Bali intended to march against them and had already joined forces in large numbers on the Syrian border, however, this time they learned that the Roman legion was not amongst them.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) commissioned Amr, whose mother was from the tribe of Bali, to lead three hundred Muslims with the instruction to try to enlist the support of other tribes and if unavoidable, engage the enemy. The march to the Syrian border took just ten days, but as Amr approached hostile territories he and his men would, on many a night, make use of its darkness to march then rest during the day to avoid attracting unwanted attention. One night in particular was very chilly, so when they reached their final halt for the night many searched for firewood to light a fire. When Amr realized what they were doing he gave the order that no one should light a fire, for the smoke and blaze might well be detected and their presence revealed. Although it made sense not for the fires to be lit, there was dissatisfaction among some of his men and he had to remind them that they had been ordered to hear and obey him.

Scouts were sent to bring back news of the enemy and returned with the news that their numbers exceeded those anticipated. As of yet the Muslims had not succeeded in securing the support of other tribes along the route so Amr sent a messenger from the tribe of Juhaynah back to Medina with a request to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to send further reinforcement.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) learned of their need, he sent Abu Ubayda with a two hundred men. Abu Ubayda was a close Companion of the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) as well as being a veteran campaigner and had been given the instruction that there should be absolute cooperation between the two contingents. When Abu Ubayda reached Amr it was perhaps natural to suppose that he should be the commander, however, Amr was not agreeable as he held the opinion that Abu Ubayda's forces were auxiliary and the appointment should remain as it was. Abu Ubayda was not a proud man and submissively stepped aside saying, "Just in case you should disobey me, by Allah I will obey you." Later, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) heard of Abu Ubayda's gesture he was touched by his degree of sincerity and supplicated for blessings upon him.

THE SYRIAN BORDER

Amr led his reinforced army across the Syrian border, but as they approached their enemy decided not to engage them -- that is except for a short interval in which arrows were fired -- and dispersed. As Amr pressed forward they came across the vacated camp sites, and like the wind, news of the enemy's retreat swept across the desert. It was time for the neighboring tribes inclining to friendship with the Muslims to venture forward. Until now they had not wished to expose themselves, and so new and faded ties were soon cemented between them, some of which, were for the present, politically motivated, rather than through spiritual conviction as they knew the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to be not only a fair but just and a powerful ally.

And so Amr was in the blessed position of being able to send word back to the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) that their influence had been reestablished along the Syrian border.

CHAPTER 116 THE TRIBES OF BAKR AND KHUZAH

The tribe of Bakr had allied itself to the tribe of Koraysh, whereas the tribe of Khuzah had more recently allied itself to the Muslims at Hdaybiyah. There had been a feud between the two tribes for many years but despite the ten-year peace treaty of Hdaybiyah, in which both parties had taken part and bound by honor to observe, the tribe of Bakr was still bent on prolonging the feud.

One night shortly after Amr's return from Syria, the tribe of Bakr attacked the tribe of Khuzah and killed one of their tribesmen. During the skirmish the Koraysh assisted their allies with a supply of weapons and some even went so far as to take part in the fighting in the Sacred area -- an area in which fighting had always been strictly forbidden.

Tribesmen from Ka'b, a branch of the Khuzah, rode in haste to Medina to request the Prophet's help. When he learned of the unprovoked attack he told the envoys to return and that he would come to their assistance. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa

salaam) entered Lady Ayesha's apartment she could tell from the expression on his face that all was not well as he asked her to bring some water so that he might renew his ablution. As he poured the water over his limbs she heard him say, "May I not be helped if I do not help the sons of Ka'b," whereupon she realized the grave implications.

ABU SUFYAN JOURNIES TO MEDINA

The participation of men from the Koraysh in the attack concerned their fellow tribesmen and so they decided to send Abu Sufyan, who had been away from Mecca at the time of the signing of the treaty, to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Abu Sufyan set out upon his journey, however, he had not gone far when he encountered the men from the tribe of Ka'b riding toward him and knew that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been informed of the serious breach of the peace.

As soon as Abu Sufyan reached Medina he went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but could discern from his expression that he viewed the situation as grave. In an attempt to make light of the situation, Abu Sufyan began by saying, "Muhammad, I was absent at the time of the truce at Hdaybiyah, let us strengthen the treaty and increase its duration." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied with a question asking, "Has anything occurred so as to break it on your part?" The question made Abu Sufyan feel uneasy and reluctantly he replied, "Allah forbid!" Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) commented, "We are keeping the truce for the stated period and will not accept another in its place."

ABU SUFYAN TRIES TO ENLIST THE SUPPORT OF THE HOUSEHOLD

The situation was serious, so Abu Sufyan left the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and went to visit his daughter, Lady Umm Habibah, whom he had not seen for fifteen years, hoping that perhaps she might sway the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As he entered her apartment he greeted her and proceeded to try to sit down on the Prophet's rug, but his daughter removed it whereupon he asked, "Is the rug too good for me, or am I too good for the rug?" Respectfully, Lady Umm Habibah replied, "It is the Prophet's rug, and you my father remain an idolater, unpurified," she continued, "you are the lord of the Koraysh, their chief, how is it that you have not embraced Islam and remain worshipping stones which can neither see nor yet hear?" Pride once again covered his heart as he replied, "Am I to forsake what my fathers worshipped in order to follow the religion of Muhammad?"

Abu Sufyan realized that his daughter was not receptive so he went to visit Abu Bakr, as well as several of the other close Companions of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), to try to convince them to intercede, as although the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had not said the words that he viewed the treaty void, he sensed it to be so. Each of the Companions gave the same response with Abu Bakr concluding with the words, "I only give protection within the bounds granted by the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)."

Finally, Abu Sufyan went to visit Ali at his home hoping that he would get some leverage from him on account of their common ancestry and close ties of kinship. Having reminded Ali of their kinship he prevailed upon him in the same manner as before, but Ali told him he was not prepared to speak in favor of anything to which the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was adverse. Lady Fatima happened

to be in the same room with her young son Hasan and heard the conversation, so Abu Sufyan turned to her saying, "Daughter of Muhammad, ask your young son to grant protection between man and man, so that he may become the lord of the Arabs," whereupon Lady Fatima commented, "Boys so young as this do not grant protection."

Abu Sufyan left Ali's house and went to the Mosque where he proclaimed in a loud voice, "I grant protection between man and man, and I do not think that Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) will fail to uphold me." Then he went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "O Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), I do not think you will deny my protection." However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) answered: "This is your opinion," whereupon Abu Sufyan returned despondently to Mecca.

CHAPTER 117 THE ROAD TO MECCA

When Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prepared for an encounter, he would often march out in the opposite direction of the enemy, then march towards them thereby taking the advantage of surprise.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) now issued the instruction that preparations should be made ready for a campaign, when Abu Bakr asked him about it he confirmed that they were to engage the Koraysh, whereupon he inquired, "Don't we have to wait until the time of the truce is over?" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "They betrayed us and broke the truce, so I shall march against them. However, keep the matter secret and let them think that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) is marching on Syria, or to Ta'if, or yet on the tribe of Hawazin." Then he supplicated saying, "O Allah, remove us from the sight of the Koraysh as well as our news and plans, so that we may come upon them suddenly in their land."

THE MESSAGE

The supplication was answered. Gabriel came and told him that Hatib, one of the Muhajir, who had fought at Badr, had learned of his intention and sent a letter to the Koraysh via a woman from the Muzaynah who was traveling to Mecca to inform them.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Ali and Zubair after her and upon catching her up they searched her baggage but could not find it. The Companions realized that the woman must have hidden the letter on her person and told her that if she did not produce it voluntarily, they would be forced to search her. Not wishing to be searched, the woman unloosened her hair and produced the letter she had concealed in it and gave it to them.

"DO WHATEVER YOU WILL, I HAVE FORGIVE YOU".

When the Companions returned to Medina, Hatib was sent for and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Why did you do this Hatib?" "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)," replied Hatib, "I believe in Allah and His Messenger, my belief has not changed -- nothing else has taken its place. I have no influence amongst the people of Mecca so, for the sake of my son and family who remain there, I sought their favor." Omar was outraged and exclaimed, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), let me do away with him, he is a hypocrite!" But the Prophet (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently reminded him saying: "Omar, don't you know that Allah looked upon the men of Badr and said, 'Do whatever you will, I have forgiven you?'"

THE MONTH OF RAMADAN

Ramadan was fast approaching and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent his envoys to allied, trustworthy tribes calling upon them to meet him in Medina at the beginning of the month. The allied tribes responded in full force so that the Prophet's force was greater than ever before, however, their final destination remained unknown to even their chieftains. Only those severely incapacitated remained in Medina as the combined forces of nearly ten thousand set out upon their march. As for their destination, it still remained a secret.

THE COMPASSION OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

The march to Mecca was never easy, and now that Ramadan had come it would prove very tiring for some, so after they had set out Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), who always promoted the moderate way, sent word to the Muslims saying, "Whosoever wishes to keep the fast, let him keep it, but whosoever wishes to break it, let him break it." For Allah permits the breaking of the fast for those on a journey and allows the lost days to be made up later on, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and many others decided to continue to fast.

"(Fast) a certain number of days, but if any one of you is ill or on a journey let him (fast) a similar number of days later on; and for those who are unable (to fast), there is a ransom the feeding of a needy person..... "
Koran 2:184

ABBAS EMBRACES ISLAM

Halfway to Mecca, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for a halt and it was there that the Prophet's uncle, Abbas, his wife Umm Fadl and sons joined him. A few days prior to this, Abbas decided he wanted to embrace Islam so they packed as much as they could to take with them and left Mecca in secret for Medina, not knowing that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was at that very moment marching towards Mecca.

Upon reaching the Prophet's camp they asked to be taken to him, it was a great reunion and happiness swelled their hearts as Abbas embraced Islam and gave his allegiance. After, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told Abbas that as his own prophethood was the last of all prophethoods, so had Abbas' migration been the last of migrations. Later on Abbas told the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that amongst the many reason for his embracing Islam was that he had never forgotten how he had seen him when he was a little baby in his cradle play with the moon and watched the moon move in which ever direction he pointed. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, smiled and told Al Abbas that he would talk to the moon and it would talk to him. He also told him that as the moon set he would hear its sound as it prostrated under the Throne.

Shortly after arrangements were made for Umm Fadl to be accompanied to Medina whilst her husband and sons joined their fellow Muslims in the preparation for the forthcoming siege.

When the army reached Kudayd, the Prophet's army was joined by the nine hundred strong cavalry of the tribe of Sulaym who pledged their support and informed him of their prowess on the battlefield. Still, none except a privileged few knew their final destination.

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) BREAKS HIS FAST

When the army reached a place called Marr Az Zahran, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) broke his fast and ordered those who had maintained the fast to break theirs so that they might regain their strength.

Speculation was rife, for Marr Az Zahran lay on the route to not only Mecca, which was but two days away, or one if they force-marched, but also to the land of the very hostile tribe of Hawazin. Then again, there was always the possibility that their destination could be Ta'if.

The matter of their destination was on the tongues of many and so Ka'b, Malik's son, composed a short verse in which he did not directly ask the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for the name of their destination but arranged its words in such a way that the message was delivered in a courteous manner. It was not time to divulge their destination and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) just smiled and Ka'b returned without an answer.

THE THAKIF

News of the Prophet's army reached the people of Ta'if who feared an attack on their temple dedicated to their idol, al-lat. The Thakif sent an urgent letter to the neighboring tribes of Hawazin in the Najd informing them of the Prophet's advance. All but a few acted upon the call to arms and soon their armies began to assemble at a vantage point to the north of Ta'if and waited in vain.

THE BONFIRES

Meanwhile, as the army approached Mecca, the ten thousand strong army of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was ordered to spread itself out, encircle Mecca and light bonfires as soon as night fell.

As night fell the fires were lit and the Koraysh were engulfed in panic as cries of alarm rang throughout the City. Until that very moment, Allah had prevented any of its citizens from learning of their presence, and none knew to whom the bonfires belonged.

Abu Sufyan tried his best to ascertain to whom the bonfires belonged but to no avail. Speculation was rife, some thought that it might be the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then discounted it on account of the size of the army and many assumed it to be some other force. In the darkness of the night, Abu Sufyan accompanied by Lady Khadijah's nephew, Hakim, who had tried to prevent the Koraysh from fighting at Badr, and Budayl from the tribe of Khuzah, rode out of Mecca together to determine who it was that had surrounded the City. As they approached the camp they saw a man riding a white mule coming toward them -- it was Abbas.

PEACE RATHER THAN WAR

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had sent Abbas on to Mecca bearing a message. When Abbas met Abu Sufyan he told him that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi

wa salaam) had come to Mecca with an enormous army, however, it was not his wish to fight, rather, it was to enter Mecca peacefully. Abbas advised him that in his opinion it would be far better to surrender rather than to fight.

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) MEETS ABU SUFYAN

Abu Sufyan asked to meet with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) so Abbas gave him his protection and took him to him. As the foursome made their way through the camp Omar recognized Abu Sufyan and cried out for all to hear, "Its Abu Sufyan, the enemy of Allah!" and ran after him with the intent to kill him. However, Abu Sufyan's mount was too swift for Omar and they reached the Prophet's tent a little ahead of him.

As Omar entered the Prophet's tent he asked his permission to kill Abu Sufyan on account of the many Muslim lives that had been lost under his command, but Abbas intervened saying that Abu Sufyan was under his protection and so Omar became quite.

Abu Sufyan started to present his case saying, "Muhammad, you have come here with a strange assortment of men against your kinsmen; some I know, others I do not." Before Abu Sufyan could continued, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke saying, "You broke the treaty of Hdaybiyah, assisting the attack on the kinsmen of Ka'b. You also violated the Holy Precinct and His House." Abu Sufyan said weakly, "Would that you had turned your anger against the Hawazin, they are not as close in kinship, and stronger in their hatred of you." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Allah willing, He will grant me all of that by victory in Mecca and with the triumph of Islam there. And that by routing the Hawazin, He will enrich me with their property and families as captives."

Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) addressed the three men with kindly encouragement saying, "Bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and that I am the Messenger of Allah." Hakim and Budayl embraced Islam without further hesitation, but Abu Sufyan remained silent.

ABU SUFYAN EMBRACES ISLAM

Abu Sufyan was taken to Abbas' tent where he spent the night in safety. The next morning Abu Sufyan was taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who asked him, "Abu Sufyan, don't you realize that there is no god except Allah?" In a meek voice Abu Sufyan replied, "If there had been another, he would by now, have helped me." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "Abu Sufyan, isn't it time you understood that I am truly the Messenger of Allah?" Abu Sufyan did not reply immediately, but then commented referring to the protection he had received despite Omar's request, "I know you to be a generous, forgiving man, however, I am still unsure."

Abbas, had remained silent until that moment now turned to Abu Sufyan and said, "Why not believe now as I do." There was another silent pause, then, in a clear voice Abu Sufyan proclaimed, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah." It was a time for thanksgiving.

Now that Abu Sufyan had become a Muslim, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked him to return to Mecca and inform its citizens that they would enter Mecca the following morning, and Abu Sufyan agreed.

ABU SUFYAN'S HONOR IS UPHELD

Abu Sufyan was a proud man and had commanded the rest of his fellow Koraysh tribesmen for many years, with this in mind Abbas now approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with a suggestion that would ease the situation for him. The suggestion was that Abu Sufyan be given a position of honor. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), never wishing to belittle anyone, agreed and spoke now to Abu Sufyan saying, "Inform your people that when we arrive, anyone seeking refuge in your house will be protected and that those who remain in their homes or within the precincts of Ka'ba will also be protected."

CHAPTER 118 THE OPENING OF MECCA

Until now, the banners and flags of the various tribes had remained folded. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) now called for them to be brought to him and then presented them to chosen bearers.

Before Abu Sufyan returned to Mecca the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) instructed Abbas to take him to the narrow end of the pass so that he could witness for himself the size of the army as it passed by. One by one the tribes passed through, then one in particular caught Abu Sufyan's attention and he asked, "Who is that?" Abbas replied that it was Khalid, Waleed's son. When Khalid reached Abu Sufyan he exalted Allah three times saying, "Allahu Akbar - Allah is the Greatest!"

Khalid rode with the tribe of Sulaym who were followed by Zubair, wearing a yellow turban, leading five hundred Muhajir as well as some others. He also exalted Allah as he passed Abu Sufyan and soon the whole valley took up the exaltation so that it echoed throughout the valley. One by one the troops passed by and Abu Sufyan was astounded to see so very many tribes over which the Koraysh had no influence, but moreover he witnessed many a tribe that had until recently been hostile to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) marching with them together as one army. Abu Sufyan could not help but exclaim, "Of all the Arabs, these were among the most ardent enemies of Muhammad!" Abbas smiled and said, "Allah has caused Islam to enter their hearts -- all this is by the Mercy of Allah."

The Prophet's own contingent of Ansars and Muhajirs, heavily clad in armor were led by Sa'ad, Ubayda's son, and brought up the rear. As Sa'ad passed Abu Sufyan he called to him saying, "Abu Sufyan, this is the day of slaughter! The day of the abasement of the Koraysh by Allah!" which troubled Abu Sufyan deeply.

SA'AD AND THE BANNER

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) rode upon Kaswa in the middle of the contingent accompanied by Abu Bakr and Usayd. As he passed Abu Sufyan, Abu Sufyan called to him saying, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), have you ordered the death of your people?" then repeated the disturbing words Sa'ad had uttered. Abu Sufyan continued, "I plead with you by Allah for your people, for you

of all men are the greatest in piety and very merciful." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) laid his fear to rest saying, "This is the day of mercy, the day in which Allah has raised the Koraysh." Abdur Rahman and Othman then spoke to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) there is a possibility that Sa'ad will attack the Koraysh." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) shared their concern so he sent word to Sa'ad that he should hand over the banner to his son, Kays, who was less zealous than his father. When Sa'ad received the message he was unsure whether the message was correct so he told its bearer that he would not hand it to his son until he received proof that it was from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). When the message was relayed to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he unwound the red turban from his helmet and sent it to him, and Sa'ad, without the least hesitation, handed the banner to his son.

ABU SUFYAN'S RETURN

Now that the army had passed by Abu Sufyan returned to Mecca and went directly to the hill of Safwa where he called upon the Koraysh to join him there. No sooner had they gathered than he spoke saying, "The fires we saw around us last night were those of Muhammad and his followers. He has come here with an extremely large army, we are grossly outnumbered; there are too many of them to fight! Therefore, I advise you to surrender. He has told me that those who seek refuge in my house, or choose to stay in their own homes, or within the precincts of Ka'ba have been granted safety."

Hind, Abu Sufyan's wife grabbed her husband by his mustache saying, "Kill this good-for-nothing man -- you are a wretched protector of your people!" Abu Sufyan retorted, "Do not let this woman deceive you against your better judgment, because what is coming cannot be resisted!" The crowd took heed of Abu Sufyan's warning and dispersed.

RAMADAN 21ST

It was now the 21st day of Ramadan, and as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his army approached Mecca all was quiet; there was neither sight nor sound of any activity. Kaswa, the Prophet's mount, suddenly stopped in her tracks whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) bowed his head in sincere thanksgiving so much so that his beard almost touched her saddle. Then he called upon his army and placed Khalid in command on the right and Zubair in command on the left with his own contingent remaining in the center, which he proceeded to divided into two sections. One contingent was led by Kays and Sa'ad and the other, in which he himself would ride, by Abu Ubayda, thereafter he gave the order that they were to enter Mecca from four directions.

ABU BAKR'S FATHER

Soon after Abu Sufyan's speech, Abu Bakr's blind, elderly father, Abu Kuhafah asked his daughter Kuraybah to guide him up onto of the hill of Abu Kubays where she would be able to keep him informed of the events that were about to unfold. Abu Kuhafah had witnessed so many things during his life time, he had been in Mecca when Abraha attempted to destroy Ka'ba with the elephant's might, and now he was about to witness its opening. Kuraybah described the scene to her father but after she related the division of the army into four he asked her to take him back home. As they made their way to the City, they were overtaken by a troop of cavalry but they were not harmed, however, one of the riders snatched Kuraybah's silver necklace from her neck but they arrived home in safety.

Abu Bakr's father and sister were not the only ones on Abu Kubays. Ikrima, Safwan and Suhail as well as several other Koraysh warriors had grouped together there with some allies from the Bakr and Hudhayl tribes. They were determined not to surrender so when they saw Khalid and his men riding forward to enter the City they swooped down and attacked them. Khalid and his army were vastly superior to that of Ikrima and his friends and killed thirty of their number, whereas they themselves only sustained the loss of two. Seeing that their effort was futile, Ikrima and Safwan escaped, whilst Suhail retreated to his house and locked himself inside.

THE PROPHET'S PEACEFUL ENTRANCE INTO MECCA

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered his beloved Mecca from the pass of Adhakhir riding Kaswa. Soon after he drew her to a halt, dismounted, then prostrated, praising and thanking Allah for His victory. His pious actions did not go unnoticed by the Koraysh and they began to realize that he had indeed come in compassionate peace.

PREACHERS NOT FIGHTERS.

Just then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) caught sight of Khalid's men whose swords still remained drawn after they had been forced to protect themselves just a short while before, and said, "Didn't I forbid fighting?" However, when he was told of the circumstances, he said, "Allah has decreed it for the best."

In the meantime, the Prophet's tent had been erected within sight of Ka'ba and it was there that his wives, Ladies Umm Salamah, Maymunah and daughter Lady Fatima awaited him together with his cousin Umm Hani who had come to intercede for two of her kinsmen.

THE INTERCESSION OF UMM HANI

Two of Umm Hani's kinsmen by marriage -- one of whom was the brother of the infamous Abu Jahl -- had taken part in the attack against Khalid and had sought refuge with her in her home. When Ali learned that she was in Mecca, he had gone to her home to greet her, but as he entered he saw them and had drawn his sword. Umm Hani exclaimed that he must not kill them as she had given them her protection and threw a cloak between them saying, "By Allah, you will have to kill me first!" and so honorably Ali sheathed his sword and left.

Umm Hani now waited in the Prophet's tent to intercede for their lives. As he entered he greeted his cousin affectionately and she told him what had happened, whereupon he informed her that whosoever she made safe would be protected.

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) PERFORMS THE RITES AROUND KA'BA

After having taken the major ablution, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) offered eight units of prayer, then rested for a while. A while later he asked for his camel to be brought to him. Then he donned his armor and helmet, leaving his visor up, buckled his sword and carried a staff in his hand. As he left his tent several of those that had accompanied him in the morning had lined up outside waiting for him to come out and together they made their way to the Ka'ba. As they approached the Ka'ba, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) rode to its south-east corner and reverently touched the Black Stone with his staff as he exalted Allah, which was then taken up by

those by his side. Soon the exaltation of "Allahu Akbar" was taken up by all the Muslims and rang throughout the Holy City until the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) made the gesture to be silent. Then, Muhammad, Masalamah's son from the tribe of Aws, took hold of Kaswa's bridle as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) circumambulated Ka'ba seven times.

POCKET OF RESISTANCE

As the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, circumambulate around the Ka'ba, Fadala had the intention to kill him. As he drew near the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) much to his surprise he inquired, "Is it Fadala?" and Fadala replied that it was. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked, "What were you saying to yourself?" Fadala replied, "Nothing." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, just laughed and asked Allah to forgive him and placed his hand upon his chest and his heart became still. Fadala said, "By Allah, as soon as he lifted it, Allah had not created anyone more beloved to me than him."

NO MATTER WHO WE ARE, WE ARE ALL THE CHILDREN OF ADAM

By now, many Koraysh had left their homes to join the Muslims around the Ka'ba and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) spoke to them saying, "There is no god except Allah, He has no partner." Then he called upon them saying, "O people of the Koraysh do not be proud, all people are equal. We are all the children of Adam, and Adam was created from dust." Then he recited a verse from the Koran that reads:

"People, We have created you from a male and a female,
and made you into nations and tribes that you might know one another.
The noblest of you before Allah is the most righteous of you.
Allah is the Knower, the Aware."
Koran 49:13

After the recitation he addressed the Koraysh saying, "O people of the Koraysh, what do you think I am going to do with you?" There was a silent pause, then someone said, "You will treat us as a kind kinsman or as a merciful brother would." Thereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) quoted the words of Prophet Joseph saying:

"I shall ask my Lord to forgive you.
He is Forgiving, the Most Merciful."
Koran 12:98

THE FEW THAT WERE NOT PARDONED

All except eleven men and six women were immediately pardoned that day. However, from their number were seven men and four women who embraced Islam and were subsequently pardoned; because when a person embraces Islam all previous sins are forgiven by Allah.

Amongst those who were not pardoned was the son of Khatl, who, after embracing Islam some years before in Medina, had taken the name Abdullah. During this time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) entrusted Abdullah with the honored position of collecting, from a certain tribe, the obligatory charity after Ramadan, however, he became arrogant, abused his authority and killed a serving Muslim simply because his meals were not served on time. Abdullah knew that there was a severe penalty to pay for killing another Muslim and had feared that if he returned to Medina he would be put

to death on account of the gravity of his sin, so instead he went to Mecca where he renounced Islam. The son of Khatl was not content in renouncing Islam, he had seized every opportunity to attempt to degrade the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and had purchased two slave girls to sing songs that ridiculed and mocked our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

On this special day, a Companion happened to notice him clinging to the black cloth covering Ka'ba, so he told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed the Companion that the son of Khatl was not amongst those to be pardoned and so he was put to death.

THE NEW CONVERTS

Later on that day, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made his way to the hill of Safwa and the mixed crowd of Muslims and those whom Allah had just blessed to let Islam sway their hearts, followed him. There, the new converts took his noble hand and professed their belief as they swore their allegiance before him.

Amongst those to convert was Hind, who, only an hour or two before, rebuked her husband for his stance. She came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) with her face veiled as she feared, rather than expecting his mercy, that he might order her death before she had a chance to embrace Islam. It was only after she had embraced Islam that she dared to raise her veil and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) welcomed her. Ikrima's wife, Umm Hakim also embraced Islam and begged the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to protect her husband even though he had just led the attack against him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) pardoned him and Umm Hakim asked permission to leave to go and find him then bring him back.

Ever caring, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was aware that Utba and Muttalib, the last of the sons of his uncle, Abu Lahab, were not present and asked Abbas, "Abbas, where are your brother's two sons, Utba and Muttalib? I have not seen them?" Utba had married the late Lady Rukiyah but his father forced him to divorce her before the marriage was consummated and it appeared that they were afraid to present themselves, so Abbas was asked to bring them to him. When they arrived, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) took them by the hand and walked with them to a part of the wall of Ka'ba called Al Multazam, which lies between the Black Stone and the door of Ka'ba. There, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated at length to Allah and as he finished supplicating joy was evident upon his face. Abbas remarked upon his apparent joy whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "I asked my Lord to give me these two sons of my uncle, and He has given them to me."

THE HUMILITY OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Abu Bakr had left the presence of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to visit his father and soon returned with both his father and sister. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw them he asked out of concern, "Abu Bakr, why didn't you leave him in his house so that I might go to him?" Abu Bakr replied, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), it is more fitting that he comes to you than you go to him." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) invited Abu Bakr's father to sit beside him and received them into the fold of Islam.

THE MIRACLE OF THE DESTRUCTION OF THE IDOLS

After the last of the new converts embraced Islam, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) pointed his staff towards the three hundred and sixty-five idols lodged in and around the Ka'ba the feet of which had been reinforced with lead mounted in stone and recited:

"Say: 'Truth has come and falsehood has vanished.
Indeed, falsehood will certainly vanish.'"
Koran 17:81

Thereafter he pointed his staff in their direction, but did not touch them, and whenever he pointed at the face of an idol it fell on its back and when he pointed to its back it fell on its face and each and every one of them were destroyed.

This having been accomplished, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) then ordered that if anyone had an idol in their home it must be destroyed.

Following this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his followers went to the Ka'ba and purified it, then, he asked Bilal to climb to its roof and call the believers to prayer, and so the prayer was offered.

After the prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to the congregation saying:

"On the day Allah created the heavens and earth He made Mecca Holy.
It is the most Holy place until the Day of Resurrection.
It is unlawful for those who believe in Allah and the Last Day
to shed blood in it, or to cut down trees therein.
However, Allah has permitted me to do it for an hour.
Mecca is now restored to its former Holiness.
Let those present go forth and tell others."

SUHAIL

As the Koraysh were embracing Islam, Suhail had remained in his home. He was aware that an amnesty was in effect but did not suppose himself to be included so he asked his son, Abdullah, to go to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to see if he could intervene for him.

When Abdullah approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he responded mercifully assuring him that he was safe saying, "He is safe under the protection of Allah, let him come to me." Then he turned to his Companions and told them not to look upon Suhail harshly when they met him. He also told them that Suhail was an intelligent and honorable man, not one to be blind to the truth of Islam. And so Suhail was free to come and go as he pleased, however, he chose not to enter Islam at that time.

SAFWAN

Wahb son of Umair spoke to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) about his cousin, Safwan, and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had no hesitation and agreed to give him respite for two months, and gave him his cloak as a reassurance to Safwan that the promise was indeed genuine. With this news Wahb set out in search of his cousin. He finally caught up with him at Shuayba -- the nearest port to Mecca --

awaiting a boat. Wahb told him of the Prophet's respite but Safwan was suspicious however, when Wahb showed him the cloak of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he knew that the promise of a respite for two months was genuine and the two returned together to Mecca.

Upon reaching Mecca, Safwan went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and said, referring to the proposal, "Wahb tells me that if I agree to something, all well and good, but if I do not you have given me two months' respite." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to him gently and replied, "Stay here." But Safwan replied, "Not until you have given me a definite answer!" "You shall have four months' respite," replied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and so Safwan agreed to stay in Mecca.

IKRIMA

Meanwhile, Ikrima had reached Yemen and it was there that his wife caught up with him. They talked at some length and Umm Hakim presented Islam to Ikrima and he embraced Islam so the couple set out together on their return journey to Mecca. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew that Ikrima was about to arrive and compassionately told his Companions, "Ikrima, the son of Abu Jahl is coming to you, as a believer. Do not revile his father because reviling the dead is offensive to the living and does not affect the dead."

When the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saw Ikrima he was overjoyed, such was his haste that he forgot to put on his cloak as he rushed to welcome him, and Ikrima renewed his belief in Islam at the hand of the Prophet. Whereupon Ikrima asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to supplicate to Allah for His forgiveness on account of the enmity he had once held towards him, and so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated for him.

MAXIMIZING GOODNESS

After the supplication Ikrima mentioned all the money he had spent in an effort to prevent the spread of Islam as well as the money he spent on the wars he waged against the Muslims. He now told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that from now onward he would spend double that amount on Islam and fight with double the effort in the Way of Allah; Ikrima was true to his word.

THE DESTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE OF AL UZZA

Now that Mecca had been opened, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Khalid to destroy the infamous temple of the idol al uzza in Nakhlah that had attracted many pagan pilgrims. When its priestess who would impersonate al uzza heard of Khalid's approach she went into the temple, hung her sword on the statue then called upon al uzza to defend herself then ran out of the temple.

As Khalid approached, he saw a naked black woman come running out of the temple with her hair flying all over the place. Khalid experienced no resistance from its towns people and soon the temple lay in ruins and its idol smashed into unrecognizable pieces. Now that his mission was over he returned to Mecca.

Upon his return to Mecca, Khalid told the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, about the woman he had seen whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that she was the woman who impersonated al uzza.

CHAPTER 119

THE ENCOUNTER AT HUNAIN

The days of Ramadan were now complete and the joyous congregation of Muslims was able to offer their thanksgiving at their beloved Ka'ba, it was indeed one of the most happiest times they had ever experienced.

THE HAWAZIN

Outside Mecca all was not well. The Hawazin were greatly alarmed when they learned of the destruction of the temple of al uzza at Nakhlah, which was the sister shrine to their own idol of al lat, and had amassed an army of twenty thousand in the valley of Awtas, just north of Ta'if. The tribes now joining forces with the Hawazin were those of Thakif from Ta'if, Nasr, Jusham and that of Sa'ad Bakr's son -- from which Halima, the foster mother of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) hailed -- commanded by Malik from the tribe of Nasr who was in his own right a distinguished warrior.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was aware of the impending danger and called upon his army to rearm. Its numbers were swelled by a further two thousand from the Koraysh amongst whom were Suhail and Safwan, neither of whom had as yet converted but wished to fight in defense of their property and City.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been told that Safwan possessed a hundred coats of mail together with many kinds of weapons, so he asked whether he might borrow them. Safwan asked, "Muhammad, is it a case of give willingly or else I will sieze?" "No," replied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "it is a loan to be returned." Safwan was satisfied, as he knew the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to be a man of his word whereupon he added to the loan a sufficient number of camels to transport the armor and weapons.

The concept of waiting for the Hawazin to march on Mecca was not a matter for consideration on account of the inevitable blood shed which would occur on sanctified ground, so, the order to prepare for the march was given. Before setting out on their campaign, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) appointed a man from the tribe of Shams to take charge of Mecca in his absence and left Muadh, Jabal's son, who, despite his tender years, was very well versed in Islam, to teach the new converts.

Meanwhile, Malik ignored the advice of the elders of the tribes and commanded that not only should their forces march against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), but that their women, children and livestock should follow at the rear so as to give their menfolk more reason to fight with all their might.

THE SCOUTS

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) approached the enemy, Malik sent three scouts to assess the situation and bring him word. When the scouts returned Malik was greatly disturbed by their appearance. The scouts could scarcely speak and their limbs had become either dislocated or shook uncontrollably in sheer terror. After a time one managed to speak with a voice that trembled saying, "We saw white men riding piebald horses, then, suddenly we were stricken like this!" Then another spoke in a voice equal to that of his companion saying, "We are not fighting against humans, but

people from Heaven. It is our advice that you withdraw; if you do not, as soon as the army see them they too will become like us!"

Malik refused to pay attention to their warning and rebuked them sharply saying, "Shame upon you, you are the cowards of the army!" However, he ordered the men to be taken away out of the sight of the others so that the rest of the army would not ask questions. Then, Malik turned to those around him and said, "Who amongst you is courageous?" A man stepped forward whereupon he was sent to assess the situation. A while later, the man returned in exactly the same condition as the three earlier scouts, and related the terrifying sight he had seen, but Malik was not to be deterred and once again refused to heed his impassioned warning.

THE VALLEY OF HUNAIN

Ravines surround the valley of Hunain, some of which are large with wide entrances and from the top of these ravines it was easy to monitor the movement of the Prophet's army without the risk of being seen. Night had now fallen so Malik gave the command to march to the valley as he knew the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his army would have to pass through it.

When Malik and his army reached the nearest part of the valley, which was where the road slopped down into the valley, he called for his army to halt. He then issued orders for his cavalry to take up positions upon the top of the ravine and on its opposite slope, then, he told them that once he gave the signal they were to swoop down and massacre the Prophet's army. As for the remainder of his army they were commanded to take up their positions upon the road near the top of the pass.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and his army spent that night not far from the other end of the valley. Before dawn the following morning he and his men offered the dawn prayer then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) spoke to them telling them that victory would be theirs if they were steadfast.

As the light of dawn appeared the sky was overcast and so they were able to begin their descent through the valley under the cover of relative darkness. The army of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) marched in a similar formation to the one it had taken before their entrance to Mecca with Khalid, the Sword of Islam, leading the tribe of Sulaym accompanied by some others. However, this time Khalid was followed by the new converts whilst the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) followed riding Duldul in the middle of the Muhajir and Ansars accompanied by more family members than before. Amongst them were his cousins Abu Sufyan and Abdullah; his uncle Abbas and his sons Fadl and Kitham; as well as the two sons of Abu Lahab. The rear of the army was brought up by those who had not yet converted to Islam.

They had almost finished their descent when, in the half-light of the dawn, their gaze fell upon the resting army of the Hawazin positioned on the opposite side of the slope above which were their women, children and auxiliary mounts, who, in the hazy light of dawn must have appeared as additional warriors.

Before the army could take a safe stand, Malik spotted them and gave the signal to attack. The attack came swiftly as the Hawazin emerged from all directions and swept down upon Khalid and his men before he had chance to summon the tribe of Sulaym to take a stand. Many of the Sulaym lay martyred on the battlefield whilst the survivors

fled into the midst of the Koraysh causing them to scatter and seek safety upon the slope from which they had just descended.

Chaos prevailed as camels and horses stampeded and blocked the narrow entrance, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was able to withdraw to his right and together with a small band of men took a firm, courageous stand. Amongst those who took the stand were his relatives, Omar, Abu Bakr, some of the Muhajir and Ansar, and Abu Sufyan who stood at his side and held tightly to the reins whilst Abbas, trying to restrain Duldul held tightly to the bridle.

During the confusion the unconverted Koraysh were heard to mutter against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) whereupon Safwan spoke harshly to them in defense of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) saying, "If I must have some one over me, let it be a man from the Koraysh rather than a man from the Hawazin!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) called upon the others to rally around him but in all the upheaval his words were drowned by the noise as swords clashed, mounts stampeded, and the cries of war filled the air. Abbas had an exceptionally loud voice and took up the call shouting to the Companions who had given their allegiance at Samurah: "Where are the Companions of Samurah!" The Ansars did likewise and the cry rang out, "O people of the Ansars, children of Harith!" There was an immediate response as their cries returned, "Labbayk! -- Obedient to you!" and those who had fled returned to stand alongside the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

THE PEBBLES THAT EXALTED ALLAH

The fighting had reached its climax and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salam) supplicated to Allah saying, "O Allah, I ask of You Your promise." Then he asked for some pebbles to be brought to him. The pebbles were gathered and given to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and as he held them in his blessed hands, the pebbles exalted Allah in human speech. As he threw them in the face of the enemy he said, "By the Lord of Muhammad, they will be defeated" and the ferocity abated and the unbelievers fled.

SHAYBA, SON OF OTHMAN AL JUHANI

During the encounter at Badr, Hamza engaged and killed Othman al Juhani and his brother. From that time onward Shayba's hatred for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) knew no boundaries, his hatred was intense. Shayba was intent on revenge and the opportunity was soon to be realized as Shayba crept up upon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) with his sword in readiness to strike. However, before he could reach the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) a blazing flame, faster than lightening appeared before him and he turned to run. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was aware of the circumstances and called out to Shayba in a calming voice and ask him to come to him. Trembling, Shayba approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) smiled and placed his hand upon his chest. When he removed his hand Shayba's hatred had completely disappeared and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had become the most loved of all people to him. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) spoke saying, "Draw near and fight." Shayba plunged in to fighting and was heard to say, "If I had met my father, I would have engaged him in combat rather than the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam)."

AIDH AMR'S SON

Aidh Amr's son fought valiantly against the enemy and sustained a wound. He made his way to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, with blood dripping from his face. As soon as the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saw his condition, he had compassion for him and wiped away the blood from his face and as he did so, he supplicated to Allah. From that time onwards Aidh had a blaze on his head, similar to that of a horse.

THE MIRACLE OF HUNAIN

It was the turning point of the hostilities, Allah heard the supplication of His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and sent invisible warriors against the enemy. It was a miraculous turn in the events. Malik continued to fight as best he could but was forced to retreat with part of the army from Thakif to their walled city of Ta'if.

As for the majority of the Hawazin, they were forced to flee as far away as Naklah. Many had sustained heavy casualties whilst others returned to their camp at Awtas. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of this he sent a detachment against them so that they were forced to flee to the surrounding hills.

Victory was theirs with very little loss of life on the Muslim side after the initial encounter. Amongst those who were martyred was Osama's elder brother, Ayman, who fell as he stood by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Concerning the Encounter of Hunain Allah sent down the verses:

"Allah has helped you on many a battlefield.
In the Battle of Hunain, when your numbers were pleasing you
they availed you nothing;
the earth, for all its vastness, seemed to close in upon you
and you turned your backs and fled.
Then, Allah caused His tranquility (sechina)
to descend upon His Messenger and the believers;
He sent legions you did not see and sternly punished the unbelievers.
Such is the recompense of the unbelievers."
Koran 9:25-26

As for the Hawazin women and children, they were taken captive. Amongst the spoils of war were large flocks of sheep, camels and goats as well as four thousand ounces of silver. These, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) now placed in the capable hands of Budayl whom he instructed to take to Jiranah, a valley some ten miles outside of Mecca.

HALIMA, THE FOSTER MOTHER OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Amongst those taken captive was an elderly woman who asked to be taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). When she was asked why she wanted to see him she said that her name was Halima, the foster-mother of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

It had been a very long time since the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had seen Halima and at first he did not recognize her but when she introduced herself to him and recalled some childhood stories, he honored her and had a rug spread out and invited

her to sit with him as he endearingly inquired about her family and said, "Mother, you are welcome and your request is granted, you will be given whatever you wish." Halima, replied, "I ask to intercede for my people." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) then said, "I am indebted to you as are the tribe of Hashimites." Whereupon he gave her all his share of the spoils of war gained during the encounter of Hunain.

THE JOURNEY TO TA'IF

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and his Companions set out for Ta'if by night, and as they traveled on their camels the Prophet became a little sleepy. On the track that led to Ta'if there grew a Lote-tree. As he approached the tree recognized the noble traveller and did not wish that he be disturb, so it split its self into two and the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, rode through the parted tree without being disturbed.

THE SEIGE OF TA'IF

Ta'if was a city fortified by strong walls from which well trained archers had the advantage of protection. Its fertile land abounded with orchards so Ta'if was capable of self-support when it came to providing food for its citizens.

ALWAYS FREE THE SLAVES.

As the Prophet's army approached the walled city they were met by volleys of arrows, that were returned with equal ferocity. One day during the siege, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) instructed a herald to cry out that any slave belonging to the Thakif who wished to join them as Muslims would be set free and soon after the word had been passed among them, approximately twenty slaves slipped away from the city to embrace Islam.

Three weeks had passed since the beginning of the siege and there was no progress, then, one night the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) saw a vision in which he was given a bowl of butter to which a rooster came, pecked and split it. The following day Abu Bakr went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and said, "I do not think you will gain what you desire," and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) agreed with him, then instructed his army to break camp and return to Jiranah.

Whilst they were in the midst of breaking camp some asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to curse the inhabitants of Ta'if but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) did not do so, rather, he raised his hands and supplicated for them saying, "O Allah, guide the Thakif and bring them to us" for he always wanted good for people, even his adversaries.

Very few casualties were sustained during the siege, however, amongst the martyred was Lady Umm Salamah's half-brother, the newly converted Abdullah, who was also the cousin of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

CHAPTER 120 THE SPOILS OF WAR

Upon reaching Jiranah, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) found Budhayl had arranged for the captives -- six thousand women and children -- to be lodged in a very

large enclosure protected from the sun. The captives had been well cared for and their needs met, however, it was noticeable that most were in need of new clothing so he gave a Khuzahite some silver from the spoils of war, and sent him to Mecca to buy new robes for each of them.

The spoils of war remained undivided and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wished it to remain that way for the time being as he could, no doubt, expect to receive a deputation from the Hawazin requesting leniency and the return of some of the confiscated property. However, Allah had decreed in the Koran that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) should receive one fifth of the spoils and until he disposed of its responsibility it remained a burden to him for he was never one to hoard wealth. Allah had also instructed that charity should be spent on those attracted to belief and this applied to the new converts from the Koraysh whose faith needed to be strengthened and encouraged.

"The obligatory charity shall be only for the poor and the needy and those who work to collect it, and to influence hearts (to belief) and for ransoming captives, and debtors in the Way of Allah and the destitute traveler. It is an obligation from Allah. Allah is Knowing, Wise."
Koran 9:60

From the vast herd of twenty-four thousand camels the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave Abu Sufyan a hundred camels who then asked for a hundred camels each of his two sons Yazid and Muawiyah.

THE UPPER HAND IS BETTER THAN THE LOWER.

Lady Khadijah's nephew, Hakim, was given a hundred camels and asked for two hundred more to be added. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed but told him that whosoever took it in charity of his soul would be blessed by it, but whosoever took it for pride of his soul would not be blessed by it, and that he would become like one who eats but is never satisfied. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued to advise him that the upper hand is better than the lower and that he should begin his giving with his family on account of their dependency upon him. Hakim was deeply moved by the Prophet's advice and told him that from now onward he would not accept anything from anyone else other than he. He also retracted his additional request for the extra two hundred camels.

Safwan and Suhail were among those mentioned as eligible recipients in the Koran and were also given a hundred camels as were others of similar inclination.

THE CONVERSION OF SAFWAN

Later that day Safwan, who had already received his camels, rode together with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) through the valley. In one part of the valley there was a pass which was particularly lush with vegetation and it was there that some of the herds had been taken to graze. It was indeed a beautiful, refreshing sight to see such an abundance of grazing livestock. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) noticed how taken Safwan was by the sight and asked, "Does this pass please you?" whereupon he replied, "Indeed it does!" "Then," said the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) "it is yours, and all that is in it." The overwhelmed Safwan exclaimed, "I bear witness that no soul could be full of such goodness as this, if it were not the soul of a

Prophet." Then in all sincerity he proclaimed, "I bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and that you are His Messenger."

THE CONVERSION OF SUHAIL

To be amongst Muslims could not help but make an impression upon Suhail and moreover he had just witnessed the miraculous victory at Hunain when all odds appeared to be against them. He had also been blessed to accompany the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) and had been greatly impressed as well as touched by his noble, gentle character.

Suhail had also been reunited with his son, Abdullah, and observed how upright he had become on account of his new faith and no longer felt in his heart any resistance to Islam, so he too became a Muslim.

Three years later, when Abdullah was martyred, Abu Bakr went to console Suhail whereupon he replied, "I have heard that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) said, 'A martyr shall intercede for seventy of his people.' It is my hope that my son will not begin with anyone before me."

OTHER CONVERSIONS

Amongst the other converts at Jiranah were several notables from the Makhzum tribe. The two brothers of Abu Jahl embraced Islam as did Khalid's half-brother Hisham; Zuhayr, the son of the Prophet's aunt Atikah, who had many years before the Migration been instrumental in bringing about the cessation of the boycott levied against the persecuted Muslims in Mecca.

IMPATIENCE

The remaining spoils of war were not distributed immediately and several started to grow impatient for their share, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) preferred to wait a few more days to see if the Hawazin and their allies intended to send a deputation to request the return or ransom some of the confiscated property.

Several days had now passed and there neither word nor sign of a deputation and it seemed that no one was coming so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) decided enough time had elapsed and that the spoils of war could now be distributed amongst his followers and so much to the delight of everyone the distribution began.

Amongst those taken captive were the family and property of Malik, the commander of the Hawazin, and so with great wisdom and diplomacy the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) arranged for both them and their property to be escorted to his maternal aunt Atikah in Mecca for safe keeping and therefore not for distribution for the time being.

THE ARRIVAL OF THE DEPUTATION

The distribution of the spoils of war had just finished when a deputation from the Hawazin arrived. Amongst those accompanying the delegation was the brother of Abi Kabshah, the Prophet's foster-father, who, upon meeting the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told him that fourteen of his tribe had been Muslims for sometime and that the remainder of his tribe had recently embraced Islam.

Abi Kabshah's brother had come to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to ask leniency for the Hawazin with whom his tribe had kindred ties. Abi Kabshah's brother was of the opinion that on account of the Prophet's connection with his own tribe, the tribe of Hawazin should also be considered as part of his extended family and said, "We nursed you on our laps and suckled you at our breasts." After presenting his case he then proceeded to ask the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to be generous towards them. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him that they had waited for several days for them to come and present their claim, but when they had not arrived the spoils of war had been distributed.

Then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked which was dearer to them, their children and wives, or their possessions, to which they replied, "Return our children and wives to us." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them that the families given to him and the sons of Abd Al Muttalib were theirs, and that he would make an appeal for the return of the others. Then he told them that after he had led the noon prayer they should stand up and say, "We ask the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to intercede for us with the Muslims, and we ask the Muslims to intercede for us with the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)." And so when the time arrived their spokesman arose and made the request to the congregation.

A BEAUTIFUL REUNION.

As the congregation remained seated after the prayer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) addressed them and explained that they were asking for the return of their wives and children. The Ansar and Muhajir were quick to respond and the women and children allotted to them were released immediately. Other tribes followed their example whilst others refused until they received a promise that they would be compensated in the future. However, a young woman chose not to return to her tribe.

THE FAREWELL

As the deputation prepared to leave the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) fulfilled his promise and gave Halima his foster-mother, some more camels, sheep and goats. Just as they were about to depart the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired about their commander, Malik, and was told that he was with the tribe of Thakif at Ta'if. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked them to convey a message to him, which was that if he came to him as a Muslim he would return not only his family and possessions to him, but an additional herd of one hundred camels.

In the meantime, Malik could not help but reflect upon the miraculous turn of events at Hunain neither could he dismiss the matter from his mind. When a messenger arrived at Ta'if the Prophet's message was conveyed to him whereupon he left Ta'if and journeyed back with the messenger to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) where he embraced Islam. Malik's conversion was sincere, it was not just to regain his family and property, and in the days that followed it was he who played a major role in destroying the resistance at Ta'if.

WISDOM IN DISTRIBUTION.

The wisdom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was not always immediately understood by some of his followers. The recent events were somewhat of a puzzlement as some were unable to comprehend why the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been so generous to chieftains and other nobility, who had not as yet

embraced Islam or whose Islam was not yet deep rooted. They wondered why he appeared not have been so generous to those whose Islam was well established and were, for the most part, poor.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew better than anyone else that Islam had power in itself to work upon the heart, and understood the underlying Koranic wisdom of giving to "those attracted to the belief," and had acted in accordance with its injunction of the distribution.

Sa'ad from the tribe of Zurah, like some others, had not as yet understood this wisdom and inquired why he had given Uyaynah from the tribe of Ghatafan, and Akra from the tribe of Tamim a hundred camels each whilst he had given nothing to his faithful, pious follower Juayl from the tribe of Damrah who was very poor. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied gently saying, "By Him in whose Hand is my soul, Juayl is worth more than a world full of men such as Uyaynah, Hisan's son, and Akra, Habis' son; I reconciled their souls so that they might submit to Allah, whereas I have entrusted Juayl to the submission he has already made." Sa'ad and several of the Muhajir who had gathered around him were overwhelmed by the magnitude of the Prophet's statement and it was then that they understood the wisdom of his actions.

Murmurings also stirred from the Ansars, who had supported the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) even before his arrival in Medina, as well as others from the Muhajir. Neither party could comprehend why they had received just four camels each, or their equivalent in sheep or goats, from the bountiful spoils of war, when they witnessed others, such as the Koraysh -- who they considered less deserving, and far wealthier than themselves -- being given much greater rewards.

The discontent started to grow amongst the Ansars as satan, the stoned and cursed, caused them to think that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had rejoined his tribe and taken to favoring his people. Now it was being said, "We would like to know where this comes from. If it is from Allah we can accept it with patience, but, if it is none other than a thought which occurred to the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), we ask him to favor us as well."

THE DEAREST TO ME

Not long after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) became aware of the murmurings and said, "It is true that I have given to some and not to others. Those to whom I did not give are dearer to me than those to whom I gave. I gave to those in whose hearts I felt was anxiety or unease; the others I left in their faith, understanding and self-reliance that Allah has instilled in their hearts."

However, Abdullah, Masood's son went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to tell him directly of the discontent and repeated the murmurings. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) listened to Abdullah his facial expression changed and he asked, "Who then is just if Allah and His Messenger are not?" He continued, "May Allah have mercy on Moses, he was caused more distress than this and was patient." Abdullah felt ashamed of himself for drawing the Prophet's attention to the matter and promised himself that he would never, ever again communicate anything of this kind to him.

Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to the Ansars and said referring to the new converts, "Aren't you pleased that the people return with wealth but you return with the Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in your care?" Tears welled up in their eyes and with tears of regret they wept as they replied: "We are indeed pleased with Prophet of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)!"

As the Ansars began to realize the Prophet's wisdom they too felt ashamed and sorry they had questioned his decision, for there had never been a time when he had been unfair to them and knew that he would never do anything to earn the displeasure of Allah, and wept again because they had fallen prey to the whisperings of satan, the stoned and cursed.

CHAPTER 121

THE RETURN JOURNEY TO MEDINA

It was time to leave Jiranah for Mecca. As soon as Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arrived in Mecca he offered Umra, the lesser pilgrimage, after which he returned to Medina to await the birth of his child.

Medina was but a few miles away when Urwah, from the tribe of Thakif, caught up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he had be amongst those present at the signing of the Treaty at Hdaybiyah and had been in Yemen during the recent encounter. At Hdaybiyah he had been greatly impressed by the message of Islam with its lifestyle, and was deeply touched by the respect the Muslims had for their Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Upon his return to Ta'if, he learned of the miraculous victory and felt the time had come for him to embrace Islam and so it was for this reason he had ridden post haste to catch up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

After having embraced Islam, Urwah expressed his earnest desire to return to the Thakif and tell them about Islam, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) warned him that they would not listen and kill him. Urwah was so sure he could convince them that he pleaded with him saying, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), I am dearer to them than their first-born." But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) warned him again. Urwah asked the Prophet's permission once again and this time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) agreed.

URWAH AND THE THAKIF

Urwah and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) parted company and he rode on to Ta'if with high hopes of converting his fellow tribesmen to Islam. However, Urwah had misjudged the Thakif, for when he tried to tell them about Islam they rose up against him and became violent, forcing him to retreat to his home. Archers surrounded his house and arrows were fired into his home; soon after Urwah lay mortally wounded.

As Urwah lay dying his family asked him what he thought about his death, whereupon he replied, "It is a blessing which Allah, in His Favor, has given to me." Just before he passed away he asked his family to bury him beside those who had been martyred during the recent siege, and so it was that his dying request was granted.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of his martyrdom, he said, "Urwah is like the man in (the chapter) "Ya Seen". He called his people to Allah but they killed him.

"Then, a man came running from the furthest part of the village,
'My nation,' he said, 'follow the Messengers,
follow those who ask no wage of you and are rightly guided.
Why should I not worship Him who has originated me
and to whom you shall be returned?
What, shall I take, other than Him, gods whose intercession,
if the Merciful desires to afflict me, cannot help me at all,
and they will never save me? Surely, I would then be in clear error.
Koran 36: 20-24

Soon after his martyrdom, Urwah's son and nephew left Ta'if and journeyed to Medina where they converted and lived with Mughirah, one of their Muhajir cousins.

CHAPTER 122

A SON IS BORN

The last few days of Lady Maryam's pregnancy were upon her and the entire City anxiously awaited the arrival of the baby. Salma, who had been the midwife to Lady Khadijah was now elderly, offered to assist when the time came and now moved near to Lady Maryam's home in readiness for the blessed event.

On a night soon after, Lady Maryam gave birth to a son, whereupon Abu Rafi, Salma's husband made haste to bring the joyous news to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), however, before he could reach him, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had already been awakened by Angel Gabriel who greeted him in a way in which he had never greeted him before saying, "Awaken, O father of Abraham," and so he already knew that he had been blessed with a son.

The dawn prayer was almost due and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) waited until after it had been offered to make the much awaited announcement, and told the congregation that his son had been given the name Abraham. Shortly after the prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to greet Lady Maryam and see his darling son. It was a very touching moment as he held his son for the first time and thanked Allah for his safe delivery and the well being of Lady Maryam.

Everyone was excited and delighted by the news, especially the wives of the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Offers of help abounded from every quarter and in particular for the favor of nursing the infant. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) chose the wife of a blacksmith to be Abraham's nurse as she lived near Lady Maryam's house.

CHAPTER 123

SMALLER EXPEDITIONS

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stayed in Medina for a further six months during which he organized several small expeditions, one of which was to the tribe of Autas.

THE DEATH OF UBAID

Ubaid, father of Amir, was placed in charge of an army sent to suppress the rebellious tribe of Autas. During the encounter Ubaid engaged Duraïd, As-Simma's son in combat and killed him, however, during the hostilities a tribesman from Husham aimed his bow at Ubaid and his arrow penetrated his knee.

When his nephew, Abdullah, Kay's son, also known as Abu Musa, saw what had happened, he went to him and asked who had done this to him, whereupon Ubaid pointed to the man and he charged after him. The tribesman saw Abu Musa charging toward him and fled, but when Abu Musa challenged his honor saying, "Aren't you ashamed, won't you stop and fight," he stopped and they engaged each other in combat until the tribesman lay dead.

Now that Abu Musa had accomplished his aim he returned to his uncle only to find that his condition had deteriorated. Ubaid had lost a lot of blood and asked his nephew to try to remove the arrow. Abu Musa managed to remove it but Ubaid sensed his time was nearing its end and said, "Convey my greetings to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and request him to supplicate for me to Allah and ask His forgiveness." Then, he instructed Abu Musa to take charge of the army and passed away.

Upon their triumphant return to Medina, Abu Musa went straight to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As he entered his apartment he found him lying on the stalks of date-palm leaves that had been tied together with rope to form a mattress; when he arose the imprints of the stalks were visible on his back and side. Abu Musa related the details of the encounter then told him of the martyrdom of his uncle and that just before he passed away had sent to him his greetings and asked that he supplicate for him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked for some water to be brought to him, whereupon he made ablution, raised his hands so high that the whiteness of his armpits were visible and supplicated saying, "O Allah, forgive Ubaid, father of Amir, O Allah on the Day of Resurrection raise him in rank above many of Your creation." After he had finished his supplication Abu Musa humbly asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), will you ask Allah to forgive me?" whereupon the Prophet supplicated, "O Allah, forgive the sins of Abdullah, son of Kays, and admit him through a fair entrance on the Day of Resurrection."

THE TRIBE OF TAYY

In one of the earlier expeditions, Ali had been sent to destroy the temple of the pagan god, manat, at Kudayd near the Red Sea. The mission had been successful and now that the second of the three most revered pagan temples had been destroyed only that of al lat in Ta'if remained.

In a place called Fuls, which is to the north-east of Medina on land belonging to the tribe of Tayy, there was another pagan temple of lesser standing. However, the people of Tayy were not all pagans, some were Christians and Ali was sent once again to destroy the pagan temple.

Upon the death of Hatim, the chieftain and poet of renown of the tribe of Tayy, his son Adi had risen to the rank of chieftain. Like his father before him, Adi was also a Christian. When news reached the tribe of Ali's advance, Adi and his family, with the exception of one of his sisters, fled.

THE HONORING OF NOBLE CHARACTERISTICS IN NON-MUSLIMS

The temple was destroyed and many of the Tayy were taken captive, including Adi's sister. Adi's sister asked to speak with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and as she stood before him she told him that she was the daughter of an honorable chieftain whose name was Hatim Al Tayy, and was fearful that when other Arab tribes learned of her predicament they would gloat. She told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that during his lifetime her father had been well known for feeding the hungry, defending his family, freeing captives and never refused those in need.

Upon hearing these honorable qualities the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was heartened and smiled as he told her that her description of her father befitted that of a Muslim, and indeed, if her father had been a Muslim he would have asked Allah to have mercy on him. Then, without the slightest hesitation the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) not only released her so that she might return to her people, but returned her possessions and gave her a gift of a fine robe as well as a camel.

When the Companions saw the noble act of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) they too released their captives from the tribe and returned their shares.

Adi was not only relieved but delighted to see his sister safe and well, and amazed to see that not only his sister but the rest of her tribesmen had been returned with their possession – something which was completely unheard of in the days before Islam. She told her brother of her experience and encouraged him to go to Medina and see for himself. Adi was so impressed by his sister's account that he wasted no time and rode off to Medina.

A CIVILIZED SOCIETY NEVER BEFORE KNOWN WITH BALANCED SPIRITUAL AND MATERIALISTIC VALUES

Upon his arrival in Medina Adi could not help but be overwhelmed by the sight that met his eyes. There before him were Arabs from all corners of Arabia living in love and harmony with one another. The degree of organized civilization, combined with spirituality, culture and materialistic values was indeed to be marveled.

Thoughtfulness, sincere love and care for one another was everywhere, but what impressed him most was the love they all shared for Allah and His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). It was far beyond anything he had ever encountered and it had never entered his mind that such devotion existed or could even exist. He realized that the civilization that now greeted his eyes pivoted upon the great love and obedience to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the worship of Allah, the One and only God.

He reflected upon how, until only a few years before, the tribes of Arabia had been so uncivilized. Very few had scruples about taking the life of another, senseless blood feuds were not only perpetuated but a way of life and perhaps the most despicable act of burying their innocent, newly born baby daughters alive then returning to their wives

and enjoying intercourse was something so depraved that it was beyond all comprehension and decent human values.

A TIME FOR SELF-EXAMINATION, CHRISTIANITY MINUS IDOLATRY

It was time for self-examination of his own Christian belief and for the first time it occurred to him that his belief in the Trinity was parallel to that of idolatry. He reflected upon his knowledge of previous prophets and recognized the pattern that all, without exception, had preached the Oneness of the Creator.

He realized that over the passage of time the religion he thought he was following had become corrupt but more importantly the Book given to Jesus no longer existed and only fragments remained. It also dawned upon him that Christianity was reprehensible because, unlike the pagan idolaters, it had in earlier times received Divine Guidance entrusted to Jesus, whereas the pagans had not.

He reflected upon the creation of Adam and Eve and the fact that neither had parents, yet no one had ever attributed to them an association or kinship with Allah. There was no doubt in his mind that it would have been absolutely impossible for such a pure person as Jesus to claim that he was anything else except a prophet, born of a virgin mother and rejected the notion of his deity, recognizing the fact that Jesus, like Adam and Eve, were all miracles from Allah, the One and only Creator.

“Truly, the likeness of (Prophet) Jesus with Allah,
is as the likeness of Adam, He created him from dust
Then He said to him ‘Be’ and he was.”

Koran 3:59

His sister’s description was unable to do justice to what he now witnessed and so he went directly to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and converted and pledged his allegiance. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) welcomed him into the fold of Islam and told him that he was to remain as the chief of the Tayy.

The noble treatment of the Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions had already deeply affected the former captives from Tayy. Their news was upon the tongues of every tribesmen and thereafter they too inclined to Islam and embraced it.

THE DEATH OF A RIGHTEOUS MAN WHO FOLLOWED PROPHETS JESUS AND MUHAMMAD, peace be upon them

Eleven months after the Opening of Mecca, at the beginning of Rajab, the Angel Gabriel appeared to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and informed him that the Negus of Abyssinia who had embraced Islam had passed away. After the obligatory prayer had been offered the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed the congregation of his passing saying, "A righteous man has died. Arise and pray for your brother Ashama." Thereupon, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led the congregation in the absent funeral prayer, and many reflected upon the Negus' justice and kindness towards them when they sought refuge many years before in his county.

CHAPTER 124 TABUK

It was now the ninth year and it was in the months that followed the victory of Hunain, that Heraclius, Emperor of Rome, captured the City of Jerusalem from the Persians who were then forced to retreat from both Syria and Egypt.

Syria was now under the control of the Roman Empire and as such posed a threat to the newly emerging Islamic State. From time to time Nibataian traders from Syria would visit Medina to trade oil and brought news that Heraclius had set his sight upon conquering Medina and had gone so far as to advance a year's pay to his soldiers because he expected it to be a lengthy campaign. In addition to the rumors, disturbing reports reached Medina that Heraclius' army had already marched as far south as Balka and succeeded to secure the support of the Arab tribes of Ghassan, Judham, Lakm and Amilah.

THE VISION OF HERACLIUS

All but a few, privy to Heraclius, knew of a daunting vision Heraclius had during his campaign against the Persians. In the vision Heraclius had been told that a circumcised man would triumph in Syria, which he felt could be none other than the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who had, some time ago, written him a letter in which he invited him to embrace Islam. It had been a vision of such compelling certainty that he could not dismiss it from his mind no matter how hard he tried.

The vision bothered Heraclius to the extent that he restrained his army from marching any further south and issued orders to withdraw from Jerusalem to Homs as he was convinced that it would soon be conquered.

In light of the vision he called for a meeting with his generals and proposed that a treaty should be made with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that gave him Syria in exchange for his promise not to advance beyond its northern limits. The generals were astounded, outraged at the proposal that he might even consider such a proposal and so Heraclius was forced to back down, although his vision was never far from his mind and bothered him constantly.

THE LARGEST ARMY YET IN ISLAM

Matters could not be allowed to deteriorate so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) mustered the largest, best-equipped army ever before in the history of Islam. Until that time it had always been the strategy of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never to disclose the true objective of a mission until the very last moment so that his plans would not fall into the wrong hands. In fact, he would often set out in the opposite direction to foil his enemies. However, this time was the exception, it was imperative that adequate preparations be made for the long journey to Tabuk which would take place during the summer, a season of intense heat, across the scorching desert sands with its blinding brightness.

It wasn't until later that registers were drawn up in which the names of the participants of a campaign were recorded, so for those reluctant to march with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), there was always a place of refuge in the shadows of the lush groves of Medina and the knowledge that unless Allah made it known to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) their absence would remain undetected. To the hypocrites the thought of engaging the Roman army was daunting, especially as the enemy would have the advantage of being well rested whereas they would be weary

from their arduous march and so they would congregate in the house of a Jew by the name of Suwailam and encourage others to join them. There were, however, some others who were not hypocrites that were slow to march with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), their names were Ka'b, Malik's son; Abu Khaisamah; Murarah, Rabia Amiri's son, and Hilal, Umayyah Wakifi's son.

Medina bustled with preparations and each day Ka'b would leave his home intending to prepare but never did. Wealthier Muslims were generous in spending in the cause of Allah and provided money to buy provisions, weapons and whatever was necessary. Othman, alone, contributed enough money to provide mounts and equipment for ten thousand men. However, despite the generosity of the wealthy there remained seven very poor, anxious Muslims remaining without mounts; five of them were from the Ansar and two were Bedouins, one from the Muzaynah and the other from the Ghatafan. In desperation they came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and begged him to provide them with mounts, but there were none left and so with heaviness of heart, sensitive to their great sorrow, he broke the news that they were to remain behind as the journey would be impossible without a mount. The Companions were grief stricken and broke down, weeping.

Their sincerity is recorded in the Koran:

"... And when you said, 'I can find no mounts for you,' they turned back, their eyes streaming with tears, grieving that they could not find the means to spend." Koran 9:92

THE ARRIVAL OF THE BEDOUIN ALLIES

Now that their Bedouin allies had arrived the army was thirty thousand strong with a cavalry of ten thousand. It was expedient for a camp outside the City to be established to accommodate them as there was no room in Medina, and so the faithful, long time friend of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Abu Bakr, was placed in charge of the arrangements.

When the time came to set off the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led his army out of Medina, leaving behind the women, children, hypocrites, the sick, the disabled, the seven who could not find mounts, those whose faith was weak, and Ka'b, Abu Khaisamah, Murarah and Hilal.

In addition to those that stayed behind, was Ali who the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had instructed to remain with his family. Soon, the tongues of the hypocrites began to wag with false rumors that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) found him a burden and did not wish for his company during the campaign. The words were so very hurtful that Ali could no longer bear them, for he loved the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) more than his own life, so he put on his armor and rode out to catch up with him, and did so before he reached the first halt, with the intent of seeking his permission to join him.

No sooner had he caught up with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he told him of the rumors whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) denounced them saying, "They lie. I asked you to remain for the sake of those I had left behind. So return, and represent me in my family and yours." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "O Ali, are you not content that you should be to me as Aaron was

to Moses, except that after me there is no prophet?" And so Ali returned with a contented heart to Medina.

THE MARCH NORTHWARDS

At dawn one morning thereafter, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was delayed and the time of prayer was about to expire. Everyone had assembled ready to pray behind him but when he did not appear, Abdur Rahman, A'waf's son was elected to lead the prayer. At the beginning of the second unit of prayer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) joined them and Abdur Rahman was about to step aside for him to lead the prayer, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) motioned that he should continue and prayed behind him. After the congregation concluded the prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) rose and offered the missed unit. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) then complemented Abdur Rahman saying, "You did very well, for indeed, a Prophet does not die until he has been led in prayer by a pious man of his people."

ABU KHAISAMAH

Several days later, to escape the sweltering summer heat in Medina, Abu Khaisamah decided to take a stroll in his garden underneath the cool shade of the trees. However, he received little comfort from it as his conscience troubled him even more than it had previously done so, as he had begun to hate himself for not riding out with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

In the garden were two adobe houses belonging to his wives, as he approached them he noticed they had thrown water over them so as to keep them cool and that they had prepared a meal for him with a refreshing, cool drink of water poured from an earthenware jug. As he stood at the entrance of one of the homes he exclaimed, "The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) faces the glare of the sun, and is exposed to hot winds, yet Abu Khaisamah enjoys the coolness of the shade, with his food prepared by two good women, living at ease in his home!" Without further ado, he told his wives, "By Allah, I will not enter your homes until after I have joined the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), so prepare provisions for me." His wives brought food and water as he saddled his camel then he set off in all haste to join him.

THE RUINS OF THAMOOD

During the march across the desert the army took the route that would pass by the homes that once belonged to the people of Thamood. The fate of the people of Thamood was well known by the Muslims as Allah made mention of their disobedience to Him and their prophet in the Koran. The only visible sign of their existence were their centuries old ruined homes hewn out of the cliffs. Before the army reached Thamood, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) gave instructions that none were to stay there, nor yet drink or use its water.

"(Then) they hamstrung the shecamel and defied the order of their Lord saying to Salih, 'Bring down that which you have promised us if you truly are one of the Messengers.'

Thereupon the earthquake seized them, at morning in their dwellings they were crouched, dead.

He turned to them saying, 'I conveyed to you my nation the Message of my Lord and gave you counsel, but you have no love for sincere advisers.'"

THE SPRING OF TABOOK

At a halt several miles outside Tabuk, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his army, "Allah willing, tomorrow, you will reach the spring of Tabuk. You will not reach it until the sun is hot. Whosoever reaches it must not touch its water until I arrive. However, two of the first men to reach the spring had not heard the Prophet's order and drank from it and used the water to make dough.

Later in the day, when the rest of the army reached the spring, the spring had become no more than a trickle and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired why his ordered had been disobeyed and told them to throw the bread away. Then, he gave instructions for the remaining water to be scooped up in handfuls and poured into a water-skin. After sufficient water had been collected, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) washed his hands and face with it, then poured it over the rock that covered the mouth of the spring and as he did, he passed his hands over it whilst he supplicated to Allah. With a thunderous sound, water gushed forth and the entire army satisfied all their needs. Muadah happened to be standing by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as the water gushed forth and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to him saying, "O Muadah, perhaps you will live to see this place become an oasis with many gardens." And so it was that in the years to follow the prophecy was fulfilled.

THE ARRIVAL OF ABU KHAISAMAH

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) rested with his Companions someone happened to mention that they had not seen Ka'b and asked where he was. A tribesman from the Salimah commented that he had not accompanied them because of his love of wealth, but Jabal's son jumped to his defense informing him that he only knew good things about him and chided the tribesman for speaking in such a manner. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made no comment.

Not long after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spotted a rider in the distance wearing a white cloak riding towards them and said, "Abu Khaisamah" and it was.

UNFOUNDED RUMORS

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stayed at Tabuk for twenty days and concluded that the rumors of the impending Roman attack were false. However, the march was far from wasted as he met with two settlements, one Christian and the other Jewish, whereupon a peace treaty was drawn up between them, which would, in return for an annual tax guarantee their protection.

THE STRONGHOLD AT DUMAT AL JANDAL

Now that the danger was over, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Khalid together with a cavalry of four hundred and twenty on to Dumat Al Jandal that lay to the north-east of Tabuk, and was just five halts from Damascus.

Dumat al Jandal was an important location on the road between Iraq and Medina as well as Syria. During this time, Khalid happened to be out hunting when, quite unexpectedly he came across Ukaydir, an Arab chieftain who owed allegiance to the Roman Empire. Khalid spoke to Ukaydir about Islam and shortly after they journeyed

to Medina where he embraced Islam and allied himself to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

CHAPTER 125

THE RETURN FROM TABUK

Upon the Prophet's return he learned that his daughter, Lady Umm Kulthum had passed away. Both the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Othman, her husband who had also been at Tabuk, were deeply saddened by the news and went to her grave where the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prayed for her. Othman had been a good husband to his daughter and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) consoled him saying that if he had another unmarried daughter he would have given her to him in marriage.

THE EXCUSES

Before the Prophet's arrival in Medina, Ka'b had become filled with anxiety and began to invent excuses in his mind so as to escape his displeasure for not having accompanied him to Tabuk. He asked family members what they thought he should say, but in his heart he knew the right thing to do would be to tell the truth.

Now that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had returned he went to the Mosque and offered his customary two units of prayer before receiving people. There were about eighty men who had not taken part in the campaign and one by one they approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as he sat in the Mosque to offer their excuse. He accepted their excuses, renewed their oath of allegiance and supplicated to Allah for their forgiveness, committing to Allah whatever they had in their mind.

A TIME OF TRUTH

When Ka'b's turn came, he was so ashamed that he felt sick inside. He greeted the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who smiled, but, his displeasure was apparent upon his face. He asked Ka'b to come forward, so he approached and sat down before him, then inquired what had kept him from accompanying them, then asked whether perhaps it had been because he had not purchased a ride.

The feeling of shame and sickness increased as Ka'b told him that if the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been another person he would have attempted to offer a plausible excuse, however, he told him that he knew in his heart that if he were to do so, Allah would cause him to be displeased with him over some other matter. So Ka'b told him of his hope that if he told the truth, even though he knew it would earn his displeasure, that Allah would be merciful toward him. So Ka'b told him that he had absolutely no excuse at all.

Upon hearing this the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said to those present, "This one has told the truth." Then he looked at him and said, "Leave us now until Allah decides your case."

Sadly, Ka'b got up and made his way out of the Mosque with his head hanging down in shame and regret. Some of the Salimah tribesmen followed him out of the Mosque saying, "We have never known you to sin like this before!" Others said, "Why didn't you

make up an excuse as the others did and ask the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to supplicate for forgiveness for you?" They kept pestering and rebuking him so much that at one point he was almost about to return and offer an excuse, but he did not.

Ka'b asked if there had been anyone else that had done likewise and offered no excuse. His companions told him that there were two others, Murarah, and Hilal. Ka'b knew these to be good Muslims and that they had been among those that fought at Badr, so he knew he had done the right thing by telling the truth.

Soon after, people who had known the three started to avoid them, so that they felt as if they were strangers in a foreign land. Their guilt for disobeying the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was to lay heavily upon them, and continue to do so for fifty days.

Murarah and Hilal shut themselves away in their homes in misery, weeping bitterly. As for Ka'b, he was younger than the other two and would go to the Mosque to offer his prayer even though everyone avoided him.

In Ka'b's anxiousness to receive even the remotest amount of acknowledgement from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), he would wait until everyone had left the Mosque after the prayer had ended and then go to greet him. He hoped that perhaps he might see his lips move, indicating a response to his greetings. Sometimes, when he was offering a voluntary prayer, he noticed the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) glance in his direction, but whenever he looked up, he looked away from him.

A feeling of great pain, loneliness and deep regret accompanied all three. Ka'b's suffering increased still further when, one day, as he passed by the garden of his dearest cousin, Abu Katadhi, he decided to climb over the garden wall to see if he was there. Abu Katadhi was in the garden so he greeted him, but he did not return the greeting. In desperation, Ka'b said, "Don't you know I love you in the Name of Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)?" But Abu Katadhi just looked at him and said, "Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) know best." When Ka'b heard this he could not restrain his tears as he wept bitterly and returned home.

THE LETTER FROM KING GHASSAN

The following day when Ka'b was in the market place, he heard a Bedouin from Syria, who had come to sell some grain, making inquiries about him. The people in the market place directed him to Ka'b whereupon he handed him a letter from King Ghassan, the letter read, "We have heard your master has treated you unjustly, Allah has not made you to be humiliated. So come to us and we will treat you in a manner that befits you." Having read the letter, Ka'b thought to himself, this is yet another trial from Allah, so he threw the letter into an oven.

THE PASSAGE OF FORTY DAYS

Forty days had now passed without any Revelation being sent down concerning the three, when a messenger from the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) came to him telling him that from now on he must not associate with his wife. Ka'b asked whether Hilal and Murarah had received similar messages and was told that they had. He wondered if the message meant he should divorce his wife, so he asked the

messenger if that was what it meant, but he told him it did not, so he told his wife to go and stay with her parents.

In the meantime, Hilal's wife had gone to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to intercede for her husband. She told him that the only reason she had come was because Hilal was old and incapable of taking care of himself, so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), in his mercy, permitted her to stay and look after him.

GOOD NEWS

Nine more days of isolation and heaviness of heart were yet to pass and the world seemed to close in upon the three and become narrow. Then, on the morning of the fiftieth day, as Ka'b was sitting by himself he heard a shout ring out from the top of Mount Salalah. He listened hard as the voice cried out, "Ka'b, Malik's son, good news!" Ka'b fell prostrate in gratitude, as he knew that relief had come at last.

Only a few moments before, after the Dawn prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed the congregation that Allah, in His Mercy had accepted their repentance, whereupon several people rushed to bring them the good news. However, in his anxiousness to be the first to convey the good news, a tribesman from the Aslam had raced to the top of the mountain to call to Ka'b before those on horseback had a chance to reach him.

Soon after, a man riding a horse arrived and confirmed the good news. Ka'b was so grateful that he gave him all his clothes and had to borrow something to wear to go and greet the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). On his way to the Mosque people rushed to greet him saying, "Blessed is the acceptance of Allah; Allah has accepted your repentance!"

Ka'b went directly to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in the Mosque to greet him and with a voice full of happiness he said, "Be happy with this, the best of days since your mother gave birth to you." Ka'b asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), is this from Allah?" whereupon, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whose face shone like a moon as it always did when he was pleased, confirmed that it was so.

Ka'b was ecstatic and wished to complete his repentance and wanted to give away everything he owned in charity, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him to keep a portion of it, so he kept a piece of land in Khybar.

The Revelation that conveyed news of the forgiveness of Ka'b and his companions reads:

"In the hour of adversity, Allah turned (in mercy) to the Prophet, the Emigrants (of Mecca) and the Supporters (of Medina), who followed him when some of their hearts were about to swerve away. He turned to them, indeed, He is Gentle, the Most Merciful. And to the three who were left behind, until the earth became narrow with all its vastness, and their souls became narrow for them, they knew there was no shelter from Allah except in Him. Then He turned to them (in mercy) so that they might also turn (in repentance).

Allah is the Turner, the Most Merciful.
Believers, fear Allah and stand with the truthful."
Koran 9:117 - 119

Concerning the hypocrites who offered false excuses, Allah sent down the following verses:

"When you return to them, they will swear to you by Allah that you might turn aside from them.
Let them alone, they are unclean.
Gehenna (Hell) shall be their refuge, the recompense for their earnings.
They will swear to you in order to please you.
But if you will be pleased with them,
Allah will not be pleased with the evildoing nation."
Koran 9:95 - 96

CHAPTER 126 THE DELEGATION FROM TA'IF

With the expansion of the Islamic State, the Thakif had become isolated in what they had deemed to be their stronghold of Ta'if. It had become virtually impossible for them to send caravans out to trade as Malik, their former commander at Hunain, together with others would attack their caravans and confiscate their merchandise.

Such was their plight that they were no longer able to send their flocks to graze outside the city walls as they feared Malik's men would seize them and were in fear of his threat to put them to death if they were caught and refused to renounce their gods.

Inside the walled city, things deteriorated to such an extent that it was decided that they would send a deputation to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying that they would accept Islam and ask for a guarantee that their kinsmen and flocks would be safe.

THE THAKIF DEPUTATION

It was the middle of Ramadan when the deputation reached Medina. A tent was erected for them not far from the Mosque and they were treated with Islamic courtesy and hospitality.

NO COMPROMISE IN FAITH AND PRAYER.

When they met the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) they presented their proposal to him, however, they added to their original intention permission for the temple to al lat to remain standing for a further three years. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) refused their request they bargained for two years, then one, and downwards until they reached one month, but the matter was completely unacceptable to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). Having failed at this, they then pleaded with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he should not compel them to destroy their idols but he refused and when they asked permission not to offer the five obligatory daily prayers, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "There is no good in a religion that has no obligatory prayer." Eventually the Thakif accepted the terms and reluctantly agreed to abide by them, and Mughirah, the

nephew of Urwah, and Abu Sufyan who was in Mecca at that time, was ordered to return with them and destroy the idol of al lat together with its temple.

THE DESTRUCTION OF THE TEMPLE OF AL LAT

The deputation from Ta'if entered Islam and joined the Muslims in the remaining days of the fast. At the end of Ramadan, Mughirah, together with his tribesmen set out for Ta'if with the deputation. When they reached Mecca, Abu Sufyan joined them and together they proceeded onto Ta'if. Upon reaching Ta'if, Mughirah destroyed the idol of al lat whilst his tribesmen stood guard in readiness to protect him. However, there was no resistance except for the weeping of some women.

ABU AMIR AND WAHSHI

Amongst the residents of Ta'if were two men who were not from the tribe of Thakif but had sought refuge with them. One was Hanzalah's father, Abu Amir, and the other Wahshi, the former Abyssinian slave who had gained his freedom at Badr when he killed Hamza.

Now that Ta'if had surrendered there was nothing else for them to do but leave their haven. Abu Amir fled to Syria where he died, but Wahshi learned from the Thakif that if he embraced Islam, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would forgive him and his life would no longer be in jeopardy. Upon hearing this news, he left Ta'if for Medina to embrace Islam.

When Wahshi reached Medina he went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to declare his Islam, however, before he could pledge his allegiance one of the Companions recognized him and drew the attention of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to his presence. In spite of the sad remembrance of Hamza's brutal martyrdom, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) compassionately welcomed Wahshi and Wahshi embraced Islam. Then he turned to his Companion and told him, "Leave him, one man's Islam is dearer to me than the killing of a thousand unbelievers."

SUBTLE RESISTANCE

As one might suspect, there were among those who newly professed Islam, some who had done so with reluctance. One such person was a man named Dirar who set about building his own mosque to attract those of similar inclination to worship there. To hide his hypocrisy Dirar fabricated the excuse that he had built the Mosque for those too ill or weak to attend the prayers at the Prophet's Mosque and had even gone so far as to invite the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), before he left for Tabuk, to pray there so as to consecrate it to Allah. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) declined and upon his return journey from Tabuk he ordered the mosque to be burned down.

Allah speaks of the mosque and hypocrites in the Koran saying:

"And there are those who have taken a mosque to cause harm, disbelief, and to divide the believers, and as a place of ambush for those who fought Allah and His Messenger before. They swear, 'We desired nothing but good' but Allah bears witness that they are liars. You shall never stand there. A mosque founded upon piety from the first day is worthier for you to stand in. In it are men who love to purify themselves. Allah loves those who purify themselves.

CHAPTER 127 THE YEAR OF DEPUTATIONS

It was now nine years since the Prophet's migration and it wasn't long after the Thakif's surrender that other tribes, from all the corners of Arabia, sent their representatives to Medina; some to embrace Islam, whilst some of the People of the Book preferred to remain as they were under the protection of the Islamic State. There were so many deputations in that the year that it was often referred to as the "Year of Deputations".

When a deputation arrived from Yemen, they brought with them letters from Himyarite princes proclaiming their acceptance of Islam. The news was pleasing to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) who replied with the best of greetings to the letters and spoke of their new Islamic obligations, and asked them to treat the envoys he would send them well. He also told them, in accordance with the Holy Koran, he would also send his Companions to collect the obligatory lunar yearly tax from the Muslims and the poll-tax from the People of the Book with the message they would be protected by Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

AMIR, TUFAYL'S SON

Amir, Tufayl's son had become the chieftain of the tribe of Amir despite his disagreeable personality. It was he, who some time before, had initiated the massacre of the Muslims at Bir Maunah, but now his tribe put pressure on him to go to Medina and tell the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that they accepted Islam.

Amir arrived in Medina full of his own importance and told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that in return for his Islam he wanted to be made his successor. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) politely replied that it was not to be so, neither for himself nor his people. Arrogantly, Amir demanded that if he could not be his successor then he wanted to be the chieftain of the Bedouins, and would leave what he termed "the villagers" to him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) refused but told him that he would entrust him with the cavalry, saying, "You are an excellent horseman." Amir took it as an insult and demanded, "Am I to have nothing!" and as he turned to leave he said, "I will fill the land with both cavalry and soldiers against you!"

After Amir left, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) supplicated saying, "O Allah, guide the tribe of Amir, and rid the Islam of Amir, son of Tufayl." Before Amir could reach home, he was stricken by an abscess that began to fester and from which he subsequently died. It did not matter to the tribesmen that Amir's personal demands had not been met, they were set upon an alliance and dispatched a second deputation and all was well.

THE DEPUTATION FROM YAMAMAH

Amongst the many deputations was one from the Christian tribe of Hanifa in Yamamah, whose land bordered the Najd. The Hanifa sent their delegation to Medina to tell the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) of their wish to embrace Islam and they were welcomed with open arms into the fold of Islam.

THE COLLECTION OF THE OBLIGATORY CHARITY AND POLL-TAX

After Ramadan, when the payment of the zakat known to us as the obligatory charity, was due, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) appointed ibn Al Lutbiyyah from the tribe of Azd to be its collector. Upon his return he entered the Mosque with the obligatory charity, and laid it before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying as he pointed, "I have collected this and this for the obligatory charity." However, referring to some other items he told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that they were given to him as gifts.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) ascended the pulpit, praised Allah, then said, "I appointed a man from among you to carry out one of the obligations Allah has entrusted to me. He has returned and said, 'This is the zakat, and this has been given to me as a gift.' If he is telling the truth why didn't he stay in his parent's home so that the gifts came to him there? By Allah, if any one of you takes anything of which he has no right, he will meet Allah on the Day of Judgement carrying that thing. Do not let me see any of you meeting Allah carrying a grunting camel, or a mooing cow, or a bleating goat." Then he raised his arms high in supplication saying thrice, "O Allah, I have conveyed Your Command."

THE WARNING

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Abu Ubadah, Jarrah's son to Bahrain to collect the poll-tax that had become due. He returned to Medina late one night but it was not long before the news of his return became known.

The next morning after the prayer some of the Ansar went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and he smiled saying, "I think you have heard that Abu Ubadah has returned from Bahrain with something." Whereupon they replied, "This is so, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to them saying, "Be happy, and hope for that which will please you. It is not your poverty that I fear for you, rather, it is that the world is laid before you as it was to those before you, and you will compete as they competed, then, it will destroy you as it destroyed them."

CHAPTER 128

THE FIRST PILGRIMAGE AFTER THE OPENING OF MECCA

The time of the pilgrimage to Mecca was fast approaching. When it was time to leave three hundred pilgrims set out for Medina under the leadership of Abu Bakr. Shortly after they had left the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received another Revelation. The Revelation referred to both believers and unbelievers for Allah had made it known:

"Believers, the idolaters are unclean.

Do not let them approach the Sacred Mosque after this year.

If you fear poverty, Allah, if He wills, will enrich you through His bounty.

He is Knowing, Wise.

Fight those who neither believe in Allah nor the Last Day,

who do not forbid what Allah and His Messenger have forbidden

and do not embrace the religion of the truth,

being among those who have been given the Book (Bible and the Torah),

until they pay tribute out of hand and have been humiliated."
Koran 9:28–29

"A proclamation from Allah and His Messenger,
to the people on the day of the Greater Pilgrimage:
'Allah rejects, and His Messenger (rejects), the idolaters.
So if you repent, that will be better for you; but if you turn your backs,
know that you cannot frustrate Allah.
And give good tidings to the unbelievers of a painful punishment,
except those idolaters who have fully honored their treaties with you
and aided none against you. With these fulfill your covenant till their term.
Surely, Allah loves the righteous."
Koran 9:3-4

No sooner had the verses been sent down than the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Ali to ride on to Mecca and make the announcement at Mina. He was also instructed to inform the idolaters making their pilgrimage to the House that nudity was not permissible and that year would be the last time they would be permitted to go there.

IMAM ALI FOLLOWED ABU BAKR'S LEADERSHIP ON HAJJ.

When Ali caught up with the Muslims, Abu Bakr invited him to lead the pilgrims but he declined saying that the leadership of the pilgrimage had been given to him.

The pilgrimage was drawing to an end and as the pilgrims prepared to sacrifice their offerings at Mina, Ali recited the Revelation to them. The idolaters were given four months respite to tend to their affairs and it was made known to them that thereafter they would no longer be permitted to enter Mecca and that war could be expected to be waged against them unless they had entered into a treaty with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and abided by it.

The Revelation also spoke of the unbelievers treatment if they sought refuge with them saying:

"If an idolater seeks asylum with you, give him protection
in order that he hears the Word of Allah,
and then convey him to his place of safety,
because they are a nation who do not know."
Koran 9:6

CHAPTER 129 LIFE IN MEDINA

It was now the tenth year after the Migration and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spent the year in Medina. It was a happy time for the Holy family, Abraham had learned to walk and talk, and was a constant source of happiness to the entire family. Hasan and Husain had a little sister who was named after their aunt, Lady Zaynab, and now their mother was expecting another baby.

Abu Bakr's wife had passed away several years before and he had remarried. His new wife's name was the same as his daughter, Asma, and was the sister-in-law of Abbas. They too were also expecting a blessed addition to the family.

THE COMING OF THE CHRISTIANS

As in the previous year, delegations continued to arrive from all over Arabia. The day came when sixty Christians arrived from Najran. At the time of their arrival they were under the rule of the Roman Empire and accustomed to receive handsome gifts from Heraclius in Constantinople. As usual, the Prophet's guests were made welcome and hospitality lavished upon them.

TOLERANCE

When they said they wished to offer their prayer the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) permitted them to say it in the Mosque, and they prayed in an easterly direction, towards Jerusalem.

THE PEOPLE OF PREVIOUS HOLY BOOKS

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the Christians discussed and compared their religions, and the Christians found that there were many things similar to their own, however, when it came to discussing the position of Prophet Jesus, peace be upon him, they disagreed. It was during this time that Allah sent down:

"This, We recite to you of the verses and Wise Remembrance.
Truly, the likeness of Jesus with Allah, is as the likeness of Adam.
He created him from dust then He said to him 'Be' and he was.
The truth is from your Lord, therefore, do not be among the doubters.
Those who dispute with you concerning him
after the knowledge has come to you, say,
'Come, let us gather our sons and your sons,
our womenfolk and your womenfolk, ourselves and yourselves.
Then let us humbly pray, so lay the curse of Allah upon the ones who lie.'
This is indeed the truthful narration.
There is no god except Allah.
It is Allah who is the Almighty, the Wise.
If they turn away, Allah knows the evildoers.
(These verses were revealed prior to the new Revelation)

Say, 'People of the Book, let us come to a common word
between us and you that we will worship none except Allah,
that we will associate none with Him,
and that none of us take others as lords besides Allah.'
If they turn back say, 'Bear witness that we are Muslims.
People of the Book, why do you dispute about Abraham
when both the Torah and the Gospel were not sent down till after him?
Have you no sense?
Indeed, you have disputed about that which you have knowledge.
Why then dispute about that of which you have no knowledge?
Allah knows but you do not know.
No, Abraham was neither a Jew nor a Nazarene.
He was of pure faith, a submitter (Muslim).
He was never of the idolaters.

Surely, the people who are nearest to Abraham are those who follow him,
 and this Prophet (Muhammad), and those who believe.
 Allah is the Guardian of the believers.
 Some of the People of the Book wish to make you go astray,
 but they lead none astray except themselves, though they do not sense it.
 People of the Book!
 Why do you disbelieve the verses of Allah while you are witness?
 People of the Book!
 Why do you confound truth with falsehood, and knowingly hide the truth?"
 Koran 3:58-71

After the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) finished his recitation he invited the Christians to sit down with him and his family. The Christians said they needed time to think and returned to their quarters. Their primate, Al Aqib, warned his fellow bishops saying, "You know he is a prophet, and no matter whether a group is small or large, a prophet never lays a curse on a people and they survive thereafter."

The next day when they returned, they found Ali, Lady Fatima and their two sons were with the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) and knew what he was about to ask them as he covered them with the cloak he was wearing. The Christians declined to take part in invoking the curse of Allah upon those who lie, and asked for a treaty to be drawn up between them. In return for the payment of a tax, they were given the protection of the Islamic State, for not only their persons, but also their churches and wealth.

LIKENESS IN RELIGIONS

Although the preceding verses begin with a direct challenge to the Christians, they also address the Jews.

The verses also speak of religion of Prophet Abraham - who was neither a Jew or a Christian - and of whom both religions claim to follow, as *not* being an idolater, rather, he was he was a man of pure faith, the worshipper of Allah, alone, the One and only Creator.

Upon taking a closer look at the religions of Judaism, Christianity and the pagan religion of the Koraysh, one notices a common thread running between them.

The Koraysh worshipped and associated in Al-Lat, Al Manat and Al-Uzza with Allah. The Jews associated and worshipped Ezra, claiming he was the son of Allah. The Christians worshipped and associated Jesus, claiming he was His son. As a point of interest, even up until today, in the Arabic Bible, Christians choose to use the word "Allah", which is the pronoun for the Creator rather than the word "illah" which is Arabic word for God.

"The Jews say Ezra is the son of Allah,
 while the Christians say the Messiah is the son of Allah.
 Such are their assertions, by which they imitate those who disbelieved before.
 Allah fights them! How perverted they are!
 They take their rabbis and monks as lords besides Allah,
 and the Messiah, son of Mary,
 though they were ordered to worship but One God,

there is no god except He. Exalted is He above that they associate with Him!"
Koran 9:30-31

The prophets sent to the Jews and the Christians warned their followers not to associate anything or anyone with Allah. Therefore, the Jews and Christians are held more blameworthy than the pagan Koraysh, as the Koraysh had neither received a Book, nor yet Divine Guidance with which to follow.

The description of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was known to both Jew and Christian alike, however, the Koran records the fact that they disobediently tampered with their Holy Books thus preventing the truth from becoming known. So it is not surprising, that the Jews, through racial pride and disobedience to Allah, rejected Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) on account of his not being of their race. Had the Christians been faithful to the book they attributed to Jesus, then, they would, without doubt, accepted the challenge "... then let us humbly pray, so lay curse of Allah upon the ones who lie" but they knew the truth and refused to take the litmus test.

CHAPTER 130

A TIME OF GREAT SORROW

Abraham, the Prophet's son, was very young and had not had enough time to establish an immune system in his precious little body. With the increase in Medina's population, and the comings and goings of so very many people also came disease.

One day Abraham was stricken with an illness from which he was never to recover. Great sadness descended upon Medina when his condition was made known and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stayed by his side as often and as long as he could. As Abraham grew weaker, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew it would not be long until the angels took away his darling little soul and with tender, loving care he held him close to him in his arms and tear drops started to fall as Abraham drifted gently away.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) could not withhold his sadness and wept openly for his son, and as he did Abdur Rahman, Awwf's son, who had misunderstood the extent to which one is permitted to weep, was concerned by the Prophet's weeping and gently asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), is this what you have forbidden. If the Muslims see you weeping, they too will weep." Tears continued to flow from the Prophet's eyes and when at last he could speak he said, "This kind is not forbidden, these are tears of tenderness and mercy, and he who is not merciful shall be shown no mercy." Then, addressing his son he said, "O Abraham, if it were not for the certainty of reunion, and that this is a path we must all walk, and that the last of us shall overtake the first, indeed, we would grieve for you with even greater sorrow. We are deeply stricken with sorrow for you, the eye weeps and the heart grieves, nor yet are we doing anything which would be offensive before our Lord."

Lady Maryam was deeply saddened by the loss of her little son and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke gently to her with words of reassurance that comforted her as he told her that their son was in Paradise. After a while the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left and returned with Abbas and Fadl. Fadl washed the tiny, delicate

little body and shrouded it whilst the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his uncle gazed on in sadness.

It was time to lay the little darling to rest and a tiny grave was dug for him in the cemetery. After the funeral prayer had been said, his tiny bier was taken to the cemetery where the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) prayed for him again, and Osama and Fadl lowered him gently into his grave. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) remained at his graveside after it had been covered with earth and asked for some water to be brought to him, which he then sprinkled over the grave. The earth covering the grave was somewhat uneven whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "When you do something, do it as perfectly as possible," and smoothed it over with his blessed hand saying, "It does neither harm nor good, but it relieves those whose soul is afflicted."

A few days later there was an eclipse of the sun, and people began to attribute it to the Prophet's loss. But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them it was not so saying, "The sun and moon are two signs of Allah. Their light is not dimmed on account of anyone's death. When you see them eclipsed, you should pray until they return."

THE SELLING OF ARMS

To many it seemed that the time of hostilities was over and word spread among throughout the City that jihad had been suspended. Now that Mecca had been restored for the worship of Allah; the Romans no longer appeared to be a threat, and delegations journeyed to Medina in readiness to ally themselves to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), they thought there was no need to retain their arms so they began to sell them.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of their actions he forbade them to disarm saying, "Until after the coming of the anti-Christ a band of my people will not cease to fight for the truth. If you knew what I knew you would laugh but a little and weep a lot." He continued to warn saying, "No time will come upon you that is not followed by one that is worse." Then, referring to the Jews, Nazarenes and Christians, and the corruption of their adherence to the injunctions entrusted to them by their prophets he warned still further, "Some of you (Muslims) will follow those who went before, span by span, cubit by cubit, until if they went down the hole of a poisonous reptile you would follow after them."

CHAPTER 131 A TIME TO LEARN

Such was the wisdom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that he formed a committee of scribes, who, from the very beginning were instructed to write down only the chapters and verses of the Koran, which were then stored in Lady Ayesha's apartment.

The Koranic text was written upon any media at hand, sometimes upon parchment, at other times upon bones and so on. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was vigilant in reviewing the written text and upon receiving a new verse or chapter he would also instruct his scribes as to its place within the Holy Book and each year the

Angel Gabriel would come to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and recite the entire Koran to him.

THE KORANIC SCRIBES

The Koranic scribes were strictly forbidden to write down his prophetic sayings "hadiths", and so through the Prophet's wisdom there has never, ever been any confusion whatsoever as to that which belongs to the text of the Koran and that belonging to his sayings. In addition to the writing down of the Holy Koran, literally thousands of Companions learned to recite the entire Holy Koran by heart and taught it to the next generation.

If a literate captive was willing to teach ten Muslims how to read and write, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decreed that the captive was automatically released after having accomplished his teaching.

Even in this secular century one finds many Muslims memorizing the Holy Koran and then teaching it to the next generation. This tradition is indeed a great blessing as one reflects upon the fact that Muslims in this day and age are approximately thirty-five generations away from its revelation.

PROPHETIC SAYINGS - HADITHS

Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) never presumed to speak upon religious affairs without first having been informed by the Angel Gabriel, thereby fulfilling the prophecy of Jesus that spoke of a prophet yet to come who would not speak from himself, but only from the Words of Allah. Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his followers that Allah had given him, besides the Holy Koran, two-thirds more in its understanding, which constitute his "hadith".

The hadiths, prophetic sayings, were recorded by other Companions as well as being committed to memory then transmitted from one pious generation to another with the name of each narrator recorded up until the first narrator who started his narration with the words, "Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said". It is through this method of transmission that we have been blessed today, after the passage of over fourteen hundred years, to have a direct link to the knowledge taught by Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

WARNING

It is essential that Islamic knowledge is learned from a Sunni pious, knowledgeable shaykh and not someone who professes the flawed, controversial Wahabi doctrine or is a self proclaimed "salafi" shaykh. Failure to follow pious, knowledgeable, shaykhs gives rise to serious misunderstandings and interruptions that result in such events as the tragedy of September 11, 2001.

We must also heed the warning that we must be careful from whom we take Islamic knowledge because satan, the stoned and cursed, was knowledgeable. Knowledge, when it falls into unscrupulous, misguided hands, can be manipulated and used to lead from the Straight Path.

We must also be aware that satan, the stoned and cursed, uses his knowledge to pervert and trick people away from the true guidance of Prophet Muhammad (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam), the result is unhappiness in this life and even greater unhappiness in the life of the Hereafter.

An example of satan's guile is illustrated in a story Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions. One day satan, the stoned and cursed came to Prophet Jesus, peace be upon him, and said, "Say, there is no god except Allah!" Prophet Jesus replied, "You have told the truth, but, I will not say it after you."

EDUCATION

After the dawn and evening prayers had been offered, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would, much to the delight of his followers, instruct them upon aspects of their daily lives and elaborate upon the meaning of verses and chapters of the Koran. He would also tell them of the most beautiful Names of Allah, and inform them how they might come closer to Him.

SELECTIONS FROM IMAM NAWAWI'S COLLECTION OF HADITH "THE GARDEN OF THE GOOD PEOPLE" AND OTHER AUTHENTIC REFERENCES

The following are just a taste of the Prophet's sayings on a few of the many topics upon which he spoke.. For ease of reading the sayings have been translated in a style familiar to the English reader.

For those wishing to read the verbatim accounts of the sayings we refer them to the Arabic edition of the references of Bukhari and Muslim as well as that of the great work of Imam Nawawi, which is better suited for the masses.

KNOWLEDGE AND GUIDANCE

One day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to his Companions concerning the guidance and knowledge he had been given and its effect saying, "It can be compared to rain which falls upon the land. Part of the land is good and fertile; the dry herbage turns green and a considerable amount of fresh herbage is produced. Another part is dry but stores water and with it Allah benefits people; they drink from it and use it to cultivate. Another piece of land is barren, a waste-land which neither retains water nor produces fresh herbage. Such are the cases of those who understand the religion sent down by Allah and benefit from that which Allah has sent to me, studying and teaching it. There are those who do not raise their heads to gain religious knowledge, nor do they accept the guidance with which I have been sent."

THE MERCY OF ALLAH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions, "When Allah created His creation, He wrote in a Book which is with Him above the Throne: 'My Mercy surpasses My Anger.'"

He also told them, "With Allah are a hundred (degrees) of mercy. He gave one of these (degrees) to the jinn, humans, animals, and insects which they use among their species as kindness. With it the savage beast is kind to its young. The remaining ninety-nine (degrees) Allah reserves for Himself to bestow upon His worshipers on the Day of Resurrection."

Allah told His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to say, "Say to My worshipers who wasted a lot upon themselves: 'Do not be disappointed in the Mercy of Allah. Indeed, Allah forgives all sins, He is indeed, All-forgiving, All-merciful.'"

THE REMEMBRANCE OF ALLAH

Abu Hurayrah heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tell his Companions, "With Allah are groups of angels that circulate in the streets searching for people remembering Allah. When they find those people remembering Allah, the Most Exalted, they call to one another saying, 'Come to what you want!' and cover them with their wings up to the sky."

Then they return to their Lord who asks -- and He is the Most Knowledgeable. 'What were My worshipers saying?' They report. 'They were pronouncing Your exaltations, magnifying, praising and glorifying You.' Then, He, Allah, the Most High inquires, 'Have they seen Me?' And they answer, 'By Allah, no, they have not seen You.' Then Allah the Exalted inquires, 'What if they saw Me?' They answer, 'If they saw You they would be more diligent in Your worship and Your Exaltation and in proclaiming Your Holiness.'

Then He, the Mighty, the Glorified inquires, 'What do they ask of Me.' They answer. 'They ask of You Paradise.' Allah inquires, 'Have they seen it?' They answer, 'By Allah, no, they have not seen it.' Then Allah inquires, 'What if they saw it.' They answer, 'If they saw it they would desire it more and seek its yearning more.'

Then Allah inquires, 'From what do they seek protection?' They answer, 'They seek protection from the Fire.' And He inquires, 'Have they seen it?' They answer, 'No, by Allah, they have not seen it.' Allah inquires, 'What if they saw it?' The angels answer, 'If they saw it they would run from it more often and fear it more.'

Then Allah says, 'I call you to witness that I forgive them.' One of the angels then says, 'Among them was so and so, he is not one of them. He came to You for some purpose of his own.' Then Allah says, 'They were sitting together, therefore, even their associate will not go unrewarded.'"

CLOSENESS TO ALLAH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) also told his Companions that Allah said, "Whosoever comes close to Me by the span of a hand, I come close to him by an arms length, and whosoever comes close to Me by an arm, I come close to him by a mile. And, whosoever comes to Me walking, I come to him with haste. Whosoever meets Me with the earth full of sins, while he does not associate anything with Me, I will meet him with the like of it of forgiveness."

THE FORGIVENESS OF ALLAH

He also said, "Indeed, Allah brings the believer close, covers and conceals him from people and lets him admit his sins. He says, 'Do you know such sin, do you know such sin?' He replies, 'Yes, my Lord, until he has admitted all his sins, and sees himself as being lost. Then, Allah says, 'I have covered them in the world, and I have forgiven them you this day. Then he is given his Book of Merit in his right hand. As for the unbeliever and the hypocrite, all the witnesses say, 'Indeed those who lied about their Lord, isn't the curse of Allah upon the harmdoers?'"

SCIENTIFIC FACTS FOR CENTURIES STILL TO COME

With the knowledge given to him, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) spoke upon many scientific topics which were completely unknown during his time and lay undiscovered for many centuries after he passed away.

This knowledge was given to him by Allah to serve as proof of his prophethood to those in our own era and beyond. It was absolutely impossible for even the most learned people of his time to have knowledge of such things.

Allah tells us:

"He creates you in your mothers' womb,
creation after creation, in three (stages of) darkness."

Koran 39:6

This verse refers to the three amniotic sacks of fluid surrounding the fetus.

One day, as ibn Masood relates, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) expounded the mystery of the growth of the fetus in the womb saying, "For each and every one of you, his creation is determined when he is in his mother's womb. Forty days as a drop, then it becomes a clot for the same (number of days). After, it becomes like a chewed (piece of flesh) for the same (number of days), then an angel is sent who breathes into it its soul, then he is ordered with four words; his provision, life span, deeds and whether or not he is unfortunate or happy."

It was only in recent centuries that physicians learned of the progress of the fetus within the womb and the duration of each stage as well as the discovery of the three surrounding amniotic sacks of fluid.

Another scientific example is that of the fly. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told his Companions that under each of its two wings is a sack of fluid; under one there is a poison, and under the other is its antidote. This scientific fact was only discovered last century.

THE IMPORTANCE OF ONE'S INTENTION

Omar heard Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) telling his Companions of the importance of one's intention. He said, "Indeed, deeds are (judged) by the intention, and there is for everyone that which he intended. If one's migration is to Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), then one's migration is to Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). If one's migration is to seek the world, then one's migration is for that. If a man migrates for the sake of a woman and marries her, then his migration is for that which he migrated."

EXALTING ALLAH

The Companions always vied with one another in good deeds with the knowledge that they would be well rewarded in the Hereafter, however, the poor among them were unable to spend very much in the cause of Allah and this concerned them so they went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) saying, "The wealthy will achieve higher ranks and lasting bounties," whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked what caused them to say this. They answered, "They pray as we do and keep the fast as we do, but they spend in charity whereas we are unable, and they free those in their care whereas we are unable." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told them, "Shall I inform you of something whereby you will surpass those who are

ahead of you and keep you ahead of those who are behind you, and no one will surpass you unless he does what you do?" Anxiously the Companions replied, "Indeed, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam)!" So he told them, "Say 'Subhan-Allah, thirty-three times, Al Hamdu-lillah, thirty-three times and Allahu Akbar thirty-three times after each prayer."

(Subhan-Allah means exalted is Allah, Al Hamdu-lillah means praise be to Allah, Allahu-Akbar means Allah is the Greatest.)

Not long after the Companions returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) saying, "Our wealthy brethren have heard what we are doing and now do the same." "That is the Favor of Allah, He gives it to whomsoever He wills," replied the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam).

FOUR KINDS OF PEOPLE

On another occasion the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) informed his Companions that the world has four kinds of people.

The first is the person whom Allah has favored with wealth and knowledge and is mindful of his duty to his Lord with them. He strengthens the ties of kinship and acknowledges the rights of Allah in them. Such person is in the best position.

The second is the person whom Allah has favored with knowledge but not wealth, and is sincere then says, "Had I possessed wealth I would have done the same as the first." His reward will be the same as the other.

The third is the person whom Allah has favored with wealth but not knowledge, and squanders his wealth in ignorance. This person is the one who is not mindful of his duty to his Lord in respect of the favors he receives, and neither discharges his obligations of family ties, nor yet observes the rights of Allah in it. Such person is in the worst position.

The fourth is the person whom Allah has neither favored with wealth nor knowledge, and says, "If I possessed wealth I would have been like that person." This is his intention - they are both equal in sinfulness.

WHEN DEEDS ARE NOT FOR ALLAH

Abu Hurayrah heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) tell his Companions, "One of the first men to be judged on the Day of Judgement will be one who was martyred. He will be summoned and shown all the bounties which were bestowed upon him. He will recognize them and then asked, 'How did you use them?' He will reply, 'I fought in Your Cause and was martyred.' Then he will be told, 'You lie. You fought so that you might be called a champion, and as such you were known.' Judgement will be passed on him and he will be dragged on his face and thrown into the Fire.

Then a man will be brought who acquired knowledge and studied the Koran. Likewise, he will be shown the bounties bestowed upon him and will recognize them and will be asked, 'How did you use them?' He will reply: 'I acquired knowledge, taught it and studied the Koran to win Your pleasure.' Whereupon he will be told, 'You lie. You acquired knowledge so that you might be called a wise person, a reciter of the Koran

so that you might be called a Qari, and accordingly you were given that title.' Judgement will be passed on him and he will be dragged on his face and thrown into the Fire.

A man will be brought forward on whom Allah bestowed plenty and every kind of wealth. He too will be shown the bounties bestowed on him and will recognize them then asked, 'How did you use them?' He will reply, 'I spent upon every one of the causes You approve of and left none in order to win Your pleasure.' Then he will be told, 'You lie, you did all that so that you might be called charitable, and accordingly you were known as such.' Judgement will be passed upon him and he will be dragged on his face and thrown into the Fire.

THE SUPPLICATIONS OF THE PROPHET

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was often asked how to supplicate to Allah, and as such he taught his followers many supplications for different circumstances. One day Abu Umamah, who was deeply troubled, came to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying that he was unable to remember all the different supplications so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, "Shall I tell you something which is the total of all of them? Supplicate: 'O Allah, I beseech You for all the good that Your Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) has beseeched of You, and I seek Your Protection from all the evil against which Your Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) has sought of You. You are the One to rely upon, and from You is sent. There is no might nor power except through Allah.'"

PARADISE AND HELL

Allah has promised that as long as a person believes that Allah is One and has no partners and that Muhammad is His Prophet and Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and believes in all His prophets and messengers they will be saved from the Fire of Hell.

Believers that commit punishable major sins such as adultery will be punished unless Allah in His Mercy forgives him/her. In the case of murder Allah may forgive the murderer if the murdered person forgives his/her murderer.

Believers subjected to Hell will however be released, after a very long period of time, on account of their belief, whereas unbelievers will remain in Hell for all eternity. As for those who believed and then committed suicide, suicide is a state of disbelief and as such they die as an unbeliever.

THE INHABITANTS OF PARADISE

One day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions, "When the inhabitants of Paradise enter a herald will announce, 'You will live forever and will not die. You will be in good health and never become ill. You will be young and never grow old and you will be in comfort and never encounter discomfort.'"

HOW TO GET TO PARADISE

Ubadah, Samit's son heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) say, "Whosoever bears witness that there is no god except Allah, the One, without an associate, that Muhammad is His worshipper and Messenger, that Jesus is the worshiper and Messenger of Allah, and His Word (Be) that He conveyed to Mary and a spirit from

Him, that Paradise is a truth, that the Fire is a truth, will be admitted by Allah to Paradise no matter what they did."

PARADISE AND HELL

Anas recorded that during one of the Prophet's sermons he heard him say, "If you knew what I know, you would laugh a little and weep a lot, whereupon the congregation covered their faces and sobbed. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "Paradise and Hell have been shown to me. I have never seen anything so good or so evil like them until this day."

THE PROPHETS AND THEIR NATIONS

Ibn Abbas related that one day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that a prophet had been shown to him in a vision who had only a small group of people with him. Then he was shown other prophets some of whom had just one or two followers, whereas others had none at all. Then, suddenly he saw a huge assembly and thought it was his nation, but he was informed, "This is Moses and his nation; look at the horizon." He looked and saw a great multitude, then he was told to look at the other horizon and there also was a great multitude, whereupon he was told, "These are your nation. From them seventy thousand will enter Paradise without being taken to account or suffering."

Thereafter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) went to his room and the Companions began to speculate about those who would enter Paradise without account or suffering. Some said, "Perhaps they are his Companions," others said, "May be they are the ones who were born Muslims and never associated anyone with Allah," and so forth. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned and asked them what they were discussing so they told him. He replied, "They are those who neither made charms, nor amulets, nor did they desire them. They did not believe in omens but trusted their Lord." Then Ukasha, Mohsin's son stood up and requested, "Supplicate to Allah that He makes me one of them." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "You are one of them." Then another stood up and asked the same, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) answered, "Ukasha has beaten you to it, the supplication has been made."

THE COMPANIONSHIP OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) IN PARADISE

One day, Rabia, Ka'b Aslami's son, who attended the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and prepared the water for his ablution, was asked by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "Would you like to ask for something?" Rabia replied, "I would like to ask for your companionship in Paradise." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) inquired, "Is there anything else?" whereupon he replied, "No, that is all." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told him, "Then help me by increasing the number of your prostrations."

THE REWARD OF A SIMPLE GESTURE

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions that he had seen a man who would enter Paradise because he cut down a tree from the side of a road just because it was harmful to Muslims. Allah was thankful for his gesture and forgave him his sins.

RANKS IN PARADISE

On another occasion, Mughirah, Shubah's son heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) telling his Companions, "Prophet Moses asked his Lord, 'Who will be in the lowest rank in Paradise?' He was informed, 'It will be a man who will arrive when the all the dwellers of Paradise have entered Paradise and it will be said to him, 'Enter Paradise.' But he will ask, 'How can I enter, Lord, when everyone has settled in his place and taken his gifts?' Whereupon he will be asked, 'Will you be satisfied if you had a kingdom like the kingdoms of the monarchs of the world?' He will reply, 'I will be content O Lord.' Then he will be told, 'You have such and its like, and its like, and its like.' At the mention of the fifth time he will say, 'O Lord, I am content,' and will be told: 'That is for you and ten times as much again. You will have whatever your soul desires and whatever delights your eyes.' And he will say again, 'O Lord, I am satisfied!'

Then Moses asked, 'Who will have the highest rank in Paradise?' Allah said, 'Those will be the ones whom I exalted with My Own Hands and whose rank I shall attest with My Seal. No eye has seen, no ear has heard and the mind of no man has ever conceived their rank.'"

DWELLING PLACES IN PARADISE

Regarding the houses in Paradise the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions, "A believer will have a tent in Paradise hollowed out from a pearl. Its height will stretch for seventy miles into the heaven. The believer will have his family with him, and he will go about in it and not one of them will see the other."

He also spoke of other residences in Paradise and said that amongst them are one thousand castles each made from pearl and its earth has the aroma of musk;

THE RIVER AND POOL OF PARADISE IN THE GARDEN

One day, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gave his Companions a glimpse of the River in Paradise called Al Kawthar and said, "When I was traveling through the Garden a river appeared before me. Its banks were domes of pearl and I asked Gabriel what it was." Gabriel replied, "This is Kawthar which Allah has given you." Then he struck the earth with his hand and brought forth the beautiful aroma of musk.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told Lady Ayesha that the river flows over pearls and rubies and that its water is so sweet that it tastes sweeter than honey and is whiter than snow, and that it flows into a pool, and it is this pool to which his nation will come.

THE DWELLERS OF PARADISE

At another time he told his Companions, "The dwellers of Paradise will look at the mansion of those above them as you gaze at the bright, distant planets upon the eastern and western horizons. Such will be the differences in their ranks." When he was asked if the mansions would be those of the Prophets that no one else would be able to reach he replied, "Yes, but by Him in whose Hands is my soul, there will also be those who believed in Allah and did not belie His Messengers."

A VISION OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Samurah, Jundab's son was among the Companions when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "Last night two people came to me in a vision and said, 'Come with us.' So I accompanied them and we came across a man lying on his back whilst another stood near his head striking it with a stone. No sooner had the stone struck the

person on his head with the stone than it rolled away from him and the striker went after it, picked it up and returned with it. In the meantime the head of the person that had been struck recovered from his injury and the striker hit him again. I asked my two companions, 'Exalted is Allah, who is this?' But they said, 'Proceed, proceed.'

Then we came to another man lying on his back whilst another stood near him with a hooked bar of iron in his hand. He approached him from one side, ripped open his mouth right down to his neck, then he ripped open his nostril down to his neck and gouged out his eye down to his neck. Then he turned to his other side and did the same by which time the first side of the man's face had recovered from its injuries and the punisher returned to the other side and repeated what he had done before. I asked my companions, 'Exalted is Allah, what are these two doing?' But they said, 'Proceed, proceed.'

Then we went on and arrived near a pit that was like an oven out of which came cries. We glanced into it and saw naked men and women who cried out as the flames from below reached them. I asked my companions, 'Exalted is Allah, who are these?' But they said, 'Proceed, proceed.'

Then we proceeded until we arrived at a stream, the water of which was red like blood, and in it there was a man, swimming. On the bank of the stream was another who had gathered many rocks. When the swimmer approached him, he would strike him with a rock that would smash his face and he would start swimming again, and as he approached the bank once more the man on the bank struck him again and smashed his face. I asked my companions, 'Exalted is Allah, who are these two?' But they replied, 'Proceed, proceed.'

So we proceeded until we reached a Garden that was full of spring flowers and in its middle was such a tall man that I was unable to see his head, it was as if it was hidden in the sky. Around him were so many children, the number of which I have never seen before. I asked my companions, 'Exalted is Allah, who are these?' But they said, 'Proceed, proceed.'

After this we arrived at a tree that was so enormous, I have never seen any so big, nor yet so beautiful, and my companions asked me to climb it. We all climbed up and saw a city built from alternate blocks of gold and silver. When we reached the gate of the city we asked for the gate to be opened and it was, so we entered. In it we saw people, half of their bodies were the most beautiful bodies you could ever imagine, yet their other half was the most ugly.

There was a stream flowing through the middle of the city, its water was pure white. My companions said to the people, "Go plunge into the stream." So they did, when they came out their ugliness had vanished and they had become very beautiful.

My two companions then told me, 'This is the Garden of Eden and that is your residence.' I raised my eyes and saw a palace like a white cloud and they repeated, 'This is your residence.' I said to them, 'May Allah bless you both, now let me enter.' But they said, 'Not just yet, but without doubt you will indeed enter it.'

Then I said to my companions, 'Tonight I witnessed many strange things. What are their meanings.' They replied, 'We will tell you now. The first person you saw whose

head was being struck with a stone was the one who committed the Koran to memory, then forgotten it and neglected the obligatory prayers.

The person whose mouth, nostrils and eyes were being ripped open to the neck was one who ran from his home spreading lies which then circulated throughout the world. As for the men and women in the oven they were adulterers and adulteresses.

The man you saw swimming in the stream being stoned was one who earned interest (usury) on his money, and the ugly person near the fire was Malik, the Guardian of Hell.

The very tall man in the Garden was Abraham and the children around him were those who died upright.' At this point a Companion of the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked, 'O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), were any of the children, the children of unbelievers?' He replied, 'Yes, and the children of unbelievers. Those who were half beautiful and half ugly were people who had done both good and bad deeds, and Allah pardoned them.'

THE DEPTHS OF HELL – A FALLING DISTANCE OF SEVENTY LIGHT YEARS

One day when the Companions were with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he heard the sound of something heavy crash and asked, "Do you know what that was?" To which they replied, "Allah, and His Messenger (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) know best." "That was a stone that had been thrown into Hell seventy years ago," he replied, "it kept falling until that moment. It reached the bottom of Hell just now and the sound you heard was when it hit the bottom."

THE LEAST PUNISHMENT IN HELL

Numan, Bashir's son heard Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) say, "The one who is least punished amongst the inhabitants of the Fire will be the one who has two brands of fire under his feet and his brain boils. He will imagine himself to be the most punished person, yet, he will be the least punished among them."

A DEED THAT WILL LET YOU ENTER PARADISE

Muaz asked the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), tell me of a deed which will cause me to enter Paradise and keep me away from the Fire." He answered, "You have asked me about a very weighty matter, but it is easy for one whom Allah makes it easy. Worship Allah but associate nothing with Him. Offer the prayer, pay the obligatory charity, fast the month of Ramadan and make the pilgrimage to the House."

Then he asked, "Shall I inform you of the Gates of Goodness? Fasting is a shield, charity lightens sins as water extinguishes a fire. Similarly, prayer in the middle of the night." Then he recited:

"Whose sides forsake their couches as they supplicate to their Lord in fear and hope; who give in charity of that which We have given them.
No soul knows what pleases the eye is in store for them
as a recompense for what they used to do."
Koran 32:16-17

He continued, "Shall I tell you of the head of the matter and of its pole, and its highest hump?" Muaz replied, 'Certainly, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).' The head of the matter is Islam, its pole are prayers and its highest hump is Jihad in the Cause of Allah," he replied.

Then he asked, "Shall I tell you of that which is the owner of all this." Muaz replied, 'Certainly, O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).' Whereupon he took hold of his tongue and said, "Keep this under control." Then Muaz inquired, 'O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), shall we be called to account in respect of what we say?' "May your mother lose you, people will be thrown face downwards into Hell only because of the harvest of their tongue!" he replied.

THE ENCOMPASSING MERCY OF ALLAH

Some captives were brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and a woman ran frantically in search of her infant. When she found her infant she picked it up, hugged and suckled it. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his Companions, "Could you imagine this woman throwing her child into the Fire?" "Indeed no," replied his Companions. Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "Allah is more merciful towards His worshippers than a mother is to her child."

THE DAY OF RESURRECTION

The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was invited to a meal in which Abu Hurayrah was present and reported that during the meal he spoke of the Day of Resurrection saying, "I will be the Master of all people on the Day of Resurrection. Do you know how?" He continued, "On the Day of Resurrection, Allah will assemble all mankind, the first and the last, on a wide plain so that they will all be visible and able to hear the caller.

On that Day the sun will be brought very near to mankind and they will undergo tremendous suffering and grief, and say among themselves, 'Do you realize what we are in, and what has befallen us? Can you find someone who might intercede for you with your Lord?'

Some will say to the other, 'Adam is your father,' and they will go to him and say, 'O Adam, you are the father of mankind, Allah created you with His own Hands and breathed into you His spirit and commanded the angels to prostrate towards you and let you live in the Garden. Won't you intercede for us with your Lord? Don't you see our condition and the immense suffering that has overtaken us?' Adam will say, 'My Lord is angry today in a way in which He has never been angered before, and He will never be angered like it again. He forbade me to eat from a certain tree but I disobeyed Him. I am afraid for myself, for myself, for myself. Go to someone else, go to Noah.'

So they will go to Noah and say, 'O Noah, you were the first Messenger to the people of the world and Allah called you a grateful worshipper. Look at our condition, see how we suffer! Won't you intercede for us with your Lord?' He will tell them, 'My Lord is angry today in a way in which He has never been angered before, and He will never be angered like it again. I was given one chance to supplicate and I supplicated against my people. I am afraid for myself for myself, for myself. Go to someone else, go to Abraham.'

So they will go to Abraham and say, 'O Abraham, you are the Prophet of Allah, His friend, chosen from the inhabitants of the earth, please intercede for us with your Lord. You can see the predicament we are in!' Abraham will tell them, 'My Lord is angry today in a way in which He has never been angered before, and He will never be angered like it again. I lied three times (this refers to his mocking response to the unbelievers after he destroyed the statues). Myself, myself, myself, therefore go to someone else, go to Moses.'

So they will go to Moses and say, 'O Moses, you are the Messenger of Allah, Allah honored you and favored you with His Message and His Speech above the people, please intercede for us with your Lord! Don't you see our condition?' He will say, 'My Lord is angry today, in a way in which He has never been angered before. I killed a person whom I had not been ordered to kill. I am afraid for myself, for myself for myself, go to someone else, go to Jesus.'

So they will go to Jesus and say to him, 'Jesus, you are the Messenger of Allah and His Word which He conveyed to Mary and a spirit from Him and you talked to people when you were in your cradle, intercede for us with your Lord -- look at our circumstances!' Jesus will reply, 'My Lord is angry today, in a way in which He has never been angered before.' He did not mention his sin but said, 'I am afraid for myself, for myself, for myself, go to someone else, go to Muhammad.'

Then they will come to me and say, 'O Muhammad, you are the Messenger of Allah, and the Seal of the Prophets. Allah has forgiven you all your shortcomings, the first and the last, intercede for us with your Lord. Look at the condition we are in!' Then I will proceed towards the Throne and fall prostrate before my Lord, then Allah will give me knowledge of His Praise and Exaltation, the like of which has never been given to any before me. Then, He will say to me, 'O Muhammad, raise your head and supplicate, you will be given, intercede and your intercession will be accepted.' Whereupon I will raise my head and supplicate, 'My nation, O Lord, my nation. O Lord, my nation, O Lord.' And Allah will say, 'O Muhammad, take into Paradise through its Gate those on the right, those who are not subject to the accounting; the remainder will be admitted along with other people through the various gates of Paradise.'

Then the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) added, "By Him in whose Hands is my life, the distance between two gates of Paradise will be as wide as the distance between Mecca and Hijr, or between Mecca, and Basra, Iraq."

THOSE WHO ENCOURAGE GOOD BUT DO NOT DO IT THEMSELF

Osama, Zaid's son heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) say, "On the Day of Judgement there will be a man brought forward and thrown into the Fire. His intestines will burst from his belly and he will clutch them as he goes round in circles, like a donkey treading a mill. The companions of the Fire will gather around him and say, 'What is this? Didn't you encourage good and forbid evil?' He will reply, 'That is so, I encouraged good, but did not do it, whereas I forbade evil but did it.'"

DEFINITION OF A PAUPER

Abu Hurayrah heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) say, "Do you know who is a pauper?" His Companions replied, "A pauper is one who has nothing, neither money nor property." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) explained, "The pauper among my nation is one who comes on the Day of Judgement with a good

record of prayer, fasting and charity but has abused someone, slandered, stolen the possessions of another, killed or beaten someone. Those who were oppressed will each receive a portion of his good deeds. If his good deeds are insufficient, then their sins will be transferred from them to him, and he will be thrown into the Fire."

SEEK REFUGE WITH ALLAH FROM FOUR THINGS

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) urged his Companions saying, "At the end of your prayer after you have performed the witnessing supplication, you should seek the refuge of Allah from four things by saying, 'O Allah, I seek Your protection from the punishment of Hell, from the punishment of the grave, from the trials of life and death, and from the mischief and trials of the anti-Christ."

THE COMING OF AL MAHDI, JESUS AND THE ANTI-CHRIST

Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was frequently asked about the affairs preceding the end of the world and told his Companions that before the return of Prophet Jesus, Muslims would find themselves in grievous circumstances. However, Allah will not forsake them and will send them a leader to relieve them from their terrible predicament. He told them that his name would be the same as his name -- Muhammad, son of Abdullah -- and that he would be his descendant, then referred to him as Al Mahdi, the Guided Leader.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) also told his Companions that Al Mahdi's time would not come until after the moon had eclipsed on the first night of Ramadan followed by the eclipse of the sun during the middle of the month. Speaking of these unusual happenings, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "And this has never happened before since Allah created the heavens and the earth."

Concerning this advent, it has been reported by ibn Sirin that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "For the people who make the pilgrimage and stand on Arafat without an Imam, a burning desire will come while they are at Minan. The tribes will revolt against each other until their blood flows on Al Aqabah. Then, the best of them will go when they raise the alarm, and they will reach him (Al Mahdi) as his face touches the stone of Ka'ba -- and it appears to me as if he is tearful -- and they will say to him, 'Come to us so that we can give you our allegiance.' But he will reply, "Woe to you, how many promises did you break, and how much blood did you shed!" And he will be pressured to accept their allegiance -- indeed, he is Al Mahdi, (the Guided One) in the earth and Al Mahdi in the heavens."

JESUS, THE MA-S-EE-H VERSUS THE JEWISH MA-S-EE-KH

"Ma-s-ee-h" is the unique Arabic title given to Jesus, the Messiah.

"Ma-s-ee-kh" is the unique Arabic title given to the lying, false messiah, the anti-Christ.

The Jewish people await the coming of the 'Jewish Messiah' and refer to him in Hebrew as the 'Moshiakh'.

Those familiar with the Arabic language will no doubt recall that the Arabic letter 's' is equal to the Hebrew letter 'sh' as in the word sa-la-m and sha-lo-m, both of which mean peace.

Through these examples the reader will easily recognize that the Arabic word

'Ma-s-ee-kh' and the Hebrew word 'Mo-sh-ia-kh' are in fact the same word in these two Semitic languages. Therefore it is apparent that the rabbis not only withhold the signs of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), the end of the world, the truth about the virgin Mary and the Prophet of Allah, Jesus, the Messiah and await the coming of the false messiah.

We recommend you to read Nawawi's "Gardens of Righteousness" and "Jesus, Al Mahdi and the Anti-Christ" translated from the work of Shaykh Abdullah ben Sadek, the late Grand Muhaddith of Morocco, may Allah have mercy upon him, by Shaykh Ahmad Darwish to learn more about the sayings of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) as well as the events preceding the end of the world.

THE APPEARANCE OF THE FALSE MESSIAH

It is during Al Mahdi's leadership that the false-Messiah will appear of whom the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "I caution you about the false-Messiah, and I warn you about him as every Prophet warned his nation. He will come during the time of this nation. I will describe some of his features that other prophets never told their nation. He is one-eyed, and Allah is not one-eyed. Between his eyes is written 'Kafir' (meaning unbeliever) which is read by every believer whether he writes or not."

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "The majority of those who follow him will be Jews, women and Bedouins. The heavens will appear to rain when it does not rain and the ground planted when it is not planted, and he will say to the Bedouins, 'What do you want from me -- haven't I sent the rain of heaven upon you continuously?'"

One morning as Nawwas, Saman's son recalled, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke to them of the coming of the anti-Christ -- the false messiah -- whereupon his Companions became so alarmed they thought he might already be present in a nearby date-palm grove and were very apprehensive.

Later, when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) noticed their unease he asked, "What is troubling you?," whereupon they told him of their concern. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied that it was not that which he feared for them, and told them that if he appeared whilst he was among them, he would be their defender. However, he warned that if he appeared after he was no longer with them they must defend themselves and added, "Allah will be the guardian of every Muslim in my place."

Then, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) elaborated more upon the features of the false-Messiah saying, "He is a young man with coarse hair and has an eye that floats like a grape," then described him as looking similar to Katan's son, Abdul Uzza.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his attentive audience that whosoever encounters the false-Messiah should recite to him, for protection, the opening ten verses of the chapter "Al-Kahf" -- Chapter 18, "The Cave."

In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful.
Praise belongs to Allah who has sent down the Book
to His worshiper (Prophet Muhammad)
and has not made any crookedness in it, unswerving.

To warn of great violence from Him, and to give good tidings to the believers who do good deeds that theirs shall be a goodly wage and they will live for ever therein.
 And it (the Koran) warns those who say, 'Allah has taken a son.' Surely, of this they have no knowledge, neither they nor their fathers; it is a monstrous word that comes from their mouths, they say nothing but a lie, yet perchance, if they do not believe in this tiding, you will consume yourself with grief and follow after them.
 We have appointed all that is on the earth an adornment for it, in order that We try which of them is finest in works.
 We will surely reduce all that is on it to barren dust.
 Or, do you think the companions of the Cave and the tomb stone were a wonder among Our signs? When the youths sought refuge in the Cave, they said, 'Lord give us from Your Mercy and furnish us with rectitude in our affair.'"
 Koran 18:1-10

His Companions asked how long the false messiah would remain on earth to which he replied, "Forty days. One of his days will be like a year, one will be like a month, one will be like a week and the rest of his days will be like yours." The Companions inquired, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), on the day which will be like a year, will it suffice us to observe the prayers of one day?" He answered, "No, you will have to estimate the passage of time."

Then his Companions asked about the speed of the anti-Christ's movements, and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "It will be like a cloud left behind by the wind." The Prophet continued, "He will approach people, inviting them to him and they will believe him. He will command the sky and it will send down rain on the people. He will command the earth and it will produce green herbage for them; livestock will return in the evening with firm humps, full udders, and fattened sides. Then he will come to another people and invite them to obey him, but they will reject his call and he will turn away from them so that they become stricken by drought and famine, then become destitute."

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued to warn his followers saying, "He will pass through deserted places and call on them to bring forth their treasures, and their treasures will follow him like wasps.

He will call a man in the prime of his youth and strike him with a (magical) sword so that he is severed in two. The pieces will be separated from each other, the distance of an arrow's shot, then he will summon him and the youth will respond coming with a cheerful smile upon his face.

During this period, Allah, the Exalted, will send the Messiah, the son of Mary, who will descend near a white minaret to the East of Damascus, wearing two dyed garments of yellow; his hands resting upon the wings of two angels. As he bows his head, droplets of water will fall from it and when he raises it there will be drops like pearls falling from it. Any unbeliever who experiences the fragrance of his breath will die, and his breathe will reach as far as the extent of his sight. He will pursue the anti-Christ and find him at the Gate of Lud where he will slay him.

After this, Jesus (will join forces with Al Mahdi and) come to the people whom Allah has shielded from the anti-Christ. He will wipe away the dust from their faces and inform them of their ranks in Paradise. At that time, Allah, the High will reveal to Jesus, "I have brought out some of My worshipers with whom no one is able to withstand. Therefore lead these, My worshipers, to Mount Tur (Sinai)." Then Allah will raise Gog and Magog and they will be let loose and slide down out of every slope. Their advance groups will pass over Lake Tabariah and consume all its water, and when its rear group pass near it they will say, 'At one time there was water here.'

Jesus, Prophet of Allah, peace be upon him, and his companions will be besieged until a bull's head will appear better to them than a hundred dinars appear to you today. Then Jesus, the Messiah and Prophet of Allah together with his companions will supplicate to Allah, the Exalted and He will create worms in the necks of the people of Gog and Magog which will cause them all to die in the morning like the prey of lions.

After this, Jesus, the Prophet of Allah and his companions will descend from the Mount but will not find even the space of the span of a hand free among the corpses of the adherents of Gog and Magog -- and the stench! Jesus and his companions will supplicate again to Allah, and He will send birds, as large as the necks of camels to carry away the corpses and drop them wherever Allah wills.

After this, Allah, the Mighty, the Glorified, will send down rain whereby every dwelling, no matter whether it is constructed from clay or hair, will be cleansed and become like a mirror. Then, the earth will be commanded to produce its fruits and to return its blessings, so much that a group of people will be sufficed by sharing a single pomegranate, and shelter will be found under the shade of its peel.

Allah will bless the milk of a camel that has just given birth so that it will be enough to suffice a host of people; a cow will suffice a tribe, and the milk of a goat will suffice a branch of a tribe. As they remain in this state of affairs, Allah, the High, will send a pure breeze which will take the Muslims under their armpits whereby the soul of every believer and every Muslim will pass away. After this, only the worst people will be left, who copulate with women openly, unabashed like donkeys -- its is on such people that the Hour will commence."

There are several other hadiths relating to this subject in Imam Nawawi's reference.

A WARNING FOR PRESENT DAY MUSLIMS, THE HORN OF THE DEVIL - WAHABISAM

Muslims from different parts of Arabia traveled to Medina to ask the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to supplicate for blessings upon them and their tribes. One day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was asked to supplicate for blessings upon the Najd, his facial expression changed immediately as he declined saying, "The horn of the devil will appear from the Najd." This was indeed a very grave, serious prophetic warning.

Since the time of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) nothing has ever emerged from the Najd, except the advent of the prophesied Wahabi cult. The Najd remains barren and is even devoid of oil.

The founder of the flourishing, evil cult was a man named Muhammad ibn Abd al-Wahaab who was born in a place called Uyaynah in the Najd. The doctrine taught by ibn Abd al-Wahaab revived the deviant views of the heretic Ahmad ibn Taymiyyah who was born in 1328.

Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left an imperative, clear warning saying, "Beware of the Shaykhu-n-Najdi, since he is satan." The renowned, traditional, Islamic scholars of the Shafii, Hanafi, Maliki and Hanbali schools of jurisprudence denounced ibn Abd Al-Wahaab's flawed preaching, however, he traveled extensively spreading his innovative "bidda" doctrine and was subsequently proclaimed by those near and far as "Shaykhu-n-Najdi".

Prophet Muhammad also said, "There will be people who come from the eastern part of Arabia who will recite the Koran, but their recitation will not pass beyond their collarbone. They will go out of Islam as swiftly as the arrow goes through the prey. Their sign is the shaving of their heads."

This millennium biography is dedicated to the message, life and example of our beloved Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and it would be inappropriate to delve deeper into the Wahabi corrupters of the Islamic faith in this reference.

Our aim is to bring to our readers pure Islam. However, it is felt essential to warn unsuspecting seekers of truth, who are perhaps discovering Islam and look to Saudi Arabia who perpetuate this evil, concealed terror promoting cult for guidance. For readers wishing to learn more about the heretical Wahabi cult, we invite you to read the articles appearing at the end of this book.

CHAPTER 132

THE FAREWELL PILGRIMAGE

Before the opening of Mecca the Angel Gabriel brought the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) a new chapter that exhorted the praise of his Lord and the asking of His forgiveness.

"When the victory of Allah and the opening comes, and you see people embracing the Religion of Allah in throngs, exalt with the praise of your Lord and ask forgiveness from Him. For indeed, He is the Turner (for the penitent)."
Koran Chapter 110

The chapter was not only a sign that he would soon open Mecca, but also an indication that after these signs had been fulfilled his time upon earth would soon be at an end, however, it was not until later that he disclosed the indication to his daughter, Lady Fatima.

As the middle of Ramadan approached the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) made his customary retreat to the Mosque in which he would spend ten consecutive days and nights. After the passing of the ten days he invited his Companions to remain with him in the Mosque until Eid, which was a further ten days away.

During the course of each year it was customary for the Arch Angel Gabriel to visit and recite the Holy Koran to him in its entirety after which the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would recite it to Gabriel. That year Gabriel recited it twice and this confirmed his understanding that it would not be too long before he left this earthly life.

As the time for the pilgrimage approached, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) announced he would lead the pilgrimage that year. News spread throughout Arabia of his intent and over thirty-thousand pilgrims, men, women and children congregated in Medina from all quarters of Arabia. Later, Lady Ayesha narrated that some of the pilgrims had made the intention to offer the greater pilgrimage, whilst others, the lesser pilgrimage, and some both.

Five days before the end of the month, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) set off with the pilgrims for Mecca. That year all the Prophet's wives accompanied him, each riding in their own howdah, led by Abdur Rahman, Awf's son and Othman, Arfan's son.

THE BIRTH OF ABU BAKR'S SON

Amongst the pilgrims was the Prophet's long time friend and Companion, Abu Bakr. Abu Bakr had been amongst the first to believe and had accompanied him during his migration to Medina ten years earlier. Asma, Abu Bakr's wife was expecting their child but did not want to miss the pilgrimage even though her delivery was near and so she decided to accompany her husband. On one of the halts along the pilgrimage route, Asma gave birth to their son who they named Muhammad. Abu Bakr planned to send mother and child back to Medina, but when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) learned of his intent he told him to let her continue by making the major ablution, and then rededicating herself to offering the pilgrimage.

Ten days after having left Medina the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and the pilgrims reached the pass through which he had entered Mecca on the day of its opening, and spent the night there.

The following morning was the fourth day of Dhul Hijja whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and his Companions made their intention to offer the lesser pilgrimage and assumed the state of "Ihram", which is a state in which certain permissible deeds are no longer permissible to pilgrims, then donned the unstitched white robe of pilgrimage.

Now that their intention had been made they resumed the final part of their journey into Mecca. Soon after, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gazed upon the beloved Ka'ba whereupon he released the rein's of his camel as he reverently raised his hands up high, as he supplicated, "O Allah, increase this House in honor and greatness; in bounty and in reverence, and piety that it gives to mankind."

He now stood before Ka'ba then completed the seven rounds after which he offered his prayer at the Station of Abraham, which is the place where Abraham stood when he and his son Ishmael rebuilt the House of Allah. Then he proceeded to the hill of Safwa and supplicated as he walked quickly between it and the hill of Marwa seven times. Upon its completion the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to the Mosque where Othman from the tribe of Abd Ad Dar, the keeper of the keys to Ka'ba,

unlocked the door of Ka'ba and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), together with Othman, Bilal and Osama entered inside.

Entry into the Ka'ba does not constitute an obligatory part of the pilgrimage and later that day when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) returned to Lady Ayesha's tent he mentioned his concern that because the pilgrims had seen him enter the Ka'ba they might be disquieted if they were unable to enter it in the future whilst offering their pilgrimage.

Umm Hani offered to accommodate the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) in her home, but he declined as he wished to remain near the beloved Ka'ba.

As the time approached for the pilgrims to continue on to the valley of Mina, they assembled together and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) mounted his camel. It was already late in the day when they reached Mina so they spent the night there and in the early light of the following morning, after the prayer, made their way through the valley of Arafat to the Mount of Arafat, which is often referred to as the Mount of Mercy, for Allah has said that upon the Day of Arafat He forgives more sins than on any other day. There they spent the rest of the day in prayer, reciting the Koran, exalting Allah and supplicating for His Mercy and Forgiveness.

THE FAREWELL SERMON

On the day of Arafat, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave what was to become known as his "Farewell Sermon" it was concise, and yet another indication that the time was near at hand for him to meet his Lord. After praising and exalting Allah he began the sermon saying:

"Time is running in the same manner as it did on the day Allah created the heavens and the earth. A year has twelve months four of which are sacred; three are consecutive -- Zul Ka'ad, Zul Hajj and Muharram. Rajab falls between Jumada and Sha'ban."

Then he asked, 'What month is this?' and without exception, the vast congregation in total surrender replied, 'Allah and His Messenger know best.' The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) remained silent for a while and they thought he was about to rename it. When he said, 'Isn't it Zul Hajj?' and they answered, 'Yes, indeed.' Then he asked, 'Which City is this?' whereupon they again replied in total surrender, 'Allah and His Messenger know best.' The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) remained silent as before and again they thought he was about to rename it. Then he said, 'Isn't it the Sacred City (Mina)?' and they replied, 'Yes, indeed.' Then he asked, 'What day is this?' and once again they replied in total submission, 'Allah and His Messenger know best.' And again he remained silent and they thought he was about to rename it. Then he said, 'Isn't it the Day of Sacrifice?' and once again they replied, 'Yes, indeed.'

Then he told them, 'Your lives, possessions and honor must be as sacred to one another as this Sacred Day, this month and City. Let those who are present take this message to those who are absent. You are about to meet your Lord, who will call you to account for your deeds. As of this day all sums of interest are remitted, including that of Abbas, son of Abd Al Muttalib. Every right arising from homicide in pre-Islamic days is henceforth waived, and the first such right that I waive is that arising from the murder of Rabiah the son of Al Harith, son of Abd Al Muttalib.

O people! this day satan has despaired of re-establishing his power in this land of yours. Nevertheless, should you obey him, even in what may seem to you trifling, it will be a matter of pleasure for him. Beware of him, therefore, for the safety of your religion.

O my people! you have certain rights over your wives and your wives have certain rights over you. Allah has entrusted them to your hands, so you must treat them with all kindness. It is your right that they do not associate on intimate terms with any one of whom you do not approve, and that they never commit adultery.

All Muslims, free or enslaved, have the same rights and responsibilities. No one is higher than another unless he is higher in virtue.

O people, even if an Abyssinian slave becomes your Amir (ruler), listen and obey him, as long as he executes the Book of Allah among you.

O people! listen to what I say, and take it to heart. I leave you with the Book of Allah, and the ways of His Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). If you follow them, you will never go astray. You must know that every Muslim is the brother of another Muslim. You are equal. You are members of one common brotherhood. It is forbidden for any of you to take from his brother except that which the latter should willingly give. Do not oppress your people.'

Then he asked. 'Have I conveyed the Command of Allah, have I conveyed the Command of Allah?' And they replied, 'Yes!' Then he supplicated, 'O Allah, bear witness.'

As the sun set the Day of Arafat drew to a close and after the offering of the evening prayer it was time to leave. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) mounted his camel and with Osama riding behind him led the pilgrims at a modest pace on to Aqabah. In their eagerness to reach Aqabah, the pilgrims started to hasten their pace, whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them to slow down saying, "Gently, gently, in the quietness of the soul. Let those who are strong care for the weak."

Lady Swaydah found it difficult to keep up with the rest of the pilgrims, so she sought the Prophet's permission to leave Muzdalifah in the coolness of the pre-dawn hours for Aqabah so that she might fulfill her duty before the multitude of pilgrims arrived. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gave his permission and Lady Umm Sulaym accompanied her with Abbas' son, Abdullah, leading the way.

Now that the thin thread of light had appeared on the horizon it was time for the dawn prayer, so the call to prayer was made and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) led the pilgrims in prayer. After its completion it was time to leave for Aqabah, but this time Fadl rode behind the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Upon reaching Aqabah, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) stoned the pillars seven times and as he did he exalted Allah saying, 'Allahu Akbar!' and the pilgrims took up the exaltation. It was now time to offer the consecrated animals and all were sacrificed as they remembered the first sacrifice, the sacrifice of Prophet Abraham so many centuries before. Now that the sacrifices had been offered, the Prophet (salla

Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for a barber to shave his head and as his hair was shaved pilgrims vied with one another to receive a strand. Khalid was standing near the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) during his shaving and asked him for a lock of hair. Upon receiving it he pressed it against his eyes and lips out of sincere love and placed it securely under his turban.

After the pilgrims completed their shaving, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told them to press on to the Ka'ba and then return to spend that night and the next two at Mina, however, he and his wives did not leave immediately and remained in Aqabah until the afternoon before leaving for Ka'ba.

Meanwhile, Lady Ayesha's monthly cycle arrived. After its cessation she took her cleansing bath and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told her to renew her intention to offer the pilgrimage. Then he asked her brother, Abdur Rahman, to accompany his sister to outside the Sacred precincts to begin her pilgrimage and then circumambulate the Ka'ba.

THE QUESTIONING OF THE KORAYSH

The pilgrimage to the House of Allah had been fulfilled, however, some of the new Koraysh converts questioned the validity of standing on Mount Arafat which lies some thirteen miles outside Mecca, saying that in the past they had not left the Holy Land when they went on pilgrimage. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) informed them that Arafat was indeed an essential part of the obligatory rites of the pilgrimage established by Prophet Abraham, but on account of neglect, then disregard, it had become forgotten over the passage of time. Then he recited the Words of Allah:

"Then surge on from where the people surge
and ask Allah for forgiveness.
He is Forgiving and Most Merciful."
Koran 2:199

and explained that "from where the people surge" referred to Arafat.

THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) AND THE NEWLY BORN

During the Farewell pilgrimage, a baby, who was given the name Mubarak Al Yamana, was born in Mecca and taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). As soon as the baby was presented to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) it spoke bearing witness whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "You have spoken the truth, may Allah bless you." The child did not speak again for many years, in fact it wasn't until he became an adult that he spoke.

CHAPTER 133 THE RETURN FROM YEMEN

A few months before the pilgrimage, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) received cordial letters from Yemen. He sent a contingent of three hundred men to collect the obligatory charity due at the end of Ramadan from the Muslims together with the poll tax levied upon those who had not converted but were protected by Muslims.

News reached Mecca that the returning contingent had been spotted approaching Mecca, so Ali rode out to greet them and tell them to hasten on to Mecca in order to offer the pilgrimage.

Amongst the charity and gifts they brought were several bales of cotton -- sufficient to clothe the entire contingent. Their own clothes had become soiled from their journey so they asked Ali if they could use it to make clothes for the pilgrimage. However, Ali was not agreeable and told them that all must be taken to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) for him to decide and distribute.

After Ali returned to Mecca, the person in charge of the goods was persuaded to lend each man sufficient cloth for a fresh change of clothing and this he did.

When they reached Mecca Ali met them and was surprised to see them all wearing clean clothes. When Ali asked the man in charge of the merchandise he replied, "I gave them some cloth so that they would reach the pilgrims with better appearance." Ali was upset that they had taken the matter into their own hands and not waited for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to determine its distribution and ordered them to take off their new clothes and put their soiled ones back on. This gave rise to discontent among the contingent but when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) heard their murmuring he said, "O people, do not blame Ali, for he is zealous in the Path of Allah and should not be blamed." For those who heard his word it was sufficient, but for those unaware of the Prophet's statement, a feeling of unfairness stirred in their heart.

Murmuring among the contingent continued to abound until one day a man went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and complained against Ali whereupon the expression on the Prophet's changed as he asked, "Am I not closer to the believer than his self?" The man hung his head in shame as he agreed and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued, "Whosoever I am closest to, Ali is closest to him."

The pilgrimage was over and it was time to return to Medina. When they reached Ghadir Al Khumm, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for a halt. Then he took Ali by the hand and repeated what he said earlier then supplicated, "O Allah, be the Friend of whosoever is his friend, and the Enemy of him who is his enemy." From that moment onwards the murmuring against Ali was laid to rest.

THE FALSE PROPHET

The Christian tribe of Hanifa had recently entered into Islam, however, it became apparent that all was not well amongst them when Musaylima laid claim that he had become a prophet.

Soon after Prophet Muhammad's return to Medina a letter arrived from Haroun who was better known as Musaylima that read:

From: Musaylima, the Messenger of Allah

To: Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah,

Peace be upon you. I have been given the power to share your authority. Half of the earth is ours, and half belongs to the Koraysh, even though they are sinners." Having read the letter, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) asked its bearers if this was also their opinion and they affirmed that it was. Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi

wa salaam) spoke saying, "By Allah, if it was not for envoys to be put to death, I would indeed sever your heads!"

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called for his scribe and dictated a letter for the envoys to delivery to Musaylima. He commenced,
From: Muhammad, the Messenger of Allah
To: Musaylima, the liar.
Peace be upon he who follows guidance. Indeed, the earth belongs to Allah. He causes whom He will of His worshipers to inherit it. Only those who fear their Lord will prosper.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided not to act hastily so he postponed dealing with the matter.

THE EMERGENCE OF CONCEALED EMOTIONS

Musaylima was not the only person deviate, a woman from the tribe of Tamin by the name of Sajah claimed to have become a prophetess.

From Yemen, Aswad, Kabs son rose up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and gained control over a considerable area, but his uprising was short lived. Aswad was a proud man and his new subjects disliked his arrogance, so it wasn't surprising when, after just a few months he was assassinated.

Tulayha from the tribe of Asad renounced Islam, and was yet another to rise up against the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) but this time the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) sent Khalid against him.

Several months later, the expert Abyssinian spear thrower, Wahshi, took aim at Musaylima and his spear pierced his hand. Abdullah, Nusaybah's son seized the moment and put an end to him with the smite of his sword.

CHAPTER 134 THE 11TH YEAR

It was now the eleventh year since the migration and during the month of Safar the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) decided it was time to settle the unfinished matter at Mutah, in which a legion of the Roman army had joined the northern Syrian Arabs against the Muslims. Despite his youthfulness, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) appointed Osama, the son of the martyred Zaid, to command the three-thousand strong army of Muslims against the northern tribes.

THE VISIT TO THE CEMETERY

One night, after preparations for the march were underway, and the army had retired, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called upon his attendant, Abu Muwayhibah, who had at one time been sold into slavery but now a free man, saying, "I have been ordered to supplicate for forgiveness for the people in the cemetery, so come with me." In the stillness of the night they made their way to the cemetery whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) greeted its inhabitants saying, "Peace be upon you, O people of the graves. Rejoice in your condition, it is much better than that of those who live. Dissension comes as waves

following each other upon the darkest night, and each is worse than the last." Then he spoke to Abu Muwayhibah saying, "I have been offered the keys to the treasures of this world and immortality followed by Paradise, and I have also been given the choice between it and meeting my Lord and Paradise." Abu Muwayhibah could not restrain himself and said, "Take the keys of the treasures of this world with its immortality followed by Paradise." But the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gently told him, "I have already chosen the meeting with my Lord and Paradise." Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned towards the graves and supplicated for the forgiveness of their inhabitants.

THE LAST ILLNESS OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

On the anniversary of the attempt to poison the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at Khybar he would suffer from its recurring effect and its time had come around once more. It was either the morning after his visit to the cemetery, or a morning shortly thereafter, that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) experienced an intense headache, the like of which he had never experienced before. Despite his headache he went to the Mosque and led the congregation in the dawn prayer then climbed the pulpit and supplicated for blessings upon those who had been martyred at Uhud. Then he said, "There is a worshiper among the worshipers of Allah to whom Allah has given the choice between this world and that which is with Him. The worshiper has chosen that which is with Allah." Abu Bakr, who was in the congregation, was deeply affected by the Prophet's remark and began to weep, for he knew that the worshiper the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) referred to was none other than Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) himself, and that he would not be with them for much longer.

As Abu Bakr wept, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) knew he understood what he had said and said, "O people, the most merciful of men to me in both companionship and generosity is Abu Bakr. If I were to take from all mankind an inseparable companion, it would be Abu Bakr, but companionship and brotherhood in belief is ours until Allah unites us in His Presence."

THE MEETING AT THE POOL

Several homes had been built on to the external wall of the Mosque, and like the apartments of the Prophet's wives, they had doors that opened into the prayer area. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) glanced around the Mosque he instructed all the doors except that of Abu Bakr to be walled up. Before descending from the pulpit the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) spoke once more saying, "I go before you, and I am your witness. Your meeting with me is at the Pool. As I stand here, indeed I see it. I do not fear for you on account of reversion to idolatry, rather, it is the world I fear for you if you seek to vie with one another for its gain."

Then the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left the Mosque and returned to the apartment of Lady Maymunah. The Prophet's headache worsened as the signs of fever appeared but after having rested for a while he went briefly to Lady Ayesha's apartment to let her know he was unwell. Lady Ayesha was also suffering from a headache and said as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) entered, "Oh my head!" Whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said: "No, Ayesha it is indeed my head." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) looked at her gentle face to see if perhaps she too was suffering from a life threatening sickness but could see no sign then said, "Would that it might be whilst I am alive, so that I might

ask forgiveness for you and supplicate for mercy upon you, then shroud and pray over you, then bury you."

Lady Ayesha had never heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) speak like this before and when she looked at his face she could see he was very unwell but tried to make light of the situation and brought a smile to his face. Then he repeated, "No, it is indeed my head," and returned to Lady Maymunah's apartment.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was in good health, Lady Ayesha heard him say, "A Prophet never dies until he has been shown his place in Paradise and is then given the option to live or die." And when she learned of the Prophet's brief sermon that morning she knew that he would not be with her for much longer.

Despite the worsening of his illness, Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) continued to lead his congregation in prayer. As his sickness intensified he offered the prayer in the sitting position and told the congregation to do likewise. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was now so weak and exhausted that when he returned to the apartment of the wife in whose turn it was asked, "Where am I tomorrow, and where the next day?" so his wife told him. His wife sensed that he wished to be in Lady Ayesha's apartment and called her co-wives together who went to him saying, "O Messenger of Allah, we have given our days with you to our sister Ayesha." The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) gratefully accepted their loving kindness and with the assistance of Abbas and Ali, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was helped to Lady Ayesha's apartment.

OSAMA, COMMANDER OF THE ARMY

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) lay in his feverish state in Lady Ayesha's apartment, word reached him that preparations for the army's march now under the command of Osama had slowed down. Despite his suffering, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) felt the necessity to confirm Osama's position, so he asked his wives to bring seven skins of water, each from a different well, and for the water to be poured over him.

Lady Hafsa fetched a tub and he sat in it while the water was poured gently over him to reduce his fever. His wives dressed him and wrapped cloth around his head and with two of his Companions supporting him went into the Mosque and sat down upon the pulpit then said, "O people, dispatch Osama with his army. You question his leadership as you questioned his father's before him, yet he is worthy to take command, just as his father was." Then, with the help of his Companions the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was assisted back to Lady Ayesha's apartment.

Preparations for the march resumed in earnest and soon after they were ready to march Osama led the army out of Medina but just three miles outside the City limits, at a place called Jurf, he called upon them to halt and strike camp.

ABU BAKR LEADS THE PRAYER

It was time for the next prayer to be offered but the Prophet was no longer able to lead the prayer, not even from the sitting position so the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) told his wives to ask Abu Bakr to lead the prayer.

Lady Ayesha said, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), Abu Bakr is a very tender-hearted man, his voice is not strong and is given to weeping when he recites the Koran," and suggested that perhaps Omar should lead the prayer. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) insisted upon Abu Bakr. Lady Ayesha glanced at Lady Hafsa to try to enlist her help, but the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would not hear of it and said, "You are like the women that were with Joseph. Inform Abu Bakr that he is to lead the prayer. Let those who wish to blame find fault and let the ambitious aspire. Allah and the believers will not have it otherwise," and he repeated the last sentence three times, whereupon Abu Bakr led the prayer for the remaining days of the Prophet's illness.

THE TIME OF DEPARTURE

All the wives of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) comforted and tenderly cared for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). When visitors entered they would often find him with his head cradled upon Lady Ayesha's lap or propped up so that he rested against her chest.

The Prophet's beloved daughter, Lady Fatima, was a constant visitor and upon her arrival Lady Ayesha withdrew so that they could spend some time alone together.

On one such occasion the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) called Lady Fatima to his side and told her something in secret that caused her to weep. Then he spoke to her again with comforting words and she began to laugh. After his soul had been taken from him, and it became obligatory that his words should not be concealed, Lady Ayesha asked what the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had said to her that caused her to weep then laugh, she said, "I wept when he told me he was about to die from his illness, but when he told me I would be the first of his family to join him, I became happy and laughed."

AL MAHDI, THE GUIDED LEADER, THE RESTORER OF THE ISLAMIC RELIGION

Ali, Lady Fatima's husband was another frequent visitor to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) during this time. One day as he entered the room he found his wife crying as she sat beside her father, and the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) raised his tired eyes to look up at her and asked, "O Fatima, what makes you cry?" She replied, "I fear the loss after you." With gentleness of voice he said, "Don't you know that Allah, the Mighty, the Glorified, looked to the earth once and chose your father and sent him with His Message; then He looked once more to the earth and chose your husband and made known to me that I should let you marry him? O Fatima, we are the dwellers of a House, and Allah has given us seven merits which He never gave to anyone else before, and they will not be given to anyone after us." Then, referring to the descendants of his grandsons, Hasan and Husain, he said, 'By He who sends me with the truth, amongst both of them is Al Mahdi of this nation. When life is full of murder and strife, and trials increase, and roads are blocked, and people start to attack one another, and the elderly are not merciful to the young, nor the young merciful to the old, Allah, the Mighty, the Glorified, will send from them (Hasan and Husain) at the end of time, one who will open the fortress of error, and open hearts that have been sealed, then restore the Religion as I established it in the beginning. He will fill the world with justice to the extent that it has been filled with oppression."

OSAMA'S RETURN TO MEDINA

Osama could not bear to leave the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) in such condition so he returned to Medina to visit him. As he entered the room, he found the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to be conscious, but too ill to speak. Osama bent over and kissed him whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) raised his hand, with his palm facing upwards in supplication for blessings upon Osama, Osama felt it would be the last time he would see the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) in this life and left with great sadness to return to the camp.

The next day, Monday, 12th of Rabi 1, the Prophet's fever eased, and although he was extremely weak he summoned all his energy and was assisted to the Mosque by Thawban and Fadl.

The dawn prayer had already commenced and when the congregation realized he was amongst them they were overjoyed.

As he saw them at prayer his face shone with great happiness in a way that Anas was heard to say later on, "I have never seen the Prophet's face more beautiful than it was at that hour." Abu Bakr, who was leading the prayer, sensed his presence and so without turning his head, which would annul the prayer, he stepped back for the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to continue its leadership. However, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) placed his hand on his shoulder and nudged him to resume whilst he seated himself by his side and offered his prayer with him.

After the prayer, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) remained for sometime in the Mosque and the congregation rejoiced as they thought his condition had taken a turn for the better.

Soon after Osama, who was so very worried about the Prophet's condition, returned to Medina yet again and was overjoyed to see that he was able to pray once again in the Mosque. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) told Osama: "Go forth, with the blessings of Allah." Whereupon Osama greeted him with peace then took his leave with a cheerful heart and ordered his army to prepare themselves to resume the march.

Fadl and Thawban helped the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to return to Lady Ayesha's room whilst Ali and Abbas followed them, however, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was very tired and so they did not stay long. As they left the apartment, anxious inquirers asked after the Prophet's health, whereupon Ali replied, "Praise be to Allah, he is better." However, Abbas had noticed a certain look upon the Prophet's face and told Ali, 'By Allah, in three days, you will be governed by some one else. And by Allah, I feel that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) will die from this sickness, for I know the look of death upon the face of the children of Abdul Muttalib. Let us go to him and ask who is to receive the caliphate. If it is given to us we will know what to do, but if it is given to someone else we will inform him so that he may tell the new caliph to take care of us." But Ali remembered how in the past when people had asked the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) for a position he would refuse so he replied, "By Allah, if we ask the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) for it and he refuses to give it to us, the people will never give it to us after that. By Allah, I will not ask the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) for it."

Meanwhile, Abdur Rahman, Lady Ayesha's brother had entered the apartment to visit the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and in his hand was his "siwak", which is part of the root of a tree, splayed at the end for use as a toothbrush. Lady Ayesha knew how much the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) loved his teeth to be clean so she asked Abdur Rahman if she might use it. Abdur Rahman nodded and she softened the splayed ends then cleaned his teeth.

With great respect, the Angel of Death appeared to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and asked his permission to take away his precious soul, whereupon he gave his permission. Never before or after this time has the Angel of Death ever asked anyone for their permission to take away their soul.

The throes of death were evident upon his face as he dipped his hand into a jug of water then rubbed his wetted hand over his face uttering the words, "There is no god except Allah, death has its agonies." Then he lapsed into a state of unconsciousness for a while and as he regained consciousness for the last time he gazed upwards towards the ceiling and raised his hands saying, "O Allah, with the highest companion," until he could no longer raise them as the angels gently took away his very precious soul. The last Prophet and Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had passed away at the age of sixty-three.

Immense sadness descended upon the household and his wives began to weep, as, with tender loving care, Lady Ayesha laid his head gently down upon the pillow and covered him with a cloak. It was indeed the saddest occasion ever known and so Allah in His Mercy sent angels to comfort his beloved family.

Later, Lady Ayesha was heard to say concerning the severity of his pangs of death, "After having seen those of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), I have never disliked seeing those of anyone else."

OSAMA'S RETURN

When it became apparent that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had reached the final throes of death, Umm Ayman sent word to Osama of his condition. The army had already broken camp and were on the point of marching northward, but as soon as Osama received the news he ordered their return to Medina. Several of the more senior Companions were with Osama amongst whom was Omar who found it difficult to accept the fact that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would die before them.

Omar had misunderstood a quotation and thought that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would outlive not only his generation but generations yet unborn. Upon his arrival in Medina he went directly to the Mosque and addressed the heart-broken congregation, who were for the most part Muhajir, assuring them that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was only absent in spirit and would return.

ABU BAKR LEARNS OF THE PROPHET'S DEATH

Meanwhile, the news of the Prophet's passing had just reached Abu Bakr, who had been visiting his new wife Habiba, whereupon he jumped upon his horse and rode straight to Lady Ayesha's apartment. Upon his arrival he gently drew back the cloak

covering the Prophet's face and kissed him saying, "Dearer than my father and mother, you have tasted death which Allah has decreed for you. Death will never overtake you again." Then, with sadness of heart, he gently covered his blessed face, and went into the Mosque where Omar was still speaking with great passion.

As Abu Bakr approached Omar he said, "Gently, Omar. Hear what I have to say." But Omar continued, then, when the congregation saw that Abu Bakr had something to say, they turned towards him to listen. Before Abu Bakr began to speak he exalted Allah then said, "O people, whosoever was inclined to worship Muhammad -- in truth Muhammad is dead, but whosoever worships Allah, in truth Allah is Alive and does not die." Then he recited verses from the Koran:

"Muhammad is not except a Messenger;
Messengers have passed away before him.
If he dies or is killed will you turn about on your heels?
And he who turns on his heels will not harm Allah a thing.
Allah will recompense the thankful."
Koran 3:144

The verse comforted the believers, who, until that moment although the verse was well known, had not recalled it during this time of grief.

When Omar heard this verse he was so overcome that his knees weakened and he fell to the ground as he accepted the fact that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had been taken from them.

Whilst Abu Bakr and Omar were in the Mosque, Talha and Zubair returned with Ali to his home to mourn their loss.

A MATTER OF SUCCESSION

Meanwhile the Ansars, had met together in their assembly room to share their grief and the matter of their leadership arose. Several expressed their opinion that they, the Ansars, should have authority over the tribes now that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was no longer with them.

When news of the discussion reached Abu Bakr, Omar encouraged Abu Bakr to go with him and Ubayda to the assembly room. As they entered one of the Ansars had started to address the assembly on behalf of himself and his tribe. He had started by exalting Allah and had just said, "We are the Ansars, helpers of Allah, the fighters of Islam," then he saw the three and continued saying, "and you, the Muhajir, the emigrants, are like us for a number of your people have settled amongst us," and continued to praise both parties, however the speech failed to recognize the very special position the Muhajirs held for amongst them were not only relatives of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) whom he had praised and supplicated for, but also those who had been the first followers of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and sacrificed everything they owned in order to follow him.

It was evident to Abu Bakr and his companions that if they were left to elect their own leader then other tribes would do likewise. The result would be that the unity of Muslims would begin to unravel, and that there would no longer be one, overall

authoritative leader, caliph, to whom all would be obliged to follow but many -- the result of such a situation is apparent in the demise of Muslims today.

The Ansar had finished his speech and Omar wanted to speak but Abu Bakr gestured to him to refrain and spoke to the assembly in a way that was both tactful but firm. He reminded them that Islam had spread throughout Arabia and was no longer limited just to Mecca and Medina, and that Arabs from other parts of Arabia would not accept a leader other than a Koraysh. He concluded his speech by taking hold of the hands of his two companions and raising them saying, "I offer you your choice of these two men, give your allegiance to whichever one of these you will." Whereupon one of the Ansars suggested that there should be two authorities. Omar spoke saying, "O Ansars, don't you realize that the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) ordered Abu Bakr to lead the prayer?" and they replied that they did, "then," continued Omar, "which of you will take precedence over him?" Until that moment they had not considered the importance of Abu Bakr leading the prayer whereupon in one voice they said, "May Allah forbid that we take precedence over him!" and the matter of the caliphate was determined as Omar caught hold of Abu Bakr's hand and pledged allegiance to him. Omar's companion followed his initiative, then others of the Muhajir, who had by then joined them, pledged their allegiance followed by the Ansars.

The following morning, before Abu Bakr led the prayer he sat upon the pulpit whilst Omar got up and addressed the congregation inviting them to pledge their allegiance to Abu Bakr, of whom he referred to as being the best among them, the Companion of the Messenger of Allah, and the second of the two in the cave. With the exception of Ali, who did so later, all stepped forward and pledged their allegiance to Abu Bakr.

After the allegiance had been taken, Abu Bakr exalted Allah and thanked Him, then addressed the congregation saying, "I have been given authority over you. However, I am not the best of you. If I do well, help me; but if I do wrong, correct me. Since regard for truth is loyalty, whereas disregard for truth is treachery. Allah willing, those who are weak amongst you will be supported by me until I have secured your rights. Allah willing, the strong among you shall be weak with me until I have exacted the rights of others. Obey me as long as I obey Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), but, if I disobey Allah and His Messenger (salla Allahu alih wa salaam), you do not owe obedience to me. Arise now for prayer, may Allah have mercy upon you."

THE PLACE OF REST

It was time for the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) to be laid to rest, however, the Companions were uncertain how they should best prepare him, for he was not like ordinary men. Then, Allah in His Mercy caused a deep slumber to overtake them in which each heard a voice saying, "Wash the Prophet (salla Allahu alih wa salaam) with his garment upon him." When they awoke they told each other of the voice and were happy to know that they had all heard the same instruction so they went to Lady Ayesha's apartment where he lay to give him his final bath.

When they reached Lady Ayesha's apartment, Aws, Khawli's son from the tribe of Khazraj pleaded with Ali to let him represent the Ansars. Ali agreed and he entered with them.

Abbas and his sons Fadl and Kitham helped Ali to turn his body whilst Osama, assisted by Shukran and the attendant of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) poured the warmed water over him. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had passed away wearing a long woolen robe and now that it had been wetted, Ali gently rubbed his hand over it and as he did he said, "Dearer than my father and my mother, how excellent you are in both life and death," and the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) appeared to all who saw him just as if he was asleep.

The matter now arose as to where he should be laid to rest. Some thought that it should be near the graves of his daughters and his son Abraham, whilst others where of the opinion that he should be buried in the Mosque. The matter was resolved when Abu Bakr told them that he had heard the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) once say, "No Prophet dies except he is buried where he died." Whereupon a grave was dug in the floor of Lady Ayesha's room near the bed on which he lay. As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was being covered by earth, Lady Fatima said, "How can you reconcile yourselves, pouring dust over the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)?"

Grief engulfed the City, even Yazid, the Prophet's donkey missed his caring master so much that he pined himself away, then jumped into a well where he died.

As the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had prophesied, Lady Fatima joined him but a few months later. Ali gave his allegiance to Abu Bakr saying, "We are well aware of your position and what Allah has predestined you. It was because the matter was decided without consultation. We felt that we had some claim on account of our nearness in kinship to the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)." When Abu Bakr heard these touching words his eyes overflowed with tears and said, "By Him in whose hand is my soul, I would rather that all should be well between me and the family of the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) than between me and my own family." That same morning at the time of the mid-day prayer, Ali pledged his allegiance to Abu Bakr in the Mosque for all to witness, and all was well.

The end

THE MILLENNIUM BIOGRAPHY OF MUHAMMAD ﷺ THE PROPHET OF ALLAH

NOTES

PROPHETIC HOMESTEAD

Although we were not fortunate to be blessed to be alive during the life time of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam), and therefore unable to see him, or taste his presence, we are able to get a fragrant glimpse of his physical description and characteristics that were preserved by the Companions and passed down to us by the great scholars of Islam.

The best description of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was given by Lady Ayesha when she was asked to describe the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). She said, "His example and character were those of the Koran." And so it is that he was and is and will be forever, our best living, exemplary model.

PROPHET MUHAMMAD'S (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) GENEALOGY

His parents were Amina, daughter of Wahb and Abdullah, son of Abd Al Muttalib,
the son of Hashim,
son of Abd Manaf,
son of Ksay,
son of Kilab,
son of Murrah,
son of Ka'b,
son of Lu'ayy,
son of Ghalib,
son of Fihr,
son of Malik,
son of Nadir,
son of Kinanah,
son of Khuzayma,
son of Ilyas,
son of Mudar,
son of Nizar,
son of Ma'aad,
son of Adnan,
son of Udd,
son of Udad,
son of Al Yasu,
son of Yashub,
son of Hamil,
son of Kaydar,
son of Prophet Ishmael,
son of Prophet Abraham,
son of Azar,
son of Tarikh,
son of Yahur,
son of Ushru,
son of Arghu,
son of Kalun.
son of Faligh,
son of Amir,
son of Shaligh,
son of Arfakhshad,
son of Shem,
son of Prophet Noah,
son of Malik,
son of Mattushalakh,
son of Akhnukh,
son of Yard,
son of Mahla'il,
son of Kinan,
son of Anush,
son of Kinan,
son of Shith,
son of Prophet Adam

Peace be upon all the Prophets

AN INSIGHT INTO HIS NOBLE CHARACTER, NATURE AND PHYSICAL FEATURES

No written description of our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) can ever do justice to his exceptional beauty. Lady Ayesha, the wife of the Prophet, may Allah be pleased with her, described him as being more handsome than Prophet Joseph for whom the wives of Pharaoh's ministers slit their hands on account of his handsome appearance. She said: "If the friends of Zulayka had seen the blessed face of the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) they would have cut their hearts instead of their hands!"

A portion of Prophet Muhammad's inner beauty manifested itself externally and illuminated his very being. Kurtubi, a great scholar of Islam, said that if his entire beauty had been made manifest, it would have been impossible for anyone to look at him.

SELF DESCRIPTION

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said: "The prophets were shown to me. I saw Moses, peace be upon him, he had a slender body, like a man from the tribe of Shanuah. I saw Jesus, peace be upon him, from all those I have seen, he resembles Urwah the son of Masood. I saw Abraham, peace be upon him, and from all those I have seen I most resemble him .. "

HIS FACE

His complexion has been described as being somewhat delicately wheaten in color or whitish with a reddish tones. His face was luminous, almost round, but not round, and frequently compared to the beauty of the full moon when it reached its zenith.

He had a broad forehead and his eyebrows were separate and thick with densely fine hair. When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) became displeased a vein between his eyebrows became enlarged. His eyes were jet black and his eyelashes long, mascared with kohl made from ithmid that he applied thrice to each eye before sleeping. Our Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) tells us that: "... kohl made from ithmid used on the eye brightens the eyesight. Also, it strengthens and increases the growth of the eye lashes." His Companions said that even when he did not use kohl, his eyes looked as if he had.

His nose was prominently distinguished. His cheeks were smooth and well covered whilst his proportionally perfect mouth was neither large nor yet small. His teeth were bright, slender and evenly spaced, however, the space between his front teeth was slightly larger. As for the thickness of his beard, it was dense.

His hair was slightly wavy, sometimes it was cut short and at other times he wore it nearly shoulder length. When his hair had the tendency to part itself in the middle he wore it that way, otherwise he did not dress it in that fashion. His habit was to use oil on his hair and so as not to soil his turban he would place a piece of cloth between it and his hair. When he went on pilgrimage to Mecca, he would shave his hair.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would dress his hair and his beard using his right hand. It was not his practice to dress his hair every day, in fact, he prohibited it, unless there was a valid reason, and would dress his hair every third day.

In later life, the Prophet had several silver hairs on his temples. It has been reported that they ranged between fourteen and twenty. The accuracy of these reports is equally valid as they came over a period of time. One day, when Abu Bakr first noticed the silver hairs, he gently said: "O Messenger of Allah, you have become old," whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said: "The recitation of the chapters Hud, Waaki'ah, Mursalaat, 'Amma and Kukkirah have made me old."

It was the practice of elderly men to dye their hair before they went off to fight to disguise their age. According to the Shafii and Hanafi schools of jurisprudence, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) either forbade or disapproved the use of a completely black dye except in war but permitted the use of henna, which is a reddish dye, and approved its mixing with katm, which is a black dye extracted from a certain grass. However, the katm must be used in a lesser quantity in order that the hair does not become totally black, rather, a darker tone of red.

HIS NECK, SHOULDERS, SEAL AND TORSO

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had well-covered broad shoulders and between them lay the Seal of his prophethood. The seal was a piece of raised flesh approximately the size of a pigeon's egg surrounded by hair.

Between his broad chest and navel grew a fine line of hair, as for his bones they were large and well proportioned. He was a man of medium stature, neither thin nor fat.

HIS FEET

The soles of his feet were fully fleshed whereas his heels were slim.

HIS MANNER OF WALKING

The Prophet's walk is described in the hadiths as being "Yatakaffao". The scholars of Islam interpret this word in three ways. There are those who are of the opinion that it means he walked at a fast pace, whilst others say it means he leaned forward a little as he walked; the third opinion is that he lifted his leg forcefully. We also learn from the hadiths that he walked quickly and took longer strides rather than short ones. We do know that he never walked haughtily with his chest puffed out with pride, nor did he scuff his feet as he walked.

When walking with his Companions he always asked them to walk in front of him on account of his modesty. When he was on a journey he rode at the back so that he could be with the weak or bereaved.

Whenever he met someone, he was always the first person to greet with peace.

HIS MANNER OF LOOKING

A hadith informs us that it was his custom to always look down towards the ground, and another says that he gazed up towards the sky. The hadiths do not contradict one another as the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) in day-to-day affairs, modestly looked towards the ground whereas when he awaited a Revelation he would look towards the sky. He never stared at anything.

HIS HEIGHT

It has been reported that he was a little taller than the average man, however, when he was amongst tall people his height was miraculously altered so that he became taller than those in his company.

HIS AGE

There are authentic hadiths that differ concerning his age. However, the scholars of Islam are of the opinion that this difference arose on account of some Companions not counting the year he was born and the year he died. The consensus is that he was sixty-three years old when he was laid to rest.

HIS BATHING

None of the wives of the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) or his family, saw his private parts, neither did he see theirs.

HIS MANNER OF COMMUNICATION

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) spoke to anyone, he would not just turn his face in order to converse, rather, he would either turn his whole body towards that person, or turn his face and torso in order to speak to the person directly; he was not proud man. It was not his practice to glance to the side when he spoke with anyone. His speech was deliberate and clear so that those sitting in his blessed company would remember what he said. When he wished to stress a point, he would repeat it three times.

It was not his custom to indulge in frivolous talk.

HIS STORY TELLING

The Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) would often tell his wives stories and each story contained a guiding moral.

HIS MANNER OF LEANING

It has been reported that the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) would lean against a pillow placed on his left side, however, he never leaned against anything whilst eating.

During his last illness, Fadl entered his room and found him wearing a yellow band around his forehead. After they had exchanged greetings he asked Fadl to tighten the band around his noble head, which he did. Then, he sat up and stood up supporting himself on Fadl's shoulder and entered the Mosque.

He would rest his head against one of his wives or Companions and when he passed away, his head rested upon Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her.

HIS MANNER OF EATING AND DRINKING

He ate with his right hand and would lick his fingers. Sometimes he used three fingers, at other times five.

He never ate food from a table, nor a small plate, nor did he eat pita type bread. He ate from a leather cloth and did not cut his meat with a knife, rather, he would bite off a piece and chew it.

The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) drank from a large wooden cup with a metal lining. He also drank from a water-skin with a cleaned spout.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) drank from the water of Zamzam, he stood. However, on most occasions he sat. He advocated drinking in smallish sips rather than gulping down all at once. This blessed advice to has been proven to be detrimental to the liver and stomach.

HIS BREAD AND FOOD

His bread was made from stone ground barley flour which has a coarse texture. A sieve was never used to refine the flour therefore large particles of grain often remained which were extracted. As for the quantity of bread, there was never sufficient bread in his household with which to fill his stomach.

Many a night he and his family went to bed without having eaten because there was no food. It was the custom of the Holy Family to give away their food to those in need, seeking a reward from Allah, the Most High.

He advocated the use of olive oil not only for cooking but for massage. He also used vinegar and would eat the meat of fowl. He ate honey, the meat of goat and lamb with a preference for the meat of a shoulder of lamb.

Amongst the other things he ate were dates. One day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) found some dates that had fallen on the ground. He told his Companions he would have eaten them if he could have been sure they were not originally intended to be given in charity, for it is forbidden that he or his family should eat from charity. He also ate cucumber and water melon with dates. Dates were also soaked in water to provide a sweet drink, however, they were never left long enough to ferment.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would drink water and milk. Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said that he liked a drink that was cold and sweet. When he was given milk he would supplicate saying: "O Allah, grant us blessing in it and increase it for us." He also told his Companions that there is nothing that serves both as food and water other than milk.

It was the custom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to feed his Companions before he himself ate.

HIS MANNER BEFORE AND AFTER EATING

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) always said: "Bismillah" before he started to eat. One day as he and his Companions were eating a hungry man joined them and forgot to say Bismillah, as he was about to take the last bite he remembered and said: "Bismillah in its beginning at end", whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa

salaam) informed that until that point satan, the stoned and cursed, had been eating with him, but when he heard him say this he vomited all that he had eaten.

One day Omar, Abi Salamah's son entered while food was being served. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) invited him to sit down and told him: "O my son, come near and recite Bismillah and eat with your right hand from the portion which is in front of you." He also told his Companions to use their right hand alone to eat and drink with as satan eats and drinks with his left hand.

After he finished eating he would thank Allah saying: "Praise be to Allah who fed us, and given us drink, and made us Muslims."

HIS SLEEPING

Each night before he slept, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would lay down on his right side and supplicate: "O Allah, in Your Name I live and die." When he awoke he would supplicate: "Praise be to Allah, who restored to us life, having caused us to die and to Him shall be the Resurrection."

Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, reported that before he slept he would cup his hands together, blow on them then recite the chapters Al Ikhlas, Al Falak, and An Naas then wipe his hands over the parts of his body he could reach, this he did three times starting with the head, then his face, followed by the front part of his body.

HIS WORSHIP

Everything our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said was an act of worship, and the following are but a few of the numerous examples.

Although he was absolutely sinless and promised the highest rank in Paradise, a rank in which no other prophet has attained, it did not prevent him from offering multiple voluntary prayers, which is an indication of our own need to increase and maintain the number of voluntary prayers we offer. The importance for us to offer voluntary prayer was often stressed by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would offer such long prayers that his legs became swollen. One of his Companions asked him why he offered such lengthy prayers when Allah had forgiven him all his sins. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) replied, "Should I not be a grateful worshipper?"

It was his practice to sleep after the Isha prayer for the first portion of the night, then awake to offer his voluntary prayers until the time one would take breakfast before fasting. At that time he would offer the last prayer of the night, which is the Witr prayer. Then, he would return to his apartment and sleep until the call for the Dawn prayer was made, when he would make either the major or minor ablution in readiness for the prayer.

The voluntary night prayers of the Prophet would commence with two short units of prayer followed by very long units of prayer that varied in number. Sometimes he would offer ten units of prayer followed by the Witr making a total of thirteen -- this number was never exceeded -- then at other times he would offer eight units of prayer followed by the Witr prayer. Whenever he was unable to offer his prayer

during the night, Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said that he would offer twelve units of prayer before mid-day. She also commented that he offered his prayers in the most perfect manner. There was a time when she asked him: "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) do you sleep before you offer Witr?" He replied: "O Ayesha, my eyes sleep, but my heart remains awake." This blessed state is a special gift bestowed upon the prophets.

During Ramadan he would offer many of the Taraweeh prayers in the Mosque, and told his Companions that those who stand with sincere faith and hope in prayer during the Night of Al Kadr will have their sins forgiven. When he did not offer his Taraweeh prayer with the congregation he would offer them at home.

When he was ill, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would offer his prayer sitting down until between thirty and forty verses remained when he would stand and recite them, then he would bow and prostrate, he did the same in the second unit of prayer.

Omar said that he offered two units of prayer before and after the mid-day prayer, and two units of prayer after the evening prayer and two units of prayer after the night prayer with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

HIS FAST

Other than the obligatory fast of Ramadan, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) observed voluntary fasts. Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said that after the migration to Medina the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not fast an entire month except for the month of Ramadan. She also said in another hadith that he would fast most of the month of Shabaan.

We are also told that he would fast some days of a month and none at all in another. Of the days he is known to have fasted Monday and Thursday received his special attention. Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, reported the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) saying: "I was born on a Monday, and the sending down of the Koran commenced on a Monday." Abu Hurayrah, may Allah have mercy on him, said: "Deeds are presented (to Allah, the Most High) on Mondays and Thursdays. I desire that my deeds be presented whilst I am fasting."

Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said: "Some months he would fast on Saturdays, Sundays and Mondays, whereas in other months he would fast on Tuesdays, Wednesdays and Thursdays." She also said that he did not fast on specific days, but whenever suitable. Abdullah, the son of Masood, reported that he seldom fasted on a Friday.

He would also fast on the 13th, 14th and 15th day of the Islamic month, also on the tenth of Muharram and the 10th of Dhul Hijjah. After the Prophet's migration he observed some Jews observing the fast on the tenth of Muharram, which is the fast of Ashura. He asked them why they were fasting and was told that it was the day on which Allah, the Most High, saved Prophet Moses, peace be upon him, from false accusation of their people. They told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) that Prophet Moses, peace be upon him, would fast that day out of gratitude and happiness whereupon our beloved Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said, "We are more entitled than you to follow Moses, peace be upon him."

Thereafter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) obligated his followers to fast on that day. This fast was obligatory until the command came to fast the month of Ramadan, thereafter the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) said the fast of Ashura was voluntary. To distinguish the Islamic fast of Ashura from that of the Jews, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) would fast either the day before Ashura or the day after.

HIS RECITATION OF THE HOLY KORAN

Lady Umm Salamah, may Allah be pleased with her, said: "He recited every word separately and distinctly." She also said, "He recited: 'Praise be to Allah, Lord of the worlds' and paused, then recited, 'the Merciful, the Most Merciful and paused. He paused again after 'Owner of the Day of Recompense.'"

When Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, was asked whether the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) recited softly or audibly, she replied that he recited both ways. One day Umm Hani who lived in Mecca, said she heard the recitation of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) from the roof-top of her house. Scholars say this was not due a loud voice but rather to the stillness of the night the voice travels further.

When he opened Mecca, he rode his camel, Kaswa, reciting the following verses repeatedly:

"Indeed, We have opened for you (Prophet Muhammad) a clear opening,
that Allah forgives your past and future sins,
and completes His Favor to you, and guides you on a Straight Path."
Koran 48.1-2

The Companion, Katadah, said that Allah gave each of His prophets a beautiful feature and a beautiful voice, and that our Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had both beautiful features and voice, but he did not recite in a tone similar to that of singers.

HIS WEEPING

As previously explained, everything our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) did was out of humility, sincerity and love of Allah as well as seeking mercy for us. His crying was the same.

One day Abdullah, the son of Masood, was asked by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) to recite some of the Koran to him, whereupon Abdullah asked, "O Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) should I recite it to you when it has been sent down to you?" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) said, "I love to hear it from another person." So Abdullah started to recite the chapter "Nisa" When he reached the verse 41

"How then shall it be when We bring forward from every nation a witness,
and bring you (Prophet Muhammad) to witness against those!"
tears flowed from both the Prophet's eyes.

Upon the death of one of the Prophet's daughters, Barakah, the longtime maid of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) who was with him when his mother died, started to weep loudly. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) drew her attention to it, for uncontrolled weeping is forbidden. Whereupon she said: "Do I not see you crying?" he replied: "That crying is not prohibited, it is a mercy from Allah." Then he said, "A Muslim is at peace at all times, even when his soul is being taken away, he is busy uttering the praise of Allah."

A TASTE OF HIS HUMILITY AND BLESSED CHARACTER

Allah, Himself testifies to the magnitude of the Prophet's character in the chapter "The Pen" verse 4:

"Indeed, you are upon a mighty morality."

Although our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) was chosen by Allah, the Most High, to be the His greatest prophet he remained a very humble person. He was always ready to visit the sick, attend funerals, ride a donkey. He did not look down upon using a rein woven from palm fiber or sitting upon a saddle made from palm leaves as he was seen to do during the hostilities of Krayzah. He would accept invitations, even the invitation of those called slaves. Such was his manner that he would never refer to them as "slaves" but rather as being "youths" and so placated their heart.

He never hesitated to accept the invitation of the poor; even when they served bread and old fat as he would neither offend rich or poor.

Unlike emperors, kings and leaders, our beloved Prophet disliked it if any one stood up when he entered.

When he entered his house he would divide his time into three portions, one portion for Allah, another for his family, and the other for himself, yet from his own portion he would give half his time to his close Companions who would visit him and ask questions, convey messages or requests from others.

He taught his close Companions things that were beneficial for his entire nation and told them to convey whatsoever he taught them, and encouraged them to ask on behalf of those less able to present their question. He never withheld a reply.

He told his Companions that whosoever informs a king of the need of another unable to express his need, Allah, the Most High, will make that person steadfast on the Day of Judgement.

He never wasted time listening to gossip, but as a matter of etiquette he would join in the conversation of his Companions, no matter if they were speaking about religious or worldly affairs .

Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said that he never hit anyone except in Jihad and that he never hit a women.

He respected and honored those who were respected and honored in their nation. He warned them of the punishment of Allah, mediated between people, praised and

encouraged good deeds. He explained the harmful effects of bad things, removed and prevented them.

He followed the middle course in all matters and never neglected to guide his followers. He was always truthful, and when he spoke to anyone that person felt most honored.

When he was asked for something, he never refused, and when he had nothing to give he would speak with kind words to the asker. He never refused to answer the question of a traveler and would say: "When you see someone in need, help them."

One day a needy person went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and asked for something. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not have anything to give him at that time, so he told him to go and purchase whatever he needed and charge it to him. Omar heard the conversation and reminded him that he had already given away everything he possessed and told him that Allah had not made him responsible for that which was beyond his means. Without hesitation, an Ansar spoke up saying "O Messenger of Allah, spend whatever you will, do not fear any decrease from the Lord of the Throne", whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) smiled and said, "Allah, the Most High, has commanded me to do this."

One day Rubayyi, the daughter of Muawwidh brought some fresh dates and small cucumbers to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had just been given some jewelry so he gave her either a handful of jewelry or gold.

When someone joined him for any reason he would remain seated until that person left. His endearing disposition was not just for a few, but for everyone, he was like a father to them.

He neither thought it to be beneath him to mend his clothes nor help with the daily chores. He was always kind to children and would ask Allah to bless them. It was not his custom to concern himself with idle conversation nor yet to interrupt when someone was speaking. His gatherings imparted knowledge, modesty, patience and honesty. He neither degraded nor disgraced anyone. If someone had sinned, it was not made public. Little ones were loved, the needy given preference whilst strangers and travelers were cared for.

Those in his household loved him dearly, not once did he rebuke them for not having done a certain thing, nor did he ever ask why someone had done such a thing.

He never used obscene language, nor did he shout and talk in the bazaars. It was not his way to avenge a bad deed with a similar deed, rather, he would forgive it and it would not be mentioned thereafter. He never sought the faults in anyone.

Everyone received their rights, whether they were Muslims or non-Muslims. Even the unbelievers of Mecca testified to his honesty.

He was neither short-tempered, nor humiliated anyone. He was very appreciative of the blessings of Allah no matter whether they were small or great.

He did not criticize his food, nor over-praise it. He never became angered over any materialistic matter. When someone exceeded the limits in religious matters or against the truth, he became angry in a way that no one could endure. He either forgave the offender or paid no attention to him.

When he was happy, it was as if he almost closed his eyes, as for his laugh, it was, for the most part, a smile in which his blessed front teeth glittered like shining white hailstones.

When he gestured toward something he would do so with his hand rather than by just pointing with one finger. The scholars say that this was yet another act of his humility as he would raise one finger as reference to Allah.

When he was surprised by something he would turn his hand. He often spoke and used his hands. Sometimes he would hit the palm of his right hand with the underside of his left thumb.

As for his modesty, he was more bashful than a virgin behind her veil. Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said that neither did she see his private parts nor he hers.

There was a time when the Companions went to the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) complaining of severe pangs of hunger. They showed him the stones they had strapped against their stomach to prevent it from swelling whereupon the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) showed them the two stones strapped to his.

There was also the time when the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and seven of his Companions had nothing to eat except leaves. As a result their mouths became ulcerated.

When a young Jewish boy was taken seriously ill, he went to visit him and through his kindness towards him the boy embraced Islam before he died and saved from the fires of Hell.

He even visited the hypocrite Abdullah, the son of Ubay, who had for a long time gone out of his way to try to ridicule the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

There is a beautiful hadith that tells the story of a Jewish rabbi. After the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) migrated to Medina some of the sincere and knowledgeable Jews embraced Islam. Zaid, the son of Sanah was a knowledgeable Jew who awaited the coming of the last prophet. Zaid had studied his Scriptures well that detailed the time of the next prophet's appearance together with his characteristics.

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) arrived in Medina he was able to recognize all but two of the prophesied fine characteristic in the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and up until that time remained unsure as to his prophethood. The signs were that his gentleness would overcome his anger and that the more foolish a person acted towards him, the more patient he would become.

One day when he was with the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) a bedouin came to him in a distressed state telling him that his tribe had embraced Islam and that he had told them that if they became Muslims they would never again go hungry.

Now that drought had stricken his land and food was in very short supply he told the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) he feared they would leave Islam on account of his promise and so he had come to ask him for his help. Rather than rebuking the man for giving such an unprecedented promise, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) turned to a Companion who informed him that there was nothing left to give. Zaid had been listening intently to the conversation and told the Prophet that he knew of a date palm grove from which he could purchase unripe dates that could be harvested when ripe and that the Prophet could pay for it later. In the meantime he gave the bedouin some gold to buy food for his tribe to tide them over until the date harvest, with the instruction to deal with it fairly.

Some time later, after the dates had been harvested and given to the bedouin, Zaid went to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). The Prophet had just returned from the funeral of one of his Companions and was sitting near a well when Zaid went up to him, tugged at the hem of his robe and chided him for not having repaid his debt and accused all of Abdul Muttalib's children as being poor payers. Omar happened to be present and jumped to the Prophet's defense saying, "O enemy of Allah, what are you mumbling. I swear by Allah, that if I did not fear, I would have your head severed!" The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) looked up and smiled at Omar and told him, "Omar, this person and I are in need of something more. He should have told me to take care that I fulfill his rights, and should have advised in a better manner when presenting his claim. Go, take him and fulfill his rights, and because he was scolded give him, in compensation, twenty extra measurements of dates as his right.

Omar and Zaid went together and as Zaid received his rights he asked, "Why have you given an excess amount of dates?" Omar replied, "The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) has commanded me to give it to you." Then Zaid asked Omar if he knew who he was and Omar replied that he did not, so he replied: "I am Zaid, the son of Sanah" whereupon Omar inquired, "The learned man of the Jews?" whereupon Zaid told him he was the very same. Then Omar asked him what had caused him to behave in such a bad manner towards the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). He replied, "Two signs from the signs of the prophethood were left which I was not able to examine. The first was the gentleness of the Prophet which overrides his anger. The second was that the more foolishly a person acts towards him the more tolerant he becomes. Now I have examined both, therefore I make you a witness to my acceptance of Islam and give half my wealth to the nation of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam).

Omar and Zaid returned to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) and Zaid embraced Islam. Later on he became a martyr.

THE DEATH OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

At the same time each year, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) would suffer from the reoccurrence of the poisoned meat he had been given by a Jewess in Khybar. Its reoccurrence in the year in which he passed away was more severe than ever before.

His illness began on the day in which he spent in Lady Ayesha's apartment with a headache. A day or so later when he was in the apartment of Lady Maymunah, may Allah be pleased with her, his illness worsened and knowing that he would feel better in the apartment of Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, his wives were happy to have him taken to her apartment and relinquished their rights.

Due to the severity of his illness, he was unable to lead his followers in prayer so he appointed Abu Bakr to lead them instead. A few days before he passed away, although it was obvious he was weak from his suffering, he felt a little better and asked to be assisted into the Mosque. When the congregation realized he was amongst them great happiness spread throughout the Mosque as they thought he must be recovering. After having offered his prayer sitting down he was taken back to Lady Ayesha's apartment for the last time.

On a Monday, ten or eleven days later, our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) passed away after having dipped his hands in a cup of water that was beside him and wiped them over his blessed face as his head rested upon the either Lady Ayesha's chest or lap.

As soon as Abu Bakr learned of his death he made haste to his daughter's apartment, and kissed the blessed forehead. It was the saddest day of all time. The companions did not know where to bury him, some thought it should be in Mecca whilst others thought differently. Then, one of the Companions informed them that the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) had told him that a Prophet is buried where he died, and so he was laid to rest in Lady Ayesha's apartment.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) left but a few worldly goods behind, one of which was a suit of armor pawned to a Jew, a donkey, and a piece of land which he had said was to be given in charity and the ring which he used as a seal. When Abu Bakr became caliph the ring was given to him and passed in succession to Othman at which time it was lost. The donkey, pined so much for his master that he threw itself into a well and died.

THE PROPHET'S POSSESSIONS AND CLOTHING HIS BED

Our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) slept upon a firm leather mattress stuffed with the fiber of palm trees. The mattress was so firm that the palm fiber left imprints upon his blessed body when he arose.

One night Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, decided to fold the mattress in four so as to make it a little more comfortable. The next morning the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked what she had spread out for him that night, so Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, told him what she had done. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) asked her kindly to return it to how it had been because its softness deprived him from his voluntary prayers -- this was because the

softer mattress had caused him to sleep more soundly than when he slept on a hard mattress.

HIS TOOTHBRUSH

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) cleaned his teeth with the splayed end of a miswaak twig.

HIS NATURAL FRAGRANCE AND USE OF PERFUME

The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was blessed with a natural fragrance quite unlike any other in the world. It has been described as being more pleasant than either amber or musk. Such was its sweetness that when he perspired, his wives collected his perspiration and used it to perfume themselves.

He recommended the use of perfume to his Companions saying, "The perfume of a man is a fragrance that spreads and has less color. The perfume of women has more color and is less fragrant." The scholars explain this to mean that men should wear a heavy fragrance whereas women should use a light fragrance in her home and must not wear any when she goes out because it attracts.

HIS CLOTHING

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) preferred to wear a long cotton gown. Sometimes the sleeves would be long, reaching as far as his wrist, but they never covered his fingers. At other times the sleeves would be shorter, as for the length of the gown he would either wear one that reached to just above his ankles or one that reached halfway down his calf. He did not possess two gowns at the same time.

We are also told that the waist wrap he liked most was one made from printed Yemeni cloth that is reported to have been green. His waist wraps would never exceed the length of his ankles. It is also forbidden for a man to wear clothes longer than this.

At another time he wore a red garment, however it was a color for him alone to wear because he forbade other men to wear red garments. As for garments dyed a saffron color, he forbade their wearing, however, if a saffron color garment becomes so *very* faded that no trace of the color remains, it can be worn, as the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) once wore such a cloth.

Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, reported that one day the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) left the house in morning wearing a cloth made from black hair.

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) said "Choose white clothing, as it is the best clothing. White clothing should be worn whilst living, and the dead should be buried in white."

During an illness as he was assisted by Anas to leave his apartment he wore a patterned Yemeni shawl.

When he received a new garment he would supplicate saying, "O Allah, all praise and thanks to You for clothing me with this. I ask You for the good of it and the good

of what it was made for, and I ask Your protection from the evil of it and the evil of what it was made for."

Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said: " ... he possessed only one of each, a thowb, body wrap, shoes or any other clothing, he never had two of anything (at one time)."

HIS LEATHER SOCKS

Our beloved Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wore different types of leather socks.

One day when he and some of his Companions were in a wooded area he took off his leather socks and placed them to one side. After a while he put his right sock on and was about to put on the left one when a crow swooped down, flew away with it and then dropped it. Unobserved by everyone, a snake had found its way into the sock and when the crow dropped the sock the snake fell out. The Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) praised Allah and from that time onward warned that socks should be checked before putting them on.

There were occasions when, after the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had made wudu he put on a pair of leather socks. When the next time for prayer arrived and it was necessary for him to renew his ablution, he did not remove his socks but wiped his damped hands over the top of them.

HIS SHOES

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) wore sandals with leather soles and two straps. At that time, it was common for sandals to be made without removing the hair of the animal. We are told by Anas, one of his Companions, that he had seen his shoes but there was no hair on them.

He warned not to wear just one shoe by itself and told his Companions to either wear a pair of shoes or none at all.

HIS TURBAN

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had two sizes of turbans. One was smaller than the other. The length of material in the smaller of the two was six cubits, whereas the material in the larger one was twelve. (A cubit is the approximate length of the forearm).

At the Opening of Mecca, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) was observed wearing a black turban as he entered the City. More often than not, he would wear his turban with the end piece hanging down at the back, however, he would sometimes wear it with the end piece hang over his right shoulder. He also wore a yellow turban.

HIS RING

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had a silver ring with a gem stone from Abyssinia which he used as a seal.

There was a time when he did not have a ring. However, when Islam started to spread and he began to send letters of invitation to Islam to the Emperor of Rome,

the King of Persia, and so on, he was informed that none of these heads of state would accept a letter unless it bore a seal. The ring was made in either the 6th or 7th year after his migration to Medina.

His ring was inscribed on three lines, the first inscription read "Muhammad", the second "Messenger" and the third "Allah". The scholars are of the opinion that he was given several rings, however, he did not wear a ring every day and would remove his ring when praying. When he wore the ring that had the Name of Allah inscribed upon it he would remove it from his finger before going to the toilet. When he wore an ordinary ring he would sometimes wear it on either his right or left hand.

Before it was forbidden for a man to wear gold, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) had a ring made of gold, as did some of his Companions. When the injunction came, he said, "I will never wear it again."

When the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) passed away, the ring bearing the seal passed to Abu Bakr, then subsequently to Omar and then Othman. During the caliphate of Othman, Muaykeeb was entrusted with its safekeeping. One day as Othman and Muaykeeb were sitting by the well of Arees, near the Mosque at Kuba, Muaykeeb handed the ring to Othman however the ring fell from their hands into the well. Othman immediately ordered the well to be searched but to no avail. Water was hauled up for two days but there was no sign of the ring, it had been lost for ever.

HIS SWORD

It was the custom of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) to name things. He named his sword "Dulfikkar" and its hilt was made of silver. The sword was like those of the tribe of Hanifa who were famous for the sword making skills.

HIS ARMOR

The Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) possessed seven suits of armor all of which were given a name: Dhaatul Fadl, Dhaatul Hawaashi, Dhaatul Wishaah, Fiddah, Saghhdiyyah, Tabraa and Kharnag. At the time of the Prophet's death, Dhaatul Fadl was in pawn to a Jew.

At the encounter of Uhud, which was a very fierce, he wore two suits of armor, one on top of the other, they were those he named Dhaatul Fadl and Fiddah. He also wore a helmet.

PROPHETIC DATA

The names of the Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam):

Muhammad, Ahmad, (both names are mentioned in the Holy Koran in 3:144, 33:40, 47:2, 48:39, 61:61)

Al Mahi, the one whom Allah uses as an eraser of disbelief.

Al Hashir, the one who will be resurrected before anyone else.

Al Aqib, the last prophet.

Al Dahuk, the one who smiles

Al Mutawkkil, the one who entrusts his affairs to Allah..

Al Fatih, the opener.

Al Amin, the trusted.

Al Khatim, the seal
Al Mustafa, the chosen one.
Al Rasul, the Messenger.
Al Nabi, the Prophet.
Al Ummi, the one who did not read or write.
Al Kutham, who gathers the attributes of generosity.

THE NAMES OF HIS GRANDMOTHERS

Ummu Habib
Burrah
Kulabah
Hind

THE NAMES OF HIS WET-NURSES

Thuwaybah
Halima, daughter of Abdullah Al Sadiya

THE NAMES OF HIS ELEVEN UNCLES

Al Harith,
Al Zubair
Abu Talib
Hamza
Abu Lahab
Al Ghaydak
Al Muqawam
Saffar
Al Abbas
Kutham
Hujal

THE NAMES OF HIS PATERNAL AUNTS

Ummu Hakim
Burrah
Atika
Safiya
Arwa
Umayma

THE NAMES OF HIS WIVES, may Allah be pleased with all of them

Lady Khadijah, daughter of Khuwaylid.

Lady Khadijah was forty years of age when she married the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam). She died in Mecca ten years after he became a Prophet at the age of sixty-five, before the five prayers became obligatory. Just before she was buried, the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) climbed down into her grave. She died in the same year as the Abu Talib, the uncle of the Prophet and the year became known as the Year of Sorrow. The Holy Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) did not marry another until after her death.

Lady Khadijah was the first to believe in the message Allah entrusted to him. With the exception of Abraham, all his sons and daughters were from this marriage.

Lady Swaydah, daughter of Zamah.

Lady Swaydah was the first lady to marry the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) after the death of Lady Khadijah. She was fifty years old when he married her in the month of Shawwal in the 10th year of his prophethood.

Lady Ayesha, daughter of Abu Bakr Al Siddiq

Lady Ayesha was the only virgin wife of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam), his other wives were previously married. On Tuesday, Ramadan 17th, 57 Hijra, she passed away at the age of sixty-six and Abu Hurayrah led the funeral prayer.

Lady Hafsa, daughter of Omar the son of Al Khattab

The mother of Lady Hafsa was Zaynab, daughter of Maz'un. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) married her when she was 22 years of age. She was among those who were literate and died at the age of 59.

Lady Zaynab, daughter of Khuzaymah

Lady Zaynab was from the tribe of Hilal bin Amir and was known as "Mother of the Poor" on account of her generosity and care. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) married when she was 30 years old in the 4th year after the migration. She passed away shortly after their marriage

Lady Umm Salama, daughter of Abi Umayya

Lady Umm Salama's full name was Hind, daughter of Abi Umayya. Her mother was Atikah. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) married her when she was 32 years old. She was amongst those who were literate and well versed in religious knowledge and reported over 20 prophetic quotations. Lady Umm Salama died at the age of 90 in the sixty-first year of the migration,

Lady Zaynab, daughter of Jahsh

Lady Zaynab was the cousin of the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam) he married her when she was 36 years of age. She was known for her generosity and was the first wife to pass away after the death of the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). She died in the 20th year after the migration.

Lady Juwayriyah, daughter of Al Harith

Lady Juwayriyah was given her name by the Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). Before that time she was called Birrah. She was the daughter of the chief of the tribe of Mustalik and was taken captive after a conflict with her tribe and embraced Islam. The Prophet (salla Allahu alihī wa sallam) married her when she was 25. She was known for her worshipping. She passed away at the age of 65 during the 15th year after the migration,.

Lady Umm Habiba, daughter of Abu Sufyan

Lady Umm Habiba's given name was Ramla. She embraced Islam in the early years of Islam. When she was in Abyssinia she saw a vision in which she was addressed as "Mother of Believers" and was not surprised when a messenger arrived from Medina with the marriage proposal from the Prophet, (salla Allahu alihī wa salaam). A proxy marriage was performed by the Negus of Abyssinia and upon her return to Medina a formal marriage celebration took place. She was 36 years of age at the time of their marriage.

Lady Safiya, the daughter of Huyay

Lady Safiya was born of Jewish parentage and embraced Islam at Khybar. She was a descendant of Prophet Aaron. Her original name was Zaynab but better known as Safiya. She was from the tribe of Nadir. Before the Prophet's arrival at Khybar she had a vision in which she saw the moon suspended over a city, which she knew to be Medina. In her vision she saw the moon drift towards Khybar and when it reached the city it had come to rest in her lap. Innocently, Safiya told Kinanah her husband of her vision whereupon, in an uncontrollable burst of anger, he struck her violently upon her face saying, "This can mean but one thing, you desire Muhammad the King of Hijaz!" When Lady Safiya was brought before the Prophet (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) he noticed her badly bruised face and asked her about it whereupon she told him of her vision and how after she had related it to her husband he had struck her.

The Prophet, (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) married her in the 7th year after the migration and died at the age of 65.

Lady Maymunah, daughter of Al Harith, son of Hazn

Lady Maymunah's original name was Barra. Her mother's name was Hind. The Prophet, (salla Allahu alaihi wa salaam) married her when she was 63 years old. She was noted for her work of freeing believing slaves. She died at the age of eighty in the 51st year after the migration.

THE MAWALI (SPONSORED BOYS) OF THE HOLY PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Aslam
Ahmar
Osama, son of Zaid
Aflah
Anasah
Ayman, son of Umm Ayman
Thawban
Dakwan
Rafi
Rabah Al Aswad
Zaid, son of Haritrha
Zaid, son of Bawli
Sabik
Salim
Salman Al Farsi
Sulaym
Said Abu Kandir
Shuqram
Dumayra, son of Dumayra
Ubaudullah, son of Abd Al Ghaffar
Fudalah Al Yamani
Mahrn
Midam
Nafi
Nufay
Nubayh
Qakid
Wardan
Hisham
Yasar
Abu Uthaylah
Abu Al Hamra
Abu Rafi
Abu Al Samh
Abu Dumayrah
Abu Muwayhabah
Abu Wakid

THE MAWALIYAT (THE SPONSORED GIRLS) OF THE HOLY PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Umm Ayman

Umaymah

Khudra

Radwa

Salma

Maymunah, daughter of Saad

Maymunah, daughter of Abi Asib

Umm Dumayra

Umm Ayyash

Rukiyah

THE NAMES OF HIS ANIMALS

Horses

Al Sakb

Al Murtajiz

Lizaz

Al Tarf

Al Ward

Al Nahif or Al Lahif

Al Yasub

Camel

Kaswa, it had two other names, Al Adba and Al Jada

Mules

Al Shahba

Al Duldul

Donkeys

Yafur, a gift from the head of the Coptic church in Egypt.

Yazid, the donkey that spoke to the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) at Khybar and told him he was from a long line of donkeys that had carried only prophets.

THE CALLERS TO PRAYER OF THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Bilal, son of Rabah
Amru, son of Ummu Maktun
Abu Mahdhurah Al Jumahi

THE SCRIBES OF THE HOLY PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Abu Bakr
Omar
Othman
Ali
Ubay, son of Ka'b
Zaid, son of Thabit (headed of the committee for writing down the Holy Koran during the life time of the Holy Prophet. Abu Bakr and Othman did the same.
Muawiyah
Hanzala
Khalid, son of Said
Aban, son of Said
Al Ala

THE GUARDS OF THE HOLY PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Saad, son of Abi Wakas
Saad, Son of Muadh
Abbad, son of Bihr
Aby Ayyub Al Ansari
Shakwan, son of Abd Kays
Muhamad, son of Maslamah
Bilal

When the verse “.... And Allah protects you from the people.” 5.67 the Prophet (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) released his guards.

THOSE WHO LOOKED LIKE THE PROPHET (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam)

Jafar, son of Abu Talib
Hasan, son of Ali
Quthan, son of Abbas
Abu Sufyan, son of Abid
Muslim, son of Muattib
Kabis, son of Rabia who was from Iraq from the children of Sama. Such was his likeness that when Anas, son of Malik saw him he would cry, and Muawiya would give him gifts and kiss him between his eye because of his likeness.

CONCLUDING SUPPLICATION

extracted from Koran, Burda and Delail

"We did not send a Messenger except that he should be obeyed,
by the permission of Allah.

If, when they wronged themselves, they had come to you
and asked Allah for forgiveness and the Messenger had asked
for forgiveness for them, they would have found Allah,
the Turner, the Most Merciful.

But no, by your Lord, they will not believe you until they make you the judge
regarding the disagreement between them, then, they will not find in themselves
any discomfort concerning your verdict, and will surrender to you in full submission."
Koran 4.64-65

"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet.

Believers praise and venerate him
and pronounce peace upon him
in abundance."

Koran 33.56

All those blessed to see Prophet Muhammad, (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) could
only describe his noble, blessed features by saying, "I have neither seen anyone like
the Messenger of Allah (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) before nor after him."

Therefore, it is impossible for us in this day and age to comprehend the magnitude of
his beauty, either physically or inwardly.

Imam Al Busairi wrote in his poem "The Cloak"

**(this poem is inscribed upon the walls of the Prophet's Rawdah, the full
version of this poem can be read at the end of the Advanced Supplemental
Section).**

Understanding his meaning rendered the creation incapable.

so it was not understood by those near and far,
just as the sun is seen by the eyes from afar,
it is small yet it weakens the eye when closed.

How can his reality be comprehended in this world?

A sleeping nation amuses themselves with dreams instead of him,
so the ultimate conclusion of our knowledge concerning him, is that he is a human.

And indeed, he is the best of all the creation of Allah
and every miracle brought by other honorable messengers
is connected to them from his light.

Indeed, he is the sun of virtue in which they (*the prophets*), are its planets,
that only display their light to people in the dark.

How noble is the creation of the Prophet, adorned with such an excellent character,
who was vested with beauty and distinguished by glad tidings.

He is like a blooming flower in its freshness, and the splendor of the full moon,
and the ocean in generosity, and the power of the determination of time,
even when alone, it appears because of his grandeur,
as though he is in the midst of a large army and its retinue.

It is like a pearl well preserved in an oyster,

from the two mines, of his speech and smiles.
No perfume equals the dust that touches his body.
Glad tidings be to he who inhales him and kisses him!

It is more than apparent that by attempting to mirror the ways of Prophet Muhammad (salla Allahu alihi wa salaam) there are tremendous blessings with happiness and a rich reward not only in this life but in the Everlasting Life.

CONCLUDING PRAYER

O Allah, we have believed in him, without seeing him,
so let us enjoy, O Allah, a vision of him in the two realms
and keep our hearts always in love with him.
Ameen.

We ask Allah to forgive us for any errors we may have made and to accept our humble effort, and conclude with His Words.

“To Allah belongs the Kingdom of the heavens and the earth.
Allah has power over all things.
Surely, in the creation of the heavens and the earth,
and in the alternation of night and day, there are signs for those with minds.
Those who remember Allah when standing, sitting, and on their sides,
and contemplate upon the creation of the heavens and the earth (saying,)
‘Lord, You have not created these in falsehood. Exaltations to You!
Guard us against the punishment of the Fire.
Our Lord, whomsoever You admit into the Fire
You will have abased and the harmdoers shall have no helpers.
Our Lord, we have heard the caller calling to belief,
‘Believe in your Lord!’ So we believe.
Our Lord, forgive us our sins and acquit us of our evil deeds,
and take us to You in death with righteousness.
Our Lord, give us what You promised us by Your Messengers,
and do not abase us on the Day of Resurrection.
You do not break Your promise.’

And indeed their Lord answers them:
‘I do not waste the labor of any that labors among you,
male or female you are from each other.
And those who emigrated, and were expelled from their houses,
those who suffered hurt in My way, and fought, and were killed
those I shall surely acquit of their evil deeds,
and I shall admit them to Gardens underneath which rivers flow.
A reward from Allah. And Allah, with Him is the best reward.
Do not let the coming and going in the land of those who disbelieve delude you;
a little enjoyment, then, their shelter is in Gehenna (Hell), an evil cradling.

But those who fear their Lord,
for them shall be Gardens underneath which rivers flow,

there they shall live for ever, a (goodly) hosting from Allah,
and that which is with Allah is better for the righteous.
Koran 3:189-198

Ameen

ADVANCED SUPPLEMENTAL INFORMATION

Transmitted and translated into English by Shaykh Ahmad Darwish

Reported and edited by Ryan O'Meallie

Overview

This Advanced Prophetic Biography overview sampling was extracted from the work of authoritative scholar Azurquani's "Explanation of the Divine Gifts by Alkustalani reported by Muhaddith Sayed Abdullah ibn Siddque al-Ghumari and transmitted by Shaykh Ahmad Darwish.

Allah the High's honoring of His Prophet, praise and veneration upon him, regarding the precedence of his prophethood, placing him time-wise at their end.

All the prophets of Allah including Noah, Solomon, Abraham, Moses, John, and Jesus have a unified rank of prophethood. In order to tie this rank and remove the human input of division and nationalistic feud, Allah has chosen Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, with the precedence in his prophethood set before them even while coming after them chronologically. For Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, this is a great honor.

Many scholars spent countless years and time with the involvement of defining who is the Prophet and who is the Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, instead of defining the **spirituality of the Prophethood and Messengership**. Al-Juwaini, the imam of the two Holy Mosques, says the Prophethood of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, is equal to this sentence based on Koranic statements, "He is the Messenger of Allah. He is My Messenger and I in truth witness and support him with miracles."

Moreover, his student, limam Ghazali said that prophethood is what the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, exclusively received and he became specialized in certain characteristics, such as attaining the reality of affairs related to Allah, His attributes, His angels, and the Everlasting Life.

This kind of knowledge is different from that bestowed on any other than him, in that he has an excess of knowledge and an increasing realization and seeing of the Unseen, that is "revelation". Secondly, he has his own personal characteristics that complete miraculous deeds as opposed to simple natural habits. Thirdly, he also has characteristics that complete his movements and activities, done according to his will and another characteristic that he sees with it the angels like that of seeing compared to blindness. Fourthly, he has a characteristic of knowing what will happen in the Unseen.

These characteristics are perfection in that each one has underneath it a more refined and fine grained Prophetic characteristic.

The Prophethood preceded before his eternity

Eternity in this case figuratively means "for a long life." Eternity can be used metaphorically as such for he who has a long life while eternity generally means continuance of existence in equal time spans that have no ends whether in the past or the continuous future. The Eternal is what does not have precedence of ancientness.

Therefore it is understood that Allah, the High is eternal in the past and endlessly eternal in the future.

Whereas life is neither eternal in the past nor in the future.

And the Hereafter was not eternal in the past but eternal in the future.

The Lights of Muhammad – an abridgement of “The Divine Gifts”

In the Name of Allah the Merciful, the Most Merciful

Praise be to Allah who has chosen Adam, Noah, the family of Abraham, and the family of Imran over all the worlds. And he has chosen among them the Arab and from the Arabs he chose Koraysh and from them the household of Hashim, and from them Muhammad the Master of all the messengers.

So he is the choice of the choice and the concentration of the essence and the core of goodness. May Allah praise and venerate him completely and continuously from the beginning before it has begun and at the end infinitely beyond all ends, exclusively and unlimitedly in its count.

May Allah praise and venerate him to perpetually rise in rank among his close family and the Mothers of the Believers and his Companions who are the stars of guidance and who are the stones directed against transgressors, and those who follow them perfectly and conscientiously until the Day of Recompense.

Having said that of the above, may Allah forgive Joseph son of Ishmael of Nabahan, the poor and sinful his faults, and accept his deeds, and let him attain from every good what he wished both in this life and in the Everlasting Life.

Indeed, it is obvious that our master, our lord, our Prophet, Abu Qasim Muhammad, may Allah praise him and give him peace, is in every beautiful description and is the best of the prophets, messengers, and angels in good ranks and the best of all the worshipers of Allah and all of creation in its entirety, whether individually or collectively. Meaning he, Allah praise him and give him peace, is better than every person alone and better than all of them put together. If you put all of their goodness on one scale and his on the other, his value will outweigh them. The only above him is Allah, the High, the Great.

Briefly, you should by now know that there is no way to comprehend all his virtues and that there is no one who can know his reality or all his virtues except Allah.

Knowledgeable scholars continue to dive into his oceans of treasure and extract wonders of pure and unique jewelry. They have decorated the necks of time from what they assemble and spread it to everywhere satisfying the people of elite knowledge and faith.

They wrote and authored books and records, and narrated the news from every truthful and honest scholar. Some author smaller abridgements and do it very well. Some write long encyclopedias and do it well, giving lots of benefit. Finally, some of them strike a middle way and their work is very fine.

Among the abridgers is the outstanding Imam, Judge Iyad who wrote a very beautiful book which he called "As Shefa" (The Cure) and has since spread to all the corners of the world; and has been accepted by all.

Among those who wrote long encyclopedias is Abu Rahman al Ansari, though I have been unable to find his book, but did see a book reporting from his 25th volume. And among the people who took the middle path is Ahmad Shahab Ad Deen of Costolani wrote in his book of two volumes "The Divine Gifts" 'They are the books every traveler carried across all countries and nothing became more famous, concentrated, and more beneficial than this book.'

However, its author, may Allah have mercy on him, added many tangents as proof for principles and branching matters. Different dialogs and supportive proofs were found unripe and occasionally misplaced, a trait noted even by its author. So his book was full of knowledge, large in size and volume, and uniquely qualified for scholars. It is famous among them and widely used, so it became obligatory to abridge it to benefit the scholar and the layman.

I have never found an abridgement for it, though I have read an unbelievable amount of books. When I started, I found one man, Shaykh Ahmad Alwarithi who attempted to do it but died before he had a chance to do so.

Allah has given me the support to do this condensation and for Him, all praise and all the credit is due to Him. Although I kept it fulfilling everything that included the Prophet, I abridged it to leave the core. The sword has been unsheathed and I removed a curtain from an elegant face and a cloud from a beautiful moon.

It came fulfilling all conditions of beauty and its roots and, praise be to Allah, it became half the size of the original. Every aim of the original knowledge is present and it is easy to access and understand. I put every subject in its place, collecting all similarities together. Now I have made it easier and there is no excuse for any believer to be ignorant.

I kept the original wording, having only delayed or advanced the location of things or completed a narration, or an explanation or reported from "Anahaya" from ibn Alatheer.

So I present it in its abridged format for all seekers of knowledge. The sun has been cleared of clouds, having gathered all the beautiful virtues and affairs of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in a size that no other has. It now shares its ease and benefits of knowledge to the scholar, layman, and student alike. I ask Allah the Great, the Lord of the Noble Throne to make it a cause for loving Him, and His Messenger and

that he benefit me and Muslims as he benefited with the original. And that He accepts it from me and forgives me by it, for He is Sufficient and the Best to rely upon. So let us list the traditional prophetic autobiography:

The Honors of Allah and the precedence of his prophethood, the purity of his lineage, the science of his conception, his birth, his suckling, his nursing, the news of his prophethood, his migration, his defensive war, his defensive regiments, his heralds, and his biography arranged chronologically from the beginning of his upbringing to the time of his passing, Allah has venerated him and given him peace.

Mention of his honorable name, his pure children, his pure wives, his uncles, his aunts, his siblings in suckling, his paternal and maternal grandmothers, his servants, his fostering, his guards, his transcribers, his letters to kings and others, his caller to prayers, his lecturers, his poets, his tools of horsemanship, his animals, and his guests.

How Allah has favored him in the perfection of his creation, the beauty of his physique, his fine manners, his pleasing characteristics, and the rest of his life's affairs.

Miracles proving the establishment of his Prophethood and the truthfulness of his Messengership, and what Allah has exclusively given him of special signs and wonderful miracles.

The exclusiveness of characteristics of the Night Journey and Ascent and the general delicate honors in the near station with Allah, by talking and the grand witness.

What the Holy Revealed Book mentions about honoring his value, raising his rank, and the witnessing of Allah to the truth of his prophethood, His swearing that His message will be realized and that his rank will be high and the obligation of obeying him and following his spiritual methods, the allegiance taken over all messengers by Allah to believe and support him if they reach him, mentioning of him in previous books such as the Torah, Gospel, and other books.

The obligation of loving him and following his spiritual methods, following his guidance, the obligation to love his family and Companions, and the detailed obligation of praising, venerating, and evoking peace upon him.

His medicine for those who are sick and disabled, his interpretation of visions, and his revealing the news of the unseen.

The delicate realities of his worshipping.

The completion of the Favors of Allah upon him upon his passing away, the visitation of his honorable tomb and his Mosque, his preference in the Everlasting Life with core values and exclusively gift of success, the assembly of prophets and messengers, exclusively receiving the grand intercession and the praised station in the gathering of all the beginning and the end people, and raising him in Paradise to the highest ranks.

The Honoring of Allah to Prophet Muhammad in the Precedence of his prophethood

In the authentic prophetic sayings reference "Muslimun" it was reported that the Prophet, may Allah praise and venerate him and grant him peace, "Allah the Mighty, the Glorified

has written the destiny of creation before creating the heavens and the earth by fifty thousand years when His Throne was over water. Amongst what He has written which constitutes the essence of the book – is that Muhammad is the Seal of the Prophets.”

Erbod Saria's son reported the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, “Indeed I was with Allah as the Seal of Prophets when Adam lay in his clay shape before the soul was breathed into him.”

Maysarah Adabi asked, “O Messenger of Allah, when were you a prophet?” He replied, “When Adam was between the stage of the spirit and the body.”

Suhay Salih Alhamidani' son said that he asked Abu Jafar Muhammad, son of Ali “How it was that Muhammad preceded the other prophets while coming after them?” He replied, “When Allah took the oath from the souls of the children of Adam and their descendants and made them bear witness (saying, 'Am I not your Lord') Prophet Muhammad was the first to say ‘Yes Indeed.’ Therefore he preceded them though he was the last to be sent.”

Shaykh Taqih Adeen Asouqi tells us, “It has been handed down to us that Allah created the spirits before the bodies therefore the indication of the statement, “I was a prophet...” refers to his honorable spirit or his reality. This reality is something our brains fall short of recognizing, because only our Creator has knowledge of it and those whom He has endowed with His Divine Light. The truth of the reality of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is that Allah has given it the characteristic of prophethood before creating Adam as he created it in preparation, and at that time he overflows with these, therefore he became a prophet and his name was written on the Throne and thereby the angels and others were informed about his honor with Allah. So his reality existed from that time, though his honorable body with the same characteristics came later.

Ashabi said, “A man asked the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, ‘When were you given the prophethood?’ He replied, ‘When Adam was between the stage of the soul and the body, when the oath was taken from me.’” So he is the first prophet of creation but the last to be sent.

Other scholars said that the Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, was exclusively taken from the backbone of Adam before the creation of his spirit because he is the target of human creation, he is its core root and its middle ring.

Imam Ali son of Abu Talib, may Allah honor his face, reported, “Allah never sent a prophet from Adam and those who followed him except that he gave an oath regarding Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, that if he were to be sent while that prophet was alive, he is to believe in him, support him, and charge his nation with the same.”

Shaykh Taqi Adeen Asooqi said regarding the honorable verse, *"And when Allah took the covenant of the Prophets, 'That I have given you the Book and Wisdom. Then there shall come to you a Messenger (Muhammad) confirming what is with you, you shall believe in him and you shall support him to be victorious, do you agree and take My load on this?' They answered, 'We do agree.' Allah said, 'Then bear witness, and I will be with you among the witnesses.'"* 3:81 that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, has the greatness of his high value, which is obvious and by the mere mentioning that if he comes in their time he has to accept him, meaning he is a messenger sent to them,

therefore his prophethood and messengerhood are absolutely general to all creation from the time of Adam until the Day of Judgement. Thereupon, all the prophets and their nations are among his nations. Then his statement "I was sent to all people" is not only subject to the people of his time until the day of Judgement but also before him and now it is clear that his statement "I was a prophet when Adam was between clay and spirit".

Now it is known that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is the prophet of the prophets and therefore it is apparent that on the Day of Judgement that all the prophets are under his flag. Also, in this life during the Night Journey he led all of them in the prayer. Had he appeared in the time of Adam, Noah, Abraham, Moses, and Jesus, peace be upon them, it would have been obligatory on them and all their nations to believe in him and support him, because of the oath Allah took from them.

The purity of his lineage

Eve gave birth to 40 children in 20 births, including Sheath, who was born alone, and from whom Prophet Muhammad's lineage stems. So the light of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, came from Adam to Sheath, and Adam took a bequest not to put this light in any but the pure and goodly females and this bequest continued throughout the centuries until it reached Abu Talib and his son Abdullah, so Allah has protected this admirable lineage from committing any illegitimacy during times of ignorance. This has been as reported by the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, by many of his Companions.

Ibn Abbas reports Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, as saying, "None of illegitimacy gave birth to me, rather I came only via Islamic marriage."

Hisham (son of Muhammad Ibn Kalbi, via his father) said, "I have recorded 500 tribal mothers for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and never came across any illegitimacy or any affairs of ignorance.

Imam Ali, Allah has honored his face, reported the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "I emerged from marriage and I never emerged from illegitimacy from Adam until my father and mother parented me and I have never been touched by any illegitimacy of the people of ignorance."

Ibn Abbas, may Allah be pleased with him and his father, reports the saying of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, "My ancestors never met on illegitimacy and Allah continued to turn me from good males and good females, purified and civilized, and kept passing me through the best of their offspring."

Among the authentic references of Hadith, Bukhari reported that Abu Hurairah, may Allah be pleased with him, said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said. "I was sent through the best centuries of the children of Adam, one century after another until I came to the century I am in."

In the authentic reference of Muslim, Wathila ibn Alasqa' tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Allah chose Kinanah from the children of Ishmael and the Koraysh from Kinanah, and Hashim from the Koraysh, and from the children of Hashim He chose me."

Abbas's son tells us that, the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Allah has created people and put me in the best of their parties and in the best of their branches. He has chosen the tribes and put me in the best of their houses, so that I am the best of them in spirit and the best of them in personality, and the best in lineage."

Omar's son, may Allah be pleased with him, said the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Allah has chosen His creation and He has chosen the children of Adam, and from the children of Adam He chose the Arabs, and from the Arabs He chose me. So I am the choice of the choicest. Whosoever loves the good Arabs, they love them because of me and whosoever hates the Arabs, they hate them because they hate me."

So now it is known that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was not shared by having a brother or sister so that his purity is concentrated. Allah has exclusively made him the aim of prophethood and made him the utmost rank in honor, so if you examine his lineage you will realize the purity of his birth and also realize that he is the offspring of honorable parents, and that he is the Arab Prophet, of the Holy Mosque, the best selection of Hashim, of the Koraysh, and of the Arab branches. The Mosque's honor and lineage and rank and the best eloquence of the tongue and the clearest of logic, and the best of performance, and the most sound in faith, and the most honored individual, and the most honored in lifestyle, from both his father's and mother's side. In addition he is from the most beloved Holy Land of Allah. So he is our master, our guide Muhammad, son of Abdullah who was ransomed from being a sacrifice, grandson of Abd Al Mutallib.

Lineage:

- 1 Muhammad
- 2 Abdullah
- 3 Abd Al Mutallib: Shaybat Al Hamd
- 4 Hashim: Amru
- 5 Abd Manaf: Al Mudthira
- 6 Qusay: Mujma
- 7 Kilab: Hakeem
- 8 Murah
- 9 Kaab – to him all Koraysh used to gather on Friday and he reminded them of the nearness of messengerhood of one of his children (Muhammad) whom he ordered to follow.
- 10 Lu'ai
- 11 Ghalib
- 12 Fiher: Koraysh
- 13 Malik
- 14 An Nadir: Kies
- 15 Kenana
- 16 Khozayma
- 17 Modraka
- 18 Al Yas – it was narrated that he used to hear deep in his bones the "talbia" (the obedient response of happiness and gratitude to Abraham's call to pilgrimage) of the pilgrimages of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.
- 19 Moddar

20 Nizar (little giving) – the light of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was so clear in his face that his father, when he looked at him would continue to give charity claiming it to be little (Nizar) in comparison to that light.

21 Maad

22 Adnan – the collective agreement of all learned Companions of the prophet and scholars is that accurately archiving the lineage of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, past Adnan is impossible due to lack of memory and records.

Abbas's son, may Allah be pleased with him, said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, when mentioning his own lineage never passed Maad son of Adnan, and repeated thrice, "Genealogists are liars (beyond Adnan)".

Abbas's son also said that between Adnan and Ishmael there were thirty fathers but their names are unknown.

Many of his fathers had natural mascara under their eyes and their foreheads smelled of musk and shined with the light of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. During times of drought, such men were sought after to pray for rain so that Allah would respond.

THE ATTEMPT TO DESTROY KA'BA

Abraha, the king of Yemen, when he came to destroy the House of Allah built by Abraham and his news reached the tribe of Koraysh, Abdu Muttalib told the Koraysh, "Abraha will not reach this house because the House has a Lord who protects it." On his way, Abraha captured all the camels and sheep of the Koraysh, among which 400 belonged to Abdu Muttalib. So he led the tribe of Koraysh toward the Mountain of Thabir and thereupon the light of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, was seen as a crescent upon his forehead, directed towards the House of Allah. When Abdu Muttalib noticed that, he said, "O Koraysh, you have been taken care of concerning this matter. By Allah this light has not turned from me except that victory is ours." Thereupon the Koraysh dispersed.

Abraha sent a man of his tribe, when he entered Mecca and looked at the face of Abdu Muttalib, the man was humbled and his tongue tied and failed him, and he fell unconscious and started groaning as a bull does upon its slaughter. When he recovered, he bowed to Abdu Muttalib and said, "I bear witness you are the true master of Koraysh."

Also reported, is that Abdu Muttalib, when he came to Abraha, the great white elephant looked at his face and sat as a camel sits and fell prostrate. Allah made the elephant speak and say, "Peace be upon the light that is in your back, O Abdu Muttalib." Due to these miracles, there was no attempt to harm or kill Abdu Muttalib. When the army of Abraha entered to destroy the honorable Ka'ba, the core center of the House of Allah, the elephant sat, so they beat it harshly in order to make it stand. It still refused. When they dragged it to face Yemen, it stood up, but when they turned it back toward the Kaba, he sat down again. Then Allah sent Abbabeel birds, coming from the Red Sea, each with three stones in its beak and one in each claw. They were the size of lentils and whenever they hit something it would be destroyed. So, they were dropped on the army and whosoever was hit was destroyed. When this started, the army ran away. Abraha was struck and his limbs started dropping one at a time and blood and pus

started to pour from his body. He did not die until his chest collapsed and Allah has referred to this story to His Prophet saying:

"Have you not seen how Allah dealt with the companions of the Elephant?
Did He not cause their schemes to go astray?
And He sent against them flights of birds
Pelting them with stones of baked clay
So that He made them like straw eaten (by cattle)"
Chapter 105 The Elephant

This year was known from there on as the Year of the Elephant, the same year that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born. This story refers to the honor of our Master, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and the beginning of establishing his Prophethood an additional honor and support to his tribe, for the Divine care that had descended upon them, it was on that account the tribes of Arabia respected them, believing in their honor and respecting them above other tribes. Allah had taken care of them and destroyed Abraha's cunning and might, which no other Arab tribe could have withstood.

Allah had sent His relief to the Koraysh and Abdu Mutallib returned to sleep by the place of Ishmael near the Ka'ba, he had been blessed whilst Abraha had failed miserably. As he slept he saw a great vision and woke up in a state of shock. He went to the dream interpreters of the Koraysh and told him his vision. They told him that if his vision were to be realized, a person would come from him in whom the inhabitants of heaven and earth will believe in and that he would be a very clear sign. Later on, Abdu Mutallib married a lady named Fatima, who bore them a son named Abdullah, who was in later years ransomed for 100 camels, and his story is famous.

THE RECOGNITION OF THE JEWESS

Abdullah happened to pass by a Jewess named Fatima who had read the Hebrew Scripture, when she saw Abdullah's handsome face she told him, "I will give you the same number of camels that you were ransomed for if you sleep with me." She had seen the light of the forthcoming prophethood in his face, and wanted to carry the honorable Prophet. So he answered her with this poem, "As for the forbidden, dieing is better than it. And there is no illegality that I can practice. As far as the matter that you desire, an honorable person protects his honor and his religion." Later, Abdu Mutallib came to Wahb, son of Munaf, son of Zohra, who was the master of the children of Zohra in lineage and honor and Abdullah married his daughter, Amina, who was then the best lady in Koraysh in lineage and rank. He wed her on Monday during the days of Mina, during which people made pilgrimage, in the valley of Abu Talib and it was there that the the Prophet was conceived. Later, when Abdullah passed by the Jewess who sought him, she told him, "The light that was in your face before has left, and I wanted that light in me, but Allah has willed otherwise."

CONCEPTION AND BIRTHING

After Amina conceived many miracles started to occur. Sah (son of Abdullah, son of Atasatoori, may Allah be pleased with them) said, "On a Friday night in Rajab, Allah, the High willed the creation of Muhammad in the womb of his mother Amina. Allah ordered Ridwan, an angel of Paradise, to open the Firdous, the highest part of Paradise and a herald in the heavens and earth announced that the treasured light from which the

Prophet was attached, had been placed in his mother's womb and he would be a bearer of glad tidings and a warner. Ka'ab Al Akhbar, the former chief Rabbi, said, "It was called in that night in the layers of heaven and the corners of earth that the treasured light from which the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, was to come would reside that night in the womb of Amina. How blessed is she, how blessed is she!"

The following morning the worshipped statues on earth fell upon their faces. Koraysh had been suffering from a severe drought, but the land turned green and the trees bore fruit that year and travelers came from all directions. That year became known as the year of bestowing of provision and pleasure.

Issac's son reported that Amina used to speak of the Prophet's conception saying at that time she had a vision in which she saw she was carrying the master of her nation. She never felt she was pregnant in the same way other women experience, and neither felt weight nor cravings. The only thing that was different was that she not menstruate. One day as she felt drowsy she had a vision in which it was said, "Do you feel you are carrying the master of humanity?" The angel returned to her near the time of his birth and recited, "I seek refuge for him with the One from the evil of every envious" then told her to name him the 'Praised One', Muhammad."

Ibn Abbas, may Allah be pleased with him said, "Among the signs of Lady Amina's conception was that every animal spoke that night saying 'by the Lord of Ka'ba, the Messenger of Allah has been conceived. Of this life, he is the leader, and the guiding light of its people.'" The thrones of all the kings of the world were cast down. He added, "The savage animals of the west ran towards the east and the savage animals of the east ran towards the west bearing the glad tidings and the inhabitants of the oceans bore glad tidings greeting each other and every month of her pregnancy a caller in heaven and a caller on earth called, 'Bear glad tidings that soon the father of Al Kasim will appear, blessed and enriched.'

Others reported that there was neither a house nor place that did not have a light shining on it and most animals spoke.

Abu Zacharia Yahia son of Aaithe said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was carried in his mother a complete nine months during which she neither experienced pain, intestinal discomfort, or flatulence, or anything else a pregnant woman might expect to feel. She used to say, "By Allah, I have never known of a pregnancy more light than this or greater blessed than this."

She had only been pregnant for two months when her husband Abdullah passed away in Medina, whilst visiting his cousins, the children of An-Najjar, and it was buried in Al Abwa.

Ibn Abbas, may Allah be pleased with them both, reported that when Abdullah passed away the angels said, "Our Lord and our Master, your prophet became an orphan!" so Allah the High said, "I am his Protector and Supporter."

Amru son of Kutaiba said, "My father, who was knowledgeable said, 'As Amina gave birth, Allah said to His angels: Open all of the doors of heaven, and the doors of Paradise.' And the sun was given more shine."

Ibn Abbas reported Amina as saying, "After six months of my pregnancy passed, a comer came to me and said, 'Amina indeed you are carrying the best of the worlds, so when you give birth to him call him Muhammad and keep a low profile, be silent about it.' Later as I gave birth neither man nor woman knew of his birthing, I was alone in the house and Abdu Muttalib was circumambulating around the Kabba when I heard a big sound!" that frightened me a lot. Then I saw the like of a white bird's wing brushing over my chest and my fright went away along with all the pangs of birth. Then I was given a white drink, so I swallowed it and saw ladies as tall as palm trees from the daughters of Abd Munaf surrounding me and I wondered where they were from? They told me I am Assia, wife of Pharoah, the virgin Mary daughter of Imran (mother of Jesus), and the rest are the maidens of Paradise. The birthing pangs became stronger and I heard another great sound far greater than the previous and while I am in this condition a white silk clothe extended between heaven and earth and I heard a voice saying 'Take him away from the sight of people' and I saw men floating in the air and in their hands pitchers made of silver and then I saw birds covering my room. Their beaks and wings were like jewelry and Allah extended my sight so that I saw both ends of earth, east and west. I saw raised three flags, one in the east, one in the west, and one on the Kab'a. The moment of birth arrived and I gave birth to Muhammad. I looked at him. He was prostrating and raising his two fingers towards heaven in humility. Then I saw a white cloud, and it came and overshadowed him so that I could not see him, and heard a voice saying, 'Circulate him from the east and west of the earth, and enter him in the seas in order that they know him, for his name, his description and physique.' Then the cloud returned and disappeared so fast, it was like lightning."

Al Khateeb Al Baghdadi tells us that Amina said, "When I gave birth to the Prophet I saw a great cloud having light and heard in it the neighing of horses and the flapping of wings and the speech of men till it covered him and he was hidden from me. I heard a voice saying, 'Circulate with Muhammad all the earth and present him to every spiritual being among jinn, human, angels, birds, and savages and give him the image of Adam, the knowledge of Shith, and the bravery of Noah, the etiquette of Abraham, the tongue of Ishmael, the satisfaction of Isaac the eloquence of Salih, the wisdom of Lot, the tidings of Jacob, the strength of Moses, the patience of Job, the obedience of Jonah, the struggle of Yusha, and the chastity of David, the love of Daniel, the elegance of Elisha, the protection of John, the self-denial (zoht) of Jesus and immerse him in the manners of Prophets.' Then that cloud cleared from him and there he was holding a green piece of silk and water was trickling upward and a sayer said, 'Muhammad has his grasp over all life, there is no creature but has itself in his firm clutch.' And I looked and saw the full moon and smelled his essence as musk, the purist musk then I saw three people one with a pitcher of silver and the other having a treasure chest of jewelry and the third having a white silk. The silk was spread and from it he took a seal that would make anyone wonder and he washed it seven times from the pitcher, and sealed the Prophet with it. He then wrapped him with the silk and carried him under his wings for a while and then gave him back to me."

Abbas's son, may Allah be pleased with them both, said, "When the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born, Ridwan, the angel guarding Paradise, said in his ear, 'O Muhammad, bear good tidings that you have been given all the knowledge the previous prophets were given, therefore you are more knowledgeable than them, and your heart is braver than theirs.'"

He also reported that Amina said, "When he separated from my body, a light emerged with him that lit between east and west and he landed on earth putting his hands on the ground and he took a handful of earth and raised his hand to the heaven."

Tabarani reported that when he landed on the earth the fingers of his hands were clasped except the index finger, which was extended just like when one exalts Allah.

Fatima, the mother of Othman Ibn Abi Al Aas, said, "Upon the birth of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, I saw the house in which he landed, it was full of light and the stars circulated it and I thought they were going to fall on me."

Al Erbod Saria's son, may Allah be pleased with both of them said, "The Messenger of Allah said, 'I am the worshipper of Allah, the Seal of the Prophets, Adam was still in the state of clay and I will tell you more, I am the supplication of my Father Abraham, and the glad tidings of Jesus, and the fulfillment of the vision of my mother.'"

Immediately after having given birth to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, his mother Amina saw a light shedding light that stretched for him as far as the palaces of Syria.

Al Abbas, the uncle of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "When you were born the earth shone and from your light the horizons lit. And we pass through this shining light to the ways of righteousness."

Sa'ad's son said, "When she gave birth he emerged without a trace of impurity on him."

Regarding the lighting of the palaces of Syria it is a reference to what Allah exclusively gave Syria from the light of his prophethood for it is the center of his kingdom. Ka'ab reported, that in the previous scriptures it is written "Muhammad the Messenger of Allah, his place of birth is Mecca, his migration is to Yathrib and his kingdom is in Syria.

He experienced the miraculous Night Journey to Jerusalem as Abraham, peace be upon him, had previously traveled to Syria, and it is there that Jesus, son of Mary, peace be upon them, will descend. It is the land of the reassembly and resurrection."

Ashafa' mother of Abdu Rahman son of Auf, may Allah be pleased with them, said, "When Amina gave birth to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, he fell into my hands, sneezed and I heard someone say, 'May Allah have mercy on you.' I saw light extend between East and West until I saw some Roman palaces." She said, "I clothed him and laid him down, and soon my skin trembled and I was overcome with fear because he was hidden from me. I heard it said, 'Where have you taken him' and the response 'To the East'" Then she added, "This event continued to be in my thoughts until Allah sent him and so I was among the first to believe him."

Hasan Thabit's son, may Allah be pleased with him, said, "I was a child of seven or eight years, but I understood what I saw and heard. One morning I heard a Jew screaming, 'O Jews! O tribes of Jews! So they gathered around him and said, 'What's the matter with you?' He said, 'The star of Ahmad has risen, the one who was born this night.'"

In Al Hakim's reference, Lady Ayesha, Mother of Believers, may Allah be pleased with her said, "There was a Jew living (trading) in Mecca on the night the Messenger, praise

and peace be upon him, was born. He called upon the Koraysh asking, 'O Koraysh, has any given birth among you?' They said, 'We do not know yet.' So he said, 'Go and see, because tonight the Prophet of this nation has been born and between his shoulders is a sign (having a tiny mane of hair).' So they left and went to ask. It was told to them that a son was born to Abdullah ibn Abdu Mutallib. So the Jew went with them to his mother, and she brought him out. When the Jew saw the sign he fainted and dropped to the ground. Then he said (when he regained consciousness), 'The prophethood has been taken from the Children of Israel. O tribe of Koraysh, by Allah, he will take over in a way that its news will reach from the East to the West.'"

Reported via Jacob Ibn Sufayan, with a sound chain of narrators as reported in the reference "Fatih Al Bari", "Among the wonders of his birth is what was reported of the trembling of the palaces, fourteen rooms collapsed. The Lake Tiberius completely drained. The fire of Persia was extinguished and it had not been out for a 1000 years before that time. This was reported by many people. Also, there was an increase of the guards of the lower sky and flames blocked the paths of devils, who no longer could steal secrets for the practitioners of black magic."

It was reported by Omar and others that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born circumcised, with belly button in tact.

Annas, may Allah be pleased with him, tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Amongst my honored rank with my Lord is that I was born circumcised and nobody saw my privates."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born at dawn on a Monday, the 12th of the lunar month called the "First Spring". He was born in what came to be known as "The Year of the Elephant" and was born fifty days after Abraha's attempt to destroy the Ka'ba.

Abbas's son, may Allah be pleased with them both, said, "The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born on a Monday and became a Prophet on a Monday. He migrated to Medina on a Monday, and entered Medina on a Monday. He raised the stone on a Monday, opened Mecca on a Monday, and the Table Chapter was partially sent down on a Monday. "The Table" chapter is the one with the story of Prophet Jesus asking Allah for the miracle of a table full of food.

Abdullah son of Amru ibn Al Aas, may Allah be pleased with them both, said, "On the way to Az Zahran lived a Syrian monk called Easa who would often say, 'A child in Mecca is about to be born to you. The Arabs will follow him and he will govern non-Arabs. However, this time he asked if any child had been born in Mecca. Abul Muttalib went to visit Easa who, upon seeing him called him then looked at him. Easa told him, "The child I spoke to you about has been born. He was sent on a Monday and he will die on a Monday." Abdul Muttalib told him that a baby had been born to him at dawn that morning where upon Easa asked, "What have you named him." He replied, "Muhammad". Easa was elated and said, "By Allah, for three reasons, I enjoy that he was born of you, O people of the House. First of all his star rose yesterday, and he was born today, and his name is Muhammad."

The night the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born was more valuable than the night of Honor, when the Koran was sent down.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was born in Mecca. (His place of birth is today used as an Islamic Library). He was suckled by Thuwayba, the freed female slave of Abu Lahab, who when he brought news of the birth of Muhammad had set her free.

In the years that followed Abu Lahab became one of the greatest enemies of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and after he had passed he was seen in a vision and he was asked, "What are your circumstances?" He replied, "I am in Hell, but the punishment is lightened every Monday night when I am permitted to suck water from my two fingers. This relief is on account of freeing Thuwayba when she brought me the good news of the birth of the Prophet, and for her suckling of him."

Al Jazari's son commented, saying, "If this is the circumstances of the unbeliever Abu Lahab, whom the Koran condemns by name, and he is rewarded for his expression of joy at the birth of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, then what will be the status of a believer who is happy with birth and spends his time loving him! I swear that the reward from Allah, the Generous is that He will let him enter Paradise on account of His generosity. Those who follow Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, continue to celebrate the month of his birth, sharing feasts whilst practicing willing charity during these nights. They express their happiness and increase in righteous deeds as they recite the news of his birth. Blessings abound during this time, and it is protection for the entire year and the fulfillment of needs. So may Allah have mercy on those who celebrate these nights of his blessed birth!"

THE FOSTERING OF THE PROPHET

Halima, the foster mother of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "I traveled to Mecca in the company of other women from the tribe of Sa'ad Bakr's son, looking for infants in need of suckling.

The year had been difficult for us, and I came riding on a donkey carrying my own baby. We had a sheep or a goat with us and I swear by Allah, that it did not yield a single drop of milk. When we slept we all slept together with my infant and my own milk had ceased.

When we arrived in Mecca the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was presented to all the other would-be foster mothers, but they all refused to take him on account of the fact he was an orphan with no father. By Allah, all except for myself, each of my companions found a child to foster. When I did not find an infant other than him, I told my husband that I was going to take this orphan, and when I went to him I found him wrapped in a white piece of wool. He was whiter than milk and the aroma of musk exuded from him. Underneath him was placed a piece of green silk and he lay on his back breathing deeply. I was touched with compassion for him and did not wish to wake him on account of his delicacy and beauty, so I approached slowly and placed my hand on his chest whereupon he smiled and chuckled, then opened his eyes and looked at me. A light shone from his eyes that went straight up to the heavens, and I kissed him between his eyes. I gave him my right breast to from which to suckle and my breast became full of milk. Later I moved him to the other breast, but he refused and this became his habit all the time. He and his suckling brother were suckled and shortly thereafter I went to my ride, and again both my breasts filled with the milk Allah had willed, and he and his suckling brother drank again.

My companions went to tend to our sheep and found its udder was also full of milk, so we drank and spent a blessed night. My husband remarked, 'O Halima, by Allah, I can see you have taken a blessed soul. Did you not see what a blessed night we had since you took him?' Allah continued to bless us from the time we received him."

Halima made her farewells to Lady Amina and got upon her donkey, and he was handed to her. The donkey became strong and surpassed those of her companions and they never ceased to wonder and they returned home to their fellow tribesmen. Halima said that she knew of no land more barren than theirs but her sheep would always return well fed, yielding a lot of milk. They drank its milk and the other udders of her companions' sheep were dry. Her companions would say to one another, "Let our sheep follow her sheep!" but even so hers returned full of food and yielded milk but theirs did not."

OTHER MIRACLES

The Prophet's uncle, Al Abbas, told the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, that what had prompted him to embrace Islam were the signs of his Prophethood he had seen when he was in his cradle. Al Abbas told him that he had seen him amusing himself with the moon, pointing to it and where he pointed his finger the moon would move. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, then told Al Abbas, "I would speak to the moon and it spoke to me, and it kept me from crying, and I heard its sound when it prostrated under the Throne."

In the authenticated reference "Fath Al Bari" it is reported that he spoke right from the time he was born, and Saaba's son said that the angels would rock his cradle.

Halima tells us that when she weaned the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, he spoke saying, "Allah is the Great, Plenty, and praise be to Allah the Plentiful and exalted is Allah at the dawn and evening." She also said that when he started to grow and saw other children playing he would prefer to be alone and leave them to their play.

As-Shayma was the daughter of Halima and consequently the suckling sister of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. One day she saw a cloud overshadow the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and when he stood, it too arose, but if he moved it moved with him.

The Prophet's rate of growth surpassed that of the other children.

THE MIRACULOUS OPENING OF HIS CHEST

When it was time for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, to return to his mother, Halima tells us, "I took him back to his mother, we were anxious to keep him on account of the blessings we encountered. We begged Lady Amina to leave him in our care because we were concerned about health conditions in Mecca. They continued to discuss the matter until Lady Amina finally allowed him to return with them."

She went on to say, "By Allah, we had only returned a matter of two to three months, when his suckling brother came running from the sheep pens saying, 'My brother, my Korayshi brother! Two men came wearing white clothes, laid him down and split open his chest!' Upon hearing this my husband and I ran towards him and found him standing and his color was somewhat changed. His foster-father hugged him and said, 'O son, what happened?' and he replied, 'Two men in white clothes, laid me down, and split my

chest and took something out and then replaced it.' We returned to our home and his foster-father said, 'Halima, I am worried that something may have happened to him, it is better for us to return him before anything we fear may happen to him.' So we carried him and returned him to Mecca. His mother was surprised and asked, 'What happened, you were so anxious to take him?' We replied, that they were concerned that something might happen to him. Lady Amina said, 'This is not the reason, you must tell me the truth, what happened?' She persisted in her asking and so we told her what had happened. She asked, 'Do you fear that it was satan coming to him? By Allah, it cannot be, satan has no access to him! A great matter is going to occur to this son of mine, so do not worry!'

THE PROPHET EXPLAINS THE EVENT

Shaddad Aws' son, reported that the Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, told them, "I was in the middle of a valley one day, with some children my age during the time of suckling with the children of tribe of Sa'ad, when suddenly a group of three (angels) carrying a golden trough full of ice came. They took me away from my companions and the children ran away in a hurry back to their neighborhood. One of the three laid me gently on the earth and split me between my sternum up to the end of my stomach - while I watched him I did not feel a thing. Then he removed my insides and washed them very well with the ice, then replaced them. The second one asked him to step aside and entered his hand in my insides and withdrew my heart. I looked at him as he put it down and he removed from it a bite sized black clot and threw it away. Then he moved his hand to the right and left while receiving something, and there was in his hand a seal of light, which would make anyone wonder. He sealed my heart with it, so my heart became full of light. This is the light of the Prophethood and wisdom. Then he put it back and I felt the coolness of this seal for a long time. Then the third asked the other to step aside and he moved his hand between my sternum and my stomach and the opening was sealed as it was before, by the permission of Allah. Thereafter, he raised me with my two hands and stood me up gently in my place, and asked the first, 'Weigh him against ten of his nation.' So he weighed me and I outweighed them. Then he said, 'Weigh him with one hundred from his nation' and I outweighed them. Then he said, 'With a thousand' and I outweighed them. Finally he said, 'No more, if you weigh him with the whole of his nation, he will outweigh them.' So they brought me close to their chests and kissed my head and between my eyes and told me, 'O beloved, do not be alarmed! If you knew the good that has been planned for you, your eyes would be satisfied.'"

The author, Joseph Ishmael of Nabahan commented: Weighing here is not physical rather it is by the amount of virtue.

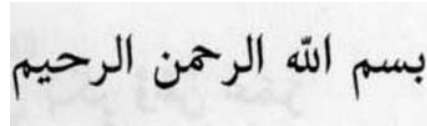
The opening of his honorable chest happened another time when Arch Angel Gabriel, peace be upon him, came with the revelation of the Koran in the cave of Mount Hira and yet another time before the Night Journey.

Finally let us conclude this overview with listing this "Traditional Islamic Certificate of authority to narrate such a great work of the Abridgment (Ijazah)"

This abridgement is narrated to me, Ryan O'Meallie, by my teacher Shaykh Ahmad Darwish via his teacher the Muhaddith Saed Abdullah bin Saddeeq Al Ghumari of Tangier, Morocco via the author.

Shaykh Yusuf son of Ishmael of Nabahan said he narrated the Ijazah from many chains. One of them is my teacher the knowledgeable the Spiritual Leader (Imam) As Shaykh Ibraheem Sqah of Egypt and he via many Shaykhs including Shaykh Thuaylab via his two Shaykhs, Alahmad Almulawi and Ahmad Aljohari and both of them via Abdullah Abu Salam Albasri via Shaykh Mansoor Aturkhi via Shaykh Sultan Amizahi, via Shaykh Nuraddin Azabadi via the center man Abu Hasan Albakri via its author Shahab Addeen of Costolani. All of them are Shafi' and all are Egyptian except Abdullah Abu Salam, may Allah have mercy upon and benefit us by them.

Let us now conclude the overview with this famous poem that praises our beloved Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.



Bor'a

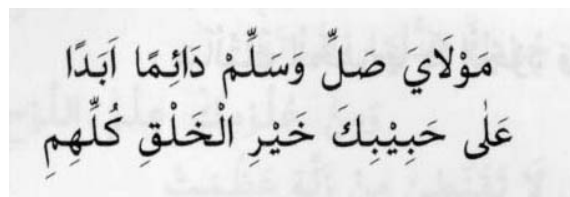
The Poem of the Cure
(famous as **Burdah**)

By

Al-Busairi

Imam Salih Shara-fud-deen Abu Abdullah Muhammad, ibn Hasan Al-Busairi

In Love of Our Master, the Messenger of Allah,
praise and peace be upon him



1ST SECTION: LOVE AND REPROACH

Is it because of the remembrance of the neighbors of Salami
(a place between Mecca and Medina)
that mixed tears run from blood-shot eyes?

Or is it because of the breeze that blows from the direction of Kaazimah
(a valley in Medina)?

Or, is it because of the flashes of lightning in the darkness of the night at Idam?

What has happened to your eyes? You tell them to cease its tears,
but the more they continue to flow.

What is the matter with your heart?
You tell it to come to its senses but it only increases its love,

Does the lover think that his love can be concealed
while his eyes shed tears and his heart is aflame!

Had it not been for love, you would not have shed tears at the ruins of the City of your
beloved.
Nor would you become restless at the remembrance of the Moringa tree,
or the high mountain (*both in Mecca*).

How do you deny love after the testimony,
borne against you by (*such*) reliable witnesses of tears

Love has ingrained two lines of tears and withering,
on your cheeks like a yellow rose and the reddish flower.

Yes, shadowy images of the beloved came to me at night and kept me awake,
and love confronts pleasure with pain.

You who reproach me, regarding my pure love, excuse me,
from me to you, if you are just, you would not reproach me.

My state of love has reached you, my secret is no longer concealed
(*warning of oneself desire to err*)
from those who malign me; and my disease does not cease.

You advised me sincerely; though I did not hear it
indeed, a lover is deaf to those who reproach.

And I accused the advice of reproachful elders,
and the elders are above suspicion in their advice.

2ND SECTION: THE WARNING OF SELF-DESIRE

Indeed, my soul is laden with evil and did not benefit from admonishment,
on account of its ignorance of the warning of gray hair and old age.

And I have not prepared, for good deeds, a feast
for the guest (*that*) has lodged uncovered in my head,

Had I known that I would not be able to honor him,
I would have concealed my secret that has appeared with its marking,

Who is there that can restrain my wayward-self from its waywardness
just as unmanageable horses are restrained by reins?

Do not seek with sinning to break its desires,

indeed, food only increases the desire of the insatiable.

The self is like an infant, if it is neglected it is raised
in continuous suckling, yet, when it is weaned it stops.

Then direct its inclination far from you and beware that it does not overpower you.
Indeed, lust whenever it overpowers (*will*) kill or shame (*your character*).

And guard it while it is grazing in (*the field of*) deeds
if it enjoys pasture, do not let it roam freely.

How often has pleasure been considered good, but in reality it was deadly,
because he does not know there is poison in the fat.

And fear the evil of (*both*) hunger and satiation;
most times hunger (*poverty*) is more evil than overeating.

And shed tears from those eyes that have become full of the forbidden,
and incline to the way of regret,

and oppose (*your*) self (*nafs*) and satan - disobey them both!
And should both of them give you sincere advice accuse them of lying,

and neither obey them as an enemy nor yet as a ruler,
for you know well the deception of (*such*) an enemy or a ruler.

I seek forgiveness from Allah from such sayings without practice,
indeed, I have attributed (*claimed*), through this, offspring from the owner of the barren.

I command you to do good, but, I do not command myself to do the same.
And I was not straight so what then is the use of my saying to you:
"Be straight!"

I have made no provisions of voluntary worship before death,
neither did I offer the prayer nor fast other than that which was obligatory.

3RD SECTION: PRAISING THE PROPHET

I harmed by neglect, the way of the Prophet, who revived the night (*in worship*),
until his feet complained of injury due to their swelling.

And around his stomach he tied and bound, on account of hunger,
a stone upon his delicate skin.

And high mountains of gold (*tried to*) tempt him,
his need assured his self-denial in it, he showed them his higher eliteness

his self-denial increased despite his need,
indeed, need never prevails (*overpowers*) the infallible.

How can such necessities invite to the world?

For he who, had it not been for him this world would not have emerged from its non-existence.

Muhammad is the master of both worlds, (*here and in the Hereafter*) and both creations (*mankind and jinn*), and of both groups, Arabs and non-Arabs.

Our Prophet, the one who commands good and forbids evil. There is none parallel to him, more truthful than he in saying "no" or "yes".

He is the most beloved and for whose intercession is hoped for every fear and sudden fear that will come (*on the Day of Agony*).

He invited to Allah, so those who cling to him cling to a rope that will never break.

He transcends all the prophets in creation and in character, and the other prophets cannot come near to him in knowledge nor yet his noble nature.

All of them did but acquire from the Messenger of Allah many scoops of water from the ocean, or the sucking of two lips from the rain,

and they all stopped before him at their assigned limits, either at a point of knowledge or to gain the puzzlement of wisdom.

For all his meaning and image are complete, and then the Creator of all souls selected him as His most beloved.

He is removed from having an equal in his magnificence the jewel of excellence in him is indivisible.

Discard the like of the claim of the Christians about their prophet, and freely decide and say what you wish in praise (of Prophet Muhammad,)

and attribute towards his personality whatever you wish of excellence, and attribute to his dignified status as much honor as you wish,

indeed, the excellence of the Messenger of Allah has no bounds, that a speaker might be able to express by his tongue.

If his miracles were proportionate to his rank, in greatness, then his name would have, when called out, brought crumbling bones back to life.

He did not try to test us with that which would render our minds incapable about him, out of his care for us, neither were we suspicious nor wondered.

Understanding his meaning rendered the creation incapable. so it was not understood by those near and far,

just as the sun is seen by the eyes from afar,

it is small yet it weakens the eye when closed.

How can his reality be comprehended in this world?
A sleeping nation amuses themselves with dreams instead of him,

so the ultimate conclusion of our knowledge concerning him is, that he is a human.
And indeed, he is the best of all the creation of Allah

and every miracle brought by other honorable messengers
is connected to them from his light.

Indeed, he is the sun of virtue in which they, (*the prophets*) are its planets,
that only display their light to people in the dark.

How noble is the creation of the Prophet, adorned with such an excellent character,
who was vested with beauty and distinguished by glad tidings.

He is like a blooming flower in its freshness, and the splendor of the full moon,
and the ocean in generosity, and the power of the determination of time,

even when alone, it appears because of his grandeur,
as though he is in the midst of a large army and its retinue.

It is like a pearl well preserved in an oyster,
from the two mines, of his speech and smiles.

No perfume equals the dust that touches his body.
Glad tidings be to he who inhales him and kisses him!

4th SECTION – HIS BIRTH

His birth distinctly showed his pure, good origin,
Oh, the excellence, of his beginning and his end!

On that day (*of birth*) the Persians discovered
and were warned of the approach of misfortune and punishment.

The walls of the palace of Chosroes trembled and crumbled,
and his army became scattered, never again to be united.

And the fire of the Persians took a cool breath (*and died*), out of regret.
While the rivers of Persia had sleepless eyes (*became still*) from excessive sorrow.

(*The Persian village*) Sawah became grief stricken with the drying up of its lake.
And the water-drawer returned in anger; disappointed.

It was as though fire contained the wetness of water through grief,
while water contained the blaze of the fire.

And the jinn hailed and the lights shone,
and the truth appeared from the meaning and its word.

They became blind and deaf to the heralding of glad tidings,
they did not hear, nor yet was the light of warning seen by them,

even though soothsayers had informed the people
that their crooked religions would not stand.

And even after they witnessed shooting stars on the horizon,
falling, just as their idols were falling on earth,

so much so that they kept running from the path of Revelation, defeated,
the devils - one after the another, defeated

as though in their running away they were the heroes of Abrahah.
Or, like the army upon whom pebbles were thrown from the palm of his hand,

after they (*the pebbles*) had exalted Allah in his blessed palms.
Or, as the exalter, (*Prophet Jonah*) was cast out of the stomach of the whale.

SECTION 5 – THE MIRACLES OF THE PROPHET

The trees answered his call, prostrating,
walking towards him on their stumps without feet,

as though they were ruling lines that were drawn,
and with their branches they wrote perfect calligraphy everywhere.

Like the cloud wherever he went walking,
sheltering him from the intense, oven like heat, of the blaze of mid-day.

I take an oath by the moon that was split – that for him
in his heart is the relationship of a valid oath.

What good and generosity the cave contained,
while every eye of the disbelievers was blind to him.

In the cave, the truth and the truth verifier never left
and they said with certainty, "There is no one in the cave!"

They thought a pigeon and a spider would neither
lay an egg, nor spin a web for the best of creation.

The protection of Allah dispensed with double
from armory and high forts,

whenever time burdened with harm and I sought refuge in him,
I received shelter from him that was not unfulfilled.

I never asked for the wealth of the two worlds from his hand,
but, I received a generous gift, the best hand that ever gave.

Do not deny that his vision is a Revelation for him indeed
a heart that when eyes slept it did not sleep,

And such was at the beginning of his prophethood,
in which the status of maturity cannot be denied.

Blessed be Allah that the Revelation is not earned,
nor was the Prophet accused about the Unseen.

How often has his palm cured sickness by his touch,
and set free the seeker of forgiveness from the chain of sins.

He revived the year of famine through his supplication,
until it resembled a white blaze on black times,

by means of a cloud that rained so abundantly you would think that upon the plains
a flow of water had come from the sea, or, like the torrential flood in the valley of Arim.

SECTION 6: THE HONOR OF KORAN AND ITS PRAISE

Allow me to describe his clear miracles,
as clear as that of the hosting beacons for guests on the hillside at night.

The beauty of a pearl is further enhanced in a necklace,
but its value does not diminish if it is not strung.

So why shouldn't the ambitions of those who praise increase
towards him, he of noble character and good habits.

Verses of truth from the Merciful, freshly revealed,
eternal, an attribute of who is described with eternity.

They are never joined with time, yet they inform us
of the Day of Appointment as well as (*the bygone times of*) Aad and Iram.

They remain with us forever, therefore they are superior to any miracle
from all the prophets as they appeared but did not remain.

They are absolutely clear, so that there is no room left for doubt
by its dividers, they do not want a judge.

Whenever (*the verses*) were fought against, the outcome of the war was
that the vehement enemy surrendered to them.

Their eloquence refuted the accusations of their objectors,
just as a jealous person protects the forbidden from a transgressor.

For them the meaning is like the waves of the ocean in continuous increase,
and they transcend its reality in both beauty and value.

Their wonders cannot be counted, nor yet comprehended,
and they are not faced by tiredness through its constant repetition.

They cool the eye of its reciter, so I said to him
"You have won with the hope of Allah, therefore, hold steadfastly to it.

If you recite them through fear of the heat of the Blazing Fire,
then you have doused the Blazing Fire with its sweet water."

They are the Pool (*of Al Kawthar*) with which faces of those sinners are whitened,
as they come to it with faces as coal.

It is like the Straight Bridge, like the scales in equilibrium,
justice, without which, people cannot be established.

Do not be astonished if the jealous person sets about rejecting them
feigning ignorance while their understanding is shrewd.

Indeed, the eye denies the ray of the sun due to cataracts,
the mouth denies the sweet taste of water due to sickness.

SECTION 7: THE NIGHT JOURNEY AND ASCENT

O best (*Prophet Muhammad*), to whom the seeker of knowledge and virtue aim for his
hosting
as they stride and mount upon the backs of sturdy camels.

It is he who has the grand sign for whosoever heeds,
and it is he who is the greatest favor for whosoever avails themselves of it.

You traveled by night from one Sacred Place (*Mecca*) to another (*Jerusalem*),
just as the full moon travels through the intense darkness.

And you continued ascending until you attained a rank, (*a nearness*)
just a distance of two bows' length; that has never been attained nor sought.

But you were preferred because of it (*rank*) by all the prophets
and messengers, just as lovers give to their beloved.

You passed through the seven heavens in which they were
in a procession and you were the standard bearer,

until you left no aim for which a runner might strive
in nearness nor any advancement for a seeker.

You lowered every rank by your advance when
you were called, elevated, as the exclusive center-point.

In order that you win to connect anyone hidden
from all eyes, and (*the winning*) of well concealed secrets.

So you attained every pride without sharing,
and you surpassed every rank in which there is no crowd,

and what you were given of ranks was glorified in value
and above all comprehension are the favors conferred upon you!

Glad tidings people of Islam for us,
from his caring, a pillar that will never be destroyed.

When Allah called to His worship, our inviter
the most honorable Messenger, we became the most honorable among nations

SECTION 8: THE STRUGGLE OF THE PROPHET

The hearts of his enemies were struck with terror by the news of his advent,
just as heedless goats stray, the herd becomes scattered by a powerful cry.

In every battle he never ceased to encounter them
until, by the thrust of spears they became like meat on a chopping block.

They wish they could flee and would be about to be envied on account of it
and their limbs were carried off by vultures and eagles.

Nights would pass without them knowing the number -
as long as it was not a night in the Sacred Months.

It is as though the religion of Islam was a guest that visited their hosting,
with every brave warrior anxious for the flesh of the enemy of Islam.

He would lead an ocean of the army on galloping horses
and the enemy were struck by a massive wave of courageous warriors.

For each responding warrior, his reward is with Allah,
attacking to uproot disbelief and to sever it,

until the religion of Islam became of them,
reunited after estrangement from her family,

yet always protected by the best righteous father
and the best righteous husband so she neither became an orphan, nor a widow.

They were mountains, so ask their opponents,
what they saw of them in each struggle.

Ask Hunain, and ask Badr, and ask Uhud.
The types of death were more bitter than an epidemic to them.

The white shining swords became wetted with blood
after they were plunged into every blackened neck of their enemies.

As if they are writers in black ink with spears in which
their pens did not leave a single letter of the body unwounded.

Unsheathed weapons is the characteristic that distinguished them,

just as a rose is distinguished by its aroma from that of a flower with none.

The winds of victory would gift you with their fragrance,
so you would think of a field of flowers in which every brave man is a flower in bloom.

As though they were, when on horse-back, like sturdy shrubs on hills,
because of the firmness of their strength, not because of the firmness of the strap of
their saddle.

The hearts of the enemies shook in terror due to their strength,
they could not distinguish between a lamb and a mighty warrior.

He who has the victory of the Messenger of Allah with him -
even if a lion should meet him in its den, it becomes fearful,

and you would never see a friend unvictorious by him,
nor yet would you find an enemy, except defeated.

He lodged his nation in the fort of his religion,
like a lion that lodges with its cubs in a den.

How many times did the Words of Allah render the debater incapable concerning him,
and many clear proofs overcame the adamant debater.

Knowledge suffices you in the unlettered for a miracle
in an era of ignorance, and such noble etiquette in an orphan.

SECTION 9: ASKING ALLAH BY THE MESSENGER

I served him with praise asking with it to be pardoned
the sins of a lifetime passed in poetry and servitude (*to others*),

these two have garland me with consequences that I fear,
due to them I am as if, like an animal to be offered as a ransom.

I obeyed the misleading passions of youth in both conditions
and achieved nothing except sin and remorse.

What a loss of oneself in its trading!
It did not purchase the Everlasting life with this life, nor did it barter.

And whosoever sells his Hereafter for his present life
the loss will be clear to him in his sale, and later in delivery.

If I come upon a sin my covenant is not broken
with the Prophet, nor is my rope severed,

for indeed, I have a covenant from him because of my name, by being named
Muhammad, while he is the most of all creation in fulfillment of covenants.

And if at my resurrection, he should not take me by my hand

through kindness, then say, "O, what a slipping of the foot",

Perfection is his where no seeker of generosity will be prevented
or an implorer will return from him without a response.

And since I have devoted my thoughts to his praising
I have found him to be the best sponsor for my salvation.

Richness from him will never bypass the hand of the needy
for indeed, rain causes flowers to bloom on the high-lands.

And I did not wish for the pleasures of life which were taken
by the hands of (*the poet*) Zuhair for his praise (*of King Harem*).

O most generous of mankind, I have no one with whom to seek refuge
except you at the occurrence of the Grand Eventful Day.

And, O Messenger of Allah, your universal generosity will not diminish, because of me
when the Most Generous One is beautified with the Name of Vengeance. .

For in truth, amongst your bounties is this life, and its counterpart
and from your knowledge is the knowledge of the (*Protected*) Tablet and the Pen.

O my soul, do not become despondent because of your grievous sins,
indeed, major sins, when pardoned are minor.

Perhaps, when the mercy of my Lord is distributed
it will be proportionate to the sins.

O my Lord (*Allah*)! Do not let my hopes be reversed
with You, and make my reckoning of deeds demolished.

Be kind to Your worshipper in both the worlds, indeed for him/her
patience when called upon by hardship does not count.

So permit clouds of perpetual praising from You
upon the Prophet, overflowing and continuous,

for as long as the branches of the Moringa tree sway with its good perfumed breeze
and as long as the camel singer enchants the camels with melodies.

And let the pleasure be upon Abu-Bakr and Omar,
Othman and Ali; those of nobility,

and upon his family, the Companions, then upon those who follow them for they
are the people of piety, purity, clemency and generosity.

The end

THE RIGHTS OF THE PROPHET, PRAISE AND PEACE BE UPON HIM, DUE FROM HIS FOLLOWERS

(The following is an extract from the work of Judge Eyad written over 800 years ago, entitled "Shefa" - "The Best Biography of Prophet Muhammad". This work may be downloaded free of charge at www.Allah.com)

THE OBLIGATION TO BELIEVE AND OBEY HIM AND FOLLOW THE WAY OF THE PROPHET (SUNNAH)

The obligation to believe him, praise and peace be upon him

Allah tells us to, "*Believe in Allah, and His Messenger, and in the Light which We have sent down.*" 64:8. He speaks of the Prophet saying, "*We sent you (Prophet Muhammad) as a witness and as a bearer of glad tidings and warning, so that you believe in Allah and His Messenger and that you support him, revere him (Prophet Muhammad), and exalt Him (Allah) at the dawn and in the evening.*" 48:8-9. He also says, "*Believe in Allah and His Messenger, the Unlettered Prophet.*" 7:158.

From these verses it is made known to the individual that there is an obligation to believe in Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. Without it, belief is incomplete because one's belief is only valid with the belief in the Oneness of Allah and the acceptance and belief in Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. Allah warns, "*Whosoever disbelieves in Allah and His Messenger; We have prepared a Blazing Fire for the unbelievers.*" 48:13.

Abu Hurayrah heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, say, "I have been ordered to struggle with people until they bear witness that there is no god except Allah, and believe in me, and what I have brought. When they do this, their blood and property are protected from me, except when an Islamic right is violated. Their reckoning is with Allah."

The meaning of belief in the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is that one bears witness to his prophethood, the Message Allah entrusted to him, being supportive of all that he brought and said. What is in one's heart is then born witness by the tongue, that he is indeed the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him.

This meaning of belief is ratified by the hadith in which the Archangel Gabriel came to the Prophet and said, "Tell me about Islam." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "It is that you bear witness that there is no god except Allah and that Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah" Then Gabriel asked him about the meaning of belief to which he replied, "It is that you believe in Allah, His Angels, His Books and His Messenger... (and then mentioned the third pillar of Islam, Ihsan - perfection)."

Belief in the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, implies the acceptance of the heart whereas Islam only demands its verbalization. However, if the testimony is simply upon the tongue without the confirmation of the heart, that is tantamount to hypocrisy. Allah speaks of the hypocrites saying, *"When the hypocrites come to you they say, 'We bear witness that you are the Messenger of Allah.' Allah knows that you (Prophet Muhammad) are indeed His Messenger, and Allah bears witness that the hypocrites are truly liars!"* 63:1. Such people lie with their tongues concealing what is really in their hearts and such testimony has no benefit in the Everlasting Life because their witnessing is incomplete and they will join the unbelievers. As for their punishment it will be in the deepest part of the Fire, below that of the unbelievers. However, in this life because they uttered the verbal testimony such people are judged by Muslim judges to be Muslims, because judges do not have access to see the reality of what is in the heart. Judges have been forbidden to investigate the reality of a person's witnessing because the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, censured the actions of a certain person by asking him, "Why then didn't you split open his heart?" Verbal testimony is part of Islam and confirmation with the heart is part of belief.

There are however, other aspects that lie between the two and the question arises if someone accepts in his heart but dies before he had a chance to bear witness with his tongue what then is his status? Scholars differ in their opinion. Some are of the opinion that there is a precondition that the verbal witnessing should have been uttered to complete his faith. Others hold the opinion that the person died as a believer and will enter the Garden. Their opinion is based upon the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that reads, 'Whosoever has an atom's weight of belief in his heart will come out of the Fire.' Because the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, only spoke of what was in the heart, the sound opinion is that the person neither resisted nor yet was negligent by not uttering the witnessing.

Also, the question is raised about the condition of someone who believes in his heart but waits for a long time to bear witness, knowing full well that it is a necessity, or, perhaps neither speaks nor testifies to it even once during his entire life, there is also a difference of opinion as to his status. Some scholars say he is a believer because inwardly he has confirmed it, but because his witnessing is part of the requirement, then he is considered to have resisted by not doing so and will remain in the Fire for ever. It is also said that such a person cannot be considered as a real believer until he accompanies his belief with the verbal testimony. This is because testifying means entering into a contract and is a requirement of belief. The most sound opinion is that a delayed confirmation is only completed when the verbal testimony is uttered.

The obligation to obey the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him

There is an obligation upon all Muslims that requires obedience to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. This obligation is made apparent in the Koran which he delivered. Allah says, *"Believers, obey Allah and His Messenger, and do not turn away from him when you are hearing. Do not be like those who say, 'We hear,' but they do not listen."* 8:20. And, *"Say, 'Obey Allah, and obey the Messenger If you obey him, you shall be guided."* 24:54. *"Obey Allah and the Messenger in order to be subjected to mercy."* 3:132. *"Whosoever obeys the Messenger, indeed he has obeyed Allah."* 4:80. And, *"Whatever the Messenger gives you, accept it; and whatever he forbids you, abstain."* 59:7. *"Whosoever obeys Allah, and the Messenger, they are with those*

whom Allah has favored." 4:68. *"We did not send a Messenger except that he should be obeyed, by the permission of Allah."* 4:63.

In these verses Allah clearly states that when someone obeys His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, he is in fact also obeying Allah. Obedience to whatever Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, commanded and abstaining from whatsoever he forbade are synonymous to being obedient to Allah. Allah also speaks of the reward for such obedience and warns of the punishment that will fall upon whosoever disobeys.

Abu Hurayrah heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Whosoever obeys me has obeyed Allah. Whosoever disobeys me has disobeyed Allah. Whosoever obeys my envoy has obeyed me and whosoever disobeys my envoy has disobeyed me."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, also said, "When I forbid you to do something, abstain. When I command you to do something, do as much as you are able."

As for the unbelievers who resist the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Allah informs us, *"On that Day when their faces are turned about in the Fire, they shall say, 'Would that we had obeyed Allah and obeyed the Messenger!'"* 33:66, but it is too late and their wishful thinking will be of no benefit to them, it will be a constant source for regret.

Abu Hurayrah recalled the time when the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the Garden, and said, "All of my nation will enter the Garden except those who refuse." The Companions asked, "O Messenger of Allah, who will refuse?" He replied, "Whosoever obeys me will enter the Garden whereas whosoever disobeys me has refused."

Another time the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions. "My likeness and the likeness of what Allah has sent me with is like a man who comes to his people saying, 'O people, I have seen the army with my own eyes, and I am a sincere warner – save yourselves!' One group of his people obey him and travel at nightfall, they go at their leisure and are saved. Another group reject him and remain. The army arrives in the morning and they are annihilated. Such is the likeness of those who obey me and follow what I bring, and the likeness of those who disobey me and belie what I bring,"

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, drew another simile saying, "It is similar to a person who builds a house and then prepares a fine feast in it and sends forth a summoner. Whosoever answers the summoner enters the house and eats from the feast, whereas whosoever does not answer the summoner neither enters the house nor eats from the feast."

The "house" referred to in the preceding hadith means the Garden and the "summoner" is Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. Whosoever obeys the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, has obeyed Allah, whereas whosoever disobeys the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, has in fact disobeyed Allah.

The obligation to follow the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and obey his prophetic way

Allah says, *"Say, 'If you love Allah, follow me (Prophet Muhammad) and Allah will love you, and forgive your sins.'"* 3:31. He also says, *"Believe in Allah and His Messenger, the Unlettered Prophet, who believes in Allah and His Words. Follow him in order that you are guided."* 7:158. And, *"But no, by your Lord, they will not believe you until they make you the judge regarding the disagreement between them, then, they will not find in themselves any discomfort concerning your verdict, and will surrender to you in full submission."* 4:65.

From the preceding verses it is very clear that there is an obligation to follow, obey and be guided by Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. Allah also speaks of His Prophet's exemplary character saying, *"In the Messenger of Allah you have a fine example for he who hopes for Allah and the Last Day."* 33:21. At-Tirmidhi explained that 'a fine example' means that one should emulate him by following his way of life and neither oppose him in either word or action.

Verse 7 in "The Opener" reads *"The path of those upon whom You have favored"*. Sahl explained that it means to follow the prophetic way. Whosoever follows the command of Allah to do this is promised by Him that they will be guided because Allah sent Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, with His guidance and the religion of truth to purify us, and to teach us the Holy Koran coupled with the wisdom, all of which guides to the Straight Path.

In the verse that reads *"If you love Allah, follow me (Prophet Muhammad) and Allah will love you, and forgive your sins"* 3:31 it is understood that whosoever follows the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, preferring him over and above personal desires and inclinations will be forgiven by Allah.

Ka'b, Ashraf's son and some others who were either Jews or Christians went to the Messenger of Allah one day and told him they loved Allah. The Jews and Christians also claimed, *"We are the children of Allah and His loved ones."* 5:18 Hasan Al Basri tells us that it was on account of their claim that they loved Allah that Allah sent down the verse *"Say, if you love Allah, follow me (Prophet Muhammad) and Allah will love you."* 3:31. Allah makes it clear that His love will come upon those who follow His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.

We are told by Az-Zajjaj that the phrase *"if you love Allah"* means that if you sincerely desire to obey Allah then you should follow His command because the love of a worshiper of Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, lies in obedience and being pleased with the commands of both Allah and His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. The love of Allah for such worshipers is that He pardons them and blesses them with His Mercy. Our attention is drawn to the fact that love from Allah manifests itself in protection and success, whereas the love of a worshiper manifests itself in obedience.

A poet wrote:

"Do you disobey Allah when you claim to love Him?

By my life, this is a strange example!

If your love had been true, then you would have obeyed Him.

The lover obeys the one he loves."

It has been explained that the love of a worshiper is expressed in his exaltation of Allah and in his awe of Him, and the love of Allah for His worshiper is the mercy He bestows together with His concern for him.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, warned, "You must follow my prophetic way and the way of the rightly guided Caliphs. Cling to it voraciously and beware of new things. New things are innovations and each innovation (that is not in the Spirit of Islam) is misguidance." In addition to this warning Jabar reported having heard, "Each misguidance is in the Fire."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, called upon his Companions to obey and take action saying, "Do not let any one of you be found reclining on his bed after hearing news of my order that either commands or forbids, so that later on he says, 'I do not know, I follow only what is found in the Book of Allah.'"

Lady Ayesha, Mother of Believers, may Allah be pleased with her, tells us that the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, would do something in order to simplify a matter for his followers. However, there were some who were negligent from its doing. When news of their negligence reached the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, he would praise Allah and say, "What do you think of people who neglect to do something I myself do? By Allah, my knowledge of Allah is greater than theirs and my fear of Allah is greater than theirs!"

Regarding those who oppose the Koran, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "For those who hate the Koran, it is hard and difficult (for them to bear), it is their judge. Whosoever clings to what I say, understands and retains it, it will be like the Koran for him, but whosoever considers the Koran and what I say as being unimportant and disregards it will lose this world and the Hereafter. My nation is commanded to take my words, obey my commands and follow my prophetic way. Whosoever is pleased with my words is pleased with the Koran, and Allah instructs, '*Whatever the Messenger gives you; accept it*'" 59:7.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, described his followers saying, "Whosoever follows me is of me, but whosoever abandons my prophetic way is not of me." Abu Hurayrah tells us that he told them, "The best speech is the Book of Allah and the best guidance is the guidance of Muhammad. The worst matters are innovations (that are not in the spirit of Islam)."

On another occasion the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of knowledge saying, "There are three types of knowledge; a precise verse, an established prophetic way, and a just share of inheritance. All other knowledge is superfluous."

Al Hasan said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "The doing of a little of my prophetic way is better than doing a lot of an innovation (that is not in the spirit of Islam)."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gave the good news that Allah will bring a person into the Garden on account that the person clung to his prophetic way.

The importance of clinging to the prophetic way when corruption abounds is reported by Abu Hurayrah who heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Whosoever clings to my prophetic way in a corrupt society will be rewarded with the reward of a hundred martyrs."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, warned of times to come saying, "The children of Israel divided into seventy-two sects. My nation will divide into seventy-three, all will be in the Fire except one." The Companions asked who would be the exception whereupon he replied, "They are those who establish themselves on what I and my Companions do today."

Bilal, Al Harith's son recalled the indication of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that a time will come when his prophetic quotations will be neglected and people will follow innovations (that are not in the spirit of Islam). The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever revives any of my prophetic ways that have abandoned after me will receive the reward of all those who act upon it without decreasing any of their reward. Whosoever introduces a misguided innovation which is not pleasing to Allah and His Messenger will have the like of all those who act upon it without decreasing their burden."

Anas reported the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "Whosoever revives my prophetic way has revived me, and whosoever does this will be with me in the Garden."

The narrations of the early generations of Muslims and the esteemed learned persons concerning the following of the prophetic way and accepting the guidance of the Prophet

The father of Abdur Rahman was asked by his nephew, "In the Koran we find the prayer when one is fearful, and the prayer at home, but we cannot find the prayer of a traveler." The father of Abdur Rahman replied, "Allah sent Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, to us when we did not know anything, we did what we saw him doing."

The son of the Caliph Omar, Abdul Aziz's said, "The Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, had his prophetic way and the leaders that came after him made ways. To adopt them is to confirm the Book of Allah and to act upon them is obedience to Allah and the strengthening of the religion of Allah. No one should change or alter the prophetic way or consider the opinion of those in opposition. Whosoever follows the prophetic way is guided, and whosoever seeks help by it will be amongst those who win. Whosoever opposes it and follows a path other than that of the believers Allah will assign to him that which he turns to and roast him in Hell, and that is an evil arrival."

Shehab's son heard the saying of knowledgeable people that if one holds fast to the prophetic way it is a means of salvation.

During the caliphate of Omar, Al Khatab's son, Omar sent a letter to his governors instructing them to learn the prophetic sayings relating to the shares of inheritance and dialects. He wrote, "People will try to argue with you (using the Koran), when this occurs overcome them with the prophetic way. The people who follow the way of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, have the greatest knowledge of the Book of Allah."

When Omar prayed two units of prayer at Dhu'l Hulayfa he was asked why he had done so. He replied, "I do what I saw the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, doing."

Imam Ali joined the Greater Pilgrimage and the Lesser Pilgrimage together whereupon Othman, who was unaware of the validity of joining asked, "Who has told you to do this, when I have forbidden the people to do so?" Ali respectfully replied, "I do not abandon the way of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, in preference to the statement of another."

Imam Ali said, "I am neither a prophet nor have I received a revelation, rather I act according to the Book of Allah and the prophetic way of Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, as much as I can."

Omar's son spoke of the prayer of the traveler saying, "The prayer of the traveler consists of two units of prayer, whosoever opposes the prophetic way is an unbeliever."

Ubay, Ka'bs son stressed the importance of following Allah and the prophetic way saying, "You must follow the path of Allah and the prophetic way. The worshiper whose eyes overflow with tears out of fear of Allah as he follows the path of Allah and the prophetic way, will never be subjected to the punishment of Allah. A worshiper who follows the path of Allah and the way of His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and whose skin trembles out of the fear of Allah at His remembrance can be compared to a tree whose leaves are dry. In the same way that a blustery wind smites it and causes all of its leaves to fall, the sins of the worshiper fall from him just as the dried leaves fall. No matter how minor a person's action maybe following the way of the Prophet, it is far more beneficial than striving hard on the (misguided) path of innovation (which is against the spirit of Islam). Therefore, one must examine one's actions see whether they are in compliance with those of the prophets and their prophetic ways or those of striving against them."

The Caliph Omar Abdul Aziz received a letter from one of his governors that spoke of the deterioration of conditions in his province and the increase of thievery. He asked whether or not he should arrest such people on suspicion or only when clear proof was presented to him that was in accordance with the prophetic way. Omar replied, "Arrest them only when there is clear proof in accordance with the prophetic way. If the truth does not correct them, Allah will not correct them."

Commenting on the words of Allah, "*Should you dispute about anything refer it to Allah and the Messenger.*" 4:59, Omar explained that it means that in the case of disagreement one should consult the Book of Allah and also the prophetic way.

One day Omar was heard saying as he stood before the Black Stone in Ka'ba. "You are only a stone and can neither help nor harm. If I had not seen the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, kiss you, I would not kiss you" and he kissed it.

Abdullah, Omar's son was observed making his she-camel turn about in a certain place and was asked why he had made her do this. He replied, "I do not know. Once I saw the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, doing it, so I do it."

The father of Othman Al Hiri said, "Whosoever places the authority of the prophetic way above himself either by word or deed speaks with wisdom. But whosoever gives passion authority over himself speaks by innovation."

Sahl At-Tustori described his school of jurisprudence saying, "The foundations of our school are three: following the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in character and actions, eating that which is lawful, and making our intention sincere in all actions."

The jurist Ahmad, Hanbal's son said, "One day I was with a party of people who stripped off all their cloths and went into the water. I applied the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that says, 'Whosoever believes in Allah and the Last Day should enter the baths in a loin cloth' so I did not strip. That night I had a vision in which a voice said to me, 'O Ahmad, Allah has forgiven you because you implemented the prophetic way and He has made you an imam who will be followed.' I asked, 'Who are you?' He replied, 'Gabriel'"

The danger in opposing the right of the Prophet to be obeyed
(Before reading this section one should understand that any good innovation promoting activities in the Spirit of Islam is encouraged and never condemned. Those who condemn activities that reflect the Spirit of Islam are grossly deficient in Islamic knowledge and consequently their intellect fails them. This leads to flawed opinions and such are found to be fanatical, lacking compassion. Such people hold firm to the opinion that if the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, did not do something, we should not do it, and if this is so then people from far away countries would not be able to go by boat or airplane on pilgrimage – which is one of the pillars of Islam – because the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, only went on foot or by camel!

An innovation that is to be condemned is one that replaces the Prophetic way and goes against the Spirit of Islam. If anyone should tell you that anything the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, did not do is to be viewed as a bad innovation, when it is known to comply with the Spirit of Islam, it is through sheer ignorance.)

There is great danger in opposing the command of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. If one were to change his prophetic way then one would be misguided and be among the innovators and therefore subject to the threat and severance of Allah. Allah warns *"So let those who disobey His command beware, lest they are struck by sedition, or, they are stricken with a painful punishment."* 24:63. He also warns, *"But whosoever opposes the Messenger after guidance has been made clear to him and follows a path other than that of the believers, We shall let him follow what he has turned to and We shall roast him in Hell – and evil arrival."* 4:115.

Abu Hurayrah tells us of the time the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, visited a graveyard. During the visit he described some of his nation saying, "Some (on the Day of Judgement) will be driven away from my Pool (Kawthar) just as a stray camel is driven away. I will call to them saying, 'Come here, come here!' But it will be said, 'After you they made changes.' Whereupon I will say, 'Go away, go away!'"

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "Anyone who adds something to my commands, which is not part of them, is a deviant."

One day someone brought a writing that had been inscribed on the shoulder-blade of an animal. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "What is wrong with some people that they dislike what their Prophet brought them, preferring someone else to their Prophet, or another book to their Book?" Whereupon it was revealed, *"Is it not enough for them that We have sent down to you the Book that is recited to them?"* 29:51

Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "Those who go to extremes in speech will be destroyed."

The first Caliph, Abu Bakr As-Siddiq said, "Of the things the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, used to do, I have omitted none. I feared that had I left out any of his commands I would have deviated."

THE NECESSITY TO LOVE THE PROPHET

Praise and peace be upon him

The necessity to love the Prophet

Allah says, *"If your fathers, your sons, your brothers, your wives, your tribes, the property you have acquired, the merchandise you fear will not be sold, and the homes you love are dearer to you than Allah, His Messenger and the struggling for His Way, then wait until Allah shall bring His command."* 9:25.

This verse demonstrates encouragement, advice, proof and indication of the necessity to love Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. It is also sufficient to demonstrate that this duty is of tremendous proportion. It is an obligation and the right of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.

You will have observed how Allah reprimands those whose love of relatives and property are dearer to them than Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him. Allah concludes His warning with the threatening words *"then wait until Allah shall bring His command."* And from this it is understood that those whose love is other than for Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, are astray and are not guided by Allah.

Anas tells us that one day the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "None of you will believe until I am more beloved to him than his children, his father and all people." Anas also reported, "There are three things that if someone were to seek refuge in them they would experience the sweetness of belief. They are that Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, are more beloved to him than anything else; that he loves a person only for the sake of Allah, and he loathes the notion of reverting to disbelief as much as he would loathe to be cast into the Fire."

One day Omar, Al Khattab's son went to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and told him, "I love you more than anything except my soul which is between my two sides." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "None of you will believe until I am dearer to him than his own soul." Omar immediately replied, "By the One who sent down the Book to you, I love you more than my soul which is between my two

sides." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "Omar, you have reached it."

Sahl warned, "If someone does not think that the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, is his master in all matters or should think that he does not fall under his jurisdiction he does not taste the sweetness of his prophetic way, because he said, "None of you will believe until I am dearer to him than himself."

The reward for loving the Prophet

Anas tells us of the occasion when a man came to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and asked, "When will the Last Hour come, O Messenger of Allah?" Whereupon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, inquired, "What have you prepared for it?" The man replied, "I have neither prepared an abundance of prayer, fasting or charity for it, but I love Allah and His Messenger." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told him, "You will be with the one you love." Safwan, Qudama's son was told the same when he declared his love for the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, took hold of the hands of his grandsons Al Hasan and Al Husain and said, "Whosoever loves me and loves these two, their father and mother, will receive the same degree as myself on the Day of Resurrection."

One day a man came to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and told him, "O Messenger of Allah, I love you more than my family and possessions. I always remember you and could not wait to come just to look at you. I bear in mind that I will die and you will die, and I know that when you enter the Garden you will be raised up with the Prophets, but when I enter it I will not see you." Shortly after Allah sent down the verse, *"Whosoever obeys Allah, and the Messenger, they are with those whom Allah has favored, the prophets, the sincere, the martyrs and the righteous, and these are the best company."* 4:69. Having received this verse the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, called the man back and recited it to him.

Another man came to visit the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and could not stop gazing at him. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gently inquired the reason why, whereupon the man replied, "May my father and mother be your ransom! I enjoy gazing at you and on the Day of Resurrection, Allah will exalt you on account of the high esteem which He has prepared for you!" It is also said that it was then that Allah sent down the verse mentioned above.

We are given the good news transmitted by Anas that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever loves me will be with me in the Garden."

The narrations of the early generations of Muslims and imams concerning their love of the Prophet and their longing for him

Abu Hurayrah tells us that the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "Those in my nation whose love will be the strongest are those who come after me. Amongst them there are some who would have traded their family and wealth to have seen me."

Many of the Companions, including Omar and Amr, Al As's son tell us that there is no one more beloved to them than the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him.

Abda, the daughter of Khalid, Ma'dan's son spoke of her father saying, "Khalid never went to bed without yearning for the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, and his Emigrant (Muhajirun) and Helper (Ansar) Companions, and name each one of them. He would say, 'They are my root and branch, my heart longs for them, I have yearned for them for a long time, O my Lord, hasten my return to You!'"

Isaac's son tells us that at during the encounter of Uhud the father, brother and husband of one of the Ansari women were killed as they fought alongside the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him. However, despite her loss, her only concern was for the safety of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. The lady asked anxiously for news of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, whereupon she was told, 'Praise be to Allah, he is as well as you would wish,' She asked, "Show him to me so that I may see him." When she caught sight of him, she exclaimed, "Now that I know you are safe, all my afflictions have become as nothing."

When Imam Ali, may Allah honor his face, was asked about his love for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, he replied, "By Allah, we loved him more than our wealth, sons, father and our mothers, and more than cold water during times of great thirst!"

The Caliph Omar went out one night and see that all was well in the community and happened to see a lighted lamp in the house of an elderly lady who was carding some wool. As she worked away she said, "The praise of the good be upon Muhammad, may the blessed bless him! I stand in tears before dawn. If only I knew when death gives us different forms whether the Abode will join me to my beloved." Upon hearing these heart-felt words Omar sat down and wept.

The foot of Abdullah, Omar's son became numb and he was reminded, "Remember the most beloved of all people to you and it will go away." Abdullah cried out, "O Muhammad!" and the numbness left.

As death approached Bilal, his wife called out, "O sorrow." Bilal responded, "O what joy, I will meet those I love, Muhammad and those with him!"

One day a lady came to Lady Ayesha, Mother of Believers, may Allah be pleased with her, and asked her to show her the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Lady Ayesha showed her the tomb whereupon the lady started to weep and continued weeping until she died.

When the Meccans took Zaid, Ad-Dathina's son out of the Sacred Precincts to martyr him, Abu Sufyan, Harb's son, said to him, "I ask you by Allah, don't you wish that Muhammad was with us now so that he would be in your place and that it would be his head that will be severed, and you were with your family?" Zaid replied, "By Allah, I would not wish that Muhammad would be in a place where even a thorn would prick him should that be the condition of me being returned to my family!" Abu Sufyan said, "I have never seen anyone who loved another in the way the Companions of Muhammad love Muhammad!"

Abbas' son tells us of the time a woman from Mecca came to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in Medina. Upon her arrival the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, asked her on oath to swear that she had not left her home on account of her husband's anger, or because she wanted a change in her surroundings, and that the only reason for her leaving was because of her love of Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him.

As the son of Az-Zubair lay martyred, Omar's son stood over him and prayed for his forgiveness and said, "By Allah, according to what I know of you, you were a person who fasted, prayed and loved Allah and His Messenger", praise and peace be upon him.

The signs of loving the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him

Someone who claims that he/she loves another will prefer that person to all others, he will also prefer what they like, if it were otherwise then he would be acting and his love would not be sincere. The following signs will be apparent in those who truly love the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him,

First: The first sign of love for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is that he/she will follow his example, apply his prophetic way in words, deeds, obedience to his commands, avoidance of whatever he prohibited and adopt his manner in times of ease, hardship, joy and disappointment. Allah says, *"Say (Prophet Muhammad), 'If you love Allah, follow me and Allah will love you.'"* 3:31.

Second: The second sign is that he/she will set aside his own desires and appetite in preference to the law established and encouraged by the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Allah says, *"Those before them who had made their dwelling in the abode (City of Medina), and because of their belief love those who have emigrated to them; they do not find any (envy) in their chests for what they have been given and prefer them above themselves, even though they themselves have a need."* 59:9

Third: The third sign is that a person's anger of others is only for the sake of seeking the pleasure of Allah. Anas, Malik's son was told by the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "My son, if you can refrain from holding a grudge in your heart from morning to evening, then do so." He then added, "My son, that is part of my prophetic way. Whosoever revives my way has loved me, and whosoever loves me is with me in the Garden."

If a person possesses this fine quality, then he/she has perfect love for Allah and His Messenger. If he is found to be slightly lacking in this quality then his love is imperfect, but not devoid of it. The proof of this is found in the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, when a person faced punishment for imbibing. As the person was about to receive his punishment a man cursed the offender, whereupon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Do not curse him. He loves Allah and His Messenger."

Fourth: The fourth sign is that one mentions the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in abundance – whosoever loves something, it is constantly upon his tongue.

Fifth: The fifth sign is yearning to meet the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Every lover yearns to be with their beloved. When the tribe of Ash'arites approached

Medina, they were heard chanting, "Tomorrow, we will be with those we love, Muhammad and his Companions!"

Sixth: The sixth sign is that as well as the remembrance of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, someone who loves him will be found praising and respecting him whenever he is mentioned and display humility, and lower himself when he hears his name. We are told by Isaac At-Tujibi that after the passing of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, whenever the Companions heard his name they became humble, their skin trembled and they wept. As for the other followers of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, some experienced the same out of love and yearning for him, whereas others did so out of respect and esteem.

Seventh: The seventh sign is the love expressed for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and the People of his House, and his Companions – the Emigrants (Muhajirun) and the Helpers (Ansar) alike for his sake. A person with this sign will be found hostile to those who hate them.

Of Al Hasan and Al Husain, may Allah be pleased with them, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "O Allah, I love them, so please love them." Al-Hasan said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, also said, "O Allah, I love him, so love the one who loves him." Of his two grandsons, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, also said, "Whosoever loves them, loves me." Then he said. Whosoever loves me, loves Allah. Whosoever hates them hates me and whosoever hates me hates Allah."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "O Allah, Allah, my Companions. Do not make them targets after me! Whosoever loves them loves them because they love me, and whosoever hates them it is through their hatred of me. Whosoever harms them, harms me. Whosoever does something to hurt me does it as if it is hurtful to Allah. Whosoever does something that appears to be hurtful to Allah is about to be seized."

Of his family, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said referring to Lady Fatima, may Allah be pleased with her, "She is part of me, whosoever hates her hates me."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told Lady Ayesha to love Osama, Zaid's son because he loves him.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the Helpers (Ansar) saying, "The sign of certain faith is love for the Ansar, whereas the sign of hypocrisy is hatred for them."

Omar's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever loves the (good) Arabs loves them because he loves me. Whereas whosoever hates them hates them because of their hatred of me."

The fact is when someone loves another, he loves everything that person loves, and this was indeed the case with the Companions. When Anas saw the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, eating a piece of pumpkin, he said, "From that day I loved pumpkins." Al-Hasan, the grandson of the Prophet, may the peace of Allah be upon them, went with Jafar to Salma and asked her to prepare some food the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, used to eat.

Omar once saw the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, wearing a pair of yellow colored sandals, so he too wore a pair of the same color.

Eighth: The eighth sign is hatred of anyone who hates Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him. Such people are those who show hostility towards to Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him. Believers having this sign avoid all who oppose the prophetic way, and are in opposition to those who introduce innovations into the prophetic way (that are against the spirit of Islam) and find the law he established burdensome. Allah says, *"You shall find no nation believing in Allah and the Last Day loving anyone that opposes Allah and His Messenger."* 58:22.

Ninth: The ninth sign is found in those who love the Koran which the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, brought, by which the Prophet and they were guided. When asked about the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her, said, "His character was that of the Koran." Part of the love of the Koran is listening to its recitation, acting according to it, understanding it, keeping within its bounds and the love of Prophet Muhammad's way.

Sahl, Abdullah's son spoke of this sign saying, "The sign of loving Allah is love of the Koran. The sign of loving the Koran is the love of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. The sign of loving the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is love of his prophetic way. The sign of loving the prophetic way is the love of the Hereafter. The sign of loving the Hereafter is hatred for this world. The sign of hatred for this world is that you do not amass any of it except for provisions and what you need to arrive safely with in the Hereafter."

Masood's son said, "No one needs to ask himself about anything other than the Koran, if he loves the Koran then he loves Allah and His Messenger" praise and peace be upon him.

Tenth: The tenth sign of love for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is to have mercy on his nation by advising them well, striving for the betterment of their interest and removing anything that is harmful from them in the same way that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was *"gentle and merciful to the believers."* 9:128.

Eleventh: The eleventh sign of perfect love is found in whosoever restricts himself through self-denial, preferring poverty to the attractions of the world.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told Abu Sa'id Al Khudri, "Poverty for those of you who love me flows quicker than a flood from a mountain's peak to its base."

A man came to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and said, "O Messenger of Allah, I love you." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, warned, "Be careful of what you say." The man repeated his love for him thrice, whereupon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him told him, "If you love me prepare yourself quickly for poverty."

The reality and meaning of loving the Prophet

There are integrated opinions in what constitutes love of Allah and His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and many things have been said about it, however the reality is that each differing party refers to different states.

Sufyan said, and perhaps he was thinking of the words of Allah that say, *"If you love Allah, follow me."* 3:31 "Love consists of following the Messenger of Allah" praise and peace be upon him.

Scholars have said:

"Love of the Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, is to believe in his victory, to protect and obey his prophetic way, and being fearful of opposition to it."

"Love is the constant remembrance of the beloved."

"It is preferring the beloved."

"Love is the heart that follows the will of its master, he loves what he loves and hates what he hates."

"Love is the harmonious inclination of the heart to the beloved."

Most of these opinions indicate to the fruits of love rather than the reality of love. The reality of love is the inclination to what one finds agreeable and harmonious either by:

1. the pleasure of its perfection, such as the love of beautiful appearances, melodic tones, delicious food and beverages, all of which one inclines naturally to because they are agreeable.
2. finding pleasure in the perfection of noble inner qualities which is experienced by the intellect as well as the heart, such as the love of scholars of Islam, people with upright natures whose lives and deeds are exemplary. It is natural for a person to incline to a passionate form of love for such things almost to the extreme.
3. a person can love something on account of finding it agreeable to him by reason of receiving its benefit and blessings. It is a natural disposition to love what one finds to be good.

Once these three approaches have been understood, relate these three causes to the love of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and discover that these three things inspiring love are also applicable to him.

The beauty of his physic, external appearance and his perfect character have already been discussed so there is no necessity to mention them again.

We have already mentioned the benefits and blessings the nation of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, receives. And we have also mentioned the attributes of Allah with which he was blessed and through which mankind benefits such as the compassion he has for his nation, his mercy towards us, his guidance, tenderness towards us and his struggle to save us from the Fire. Allah described His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saying, *"We have not sent you (Prophet Muhammad) except as a mercy to all the worlds."* 24:107, and *"O Prophet, We have sent you as a witness, a bearer of glad tidings, and to bear warning; a caller to Allah by His permission and as a light shedding lamp."* 33:45-46. And, *"It is He who has raised among the illiterate (Arabs), a Messenger from themselves, to recite to them His verses, to purify them and to teach them the Book and the Wisdom."* 62:2. Also, *"and guides them to a Straight Path,"* 5:16.

There cannot be any goodness worthier or of greater importance for believers, than the goodness found in the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. There is no other favor that could be more universally beneficial and of greater advantage than his blessing to all Muslims because he is our path to guidance. He is the one who rescues us from the error of our blindness. He is the one who calls us to success and honor! He is our path to our Lord and our intercessor. He is the one who will speak on our behalf and bear witness for us and bring us, Allah willing, to the Everlasting Life with its happiness!

It should now be clear to you dear reader, that the love of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is obligatory on account of the authentic quotations we have brought to you in which we related the nature of his overflowing goodness and universal beauty.

If a person can love a person on account of his generosity towards him once or twice during his life, or that he saves him from danger or harm even once – and bear in mind that such are only of a temporal nature – then what of a person who gives him unending happiness and protects him for the everlasting punishment of Hell? That person deserves greater love!

A king is loved when his conduct is good and a ruler is loved when his conduct is upright. Even if a knowledgeable person or a person of noble character lives far away he will be loved on this account. But when someone possess all the perfection of these qualities, that person is more entitled to be loved and more deserving of attachment!

Imam Ali, may Allah be pleased with him, described the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saying, "Whosoever came across him suddenly became timorous of him. Whosoever kept company with him loved him." You will no doubt recall the story we related of one of the Companions who simply could not take his eyes away from him because of the love he had for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.

The obligation of the delivery of advice to the Prophet when requested

Allah says, *"There is no fault for the weak, the sick, and those lacking the means to spend (to stay behind), if they are true to Allah and His Messenger."* 9:91.

Commentators say that if people are sincerely true to Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, then they are sincere Muslims secretly and openly.

The Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, stressed three times, "The religion is active advice." His Companions asked, "To whom, O Messenger of Allah?" He replied, "To Allah and His Book, His Messenger and Muslim leaders, and the ordinary man." An imam commented that this is an obligation.

Imam Abu Sulayman Al Busti said, "Advice is a word used to designate the desire for the object of what is good. It is not possible to explain it with just a single word capable of containing all its meanings. Linguistically, it is based on sincere care."

Abu Bakr, Abi Isaac's son explained, "Advice is delivering the outcome of the advice of something that is righteous and harmonious."

Advice is the delivery of sincere care, its benefit is conveyed and carried from one to another as follows:

Advice in reference to Allah and for His Sake is to deliver firm belief in His Oneness, describing Allah in the way in which Allah describes Himself, and disconnecting Allah from His attributes as described in the dictionary of human behavior. It is the desire for what Allah loves, avoidance of what Allah hates and sincerity in worshipping Allah.

Advice in reference to the Book of Allah is to deliver belief in it, act in accordance to it, its fine recitation, humility on account of it, and esteem for it. It is also its understanding and seeking jurisprudence therein as well as protecting it from the misinterpretation of extremists and the assault of heretics.

Advice in reference to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, is the delivery of the affirmation of his prophethood and obedience to him in whatever he commands or forbids. Abu Sulayman and Abu Bakr both said, "It is to support, help and protect the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in both life and after death. It is to revive his prophetic way by seeking, protecting and spreading it and adopting his noble characteristics and manners.

Of the obligations of the heart, Ahmad, Muhammad's son said that it is one of the obligations of the heart to deliver advice for the sake of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him.

During the life time of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, the delivery of the advice of his Companions was to help him, protect him, oppose his enemies, obey him and spend their lives and property striving to serve him, and this is found in the Words of Allah, *"Among the believers there are men who have been true to their covenant with Allah."* 33:23. *"You shall believe in Allah and His Messenger and struggle for His Way with your possessions and yourselves."* 61:11.

The delivery of advice of Muslims for the sake of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, after his death is to ensure that his esteem is maintained, to show respect and great love for him. Strive to learn from his prophetic way, understand his jurisprudence, love his family and Companions. Avoid whatsoever he disliked and hate whatever deviates from his prophetic way and being watchful for its occurrence. It is to have mercy for his nation, the seeking of knowledge of his character, his life and ethics, and being steadfast in its application.

From this one realizes that the delivery of advice is one of the fruits of love of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, as well as being amongst its signs.

Imam Abu'l Kasim Al Qushayri said that Amr, Al Layth's son, who was one of the Kings of Khurasan, famous for his heroism and known as As-Saffar, was seen in a vision and asked, "What has Allah done with you?" He replied, "He has forgiven me." Amr was then asked on what account had Allah forgiven him to which he replied, "One day I climbed to the peak of a mountain and looked down upon my armies and its vast number pleased me. Then I wished I could have been with the Messenger of Allah, may Allah praise and venerate him and grant him peace, so that I might come to his assistance and help him. It was because of this that Allah forgave me."

To Muslims the delivery of advice is to obey their imams when they order with truth. It is also to help them, remind them of the truth in the best manner, draw their attention to matters they overlook and also to the affairs of Muslims of which they are unaware. One should neither attack them nor cause them trouble, or bring about dissension amongst the people, or alienate them from people.

Advice for the sake of the ordinary Muslim is to deliver it for their best interest and guide them to it. It is to assist them in matters of their religion and this world not only by speech but through action. It is to warn those who are heedless, inform the ignorant, and give to the needy. It is the concealment of their faults, and repelling what would harm them and bring to them benefit.

THE NECESSITY TO PRAISE, RESPECT AND HONOR THE PROPHET

Authoritative verses in the Koran to praise, respect and honor the Prophet

Allah made it obligatory to support, revere and respect His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. He says, *"We have sent you (Prophet Muhammad) as a witness and as a bearer of glad tidings and warning. So that you (people) believe in Allah and His Messenger and that you support him and revere him."* 48:8-9.

Allah also says, *"Believers do not advance before Allah and His Messenger... Believers, do not raise your voices above the voice of the Prophet, nor speak loudly to him as you do to one another lest your works should be annulled without your knowledge, Fear Allah. Allah is the Hearer, the Knower."* 49:1.

Also, *"Do not make the calling of the Messenger among yourselves like the calling to one another."* 24:63

In the first verse quoted, our attention is drawn to the obligation to honor Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, and show him the greatest respect. Scholars such as Al Akhfash and At-Tabari are of the opinion that it also means that he should be helped and assisted.

Believers are warned in the second quoted verse not to speak before him, to do otherwise would constitute extremely bad manners. Sahl, Abdullah At-Tustori's son said that the verse means, do not speak before he speaks and when he speaks listen to him in silence.

Al Hasan and several Companions said that when it came to decision making, the Companions were forbidden to carry out any matter before the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, had spoken and given his instruction. They were not permitted to precede him in such matters.

Allah concludes this verse with the caution that good deeds may amount to nothing without one's knowledge, then He warns that believers must fear Him. As-Sulami said it means that one must fear Allah if you disregard or neglect what is due to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, remember that Allah hears and knows what we do.

It has been said that this verse was sent down when a delegation from the tribe of Tamin came and shouted out "Muhammad, Muhammad, come out to us." And that Allah censured them for being ignorant and said *"most of them lack understanding."* 49:4. However, it has also been said that the verse was revealed about people other than the tribesmen of Tamin.

It has also been said that the former verse was sent down in reference to a conversation between Abu Bakr and Omar that took place in the presence of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that erupted into a dispute in which voices were raised. After the revelation of this verse Abu Bakr went to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and said, "By Allah, O Messenger of Allah, after this I will only speak to you as one speaks to someone when telling him a secret!" From then onwards Omar also spoke to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in the same manner as Abu Bakr, however his voice was so low that it was almost inaudible to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him. Then Allah sent down the verse, *"Those who lower their voice in the presence of the Messenger of Allah are those whose hearts Allah has tested for warding off (evil). They shall receive forgiveness and a great wage."* 49:3

It has also been said that it was sent down about Thabit, Kay's son, the spokesman appointed by the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, to counter the boasting of the tribesmen of Tamim. Thabit was somewhat hard of hearing and it was his habit to raise his voice. When the verse was revealed he became fearful and remained in his home fearing that his deeds were now worthless. Later, he went to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and told him, "O Prophet of Allah, I fear that I am destroyed. Allah has forbidden us to raise our voices, and I have a loud voice." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, comforted him and gave him good news saying, "Thabit, are you not happy to live in a manner that is worthy of praise, and be slain as a martyr, and enter the Garden?" Thabit was martyred in the Battle of Yamama.

Of the third verse Abu Muhammad Makki explained, *"Do not make the calling of the Messenger among yourselves like the calling to one another"* as meaning that no one should either speak before him or coarsely to him. Also, that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, should be respected and held in high esteem and not called out to as one would call to each other, rather he should be called with the noblest titles such as Messenger of Allah or Prophet of Allah.

Safwan, Assal's son tells of the time when the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was on a journey and a Bedouin approached, and called to him in a loud voice, "Muhammad, Muhammad!" He was told to lower his voice because it had been forbidden to raise one's voice to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.

Of the verse *"Believers, do not say 'Observe us'"* 2:104 a commentator explained that this phrase was in common use among the Helpers (Ansar) and bears the conditional meaning of "Observe us, and we will observe you". Out of respect the Ansar were forbidden to use the phrase when speaking to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. It has also been said that the Jews would use the same phrase in mockery of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, because the word "Ra'ina" in Hebrew means evil.

The esteem, respect and reverence due to the Prophet

Amr, Al-As's son, spoke of the great love and respect he had for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saying, "There is no one more beloved to me than the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, neither is there anyone I respect more than he. I can never get my fill of gazing at him on account of the great respect I have for him. If I were to be asked to describe him, I would be unable to do so, because I am unable to gaze at him enough."

Anas tells us, "The Messenger of Allah went out accompanied by the Emigrants and Helpers together with Abu Bakr and Omar. None of them except Abu Bakr and Omar raised their eyes to look at him. They would look at the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and he would look at them, they would smile at him and he would smile at them."

Osama, Sharik's son described a gathering in which the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and some of his Companions were present. He said, "I came to the Prophet and noticed that his Companions sat around him as still as if there were birds perched upon their heads." Hind, Abi Hala's daughter said something similar, "When he spoke those sitting around him would bow their heads as if there were birds perched on top of them."

When Urwa, Masood's son, who was yet to embrace Islam, was sent by the Koraysh as an envoy to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, prior to the signing of the treaty of Hdaybiyah. He was astounded by the overwhelming amount of respect the Companions had for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Urwa commented never before had he seen such tremendous respect paid to anyone. He said that whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, made ablution he saw his Companions rush to receive some of his leftover water, and in fact nearly fought to receive it. They would take his spittle and wipe it over their faces and bodies. If a strand of hair fell from him they would rush to retrieve it. When he gave an instruction they rushed to fulfill it. When he spoke they lowered their voices in his presence. Out of respect he noticed his Companion did not stare at him. Upon Urwa's return to the Koraysh, he told them "I have visited Chosroes in his kingdom, Caesar in his empire, and the Negus in his kingdom, and by Allah, I have never seen any king or emperor treated with the same respect that the Companions of Muhammad show to Muhammad."

Prior to the treaty of Hdaybiyah, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, sent Othman, who was respected by the Koraysh, to tell of their intent to enter the Sacred Mosque in total peace. The Koraysh refused to give their permission, however they told Othman they would permit him to perform the sacred rights at Ka'ba. Othman declined to accept out of respect for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saying, "I will not do so until the Messenger of Allah does."

Anas spoke of the time the Prophet's hair was been shaved and said, "I saw the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, having his hair shaved. His Companions stood around him and whenever a lock of hair fell, one of them would pick it up."

In an earlier section we spoke of how Kayla came to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and saw him sitting in a squatting position and that she trembled. Kayla said her trembling was on account her great timidity and respect she had for him.

When the Companions would come to visit the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Al Mughira tells us that they would tap on his door with their fingernails.

Al Bara, Azib's son said, "I wanted to ask the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, about a matter, but waited for several years to do so on account of my timidity of him."

The respect and high regard for the Prophet after his death

In the same way as it was necessary to respect the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, during his lifetime, it is very necessary to respect him now that he has passed away. Included in this is the respect one must show whenever the Prophet's sayings or way are mentioned, as well as when one hears mention of his name, his family and Companions.

Abu Abraham At-Tujibi tells us that there is an obligation upon everyone who believes to be humble, fearful, respectful, and still whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is mentioned in their presence. The same degree of respect and manners that was shown by the Companions during his lifetime should be emulated, just as if he were still in our presence.

One day Abu Ja'far, the Prince of Believers had a dispute with Malik in the Mosque of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Malik reminded him, "Prince of Believers, do not raise your voice in this Mosque. Allah taught us how to behave by saying, *"Believers, do not raise your voices above the voice of the Prophet."* 49:2 and drew his attention to *"those who lower their voice in the presence of the Messenger of Allah are those whose hearts Allah has tested for warding off (evil).* 49:3 He also reminded him of the warning in the verse *"those who call out to you (Prophet Muhammad)."* 49:4 thereby reminding him that even though he had passed away the same respect due to him during his life time is due to him thereafter. Ja'far was humbled by this reminder and asked Malik, "Abu Abdullah, when you supplicate do you face the direction of prayer or do you face the Messenger of Allah?", praise and peace be upon him, Malik replied, "Why would you turn your face from him when he is your means and the means of your father Adam to Allah on the Day of Resurrection? I face him and ask him to intercede because Allah grants his intercession. Allah says, *"If, when they had wrong themselves, they had come to you..."* 4:64."

Malik said of Job As-Sakhtiyani, "I have never reported anything from any other without finding Job to be better than him. I went on the Greater Pilgrimage twice and had chance to observe him. Whenever the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned, he wept and his eyes became red. When this occurred and I realized the great amount of respect he had for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and I would write things down from him."

Mus'ab Abdullah's son said, "Whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned Malik became so pale that it caused distress to those in his company. One day he was asked about this and replied, 'If you had seen what I have seen, you would not be surprised by this. I would observe Muhammad, Munkadir's son, the master of Koran reciters. On most occasions when he was asked about a prophetic quotation he wept until his eyes became red. I observed Ja'far, Muhammad's son who would joke and

laugh a lot, but when the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned in his presence, he grew pale and I never saw him relate a saying of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, without first making ablution. When I used to visit him I would find him either praying, fasting or reciting the Koran. He only spoke about necessary things that were of concern to him. He was amongst the men of knowledge who feared Allah.

The face of Abdur Rahman, Al Kasim's son turned pale, just as if the blood had drained from it, and his tongue became dry whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned. It was on account of the timidity he felt for him. When I visited Amir, Abdullah's son whose grandfather was Az-Zubair, and the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned in his presence he would weep until he had no more tears left to shed. Az-Zuhri was one of the most easy-going and friendly people and I observed that whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned in his presence he became oblivious of all, it was as if he were not the same person. I would visit Safwan, Sulayman's son who was among those most diligent in their worship and offered prayers throughout the night. Whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was mentioned he wept and continued to do so and those around him got up and left."

Whenever Katada heard a prophetic quotation he would break out in a sob and became very agitated.

When a lot of people gathered around Malik, someone said, "Would that you would appoint someone to whom you could dictate, then he could make the people hear." Malik replied, "Allah said, *'Believers, do not raise your voices above the voice of the Prophet,'*" 49:2. The respect due to him during his lifetime is the same now that he is dead."

Sirin's son would laugh, but when a prophetic quotation was mentioned he became humble.

Abdur Rahman, Mahdi's son instructed those in his company to be silent whenever a prophetic quotation was mentioned, and told them, "Do not raise your voices above the voice of the Prophet", praise and peace be upon him. The reason for this lies in his interpretation of the preceding verse. He said that people must be silent whenever a prophetic quotation is read, just as if they would if they were in the presence of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, listening to him speaking.

The high regard of the early generations of Muslims for the transmission of the Prophetic quotations

The Judge of Medina, Abraham, Abdullah's son tells us that "Malik, Anas' son happened to pass by Abu Hazim who was teaching some of the prophetic quotations. Malik asked permission to listen, however there was no place to sit and he said, "I dislike listening to a prophetic quotation standing up."

We are told by Malik that a man went to Al Musayyab's son and found him resting. He asked about a certain prophetic saying, whereupon Al Musayyab's son sat upright and gave him the quotation. The man said to Al Musayyab, "I wish you had not troubled yourself." Whereupon he replied, "I would dislike to convey to you a prophetic quotation whilst resting."

Whenever Malik, Anas' son was about to transmit a prophetic quotation he, out of respect, would make ablution, put on his robe and then transmit. When he was asked why he had done so, he replied, "Because it is the saying of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him."

When people visited Malik, his maid would go to them and ask, 'The shaykh asks whether you have come to hear prophetic quotations or if it is because you have a question.' If they had questions, he would come out to hear them, but if it was to hear a prophetic quotation he would first make ablution, put on some perfume and fresh robes on top of which he would wear a dark cloak. He would wear a turban and then place the hood of his cloak over his head. A platform would be set up for him and he would go out to his visitors in a state of humility, and aloes were burned until he finished teaching the prophetic sayings. When he was asked why he did this he replied, "I like to show my respect for the sayings of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, and I will only teach them when I have made ablution."

Malik disliked being asked about a hadith while walking in the street, standing up or when he was in a hurry. He said, "I like to ensure that people understand the sayings of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him,"

Malik was transmitting some of the sayings of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and during that time Abdullah, Mubarak's son tells us that a scorpion stung him sixteen times. Malik's face changed color and became pale, but it did not stop him from continuing his teaching. At the end of the lesson, after the people departed, Abdullah said to him, "I saw you do something extraordinary today!" Malik replied, "Yes, I endured it out of respect for the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him."

The Judge Jarir, Abdul Hamid's son asked Malik about a prophetic quotation while he was standing up. Malik ordered that he should be arrested. He was then told, "But this is the judge!" Malik replied, "A judge should have better manners."

Hisham, Al Ghazi's son was standing up when he asked Malik about a prophetic saying. Malik struck him twenty times with a whip and then had pity on him and taught him twenty prophetic quotations. Hisham said, "I wish he had given me more strikes, and then more prophetic quotations!"

The Prophet's devotion to his family, descendants and wives

An element of respect and devotion to Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, is one's devotion to his family, wives, who are the Mothers of Believers, and descendants, may Allah be pleased with them. Such respect and devotion was evident in the close Companions of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and the early generations.

Allah said, "*O family of the House, Allah only wishes to distance fault from you and cleanse you.*" 33:33. Allah also tells us, "*his (Prophet Muhammad's) wives are their mothers.*" 33:6.

We are told by Zaid, Arqam's son that one day the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said thrice, "I beseech you by Allah! The people of my House!" When Zaid asked whom he meant by the "people of his House", he replied, "The family of Ali, the family of

Ja'far (son of Abu Talib), the family of Uqayl (son of Abu Talib), and the family of Al Abbas."

Shortly before the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, passed away he told his Companions, "I am leaving you with something. Take hold of it and you will not go astray: the Book of Allah, my family and the people of my House. Take care to follow my instruction regarding them."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Recognition of the family of Muhammad is freedom from the Fire. Love of the family of Muhammad is crossing over the Bridge. Friendship for the family of Muhammad is safety from the Fire." A scholar explained recognition means the recognition of their place in relation to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. This recognition is coupled to the recognition of rights and respect due to them because of it."

Omar, Salama's son tells us that the verse, "*O family of the House, Allah only wishes to distance fault from you and cleanse you.*" 33:33 was sent down in the house of Umm Salama whereupon, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, called for his daughter Lady Fatima and her sons Hasan and Husain and wrapped them in a garment as Ali stood behind him and said, "O Allah, these are the people of my House, so remove all impurity from them and purify them completely".

Saad, Abi Wakkas' son spoke of the verse in which the curse of Allah is invoked, "*To those who dispute with you concerning him after the knowledge has come to you, say, 'Come, let us gather our sons and your sons, our womenfolk and your womenfolk, ourselves and yourselves. Then let us humbly pray and so lay the curse of Allah upon the ones who lie.'*" 3:61. Saad said that when this verse was received the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, called Ali, Hasan, Husain and Fatima and said, "O Allah, these are my family."

Of the rank of Ali, may Allah honor his face, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever has me for his master, Ali is his master. O Allah, befriend the one who befriends him and oppose the one who opposes him!" The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told Ali, "Only a believer will love you and only a hypocrite will hate you."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his uncle Al-Abbas, "By the One in whose hand is my soul, belief will not enter a persons heart until he loves Allah and His Messenger. Whosoever harms my uncle has harmed me. A man's uncle is like his father." He also told Al-Abbas, "My uncle, feed Ali with your children." Then he gathered them and wrapped them in his robe and said, "This is my uncle, and my father's own brother and these are the people of my House, so shield them from the Fire as I am shielding them." Whereupon the threshold of the door and the walls of the house were heard saying, "Amen, Amen."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, would take hold of the hand of Osama, Zaid's son and Al-Hasan and supplicate, "Love them, O Allah, because I love them."

Abu Bakr said, "Respect Muhammad by respecting the people of his House." He also declared, "By the One in whose hand is my soul, the near kin of the Messenger of Allah are dearer to me than my own kindred."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "Allah loves those who love Hasan." Referring to his two grandsons, Al-Hasan and Al-Husain, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever loves these two, their father and their mother will be with me on the Day of Resurrection." May Allah be pleased with them.

Of the Koraysh, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever demeans the Koraysh, Allah will demean them." He also said, "Give preference to the Koraysh, and do not precede them."

To Umm Salama, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Do not injure me by injuring Ayesha."

Ukba, Al Harith's son tells of the time when he saw Abu Bakr putting Al Hasan on his shoulders and said, "By my father, he looks like the Prophet! He does not look like Ali!" Ali just laughed.

Abdullah, Hasan's son, whose father was Al Husain said, "I was in need of something so I went to Omar, Abdul Aziz's son and he told me, 'If you have a need, send for me or write to me. I am ashamed before Allah that you should have to come to me.'"

The mother of Zaid, Thabit's son passed away and after the funeral prayer he fetched his mule so that he might mount. Abbas' son saw him, came and took hold of the stirrup whereupon Zaid politely said, "Let go, nephew of the Messenger of Allah." Abbas' son said, "This is the way we behave with the knowledgeable." Then Zaid kissed Abbas' hand and said, "This is the way in which I was instructed to behave with the people of the House."

The daughter of Osama, Zaid's son who had been a Companion of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was now elderly and went to see the son of Omar Abdul Aziz with the help of her servant who held her by the hand. Upon seeing her Omar respectfully got up and walked towards her and assisted her by taking hold of her hand, and thereafter placed his hands on his garment. He walked some of the way with her, then sat her down in his place while he sat down in front of her and gave her anything she asked.

When Omar, Al Khattab's son was distributing the spoils of war, he gave his son Abdullah three thousand whereas he gave Osama, Zaid's son three thousand five hundred. Abdullah asked his father, "Why did you give Osama more than me? By Allah, he did not fight in the battle before me." His father replied, "It was because Zaid was dearer to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, than your father, and Osama was dearer to him than you, so I preferred the love of the Messenger of Allah to my love."

When Jaf'ar, Sulayman's son flogged Malik, Anas's son, Malik became unconscious and people came to nurse to him. When he regained consciousness he said, "I bear witness to you that I have made my flogging an act in which I forgive and forgo my rights." He was asked later on why he had made such a statement, whereupon he replied, "I am afraid of dying and meeting the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, with the shame that one of his family entered the Fire because of me." It has been said that the Caliph, Al Mansoor said that Malik could retaliate against Ja'far, but Malik declined saying, "I

seek refuge in Allah. By Allah, every time the whip left my body I forgave him because of his kinship to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him."

Abu Bakr, Ayyash's son said, "If Abu Bakr, Omar and Ali had come to me I would have addressed the needs of Ali first on account of his kinship to the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him. I would rather fall from heaven to earth than prefer either of them to Ali."

Abbas' son was told, "So-and-so has passed away" mentioning one of the names of the Prophet's wives, may Allah be pleased with them, whereupon he prostrated and those around him asked, "Do you prostrate at this hour?" (which was during an eclipse). He replied, "What greater sign could there be than the departure of one of the wives of the Prophet."

Abu Bakr and Omar would visit Umm Ayman, who had been the maid of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and said, "The Messenger of Allah used to visit her."

Halima Al-Sadiyyah, who had been the foster mother of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, used to visit the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, whereupon he would spread out his cloak for her to sit on and attended to anything she needed. After the passing of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon, Abu Bakr and Omar would do the same whenever she visited them.

The Prophet's respect for his Companions, his attachment to them and their recognition.

Another aspect of the respect and obedience due to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is that one should respect his Companions, follow them, recognize their rights, praise them, ask for their forgiveness, shy away from discussing their differences, show enmity to those hostile towards them, and reject the misguidance of the Shi'a who insult them and innovators, as well as the reports of historians or ignorant transmitters (or the poison subtly introduced by orientalist) who attempt to detract from their esteem. If something is reported about them regarding the differences that took place between them, the most correct approach is to adopt the best interpretation and look for the appropriate way because they are deserving of such. None of the Companions should be mentioned in a bad manner nor yet rebuked, the correct approach is to mention their good deeds, virtues and praiseworthy qualities and remain silent about other matters. Upon this subject, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whenever my Companions are mentioned, hold your tongue."

Allah says, *"Muhammad is the Messenger of Allah. Those who are with him are harsh against the unbelievers but merciful to one another."* 48:29. He also says, *"As for the first Outstrippers among the migrants and supporters ... Allah is pleased with them and they are pleased with Him."* 9:100. Also *"Allah was pleased with the believers when they swore allegiance to you under the tree and He knew what was in their hearts."* 48:18. And, *"there are men who have been true to their covenant with Allah."* 33:23.

Hudhayfa heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Follow those after me, Abu Bakr and Omar." He also said, "My Companions are like stars, whichever of them you follow you will be guided." We are told by Anas that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said of his Companions, "The likeness of my Companions is like salt in food, it is not good without it."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "O Allah, Allah, my Companions. Do not make them targets after me! Whosoever loves them loves them it is because they love me, and whosoever hates them it is through their hatred of me. Whosoever harms them, harms me. Whosoever does something to hurt me does it as if it is hurtful to Allah. Whosoever does something that appears to be hurtful to Allah is about to be seized."

Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, warned, "Do not curse my Companions. If anyone were capable of spending the weight of Mount Uhud in gold, it would not even reach the measure of one of them, nor yet their half." He also said, "Should anyone curse my Companions, the curse of Allah will fall upon him, and that of the angels and all mankind. Allah will not accept any exchange or recompense from him."

Jabir tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Allah chose my Companions over everyone else in existence except for the prophets and messengers. He chose four of them for me, Abu Bakr, Omar, Othman and Ali, and He made them to be my best Companions, and all of my Companions are good."

Of Omar the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever loves Omar has loved me, and whosoever hates Omar hates me."

The jurist Malik, Anas's son and others said, "Whosoever hates and curses the Companions has no right to the Muslim treasury. Their judgment was found on the verse, *"Those who came after them say, 'Forgive us our Lord, and forgive our brothers who were believers before us. Do not put in our hearts any spite towards those who believe.'"* 59:10. Malik also was of the opinion that whosoever is outraged by the Companions of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is an unbeliever, on account of the verse that reads, *"and through them He enrages the unbelievers."* 48:29.

Abdullah, Al Mubarak's son said, "There are two qualities if found in a person will bring about their salvation. They are truthfulness and love for the Companions of Muhammad."

Khalid, Sa'id's son said that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him said, "O my people, I am pleased with Abu Bakr, so make it known. O my people, I am pleased with Omar, Ali, Othman, Talha, Az-Zubair, Saad, Sa'id and Abdur Rahman, A'waf's son, so make it known. O my people, Allah has forgiven the people of Badr and Al Hudabiyyah. O my people, protect me in my Companions and my relatives by marriage. Do not let any of them have cause to demand of you any restitution for an injustice committed against them. A wrongful claim will not be granted on the Day of Resurrection."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the importance of loving his Companions saying, "I will be the guardian of whosoever protects me in my Companions on the Day of Resurrection, and whosoever protects me in my Companions will come to me at the Pool (Kawthar), but whosoever does not protect me in my Companions will not come to me at the Pool and will only see me from a distance."

Malik, Anas's son said, "Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, taught his followers the manner to which Allah guided him, and by which He made him a mercy for the worlds. In the darkness of night he would go to Al Baqi (the cemetery in which many

of his family and Companions are buried) and supplicated for forgiveness for them in the same way that a person goes to see someone off on a journey. Allah had commanded him to do that, and the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, commanded his nation to have love and friendship for them and to be in opposition to those who oppose his Companions."

The respect for the things and places associated with the Prophet

Another element of the one's reverence and esteem for Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, is found in all things and places connected to him in Mecca, Medina and elsewhere.

Of Medina, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "The curse of Allah, the angels and all mankind falls upon whosoever innovates something (against the spirit of Islam) in it or shelters an innovator (of something against the spirit of Islam) therein."

Saffiyah, daughter of Najda tells us that Abu Madhura had a long lock of hair on his forehead that touched the ground when he sat down. When he was asked why he did not cut it he replied, "I will not cut off something that the hand of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, touched."

The Sword of Islam, Khalid, Al Waleed's son had some strands of the Prophet's of hair that he placed inside his cap. During one of the battles the cap fell off whereupon he fought zealously to retrieve it. He told his companions that he had not fought for the sake of the cap, rather he had fought to retrieve the strands of the Prophet's hair that were tucked within it so that he would not be deprived of their blessing, and also to avoid them falling into the hands of the unbelievers.

Omar's son was seen placing his hand on the seat of the Prophet's pulpit and then wipe it over his face.

It was on account of the esteem Malik had for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that we would not ride a mount in Medina. He would say, "I am too shy before Allah to trample with the hoof of an animal upon the earth in which the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, is buried."

Someone in Medina said, "The soil of Medina is bad." This outrageous statement caused Malik to pronounce the judgment against him that he should be beaten and jailed. The man had connections to the hierarchy of Medina but Malik did not retract his judgment and said, "He claims the soil in which the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is buried is not good!"

Jihjah Al Ghifari snatched hold of the Prophet's staff from Othman's hand and proceeded to try and break it across his knee. Upon seeing this the people shouted at him. Thereafter he was stricken by an itching disease in his knee and despite its amputation he died within the year.

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever swears to a lie on my pulpit will have a seat in the Fire."

A believer was blessed to visit the City of Medina and as he approached he sang the following song:

"The veil has been lifted from us and a moon shines
out to those who look on, banishing all illusions.
As our mounts reach Muhammad,
it is forbidden for us to be found in our saddles.
We are drawing near to the best man to have ever walked upon the earth,
so it is with respect and honor that we hold this ground."

When a pious shaykh went on pilgrimage he went on foot. When asked why he had done so, he replied, "What, an offending worshiper going to the home of his master riding! Had I been able to walk upon my head, I would not have walked upon my feet!"

Reverence and respect for the places in which the Revelation were received and which the angels Gabriel and Michael visited, as well as places where the angels descended, also places that heard the sounds of worship and exaltation, and the blessed soil that surrounds the body of the Master of all mankind, praise and peace be upon him, and places from which the religion of Allah and the prophetic quotations of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, were spread are necessities.

One must also revere and respect the places where verses of the Koran were studied, the mosques in which the prayer was offered, places where virtues and good deeds were witnessed, places that saw proofs and miracles, places associated with the rites of the religion and the stations of the pilgrimage and the waymarks of the Master of all the messengers of Allah, praise and peace be upon him. The places where the Seal of the Prophets, praise and peace be upon him, lived and from which the prophecy gushed and where its waves overflowed. The places that witnessed the message, and the first earth that the skin of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, touched after his death – its fragrance should be inhaled, its residence and walls kissed.

"O abode of the best of all Messengers
the one by whom people are guided
and he who was chosen to receive the verses.
For you I have intense, passionate love,
and a yearning which kindles the embers of my heart.
I have a vow – if I fill my eyes with those walls
and the places where you walked,
then my turbaned gray head will be covered with dust
from so much kissing.
Had it not been for obstacles and enemies,
I would always visit them,
even if I were to be dragged upon my feet.
But I will be guided in my eagerness to greet the inhabitants
of those houses and rooms.
By a scent purer than the most splendid musk which covers him
each morning and evening.
Pure, and ever increasing blessings are bestowed upon him
through the prayers for peace and blessings upon him."

**THE PRAISE ON THE PROPHET,
praise and peace be upon him,
ITS VERDICT, OBLIGATION, AND VIRTUE**

(It is worth noting, that the word "prayer" occurs in two different expressions. The first is in the obligatory prayer to Allah, and the second is the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, which is a statement of praise of the Prophet when mentioned by Allah and His angels and it is a supplication of praise by believers.)

What is meant by the prayer on the Prophet

Allah tells us, *"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet. Believers, praise and venerate him and pronounce peace upon him in abundance."* 33:56. Abbas' son stresses the fact that Allah and His angels praise and venerate Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. It has been said that Allah showers His mercy upon His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and His angels supplicate for him.

Al Mubarrad said, "The root of the prayer is the invocation of mercy. It is mercy from Allah. From His angels it is graciousness and a supplication for the Mercy of Allah.

A hadith sheds further light and tells us that when someone praises the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, while waiting for the commencement of the prayer, the angels say, "O Allah, forgive him! O Allah have mercy upon him."

Abul Aliya explained, "The praise of Allah is His praising of the Prophet to His angels, and the praise of the angels is supplication."

In reference to the command of Allah to His worshipers to supplicate for peace upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, the Judge Abu Bakr, Bukyr's son said, "This verse was sent down on the Prophet, and Allah commanded his Companions to supplicate for peace upon him. Those who came after are also commanded to supplicate for peace upon the Prophet not only when they visit his tomb but whenever he is mentioned."

Three definitions have been given to the supplication "As Salaamu alaykum" The first is that the word "salaama" is that of safety for you and with you. The second is "As-Salaamu" meaning your protection, being guarded and preservation as found in the Name of Allah "As-Salaam". The third is "As-Salaam" derived from the meaning of "musalaama" (reconciliation) and submission to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, as in the Words of Allah, *"But no, by your Lord, they will not believe you until they make you the judge regarding the disagreement between them, then, they will not find in themselves any discomfort concerning your verdict, and will surrender to you in full submission."* 4:65

The ruling about the prayer on the Prophet

Dear reader, one must be aware that Allah has commanded us to praise His Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Praising the Prophet, is a general obligation and is not restricted to a specific time. There is no dispute about its obligatory nature. Abu Jaf'ar At-Tabari was of the opinion that this verse, *"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet. Believers, praise and venerate him and pronounce peace upon him in abundance."* 33:56 is a recommendation is overruled.

When one praises the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, one fulfills the obligation, the performance of which voids the wrong action that would be present if one were not to do so. The minimum is to say it once as in the case when one bears witness to his Prophethood, however it is very desirable to say it more often and one finds its doing to be highly recommended in the authentic quotations of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him.

The Judge Abu Bakr, Bukayr's son tells us, "Allah has made it an obligation upon His creation to praise and ask for peace upon Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him. Allah did not assign a specific time, and the obligation of believers is that one should do it as often as possible and never neglect its doing."

The Judge Abu Abdullah, Sa'id's son tells us, "The position of Imam Malik (of the Maliki school of jurisprudence), his companions as well as other knowledgeable people is that the prayer on the Prophet is a general obligation and conditional to belief, and is not limited to the obligatory five daily prayers. However, whosoever praises the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, once in his lifetime has removed the very minimum obligation."

The followers of Imam Shafi'i (of the Shafi'i school of jurisprudence) say that the obligation which Allah and His Messenger, praise and peace be upon him, command applies only to the obligatory prayer. There is no disagreement that it is not obligatory.

The consensus of not only all the early scholars but those who came after is that the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in the final sitting before the closure of the prayer is not an obligatory part of the prayer.

Imam Shafi'i is the exception and says that any prayer that does not contain the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, in the final sitting of one's prayer when one bears witness to the Oneness of Allah before the greeting of peace (the tashahud) is invalid.

The Maliki school of jurisprudence, the people of Medina, Sufyan Ath-Thawri, and the people of Kufa in the company of others are of the opinion that it is recommended to say the prayer in the final sitting of one's prayer when one bears witness to the Oneness of Allah before the greeting of peace, and it is disliked that it be omitted.

If the prayer is omitted due to forgetfulness, Isaac, Abraham's son says the prayer does not have to be repeated, however if it is omitted intentionally then the prayer must be repeated.

We are told by Abu Ya'la that the Maliki school of jurisprudence has three opinions, the first is that it is obligatory, the second it is sunna, and the third it that it is recommended.

Jabir tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, taught them what is to be said in praise of him during the final sitting of the prayer, (tashahud) in the same way he taught them a chapter of the Koran. Omar's son said Abu Bakr would teach them what is to be said in praise of the Prophet during the final sitting of the prayer (tashahud) from the pulpit in the same way children are taught.

Masood's son heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say,

"Whosoever offers the obligatory prayer but does not ask for blessings upon me, and the people of my House, his prayer is not accepted."

Ad-Darakutni said, "The correct interpretation is that of Abu Ja'far Muhammad, son of Al Husain who said, "If I were to offer a prayer in which I did not ask for blessings upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, or the people of his House, I would think it was incomplete."

Times when it is recommended to say the prayer on the Prophet

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, heard a man making a supplication in his prayer without asking for blessings upon him whereupon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, commented, "This is hasty." Then he called the man and told those in his company, "When one of you supplicates, he should begin by praising Allah and then say the prayer on His Prophet, thereafter he can supplicate for whatever he wishes."

The Caliph Omar, Al Khattab's son, may Allah be pleased with him, spoke of one's supplication and prayer saying, "The supplication and prayer are suspended between the heaven and the earth. None of it rises to Allah until you say the prayer on the Prophet." Ali, may Allah honor his face said something similar with the addition, "and on the family of Muhammad." It has also been transmitted that the supplication is veiled until the suppliant offers the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him.

Masood's son advised, "If any of you wish to ask Allah for something, he should first begin by praising and exalting Him in the way He is deserving, then he should ask for blessings upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. It is then that the supplication is most likely to be answered."

Jabir heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, " Do not make me to be like the disposable jug of a rider, he fills his jug, puts it down then loads his baggage. If he needs to drink, he drinks from it, if he needs to make ablution he does so. If not, he pours it away. Place me at the beginning of the supplication, in its middle and the end."

Ata's son spoke of the supplication saying, "The supplication has pillars, wings, means and moments. When its pillars are strong it is acceptable. If its wings are acceptable, it flies. If its moments are accepted, it is given success. If its means are acceptable, it wins. Its pillars are the presence of the heart, mercy and humility and the heart's suspension before Allah and severance from the reliance on means. Its wings are truthfulness and sincerity. Its moments are before dawn. Its means are the prayer on the Prophet." May Allah praise and venerate him and grant him perfect peace.

It is reported in the Prophetic quotations, "The supplication between the two prayers is not rejected." Also, "Each supplication is veiled below the heavens until the praising of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is said, it is then that it ascends."

Abbas' son concluded his supplication with the words, "Please accept my supplication" then he praised the Prophet saying, "O Allah I ask You to praise Prophet Muhammad, Your Worshiper, Prophet and Your Messenger better than anyone else amongst all Your creation."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, should be praised whenever mention of his name is heard and when his name is written. He should also be praised when hearing

the Call to Prayer because he said, "If my name is mentioned in front of a person and he does not praise me, for him it is as if his nose is rubbed in the dust."

The scholar Habib's son disliked anyone to mention the name of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, when slaughtering an animal, and the famous Maliki scholar, Sahnon, disliked the name of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, to be mentioned when someone expressed their surprise. To this Qasim's son added "when sneezing" (because it is rendered secondary).

A compiler of one of the six major references of Prophetic Sayings by the name of Nisai reports the command that one should increase one's praising of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, on a Friday.

Issac's son tells us that one should praise the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, upon entering the mosque.

Amru, Dinar's son tells us that when you enter houses (in which no one is there), you should say, "Peace, be upon the Prophet and the mercy of Allah and His blessing, and peace be upon us and upon the good people of Allah. Peace be upon the inhabitants of the house, and the mercy of Allah and His blessing." To this Abbas' son added, "What is meant here by houses is mosques."

Al Qama tells of how he entered the Mosque. He said, "When I enter the Mosque I say peace be upon you O Messenger of Allah, coupled with the mercy and blessing of Allah. Allah and His Angels praise the Prophet."

The daughter of the Prophet, Lady Fatima, may Allah be pleased with her, tells us that the Prophet himself, praise and peace be upon him, would ask Allah to praise him when entering the Mosque.

The Companions reported that the prayer upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, should be said by the imam and also the congregation during the funeral prayer (after the second pronouncing of Allahu Akbar).

A highly recommended practice, accepted by all the nation of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, is that one should praise him in letters and whatever is written after In the Name of Allah, the Merciful, the Most Merciful (Bismillah Ir Rahman Ir Raheem).

Ukba, Amru's son said in his narration, "O Allah, praise Muhammad, the illiterate Prophet and the family of Muhammad."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gives us the good news saying, "The angels ask for forgiveness for whosoever praises me in a book as long as my name remains in that book."

Abu Masood Ansari tells us of another saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "Say, O Allah, praise Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as you praised the family of Abraham, and bless Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You blessed Abraham in all the worlds. Indeed You are the all Praised and Glory. As for peace (you say according to the way), it is has been taught to you."

The manner in which the prayer on the Prophet and asking for peace upon him should be made

Abu Humayd As Sa'idi tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was asked what is to be said when one offers the prayer upon him. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "Say, 'O Allah, praise Muhammad, his wives and descendants as You praised the family of Abraham, and grant blessing upon the family of Muhammad as You granted blessings to the family of Abraham in all the worlds. You are the Praised, the Glorious."

Ka'b Ujra's son reported the supplication with a slight variation saying, "O Allah, praise Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You praised Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious."

Abu Sa'id Al Khudri reported the quotation as "O Allah, praise Muhammad, Your worshiper and Your Messenger."

Imam Ali, may Allah honor his face, said, "The Messenger of Allah counted them out on my hand and told me that Gabriel had counted the supplications on his hand, saying, 'This is how it was sent down from the Lord of Might – O Allah, praise Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You praised Abraham and the family of Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious. O Allah grant blessings to Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You granted blessings to Abraham and the family of Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious. O Allah, grant peace to Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You granted peace to Abraham and the family of Abraham. You are the Praised the Glorious.'"

Abu Hurayrah heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Whosoever wishes to be given the fullest measure when he supplicates upon us, the People of the House, should say, 'O Allah, praise Muhammad, the Prophet, his wives, the Mothers of Believers, his descendants and the People of his House, just as You praised the family of Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious."

When Zaid, Kharija Al Ansari's son asked the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, how he should supplicate for blessings upon him, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "O Allah bless Muhammad and the family of Muhammad, just as You blessed Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious."

Salama Al Kindi spoke of the time when Imam Ali taught them how to pray on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. Imam Ali taught them:

"O Allah, the One who spread out the leveled expanses and created the heavens!
Bestow Your noble praise, Your ever increasing blessings and the compassion
of Your Tenderness upon Muhammad, Your worshiper and Your Messenger,
the Opener of what was closed. The Seal of what came before.

The one who announces the truth by the Truth.

The one who triumphs over the armies of falsehood as he was entrusted to do.

He who took upon himself with eagerness Your command to obey You
to gain Your pleasure. He retains within him Your Revelation,
preserves Your guidance and carries out Your command
so that mankind can receive Your blessings, kindling because of him,

a brand with which they can bring to their families.
 Hearts were guided by him after they had been plunged into trials and sinful actions.
 He illuminated the clear signs, luminous rules and way-marks of Islam.
 He is Your trusted guardian, the treasurer of Your hidden knowledge,
 Your witness on the Day of Rising, the one You sent with Your blessings
 and in truth Your Messenger, a mercy. O Allah, give him a spacious abode in Your Eden
 and reward him with good multiplied many times over from Your overflowing Favor,
 that You gave to him without effort through the victory on gaining Your reward
 and generous gift. O Allah, place whatever he builds above what other people build
 and give to him a noble place of rest and hospitality.
 Complete his light for him, and recompense him from Your worshipers
 by acceptance and words that please, with just words,
 decisive action and immense proof."

Note:

Imam Jazoli collected such prayers on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and compiled them in seven chapters in his famous book "Dalail Al Khayrat", so that one chapter can be read each day of the week. This work can be downloaded in Arabic and English on Allah.com).

Referring to the verse "*Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet.*" 33:56. Imam Ali, may Allah honor his face, said, "Obedient to You, my Lord. The praise of Allah, the Good and Merciful, the near angels, those who are true, the martyrs, the good people, and all that exalts You, O Lord of all the worlds, be upon Muhammad, son of Abdullah, the Seal of the Prophets, the Master of the Messengers, and the Leader of those who fear You, and the Messenger of You, the Lord of all the worlds. The witness, the bearer of good news, the one who invites people to You by Your permission, the light-giving lamp – and peace be upon him!"

Abdullah, Masood's son said, "O Allah, bestow Your blessings and mercy upon the Master of all the Messengers, the Leader of those who fear You, the Seal of the Prophets, Muhammad, Your worshiper and Messenger, the leader of the good and the Messenger of Mercy. O Allah, raise him to the praised station which will be the envy of the first and the last. O Allah, praise Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You praised Abraham. You are the Praised, the Glorious. Give blessings to Muhammad and the family of Muhammad as You granted blessings to Abraham and the family of Abraham. You are the Praised the Glorious."

Al Hasan Al Basri said, "Whosoever wishes to drink the fullest cup from the Pool (Kawthar) of the Chosen one (Prophet Muhammad) should say, 'O Allah, praise Muhammad and the family of Muhammad, and his Companions, his sons, daughters, wives and descendants, the People of his House, his relatives by marriage and the Ansar (Helpers), and his followers, as well as those who love him, and bless us along with all of them, O Most Merciful of the merciful.'"

Abbas' son would supplicate saying, "O Allah, accept the greatest intercession of Muhammad, and raise him to the highest station. Grant his every request in the Next Life and this Life as You answered the prayers of Abraham and Moses"

Wuhayb Al Ward's son would supplicate saying, "O Allah, give Muhammad the best of whatever he asked You for himself, and give to him the best of what any of Your creation

has asked of You for him. And give Muhammad the best of all that You will be asked for until the Day of Resurrection."

The supplication of Masood's son was, "When you ask for blessings upon the Prophet, make the prayer excellent. You do not know if it will be shown to him. Say, 'O Allah, bestow Your praise, Your mercy and Your blessings on the Master of the Messengers, the Leader of those who fear You, the Leader of the Good and the Messenger of Mercy.'"

The preceding are but a taste of the multitude of prayers both brief and long in praise of our beloved Prophet and his family, praise and peace be upon him and them.

Abu Omar, Abdul Barr's son and others are of the opinion that one should not ask for mercy for the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, rather one should ask for praise and blessings specific to him. They say that one should only ask for mercy and the forgiveness for others.

In the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Abu Muhammad, Abu Zaid's son included, "O Allah, have mercy on Muhammad (because the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was sent as a mercy himself) and the family of Muhammad as You had mercy to Abraham and the family of Abraham." This is not based on a prophetic quotation rather its proof lies in the words in the greeting of peace. "Peace be upon you O Prophet, the mercy of Allah and His blessings."

The excellence of the prayer on the Prophet, asking for peace upon him and supplicating for him

Abdullah, Amr's son reports the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "When you hear the Caller to Prayer, repeat what he says and ask for blessings upon me. Whosoever asks for blessings upon me once, Allah blesses him ten times. Thereafter ask for the rank of go-between (wasila) for me. It is a rank in the Garden reserved for only one of the worshipers of Allah and it is my hope that it will be for me. My intercession is granted to whosoever asks for the rank of "wasila" for me."

Anas, Malik's son tells us the good news that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever asks for blessings upon me once, Allah blesses him tenfold and ten sins fall from him and he is raised by ten degrees." In addition to this are the words, "and ten good deeds are written for him."

Anas also tells us that the Arch-Angel Gabriel told Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, "Whosoever praises you once, Allah praises him ten times and raises him by ten degrees." Abdur Rahman, Awf's son says something similar, he reports the Prophet's saying, "I met Gabriel who told me, 'I bring to you good news that Allah has said that whosoever asks for peace for you, He blesses him with peace. Whosoever asks for blessings upon you, Allah blesses him.'"

Zaid, Al Hubab's son heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Whosoever says, 'O Allah, praise Muhammad and raise him to Your nearness on the Day of Resurrection' will indeed receive my intercession. Those nearest to me on the Day of Resurrection are those who have said the most prayers upon me."

Abu Hurayrah heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "The angels ask forgiveness for whosoever praises me in a letter or book, as long as my name remains on that page."

Amr Rabi'a's son heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "The angels continue to bless anyone who asks for blessings upon me, as long as he continues doing so. Therefore do so in abundance or even a little."

Ubayy, Ka'b's son said that upon the passing of the first quarter of the night, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, arose and said, "O people, remember Allah! The quake has come which will be followed by its sequel. Death will come with all that accompanies it." Ubayy asked, "O Messenger of Allah, I say a lot of praising upon you, how much of my praising should I devote to you?" The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, "Do as much as you like." Ubayy asked, "A quarter?" He replied, "Do as much as you like, and if you do more it is better." Ubayy inquired again, "A third?" He replied, "Do as much as you like, and if you do more it is better. Ubayy asked, "Two-thirds?" Again he replied, "Do as much as you like, and if you do more it is better." Whereupon Ubayy said, "O Messenger of Allah, I will devote all my praising for you." The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Then you will have enough and your sins will be forgiven."

Abu Talha tells us of the time he saw the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, happier than he had ever seen him, and asked him about it. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told him. "Indeed, Gabriel has just left me and brought me good news from Allah that He has sent me to give good news that when any of my nation asks for prayers upon me (praise and veneration), Allah and His angels bless that person ten times for its doing."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "People will come to me who I will only recognize on account of the abundance of prayer they said upon me." Wahb's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whosoever asks for peace on me ten times, it is as if he had freed a slave!"

We are also blessed with the knowledge that has reached us from the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "The first to be saved from the terrors and its places on the Day of Resurrection will be the one who supplicated most for me."

Speaking of the tremendous blessings received for one's praising of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, Abu Bakr As Siddiq said that the prayer on the Prophet wipes out sin in the same way that cold water extinguishes a fire. To ask for peace upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is better than freeing slaves (meaning higher in reward. Despite this the Companions continued to free slaves until it was eliminated as it was their habit to mix different ranks of deeds.)

Jabir, Abdullah's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Whenever anyone hears the Call to Prayer and says, 'O Allah, Lord of this perfect call and this established prayer, grant Muhammad the rank of go-between (wasila) and excellence, and raise him to the praised station which You have promised him' will receive my intercession on the Day of Resurrection."

Saad Abi Wakkas tells us of another supplication to be made upon hearing the Call to Prayer, "When anyone hears the Call to prayer and says, 'I bear witness that there is no god except Allah alone, with no partner and Muhammad is His worshiper and Messenger. I am pleased with Allah as my Lord and Muhammad as His worshiper and Messenger, and Islam as my religion' will be forgiven."

Reproaching those who do not ask for blessings upon the Prophet and their wrong doing

Abu Hurayrah tells us that he heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Dust be upon the face of whosoever does not ask for me to be praised when I am mentioned in his presence! Dust be upon the face of whosoever Ramadan commences and finishes before he has received forgiveness! Dust be upon the face of whoever's parents reach old age and they are not the cause of his entering the Garden!"

As the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, climbed upon the pulpit he said "Ameen". This occurred three times whereupon Mu'adh inquired about its nature. The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told him, "Gabriel came to me and said, 'Muhammad, whenever your name is mentioned in front of a person and he does not ask for blessings upon you and dies thereafter, that person will enter the Fire. Allah will distance him, say 'Ameen', so I said, 'Ameen'. Gabriel told me, 'When Ramadan comes and it is not accepted from a person and he dies, it is the same, say 'Ameen' so I said 'Ameen'. If someone has two parents, or just one, and does not show kindness and goodness to them and dies, it is the same, say 'Ameen' so I said 'Ameen'."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, defined a miser saying, "A miser is someone who does not supplicate for praise upon me when I am mentioned in his presence." On the same subject, Jafar, Muhammad's son reports the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, "When I am mentioned in the presence of a person and he does not supplicate for praise upon me, he has swerved away from the Path to the Garden."

From Abu Hurayrah we learn that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "When people gather together, sit and depart without mentioning Allah and supplicating for praise upon His Prophet, a dark shadow falls upon them that will be a cause for regret in the Hereafter. If Allah wills, He will punish them, if He wills, he will forgive them." Abu Hurayrah also reported, "Whosoever forgets to pray on me (the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him), has forgotten the Path to the Garden."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, mentioned an element of bad manners, and Katada tells us that he said, "An element of bad manners towards me is that when I am mentioned in the presence of someone, that person does not supplicate for praise upon me."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, tells us, "When people sit in a gathering and depart without saying the prayer upon me, they depart on something fouler than the odor of a corpse." In addition to this the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "When people sit in a gathering in which they do not supplicate for me grief descends upon them, when they enter the Garden, they will not receive some of its reward."

Jesus At-Tirmidhi tells us that a knowledgeable person said, "Whenever a person supplicates for praise upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, once in a gathering, he receives the reward for whatever takes place in that gathering."

(May Allah praise and venerate our Master Muhammad, and grant him perfect peace in abundance, increasing continuously throughout time and all eternity.)

The distinguishing of the Prophet through the revelation of the supplication for praising him

One day the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the greetings of peace upon him that would be made after his death. Abu Hurayrah tells us he said, "Whenever anyone will greet me with peace, Allah will return my soul to me so that I may return the greeting." Abu Hurayrah also tells us that he said, "I will hear whosoever asks for me to be praised in my tomb. Even if someone is far away from me and supplicates for praise upon me, that too is conveyed to me."

Masood's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the action of the angels saying, "Angels roam the earth to convey peace to me from my nation."

Omar's son advised, "Offer an abundance of prayer on your Prophet every Friday, because its presented to him on that day."

Al-Hasan, Ali's son heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Praise me wherever you are. Your prayer will reach me."

It has been reported that the name of the person who asks for praise upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is shown to him as the person offers it.

Al-Hasan, Ali's son said, "Whenever you enter the (Prophet's) Mosque, greet the Prophet."

Sulayman, Suhaym's son tells us of a vision he had and says, "I saw the Prophet in a vision and asked him, 'O Messenger of Allah, do you recognize the greeting of those who come to you?' The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, replied, 'Yes, and I answer them.'"

Shehab's son heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, tell his Companions, "Offer an abundance of prayer on me in the radiant night (the night preceding Friday) and the radiant day (Friday) because it will be conveyed from you. The earth does not consume the bodies of prophets, and when a Muslim asks for me to be praised an angel conveys it to me and mentions his name."

Disputation concerning invoking supplications of praise on other than the Prophet and his fellow prophets

The majority of knowledgeable scholars of Islam say that it is permitted to ask for prayers upon people other than prophets.

Abbas' son holds a different opinion and says that it is not permissible.

Sufyan Ath-Thawri was of the opinion that it is disliked to ask for prayers to be said upon anyone other than a prophet,

Judge Eyad's tells us that one of his shaykhs said, "In Malik' school of jurisprudence it is not permitted to single-out for prayer any prophet other than Muhammad (unless it is combined with Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him)."

In the reference "Al Mabsut", Malik is quoted as having said to John, Isaac's son, "I dislike that people pray on anyone other than the prophets. We should not exceed what we have been commanded to do."

John, John Al Laythi's son said he did not accept this opinion. He said there is nothing harmful in offering prayers on any of the prophets or other people. To prove his point he quoted the transmission of Omar's son and the quotation in which the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, taught us the prayer on himself, and draws our attention to the phrase, "And on his wives and family".

Abu Hurayrah tells us that the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, told them, "Ask for blessings upon the Prophets of Allah and His Messengers, and Allah will convey the blessings to them as He conveys them to me."

Generally speaking the word "prayer" means supplication and asking for mercy, unless stated otherwise in an authentic hadith or the consensus of scholars that restrict its meaning.

Allah says, *"It is He who has mercy on you, and His angels."* 33:43. He also says, *"Take charity from their wealth, in order that they are thereby cleansed and purified, and pray for them."* 9:103. And *"On those will be prayers and mercy from their Lord,"* 2:157

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was heard supplicating for blessings upon his Companions, he said, "O Allah, bless the family of Abu Wafa." When people brought the obligatory charity to him for distribution, he supplicated, "O Allah, bless the family of so-and-so."

In the hadith mentioning the prayer on the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, we find, "O Allah, bless Muhammad, his wives and descendants," or "and the family of Muhammad." The latter has been explained with the meaning of either his followers, his nation, or the People of his House (either in combination or mixed). It has also been explained as meaning his followers, group or tribe, or a person's children, or his people. On the other hand, it has also been said that it refers to the family of the Prophet, may Allah be pleased with them, to whom charity is forbidden.

When the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was asked, "Who are the family of Muhammad?" Anas tells us that he replied, "All those who fear Allah."

When Al Hasan offered the prayer upon the Prophet, he would say, "O Allah, bestow Your praise and Your blessings on the family of Muhammad," meaning himself, because he did not neglect the obligatory command of Allah. This is similar to the Prophet's saying, "I was given one of the flutes of the family of David."

Abu Jumayd As Sa'idi would supplicate, "O Allah, bless Muhammad, his wives and descendants."

Omar's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, would ask for blessings upon Abu Bakr and Omar. This is also mentioned in Imam Malik's reference Muwatta. In other words he would supplicate for Abu Bakr and Omar.

Anas, Malik's son said, "When we used to supplicate for our companions in the Unseen we would say, 'O Allah, bestow the prayers of a good person who prays at night and fasts in the day on so-and-so.'" Sufyan adhered to the same.

Abbas' son did not offer a prayer upon anyone unless that person was a prophet. He did this to distinguish the special esteem and respect he had for them.

We know it is necessary to distinguish Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, from other prophets by asking for praise and veneration upon him, because of the command of Allah. *"Believers, praise and venerate him and pronounce peace upon him in abundance."* 33:56. Whereas Allah mentioned other people in terms of asking for forgiveness and expresses pleasure. He says, *"Those who came after them say, 'Forgive us our Lord, and forgive our brothers who were believers before us.'" 59:10, also "and those who followed them in doing good, Allah is pleased with them."* 9:100.

The scholars of Islam say that the prayer for someone was made either as a supplication or as a greeting when the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him met someone. It does not imply esteem or respect, and quote the verse, *"Do not make the calling of the Messenger among yourselves like your calling to one another."* 24:63

(In conclusion, the practice when one mentions a prophet, is that we pray upon him in combination with Prophet Muhammad in a similar way to this "upon so-and-so, and our Prophet, the praise and peace").

Visiting the tomb of the Prophet, how he should be greeted and the virtue of one's visit

Omar's son tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "My intercession is assured for those who visit me." Visiting the tomb of Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, is both excellent and to be desired.

We are told by Anas, Malik's son that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Anyone who, for the Sake of Allah, visits me in Medina is near me, and on the Day of Resurrection I will intercede for him."

He also said, "Whosoever visits me after my death, it is as if he visited me while I am alive."

The jurist, Isaac, Abraham's son said a person should go to Medina when he/she makes the Greater Pilgrimage with the intention of praying in the Prophet's Mosque, and seek the blessings of seeing his Meadow (Rawda), pulpit, tomb, the place where he sat, places that were touched by his blessed hand, places where his blessed feet walked, and the pillar on which he would lean, the places where Gabriel descended bring the

Revelation to him, the places connected with his Companions and the leaders of Muslims who lived there.

Abi Fudayk's son heard someone say, "We have heard that all who stand before the tomb of the Prophet should recite the verse, '*Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet*' 33:56 and then say, 'May Allah praise you, O Muhammad.' If this is said seventy times an angel will call to that person saying, 'May Allah bless you!' and all his needs will be taken care of."

When Omar Abdul Aziz bade farewell with the greetings of peace to Yazid, Abi Sa'id Al Mahri's son, he asked, "I would like you to do something for me. When you reach Medina and visit the tomb of the Prophet, greet him on my behalf with peace." It has also been reported that whenever he wrote letters from Syria to the people of Medina he would also ask them to do the same.

Amongst the early generation was a man who observed Anas, Malik's son approach the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. He tells us that Anas stopped, raised his hands as if he were about to pray, greeted the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, then left.

Malik said that when someone visits the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and supplicates, he should stand facing the tomb and not the direction of prayer. He should draw closer and greet him but not touch the tomb with his hands. In his reference "Al Mabsut" he writes, "I do not think people should stand at the tomb of the Prophet, rather they should greet him and depart."

Abi Mulayka's son said, "Those who wish to stand and face the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, should face the lamp in the direction of prayer at the end of the tomb near his blessed head."

Omar's son would greet the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, at the tomb. Nafi said that he saw him visit the tomb more than a hundred times and Omar's son would say, "Peace be upon the Prophet, may Allah praise him and grant him peace. Peace be upon Abu Bakr" and leave thereafter. Omar's son was also observed placing his hand where the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, sat on the pulpit and then wipe his hand over his face.

Qusayt's son and the son of Al Utbi said, "Whenever the Mosque was empty, the Companions would touch the knob of the pulpit near the tomb with their right hand. Then they would face the direction of prayer and supplicate."

In the reference "Muwatta" Malik wrote that he would stand at the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and say the prayer upon the Prophet, then pray for Abu Bakr and then Omar. Malik said that the person who is greeting should say, "Peace be upon you, O Prophet, and the mercy of Allah and His blessings."

The Judge Abul Walid Al Baji spoke about the respect due to the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, when visiting his tomb, "I think the visitor should supplicate for the Prophet using the words praise and veneration and choose a different word for Abu Bakr and Omar, as Omar's son indicated."

Habib's son tells us how one should enter the Prophet's Mosque. He said, "One should enter saying, 'In the Name of Allah and peace be upon the Messenger of Allah. Peace be upon us from our Lord. Allah and His angels praise Muhammad. O Allah, forgive us our sins and open for us the gates of Your Mercy and Your Garden and protect us from the accursed satan!'"

Having done this Habib's son tells us that one should go to the Meadow (Rawda) which is an area of the Mosque that lies between the tomb and the pulpit and offer two units of prayer in which one praises Allah before standing before the tomb. One should ask Allah for the absolute fulfillment of one's intention which brought you there to visit him and for help in its realization. However, if your two units of prayer are performed outside the Rawda, it suffices, but it is preferable to perform them in the Rawda. Of the Rawda the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "The area between my house and the pulpit is one of the Meadows of the Garden. My pulpit is on one of the raised gardens in the Garden."

We are also informed that thereafter one should proceed and stand in a state of humility and respect before the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and ask for blessings upon him and give what praise one can. Then proceed to greet Abu Bakr and Omar and supplicate for them. One should offer as many prayers as one can in the Prophet's Mosque day and night. It is also highly recommended to visit the Mosque of Quba and the graveyard in which the martyrs are buried, may Allah be pleased with them.

Malik wrote a letter to Muhammad, who was possibly the son of Al Hasan Ash Shaybani in which he said, "The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, should be greeted when you enter and leave his Mosque." Muhammad said, "Before leaving the Mosque stand near the tomb. The same applies when it is time for you to depart from Medina."

Lady Fatima, may Allah be pleased with her, said that she heard the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, say, "Whenever you enter the (Prophet's) Mosque, supplicate for praise upon the Prophet and say, 'O Allah, forgive me my sins and open the doors of Your Mercy to me.' When you leave, supplicate for praise upon the Prophet, may Allah praise him and grant him peace, and say, 'O Allah, forgive me my sins and open the doors of Your overflowing favor to me.'"

Muhammad, Sirin's son said, "Whenever people entered the Prophet's Mosque, they would supplicate, 'May Allah and His angels praise and venerate Muhammad. Peace be upon you, O Prophet, and the mercy of Allah and His blessings. In the Name of Allah we have entered and in the Name of Allah we will depart. We rely upon Allah.' Upon their departure they said something similar.

The practice of the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, when he entered the Mosque was to say, "O Allah, open the doors of Your mercy to me and make the gates of Your provision easy for me."

Abu Hurayrah said, "Whenever one of you enters the Prophet's Mosque, let him supplicate for praise upon the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and say O Allah open the way for me!"

Malik wrote in his reference "Al Mabsut", "It is not essential for the inhabitants of Medina who enter and leave the Prophet's Mosque to stand at the tomb, this is for visitors."

He also said, "There is no harm for those who either intend to go on a journey or have returned from a journey to stand at the tomb of the Prophet, may Allah praise and venerate him and grant him peace, and ask for blessings upon him, and supplicate for him, then Abu Bakr and Omar."

Al Qasim's son observed that when the inhabitants of Medina left or entered the City they would come to the tomb and greet the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. He commented, "That is considered to be the best practice."

Al Baji said, "Between the inhabitants of Medina and visitors there is a difference. Visitors have come with a specific intention to do so whereas the inhabitants live there and their intention is not necessarily to go there for the sake of the tomb and greeting."

Ahmad, Sa'id Al Hindi's son made reference to people standing at the tomb in his book. He said, "Neither cling to it nor touch it, nor stand before it for a long time."

In the reference "Utibiyaa" it is written, "When in the Mosque of the Prophet, may Allah praise and venerate him and grant him peace, commence with the prayer on the Prophet which you say before the final greeting of the prayer. The best place to offer voluntary prayers in the Prophet's Mosque is in the place where the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, used to pray in the location of the pillar scented with aroma of the wooded perfume of khaluq. The best place to offer the obligatory prayer is in the front rows. I prefer visitors to offer voluntary prayers there rather than in their accommodation."

The manner to be adopted upon entering the Prophet's Mosque and its excellence, and the excellence of Mecca and Medina

Allah says, "*A mosque founded upon piety from the first day is worthier for you to stand in.*" 9:108. When the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, was asked which mosque the verse referred to Zaid, Thabit's son and others report that he replied, "My Mosque." Abbas' son said that it refers to the mosque of Quba.

Abu Hurayrah tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, told his Companions, "Mounts should only be saddled to visit three mosques, the Sacred Mosque, my Mosque and the Mosque of Al Aqsa (Jerusalem)."

Abdullah, Amr ibn Al As's son tells us that whenever the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, entered the Mosque he would supplicate, "I seek refuge with Allah, the Magnificent, and with His Noble Face and timeless prayer from the accursed shaytan."

When Omar, Al Khattab's son heard a raised voice in the Prophet's Mosque he asked the person, "Who are you?" The man replied, "A man from Thaqif" Whereupon Omar said, "if you had been from one of the two Cities, I would have punished you – no one should raise his voice in our Mosques!"

Muhammad, Maslama's son informs us that no one should either intentionally raise his voice or act offensively in the Prophet's Mosque, and that one should keep oneself from doing anything that is considered dislikeable. The scholars of Islam are in agreement that this applies **to all mosques**. He also said that it is disliked that anyone should

speaking in a manner that would distract those who are praying. It is also dislikeable to raise one's voice when saying the 'Talbiyya' (the call of pilgrims "Obedient to You" before setting off for Mecca) in any mosque except the Sacred Mosque of Mecca, and the Prophet's Mosque.

The value of a prayer offered in the Prophet's Mosque has been reported by Abu Hurayrah, who tells us that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "The prayer in my Mosque is better than a thousand prayers in any other mosque except for the Sacred Mosque."

There is a difference in opinion regarding the word "except". Malik and other scholars are of the opinion that the preceding prophetic quotation means that the prayer in the Prophet's Mosque is better than the prayer in the Sacred Mosque, but less than a thousand times better. To support their opinion they quote Omar, Al Khattab's son who said, "The prayer in the Sacred Mosque is better than a hundred prayers in other mosques." Consequently, they understood that the excellence of the prayer in the Prophet's Mosque is nine-hundred times greater.

The inhabitants of Mecca and Kufa support the opinion of the supremacy of Mecca and amongst the supporters of this opinion from the Maliki school of jurisprudence are Ata, Wahb's son and Habib's son, and from the Shafi'i school Saji. They quote the prophetic quotation that says, "One prayer in the Sacred Mosque is better than a hundred prayers in my Mosque."

It has also been said that a prayer offered in the Sacred Mosque is a hundred thousand times better than the prayer offered anywhere else.

However, there is no disagreement among the scholars that the place of the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is the best place on earth (and so are those of his descendants).

We are reminded of the prophetic quotation that reads, "What lies between my house and my pulpit is one of the Meadows of the Garden." In addition to this Abu Hurayrah and others quoted "and my pulpit is above my Pool (Kawthar)." In another prophetic quotation we learn, "My pulpit is one of the raised gardens of the Garden."

At-Tabari said the quotation has two meanings one of which is that the word "house" is literal and where the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, lived. The other is that "between my house and my pulpit" refers to the house being his tomb.

At-Tabari drew our attention to the fact that both meanings amount to the same, because the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, is in his house, so there is no conflict.

With regard to the quotation "My pulpit is above my Pool (Kawthar)", it has been said that one possibility is that it is the actual pulpit in his Mosque, the second possibility is that the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, has another pulpit in the Hereafter. The third opinion is that being present at his pulpit means the doing of good deeds that bring believers to the Pool and from which they drink.

As for "One of the Meadows in the Garden", it has been interpreted with two meanings one of which is that it assures the supplication and prayer offered in the Prophetic Garden (Rawda), which is the area between the tomb of the Prophet and his pulpit, are subject to that reward. The second meaning is that this area is transported by Allah and is actually in the Garden.

Of Medina, Omar's son and several other Companions, report the saying of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that "On the Day of Resurrection I will be the witness and intercessor for the person who has been steadfast in the face of its difficulties and hardship." As for those who left Medina, the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, said, "Medina is better for them if they but knew." He also said, "Medina is like a pair of bellows, it casts out what is impure and leaves what is pure." And, "Allah gives Medina to someone who is better than he who leaves Medina on account of his aversion."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gave good news of those blessed to die in either of the two Holy Cities, he said, "On the Day of Resurrection, Allah will raise up whosoever dies in either one of the two (Mecca or Medina) on the Greater Pilgrimage or the Lesser Pilgrimage without reckoning or punishment." Another transmission reads, "He will be raised up among the trustworthy on the Day of Resurrection."

Omar's son reported the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, saying, "Whosoever can die in Medina should do so, because I will intercede for all who die in it."

Allah says, *"The first House ever to be built for people was that of Bakkah (Mecca), blessed and a guidance for the worlds."* 3:96.

It has been said by a scholar of Islam that "guidance" means safety from the Fire. It has also been said that it implies safety from people who would otherwise do something harmful outside the precincts of the Sacred Mosque - even during the "Time of Ignorance" it was established as a place of sanctuary. Allah says, *"And We made the House (Kabah) a visitation and a sanctuary for people."* 2:125.

Some people went to Sa'dun Al Khawlani who resided in Monastir, Spain, and told him that the Berber tribe of Kutama had killed a man. They had lit a fire placed him over it and made sure the fire did not die out throughout the entire night, however the fire had not consume his body. Sa'dun inquired, "Had he been on three Greater Pilgrimages?" They replied that he had, whereupon he said, "I was told of a prophetic saying that anyone who goes once the Greater Pilgrimage has fulfilled his obligation, anyone who goes twice he claims his reward with his Lord, and that Allah will forbid the Fire to touch the hair and body of whosoever goes on the Greater Pilgrimage three times."

When the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, gazed upon the Ka'ba he said, "Welcome to you! What House is greater than you or has greater holiness than yours!"

The Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the Black Stone and Ka'ba saying, "No one supplicates to Allah at the Black Stone except that he receives an answer from Allah. It is the same beneath the water-spout (of Ka'ba)."

The Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, spoke of the blessings of praying behind the Station of Abraham in the Ka'ba. He said, "Whosoever prays two units of prayer

behind the Station of Abraham will have his past and future sins forgiven, and he will be gathered with those who are safe on the Day of Resurrection."

Abbas' son tells us that he heard the Messenger of Allah, praise and peace be upon him, say, "There is no one who supplicates for something in this Multazam (the wall of Ka'ba between its door and the Black Stone) of the Mosque except that his supplication is granted." Abbas' son tells us that everything he asked for at the Multazam was always granted to him by Allah. Sufyan Ath-Thawri, Al Humaydi and Muhammad, Idris's son Al Udhri, and Abdul Hasan, Al Hasan's son said that their supplications were always answered.

Abu Osama, said, "I don't remember hearing Al Hasan, Rashid's son transmitting this prophetic saying, however, I have never asked Allah for anything in this Multazam without my worldly request being granted, and it is my hope that my requests will also be granted in the Hereafter."

The Judge Abu Ali tells us, "I have asked Allah for many things, some of which have been granted, and it is my hope that the remainder will be granted out of the vastness of His Bounty."

Allah gives success in following the right path by His Mercy.

Praise be to Allah, Lord of all the Worlds, and the peace and blessings of Allah be upon His Beloved Prophet. Amen.

(After the passing of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and during the early generations right up until the onset of Wahabism, last century, Muslim ladies were permitted to visit the tomb of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him. There are many reports testifying to this fact including the one of Lady Ayesha, may Allah be pleased with her. It is an extremely sad state of affairs that sisters-in-Islam are prevented by the Wahabi's from even seeing or standing in front of the tomb to greet our beloved Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, and his Companions. The same circumstances apply to the pulpit which is blocked off from view by a canvas barrier, however if one is tall there is the chance that one can just snatch a glimpse of the top of the pulpit. There are no signs to indicate the direction of the tomb however, "Exit" signs as well as others are very clearly posted!

It is also very distressing that after having prepared oneself with the remembrance of the Prophetic supplications that are highly recommended to be read upon entering the Mosque of the Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, that one is met by female Wahabi guards who search bags, upset one's peace of mind, destroy and distract from the remembrance of these blessed supplications! Sisters are also prevented from entering the birth-place of our beloved Prophet, praise and peace be upon him, as well the cemetery in which the Holy Family are buried as well as many Companions. Prophet Muhammad, praise and peace be upon him, did not prevent females from visiting the cemetery, in fact he took Lady Fatima to visit the tomb of her sister Lady Rukiyah, may Allah be pleased with them.)

VISITATION TO THE PROPHET'S TOMB

Praise and peace be upon him

"Allah and His angels praise and venerate the Prophet. Believers, praise and venerate him and pronounce peace upon him in abundance." 33:56

**So near but yet so far away
my heart cries out in pain today,
I came laden with happiness to visit your tomb
but Wahabi guards prevent me to come near your room.**

**Barriers were placed so no woman could see
the most blessed tomb there will ever be,
Wahabi guards and throngs with voices raised
robbed me of peace, and my intent to praise.**

**Allah, and His angels praise His Prophet* on high
and we are ordered with the same, this is no lie!
The Koran and hadith support the validity of such praise
and through this great mercy our ranks are raised.**

**But it's not just for the sake of being raised
its because of the love of him we thank and praise
he brought us so much and from darkness came light
to enable us to distinguish wrong from right.**

**Did the guards and pilgrims forget the warning so clear,
not to raise one's voice before His Prophet* so dear,
where was the respect that is his rightful due
O Prophet of Allah, I came just for you.**

**No directing pointer to show where he lays
no glimpse of the niche where he would pray,
only high barriers and bold signs of "exit" were permitted
Oh "guardians" of the tomb what sin in Rawdah you committed.**

**I did not come to worship him,
just to greet and thank, and that's no sin.
O Allah, please bring me back once more
when there's no one to prevent me to enter at his door.**

*** Praise and peace be upon him**

Ameen

The End of Notes